

# Siza's tribulations



by Beth M

Siza's tribulations

Introduction

7 years ago

Siza

Right now at this moment I regret telling him this, but I had to tell my family before i started

showing, I knew baba would be mad but this no, he is livid, he even threw a bucket full of

water at me, I am standing here dripping wet, I am so scared right now the look on his face

is murderous. I am practically shaking, scared of my life, my mother is weeping in the corner

and my sister has this smug on her face obviously happy that I have disappointed my father.

Baba "pregnant in my house, i warned you Sizakele, I told you to stay away from that boy"

he screamed and started taking off his belt and he charged towards me ready to beat the

living shit out of me, my mother came running and stood in front of me crying

Baba "nkosikazi (wife), get out of my way or I will whip you both"

Ma "I beg you my husband, please have mercy on her, she is still your child"

Baba "my child I do not have a child that is a hoe, I told her to stay away from that boy but she chose not to listen to me"

Me "baba I am sorry please forgive me"

Baba "why did you disappoint me like this, I do everything for you and your sister"

Me "it was a mistake baba"

Baba "don't get me more mad Sizakele, did you accidentally fall on top of that boy"

Ma "I think we all need to come down and go to bed and sleep on it then have a family

meeting on a way forward tomorrow morning" my father's chuckled

Baba "what way forward, she is leaving my house, I will not stay with a child who has a child,

she is an adult now she must fend for herself and that thing she is carrying in her womb”

Ma “what do you mean baba”

Baba “I am a respectable man in this village, I am part of the kings counsel and I am a

principal, what would people say about me for keeping a disobedient child in my home, I

have to set an example in the community”

Me “baba please I beg you”

Baba “listen here, pack your things coz first thing tomorrow morning you are going to that

boys house, you are his responsibility now I wash my hands off you, as of today you are no

longer my daughter and everyone who is still a part of this family is forbidden to keep contact

with you, Sizakele you will stop using my surname and referring to yourself as my daughter,

get out of my face and go pack your things” all I could do was cry and my mother continued

begging him to change his mind, but he just left us there and went to their bedroom. My sister was so thrilled she has always

enjoyed seeing me mess up so she can keep her good girl title with my father. My poor mother couldn't contain her tears, but my father has spoken and his word is law. So mama helped me pack everything that belonged to me and left me to sleep but I couldn't even close my eyes at all.

Morning came and my father woke me up at 4am and accompanied me to Vusi's house, this is the village so 4am is not that early, we got to their house and his mother and father were already up having tea. They were surprised to see us in their yard that early with me holding a cloth with my clothes inside. His mother looked at me and frowned she has chased me out of Vusi's hut a few times, she doesn't really like me much

Baba "greetings ba kwa Khumalo"

Mr K "sawubona Dlamini"

Mrs K "what brings you to our home this early" she say's with

an attitude

Mr K "stop that, go and get a bench to they can sit" she came with one and baba and I sat

Baba "thank you Khumalo, is your youngest son in"

Mr K "yes he is, is there a problem"

Baba "can you please call him, this matter involves him" his mother was about to go call him

when he came out of his hut, he saw me and smiled and that made me blush, Vusi already

knew so he was expecting this

Mr K "right on time, son come here" he came and sat next to his father

Baba "Sizakele told me and my wife that she is pregnant and your son here is responsible"

Mrs K "hei hei who's son is responsible, she is the one who was running after my son, and

the villagers know that she is a loose panty it could be anyone"

Mr K "mfazi shut up, wena Vusi do you know this young girl and what she is saying"

Vusi "yebo baba I know Siza and I acknowledge the child she carries" thank God

Baba "well in that case, she is your responsibility now, I will not harbour a woman in my

house, since you two decided to play husband and wife, it is time it became official, she is no

longer my child but your responsibility, I do not even want Lobola for her head she has

disgraced me, you can have her for free" my heart broke further

Mrs K "what, you can't dump your child here with us tell him my husband"

Mr K "actually he can mfazi, Dlamini, please forgive my son, we will take full responsibility

for her and the offspring" my father stood up

Baba "well then, I will take my leave, remember Sizakele, do not set foot in my house do not

talk to anyone in my family, you are no longer a part of us" I was crying painfully and my

father left. Vusi came to sit next to me and comforted me

Mrs k "you will not sponge of us in this house, you will help with the chores and since you

are pregnant you will no longer go to school, you will teach all those innocent kids

nonsense”

Mr K “can you just hold yourself, Vusi you have responsibilities now, you will have to man up”

Vusi “I know baba, all I ask is that you take care of her till I finish my degree and once I am done I will come take her and my child with me to the City”.

Mr K “fair enough ndodana”.

Present day

My name is Sizakele, and I have no surname coz my father disowned me all those years

ago, well I can't even call myself Vusi's wife coz my father told them that he doesn't want

Lobola for my head, I am 23 years now and I have a 7 year old daughter I named her

Siphophelo because she is exactly that, my sanctuary, my place of peace, she is such a

lively child, she looks more like Vusi though I felt betrayed after



the hardships I went through during my pregnancy, but nonetheless I love her with every fibre of my being. Well I am still in this God forsaken village, with Vusi's family. My dad still wants nothing to do with my daughter and I, but my mom couldn't stay away, she tries by all means to keep in contact with us, well, my sister made my father proud, she finished high school and after that got married to the owner of the largest timber plantation in our Village, she lives in the city with her husband and child. Well I am still referred to as the girl that got pregnant out of wedlock and didn't finish high school. It has been hard coz Vusi is never home, all he does is send money when he remembers, he is now a big lawyer in the city, it hurts because he had promised that once he finished school he will come take us with him to the city but I am yet to see that day. Dali (Vusi's mother as we call her) hates me with passion, she never forgets

to remind me that I am not Vusi's wife and that i have failed in trying to trap her son with a child, those words hit home every time, my life has no progress really, i have so many dreams but what is the point really, success is not for people like me. All I do is slave away for Dali and her daughters in law because they are married while I was just dropped off by my father. The pain I have had to endure throughout the years is too much for one soul but I cannot give up, I have my daughter to think of. Girls my age are living in their husbands homes and some in the city going to university and working but not me, I am stuck with a child and no family, I clean peoples farms for a living, with the little I have I pay for Siphophelo's school fees and to buy food when Dali decides to starve us, some days I wish I knew Vusi's address so I can go ask him why he left us to suffer. I dream of something bigger something brighter which I do not know of but my

background always have a way of reminding me that I am nothing.

We do not know what tomorrow holds but if you walk with me through this journey you will find out. All I know is, it is going to be hard before it gets better.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 02

Siza

My daughter and I went to church and it was a great, it really uplifted my spirit, we never

miss church coz that is the only place I feel at home and luckily for me Phephe enjoys it too, I

decided to take my daughter to the white man's car, he comes to our village every last Sunday of the

Month to sell all these nice foods, it will be my first time eating here since my father disowned me. I

used to enjoy hot dog and burger with coke then have ice cream

afterwards, so I decided to treat my daughter to some.

Me "phephe, guess where we are going"

Her "obviously we are going home mama" I laugh

Me "no baby mama is taking you to the white man's car" she screamed in excitement

Her "can I please have ice cream Siza"

Me "today you can have everything you want my love"

Her "thank you thank you mama, I love you so much"

Me "I love you too my baby" we got to the food truck and I bought her a burger with chips and coke

then ordered ice cream for when we leave, she was enjoying her meal, my heart broke coz she has a

successful father but she is not used to all the good things available, I couldn't manage to keep my

tears in

Her "are you crying Siza?"

Me "oh no my love, I am just enjoying this food too much it is making me cry" she giggled my

favourite sound in the world

Her "you never cry but you are crying for food, you are funny mama"

Me "it is too good, look at you, you are not even saying anything while eating and we all know you

can't keep quiet even when you eat" she smiled and my heart warmed up

Her "mama, can I please have this again tonight"

Me "of course you can, today I am spoiling you" her smile widened

Her "eat up so we can go home, I need to go cook, we don't want to anger Dali now do we"

Me "yes I don't want her to shout at you" we continued eating and joking when I saw my parents

and my sister arrive, my heart went into my stomach, they were laughing happily until their eyes

landed on me. They went to the truck and ordered then sat on the table a bit far from us. They

didn't even acknowledge me, it was like I didn't exist, my mother kept on stealing glances at us and

smiling a bit when dad was not looking, I love her so much

Her "Siza, why are you sad? Is it because your daddy is here" my eyes widened, I have never told her

about my dad, I haven't explained what happened to her, I just told her to never try and speak to my

mother when she is with other people because she will be in trouble and she will not be able come

see us and bring us things and she understood, so you can imagine the shock

Me "how do you know my daddy baby?"

Her "I heard Dali speaking to sis'Busi" I close my eyes and sigh

Me "baby eat your food we must leave now"

Her "why does he hate us so much, why does everyone hate us Siza" my heart literally broke into a

million pieces

Me "baby, I love you with all my heart and that is enough okay?"

Her "I know and I love you too, and Siza"

Me "yes Phephe"

Her "God also loves us" I smile sweetly at her and nodded.

Me "that's right Sthandwa sam". We finished our meal and I went to take our order and I handed

her ice cream. Arriving home we found the whole family sitting outside laughing at something, we

greeted but they all remain silent except Baba and Nonto (Vusi's eldest brother's wife)

Nonto "how was church Siza?"

Me "it was amazing, there is no place like the house of the lord"

Dali "then why don't you leave my house and go stay in the house of the Lord wena rubbish" I

looked down

Baba "stop this nkosikazi (wife), Phephe did you pray for me?"

Her "I prayed for everyone mkhulu"

Baba "ngiyabonga yezwa (thank you)" he says smiling, bab'Khumalo and Nonto are the only people

who treat me right in this house, the rest just see nothing but a slave

Dali "ntombazane (girl) the pots are waiting, I suggest you go remove that church dress and go start

with the fire"

Nonto "I will cook today Dali, Siza you can rest sisi"

Me "thank you"

Dali "yeiiiiii Nonto this is my house my rules go, you hear me"

Nonto "I am sorry ma, I thought she could rest" she clicked her tongue

Baba "I hate what you are doing MaKhumalo I hate really, treat these girls equally please"

Siza's mother

Seeing my daughter and my granddaughter laugh like that and enjoying warmed my heart but the

way my husband pretended like he does not see them crushed me, how can he pretend like he

didn't birth Siza, she made a mistake, why can't he just forgive her, our child is suffering while both

her parents are still alive. I cannot believe that my husband is this heartless.

Thandiwe "Jesus baba did you see how worn out and old Sizakele looks" she made a disgusted face

Dlamini "that is what you get for not listening to your father"



Thandiwe "exactly baba, I am glad I listened and stuck to your teachings"

Dlamini "and look at you now, married to a successful young man. Living in the city while she suffers

here in the village with a child and not education or husband. I am proud of you Thandi ka baba"

Thandiwe "ngiyabonga baba (thank you dad)" she says smiling, why is Thandiwe so evil

Dlamini "hao maDlamini why are you so quiet"

Me "because Sizakele is my daughter and I can't talk ill of her"

Dlamini "we are only saying the truth"

Me "it is your truth Dlamini not mine so please don't expect me to hate or be happy that the fruit of

my womb is suffering while I am still alive and able"

Dlamini "who are you talking to like that"

Me "you asked and I only answered"

Thandiwe "hao mama"

Me "when are you going back to your house I am sure your husband and child are back"

Thandiwe "you have always loved her more than me mama I

always knew it”

Me “unlike your father I can never be able to divide my womb and love my children differently, just

because I was told to never keep contact with her it doesn’t she is not my child or I will stop loving her”

Dlamini “you are way out of line, I paid your bride price, you will not talk to me like you are climbing

a tree, I am your husband and I deserve some respect” I stand up and sigh

Me “you will find me at home, enjoy your meal” I walked away, they should pick up their jaws. I

have never spoken to my husband like that before, I bow down to that man’s law, but I couldn’t

stand to hear them talk about my child like that, why are so evil.

Vusi

Weekends go by very quick dammit, I spent this past weekend with the boys club hoping, my lady

went on vacation with her younger sister, so I decided to freak on with the hommies, we have been

drinking from Friday after we knocked off and we still at it even now, I am with my childhood friend

Mandla, we grew up in the village and came to Jozi to study he came first and i followed, I studied law and he studied

medicine , we both made it, we have a name in our respective industries, he is engaged too, well I

am planning on popping the question soon.

Me "I don't want to go back to work"

Mandla "tell me about it"

Me "I am planning on proposing to Mercy when she comes back"

Steve "WTF why would you two want to tie yourself with one woman I mean this is Jozi there is

pussy everywhere" we laugh

Me "man marrying Mercy comes with a lot of benefits"

Steve "at least you have something to benefit, plus your woman is sexy as fuck"

Me "hey chill out bra, that is my future wife you talking about"

Steve "sorry man"

Me "Mindlos, why are you silent, aren't you gonna complain or celebrate"

Mandla "what about Siza man?"

Me "oh bafo, did you have to bring her up"

Steve "she means Farm Julia?" I laugh and nod

Me "imagine man"

Mandla "she is now farm Julia Vusi really, she is the mother of your child, have you forgotten what

that poor girl went through because you got her pregnant"

Me "I didn't forget, now I must be tied to her coz of that? No man, I love her yes but I am not

attracted to her, I mean look at me, look at Siza and Mercy, who suits me better"

Mandla "what you are doing is not right man, at least end things"

Me "she must just read between the lines"

Mandla "remember karma, that is all I am going to say"

Me "yoh chill, you can have her if you want"

Mandla "I might just"

Steve "and leave that hour glass figure, you are full of jokes

ntwana” we laugh and Mandla just  
shakes his head.

Me “let us just leave this conversation once I don’t want us to  
fight because of Siza”

Mandla “I am thinking of going down to the village next week,  
wanna drive with me”

Me “I have a lot on my plate bruh, work wise, but I will give you  
money to give to Siza for my daughter”

Mandla “sure, but I am sure Siphephelo would love to see you,  
it’s been months man”

Me “I am gonna make time”

Mandla “if you say so”

Steve “enough with this baby mama talk”

Me “I second that”

Mandla “I guess we should just get on with the getting drunk  
and going to work with a hell of a  
hangover”

Me “now you are talking”

Steve “we can even toast to that” we all laugh

Mandla “and wena ntwana what happened with that chick from

last night”

Steve “I bought her and her friends drinks, and we took it to the bathroom, had quickies in there a few times”

Me “thought you were going to take her home with you”

Steve “nah, her pussy was just basic, your typical slay queen, it’s no longer tight”

Mandla “that is not how you talk about a woman, I hope you used protection” I roll my eyes

Steve “yoh mfundisi (priest) I did use iplastic ntwana yam ”

Mandla “at least you still value your life” we laugh

Me “true, phela this one lives recklessly”. The rest of the day we chill watching soccer and drinking our expensive bottles.

Please do comment react and share. Silent reader hao can you please just react hee its only fair. Let our page likes reflect on post likes please. Thanks for the support

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 03

Mandla

Today I am driving down to see my mother, it has been a while since I went home, she must miss

me, being a Dr is not helping my schedule, I am really glad to be going home for these few days, I

could do with the peace, the city can be too much at times, and it is really a way for me to run away

from this girl

Palesa "but babe do you really have to go there"

Me "I need to, it has been a while since I saw my mother"

Palesa "but boo I just moved in, I thought we could spend this weekend together you know, maybe

look at ways to redecorate the place, there is a woman here after all"

Me "I don't see anything wrong with this place"

Palesa "you are a man, I can't let you decide on such matters"

Me "exactly that's why you went behind my back to buy yourself

a ring and take to instagram that

we are engaged right?"

Palesa "exactly baby, if I had waited for you to propose I would have waited forever"

Me "right" I roll my eyes

Palesa "so, how long will you be gone for?"

Me "probably a week, not sure yet"

Palesa "that is a long time, but I am not worried"

Me "what do you mean"

Palesa "there are no girls looking to secure the bag over there, I know those granny looking girls will

not try anything with you"

Me "okay then, let me get going"

Palesa "aren't you forgetting something?"

Me "what?" I ask confused

Palesa "black card babe, how will I survive this whole week" I roll my eyes

Me "I will send you money, I am not leaving my card with you, I don't want to be bankrupt"



Palesa "funny, safe trip boo, love you" she says and I walk out, can she just disappear from my life

Vusi

I was at the office and it was super hectic, I wish I took Mandla's offer and drove with him to the

village I could use the break but the thought of seeing Siza all week, she was going to nag and I am

not for that now, though I really miss my daughter, I need to go see her soon, this is not right, I

shouldn't include her in my problems with her mom. I was spinning with my chair when my junior

got in

Her "sorry to disturb sir, but the big boss asked me to call you" that is Mercy's father

Me "no sweat, is he in his office?"

Her "yes he is sir"

Me "okay thanks" she walks out and I follow her shortly, I knock in his office and he shouts come in

Him "oh its you"

Me "I was told you wanted to see me"

Him "yes, and relax it is not about work" I sigh

Him "I want to talk about you and my baby girl, seat down"

Me "thank you sir"

Him "she tells me she doesn't know any of your family members, so tell me what are your intentions

with my daughter" I swallow

Me "honestly Sir, I love your daughter and I want to marry her, and to tell you the truth I was

planning to propose soon as she gets back from Bali, I have even bought the ring, it is here" I take it

out and hand it to him, he looks at it and hands it back

Him "it is not the biggest rock but it will do, this will make her happy, I approve"

Me "thank you Sir, I will take her down to the village after our engagement"

Him "good then" I stand up to leave

Him "and Vusi"

Me "yes sir" his look changed to that of a dangerous one, see he

is also a Mafia, our firm mainly

defend kingpins I am talking about criminals in suits, expensive suits

Him "you know my daughters are all I have and I wouldn't want to see any of them suffer from anything, if you ever hurt

my daughter, son if you ever hurt even a single strand of hair on her head I will strangle the life out of

you with my bare hands you understand" he fixed my tie and smiles

Me "I won't hurt her sir, I promise" he winks at me and walks back to his chair, I am scared at this

point, damn I knew Razor was dangerous but not like this, to threaten me like this

Him "we are done here, you can go back to work" I walked out trying to catch my breath

Siza

I got a piece job at MaNtuli's house, she said her son is coming home and asked that I spring clean

the whole place, the pay was very generous, but she always does

that coz she pities me I think,

maybe she is one person who knows my situation closely coz her and Dali are friends, but haven't

been close for years now, I think it is because of the way Dali treats me and Phephe, she is a

Christian so she doesn't believe in ill-treating others. MaNtuli went to get Phephe from school and

went with her to the market. I was only left with the kitchen and then I am done. A car parked and I

thought it was just a taxi dropping ma and phephe. A male voice startled me

Him "hey Siza" I jumped and screamed a little

Me "oh my God, Mandla, do you want to kill me" he laughed

Him "I am sorry, how are you?"

Me "I am very well thanks, how are you"

Him " I am great just tired, the drive down here takes all my energy"

Me "oh sit down let me fix you something to drink"

Him "thank you, where is my mother"

Me "she went to the market with Phephe"

Him "okay, oh before I forget, Vusi asked me to give you this for Phephe" he handed me money

Me "oh okay thanks, I was hoping he would come with you" I sound disappointed and he gives me a

look of pity and hate that I hate being pitied

Him "sorry Siza, work is keeping his busy, he is always in court"  
I nod

Me "is he okay though?"

Him "he is okay, he said I should tell you he will come down soon"

Me "that is what he always say's but its fine"

Him "sorry Siza, how have you been holding up"

Me "what can I say I am carrying my cross, taking it a day at a time"

Him "things still the same at the house"

Me "if not worse, but its life right"

Him "everything will work out, you'll see"

Me "I believe, let me take your things to your bedroom"

Him "no Siza I will do it"

Me "no please let me, you are tired" I took his bags and came

back to the kitchen, Ma and Phephe

walked in

Phephe "mama look what gogo got me" she showed me her new dress and shoes

Me "oh those are nice baby, did you say thank you?"

Ma "ofcourse she did, you taught her well Siza, nana go eat your food in there" she left

Me "thanks mama, you spoil her"

Him "haibo mama, am I invisible"

Ma "oh fano sorry man, unjani, how was your drive, it is good to see you, I hope you brought me

money" we laugh

Him "I am okay, my drive was tiring, and yes mama I brought money and pills"

Ma "good boy" I laugh

Me "Mandla let me prepare water for you to bath"

Him "thank you Siza, only thing I hate about this place is that there is no electricity"

Me "we are used to it thina"

Ma "tell him my baby"

Him "I always send you money to buy patrol for the generator though"

Ma "ai I survive without power, I only need it when you are around, I have lots of patrol in the hut outside"

Him "thank God"

Me "I need to finish up mama before it gets late"

Ma "yes please do before that woman eats you alive"

Me "I don't think I want to find myself in the belly of the beast" they laugh, I prepare Mandla water

to bath and finish the kitchen. He had already started the generator and they were watching TV.

Phephe laughing so much

Me "baby, it is time to go"

Phephe "but mama, I am watching, can I please sleep her"

Me "no baby we don't want to abuse mama's kindness"

Ma "nonsense, she can sleep over, I will prepare her for school tomorrow and Mandla will take her"

Me "okay mama, I just hope it won't be too much for you" she dismissed me and told Mandla to

accompany me. I kissed Phephe goodbye and she didn't have my time, I fear this TV.

Please comment, react and share. I appreciate those who are always interacting with me via comments and reactions, you are the reason for my consistency. My silent readers bless me with those reactions atleast. See you Monday

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 04

Siza

The peace that is in this household is exactly what I needed, Dali went to visit her sick sister in

another village, so I have been relaxing, Nonto told me to relax and she will do the cleaning and

cooking, for the first time since I stayed I have been waking up around 8am and it feels great, plus

my daughter has been at MaNtuli's house for 3 days now, this TV is killing me shame, Mandla must

just go back to the city so I can get my daughter back, today I



am taking clean school uniform to her

and wash the dirty one's. I was sitting under the tree on the mat,  
Nonto appeared and sat next to me

Her "here is your food"

Me "thanks Nonto, it feels good being served hey"

Her "I just want you to relax while she is away"

Me "I really appreciate it, thank you so much"

Her "you do so much Siza, it is only fair to help you out when I  
can, when is Phephe coming back"

Me "aahhh that one, she will only come back when Mandla goes  
back to the city, coz that's when

the TV will stop playing, MaNtuli is not a fan of TV and  
electricity" she laughs

Her "we miss her round her"

Me "honestly Nonto I am kind of glad she is there, she is so  
happy and she is not worrying about me,

or being scared that Dali might start saying things that hurt  
me"

Her "no offence Siza, but why don't you just go and start a life

somewhere with your daughter, like  
build your hut somewhere else”

Me “I wish I could, but you know you can’t just build on any land  
without the King allocating the

space to you, and remember my father is a member of the royal  
counsel and the kings advisor, he

will ensure that the king declines my request”

Her “I just hate how Siza is treating you in this house’

Me “she knows I have no one, so she treats me anyhow she  
desires and that is fine, but I can’t let

my daughter to be her victim too, I want to leave this place, but  
where to”

Her “how about you go find Vusi in the city”

Me “I don’t have his address sisi, and Dali will never give it to  
me”

Her “don’t worry I will find it for you and when you go there I  
will look after Phephe”

Me “thank you so much Nonto” she smiles and hugs me

Mandla

It has been really great being at home with my mom and Phephe, she has been here since I got her, she is such a great kid, smart too, she is not your typical 7year old, she hates cartoons but enjoys watching animal shows and documentaries, she is a special kid, I wish Vusi gave her attention, she has been asking me to show her pictures of him and once asked me to call him but it took me to voicemail.

Ma "fano" my mom and pet names

Me "oulady"

Ma "what is the time, i don't want to be late for fetching Phephe" I smile

Me "it's still early ma, I will drive and get her"

Ma "no, I want to go with her to the market then go to the church service"

Me "with her uniform, it needs to be washed mos"

Ma "don't worry about that, Siza will bring her fresh uniform"

Me "oh okay then, ma can I share something with you"

Ma "okay, I am listening"

Me "uhm I don't even know how to say this without feeling guilty"

Ma "you are scaring me Mandla, what is it?"

Me "mama, this will break Siza's heart, Vusi is planning to propose to some other girl, he has been

seeing her for 2 years now" my mother's eyes widened

Ma "what why would Mandla do this, why did you keep this for such a long time, oh this will break

that poor girl, oh Jehova"

Me "it is not my place to say mama, I have asked Vusi, to break things off with Siza rather than

stringing her along knowing fully well that he doesn't want her"

Ma "Vusi will regret the day he left Siza and Phephe to suffer in this village while he is living life with

that girl in the city"

Me "what should we do mama, do we tell or do we just wait for Vusi to come tell her"

Ma "I love Siza but we will not tell her, we don't want to be

accused of interfering in the Khumalo

issues, you know the rules of this village, but when she learns the truth we will be here to support

her and Siphephelo”

Me “this is going to brake her mama, she has lost so much because of him mama”

Ma “everything happens for a reason, God knows why he is letting this happen to her, she is strong

she will survive this too, I will be there to help her though it” I sigh and nod

Thandiwe

Being back in this house is depressing, it gets so lonely, always being alone yet I am married, Sizwe is

never home, he is always away on business and when he is around he only takes our son and go to

his parents’ house, I have resorted to alcohol for comfort, I hate being married, I hate this life, all I

am to him is a sex object and his punching bag, when he comes back home drunk and when he is

sober he comes home smelling some hoe's perfume and lipstick marks on his shirts, he doesn't

respect me, but I can't divorce him coz my dad would freak, all I ever wanted was to be the best

daughter and make him proud, but I am suffocating. i opened the bottle of whisky and poured

myself a glass, the front door opened and he walked in

Him "isn't it early for you to hit the bottle"

Me "with the life like mine it is never too early"

Him "a million girls would kill to have your life dear wife"

Me "if they knew the type of monster you are, they would run for their life"

Him "mmhhh, but you are still with this monster, why not divorce me honey" I stare at him not

knowing how to answer to that

Me "where is my son" I change the topic

Him "with my mother"

Me "please go and get my son, I am his mother dammit"

Him "you are an alcoholic Thandiwe, you want to expose him to

your drunken ass”

Me “don’t you dare you piece of shit, I am this way because of you” he slapped me across my face

Him “never and I mean ever use that language when referring to me, i will snap that empty head of

yours trust me” he sounded so cold and I know he would

Me “just go get my son Sizwe please”

Him “I will when I get back”

Me “you are leaving, Sizwe you just got back for Christ sake”

Him “someone has to pay for your expensive taste, unless you want to find a job”

Me “why are you treating me this way Sizwe”

Him “oh stop with that will you, I need to go to the club and talk to my staff before I leave to that

village, call your mom and tell her I am coming she must fix me a room”

Me “I can go down with you, it has been a while since we were seen together in public”

Him “I don’t have time for this, I need to pack, call your mom” he left me standing there. I gulp the

whisky and sigh, can I just run away and never come back

Siza

I just got to MaNtuli's house, I came to see my daughter and bring clean uniform for her, and it was

only Mandla in the house I guess ma went to get Phephe from school.

Me "hey, ujani?"

Him "oh hey you, I am good wena"

Me "I am fine thanks, where is MaNtuli"

Him "she went to get Phephe then they are heading to the market then after church"

Me "I was hoping to see her, I miss her so much"

Him "we love having her around"

Me "you need to go back to the City, my daughter is here for the TV" he laughs

Him "ouch, I honestly don't feel like going back there" I frown



Me "why, I would love to leave this village"

Him "let's just say that I left a demon in my house"

Me "I don't understand"

Him "sit and have a drink with me so I can tell you about it"

Me "I have never had alcohol before"

Him "there is a first time for everything Siza, it is just vodka you will enjoy it trust me" I nod

Me "okay let's try it" he mixes that vodka with juice then hands it to me, it is a little bitter but not

bad

Him "so, I have a girlfriend, Palesa, she is too much hey, I met her way back when she was so simple

smart and humble, but 2years ago she started changing, she quit her job started hanging around

wrong crowds, she now clubs her life away, drinks like a fish, I wanted to end things and she went as

far as going to buy herself a ring and engaged herself and told everyone I proposed, recently she

moved into my house without discussing it first, I don't know how to get rid of her, I don't want to

be rude about it though and hurt her”

Me “sit down and talk to her, you no longer love her and that is okay, what will hurt is you letting

her go ahead with everything, she thinks you also want these things coz you are not stopping her,

don’t string her along, just be honest, you will end up in a loveless marriage because you don’t want

to be an asshole, just end it for your peace and happiness, it is okay to fall out of love with a person”

he smiles

Him “you are right, this is wrong, I am tired of this”

Me “put a stop to it then”

Him “tell me, if you could change one thing in your life, what would it be”

Me “honestly, nothing, I believe everything happens for a reason, God has a plan”

Him “I wasn’t expecting that answer really”

Me “I have been through hell but I believe God is preparing me for something huge, he will wipe my tears someday”

Him "do you see a future for you and Vusi though" okay  
awkward question"

Me "I think so, I love him, he is the father of my child" his face  
changed, as if he knows something I

don't like he had hoped I gave him a different answer, I don't  
want to discuss Vusi with him so let me

change the topic

Me "this drink is nice, but I am feeling some type of way  
already" he laughs

Him "I will ensure that you don't get drunk drunk"

Me "please, I wouldn't want Phephe to see me drunk"

Him "she won't I promise" I smile and we continue talking, the  
convo is flowing really effortless,

topic after topic after topic, I really am enjoying myself and I  
feel my age for the first time ever"

Please react, leave a comment and share. I once again ask that  
you my silent readers to just react please

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 05

Mandla

Being back in Jozi means it's business as usual, but luckily the hospital is not that busy, I just saw a

few patients since morning and it's afternoon already, I am happy about that though, I am still tired

from the long drive. I honestly had the best time, Phephe is a ball of happiness, she made me realise

that I want a lot of kids, well I also spend some time with Siza, and to be honest she is a great

person, if only Vusi can realise this, he will regret ever leaving that beautiful soul. My door opens and it's Vusi, he didn't call to say he was coming, I hope everything is okay.

Me "sure bro"

Him "Dr N,sharp fede ntwana (how are you)"

Me "I am all good bafo, what brings you here?"

Him "I came to ask how your trip was ntwana"

Me "it was great bafo, had a very nice time"

Him "I saw you were spending time, a lot of time with Siza and Phephe"

Me "oh yeah, Phephe Actually spend the whole week with us" he frowned

Him "why is that? Where was Sizakele"

Me "she was enjoying the TV, and Siza was at your place, she would come check up on her now and again"

Him "oh I see, so how is my baby girl"

Me "she is such an amazing child that one, very smart. She misses you man, you need to make time

Vusi, they are suffering mfwethu"

Him "I know Mandla man, I will go see my daughter soon"

Me "you must, don't be the first man to break her heart. You need to move them here man, so she can go to a good school"

Him "once I tell Mercy about Phephe, we will get her to come stay with us"

Me "you want to take Siphephelo from Sizakele"

Him "it only makes sense, my daughter needs to attend a good

school”

Me “you can’t do that man, it will break Siza, that kid is her life. If you move Phephe you have to move her mother too”

Him “mercy will never agree to that, you know this”

Me “what you want to do is not right Vusi, a child needs her mother”

Him “and that is what Mercy will be to her”

Me “but Phephe has her mother, Siza is alive and able to take care of her daughter”

Him “she is my daughter too’

Me “when it suits you Vusi” I snap

Him “what is that supposed to mean”

Me “you haven’t seen your child in 7 months, your fiancé doesn’t even know you have a child, do

you think Mercy will look after Phephe the way Siza does, she doesn’t even cook for you so what

makes you think she will feed your kid. Think Vusi, stop being selfish, isn’t it enough that you got her

pregnant and left her in that village with your child to suffer from your mothers abuse while you are

here living your best life” he was shocked

Him “so in other words, I am a terrible father”

Me “you said it bro”

Him “I can’t believe this, one week with my daughter and Siza you are now know what is good for them”

Me “yazin Vusi, I need to get back to work”

Him “you insult me then you throw me out”

Me “all I said was the truth and deep down you know it, and no I am not throwing you out, I legit

have patients to check on”

Him “I never thought you would say such things to me”

Me “what is the point of calling me your best friend when I can’t give it to you straight”

Him “there is a polite way of saying all that”

Me “the truth is never easy to hear, I get that”

Him “let me leave you to your job then”

Me “sure”

Him “see you later for drinks then”

Me “I will see if I can make it” I say getting up

Him "don't be like that Mandla" I shake my head and walk out,  
leaving him in my office

Thandiwe

I raise my head from the pillow and it feels like I was hit by a car,  
dammit maybe I went too hard on

the alcohol, I look at the clock and it is already afternoon, this  
hangover is too much, but I know just

how to cure it, granpa and a bottle of wine, I get up and take a  
shower then head downstairs, I hear

people laugh and it is my husband and his mother, she is  
holding my son, I smile oh how I have

missed him, I rush down and take my boy hugging him

Her "is this the time to wake up" I remain silent

Him "oh mama stop wasting your time with this drunkard"

Her "oh she still sleeps and wakes up to alcohol"

Him "it is her daily bread mother" they both laugh

Her "if she wasn't good for your image, I would tell you to



divorce her”

Him “you know she is the reason why my plantation operation is a success, her father will ensure

that my business is not affected so that baby girl here doesn’t suffer”

Me “you two have a special place in hell”

Her “oh dearest daughter in law, we vacation there now and again”

Me “I will leave you two devils to plan on how to deceive your next prey”

Her “thank you sweetheart” she winks at me

Him “and do not dare drink alcohol near my son”

Me “he is my son, and the only person I live for, I would never hurt him”

Him “well in that case that is good coz I would kill you if you harm him or neglect him”

Me “I take it he is back home with his mother, me”

Her “correct, but like my son said, you better not neglect him”

Me “and like I said I would never hurt my child” I say

Him “and oh dear wife, tonight we need to pull off our famous

performance”

Her “yes, big potential business partners are coming tonight for dinner”

Him “unlike when it comes to my son and alcohol, I trust your fashion sense I know you will look like

the millionaires wife that you are” he kissed my cheek

Her “now excuse us, and tell Maria to bring my latte to Sizwe’s study” she said and walked away, I

need that drink so bad but I will not drink and risk them taking my son away, I need to stay focused

for his sake, he is all I have, all I live for, without him I would be a disaster waiting to happen.

Him “you heard mother Thandiwe, why are you still standing there”

Siza

Siphophelo has been nagging me about her father again and honestly this is why I have to go find

Vusi, we cannot continue living like this, my daughter has suffered enough, Vusi must be

responsible and be present in his daughters' life. The dragon lady is back and this place has returned

to hell, all the peace is gone, I hear my daughters high pitch cry approaching, and she walked in

bleeding a little from a wound on her forehead, I stand up quickly

Me "my love what's wrong, what happened"

Her "Dali hit me with an iron rod" my heart shattered

Me "why would she do that"

Her "I was sharing a plate with the others and she came and removed me then said I should go eat

where I have been sleeping when she was not around" she hit my daughter coz she has been sleeping at MaNtuli's

Me "I am sorry my love" I was boiling with fury

Her "why must she hate us like this Siza, she hates me but she loves her other grandkids why mama"

Me "shhhhh my baby, let mama clean your wound" I clean her up and wait for her to sleep, I go out

to find this wicked old woman, she is under the tree with the eldest daughter in-law

Me "you can do anything you want with me Dali, you can turn me into a slave, insult me and all, I

will take it all, but when it comes to Siphephelo I won't have that, why would you hurt my child like

that, she is only a child, your grandchild, stop this Dali, never ever lay a hand on my baby again"

Dali "who the hell do you think you are talking to Sizakele, in my house, if you feel high and mighty

pack you things and take that brat and leave my house" she is not even remorseful, what was I

expecting, I was fighting back tears, this is no life, I need to find Vusi soon, I look at her and let a tear

fall down

Me "you see my tears Dali, they will not be in vain, God will deal with you for all the evil you do to

me and Phephe. God is watching you" with that said I left them there and returned back to my hut. My

daughter is still sleeping. I just let out my tears and cry. My door opens and I try wipe them quickly

Nonto "don't, let out the pain, stop acting strong Siza, we all have our breaking point" I listened to

her and I cried the pain out and she hugged me tightly, I went on for a while

Me "thank you I am okay now"

Nonto "I hope she is okay and I have something for you"

Me "she is hurt more emotionally than physically, what is it that you have for me?"

Nonto "I got Vusi's city address" I looked at her blank

Me "really Nonto, oh my God thank you so much sisi" I attack her with a hug, finally.

We comment we react and we share with others. Let's all react please

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 06

Siza

I have packed a few dresses and I am ready to head to the city

to find this man who has left my  
daughter and I to suffer in the hands of his mother without a  
single care in the world. I told Nonto  
that I would feel at ease if Phephe was to stay over at MaNtuli's,  
and she understood my reason, I  
mean if she could mistreat my child in my presence, let us just  
imagine what she would do in my  
absence, and I also asked that she doesn't tell Dali where I went  
to. I had already taken Phephe to  
school, so I had to do was take her things to Ma.

Her "have a safe trip mntanam"

Me "thank you mama"

Her "and Siza, I want you to take my phone, incase anything  
happens and things don't go

accordingly, I want you to call Mandla. His number is saved  
there okay"

Me "I will mama and thank you so much for everything"

Her "I am glad I could help, and thank you for bringing Phephe  
to me"

Me "you are the only person I trust with her mama, plus she adores you"

Her "go and return, Phephe and I will wait for you"

Me "you are God sent MaNtuli"

Her "promise me something"

Me "I am listening mama"

Her "whatever you find in that City, I need you to promise that you will accept it and think of your

daughter know that you will get through everything mntanam, God sees everything and he will not

forsake you, just believe that with your heart that one day everything will work out for you"

Me "I promise mama"

Her "thank you baby, and remember we are here for you"

Me "I know and I really appreciate it"

Her "the phone is full but take the battery just in case, do you have enough money"

Me "I have more than enough on me"

Her "okay let me not delay you further, I don't want you to arrive there at night"

Me "let me take my leave then, stay well and please tell  
Siphophelo that I love her" she smiles and  
we share a hug

Vusi

I finally proposed to Mercy and she was over the moon, things  
between us have been really great,  
she is however not backing down with the wanting to meet the  
family thing, so I have decided that I  
will take her to the village this weekend. Today I gathered some  
strength and I will tell her about my  
daughter

Her "baby, you said you have something to tell me"

Me "promise you will keep an open mind"

Her "you are scaring me Vusi" she said in her snobbish accent

Me "just promise my love"

Her "okay I promise"



Me "so when I was young and still in the village, I had fallen in love with a girl named Siza, We were together for the longest time, so like any normal couple we had sex and she fell pregnant. What I am trying to say is, I have a 7 year old daughter, she stays in the village"

Her "why would you hide this from me Vusi"

Me "baby you have to understand. I was afraid you would leave me, I already thought you are too good for me so I thought if you knew I had a child you would flee, wanting nothing to do with me and my baggage"

Her "I love you, I would have understood, she was born way before you and I met. I understand baby"

Me "thanks babe, thanks"

Her "so what is her name,, tell me about her"

Me "her name is Siphephelo, she is 7, she is a smart child, you will like her"

Her "and her mother"

Me "well they both stay at my folks place"

Her "what why is your baby mama leaving with your parents"

Me "she was young when I got her pregnant, and so her father disowned her, she had nowhere to

go, by traditions we had to take her in, since I was the reason she was disowned"

Her "I just hope you too are over"

Me "it is hard for her to accept it, but we are done, I am with you and you only"

Her "I am glad to hear that daddy" I laugh and she comes to sit on my lap

Me "we are going to the village this weekend" she smiled and kissed me, okay that went well

Thandiwe

I have been off the bottle since my son came back, having him here makes me focus on the

important stuff, my husband has also been at home a lot lately, I wouldn't say we are okay but it is

not bad. There are no insults and the smelling of cheap perfume.  
I am feeding my son in the Kitchen  
when Sizwe walked in

Him "hey"

Me "hello, your food is in the oven"

Him "okay thanks, how is his temperature now"

Me "it is back to normal now"

Him "thank God, he was worrying me" I smile and cleared his throat.

Me "I want him to start daycare"

Him "he is two so that's good"

Me "okay the, should I choose or you wanna help with that"

Him "I will leave it to you, I want to talk about something"

Me "I am all ears"

Him "I want another child" I choke on my coffee

Me "uhm Sizwe, you want to bring another child to our situation?"

Him "what situation? You are my wife, it is normal to have more

kids”

Me “Sizwe, you treat me like trash one minute and like your wife the next, you disregard my feelings

all the time and you constantly cheat on me. Above all you don’t love me”

Him “don’t you think having another child will change all that”

Me “I don’t know Sizwe, let me think about it”

Him “there is nothing to think about Thandiwe, we are having another child, we start trying tonight,

what is the point of making all this money if I don’t have kids to inherit it?” I sigh

Me “fine we can have another child”

Him “thank you” he eats in complete silence

Him “I am going to the club, I will be back around 7 or 8” I sigh

Me “okay then” do I want to have another child, am I ready even. But I am a married woman so

bearing children is my duty.

Siza

The taxi finally arrived in the city and I was panicking, it was so busy people going up and down, it is

chaotic, it is too loud, from taxis hooting, to people playing music, it even smells of pee. I have never

seen such tall buildings, God how do they survive here. Luckily Nonto has a cousin here, she is a

student. I found her waiting for me, I didn't know her but she knew me, coz she came straight to me

immediately the taxi stopped and I got out, we walked to a quiet place and she told me an Uber will

come take me and drop me at the address I have with me. I thanked her and left with that car they

call uber. The place we went to was nothing like were the taxi from the village dropped me. this one

was so calm and quiet and the houses here were beautiful, it was nothing I have seen before, the

cars too, people are rich out here, I wouldn't mind staying around here with my daughter, all I have

ever dreamed of came rushing to me but I remembered I have no matric so this is farfetched for

someone like me. I snap out of it when the driver tells me we

are here, this house is beautiful Jesus

Christ, Vusi has done well for himself. I see his car outside and I know this is the place. Luckily the

gate was not locked so I walk in and spot a door. I try and knock but no one responded so I pressed

the button on the door and it made a sound and quickly someone opened. It was a beautiful girl, the

type I have only seen in magazines. She had long hair and her clothes were so classy, I felt so small looking at myself

Her "hello can I help you"

Me "good evening, I am looking for Vusi, I was told he lives here"

Her "oh he does, and thank God for coming, I have been begging him for a house help for the

longest time" what I am not a mad, why is she here, who is she

Me "sorry but I..." she cut me off

Her "no need to apologise sweetie come in" she moved aside so I can walk in

Me "thank you" the interior was extra beautiful, I have never seen such elegance ever

Her "baby, come down, she has arrived" she shouts and a second later, Vusi comes down looking so

handsome, my heart skipped a bit

Him "who has arrived my love" he freezes when he sees me, did he just call her his love what is this

Me "Khumalo" he blinked

Him "what are you doing here" is that all he is going to say to me, the mother of his child, his

woman

Me "you haven't seen me in months and that is the first thing you say"

Her "okay baby, what is going on here, who is she?"

Him "this is Sizakele"

Her "oh your daughters mother" so he speaks about me, I smile. But why is he calling her his love

and why is she referring to him as baby.

Him "yes, Sizakele, why are you here"

Me "I came to find you Vusi, you haven't been home in months, things back in the village are not

fine, your mother is mistreating us, just yesterday she hit

Phephe with an iron rod”

Him “Sizakele, that didn’t mean you must come all the way to the city”

Me “you want her to kill us before coming, babakhe we are your family we need you, Phephe needs

her father I need my husband” the girl looked at him

Her “her husband, Sizwe what is she talking about, you said you guys were done” what why would

he tell her that

Him “we are done, I told she doesn’t want to accept it” why is he lying, my heart broke like I felt it

sink into my stomach, I couldn’t even contain my tears

Me “Vusi, why are you saying this, who is this”

Him “this is Mercy my fiancé” I let my tears fall, I have never felt such intense pain

Me “what, fiancé, you are marrying her?”

Him “yes Siza”

Me “what about me Vusi”

Him “if you had opened your eyes, you would have seen that we are done, there is nothing between



us anymore, I don't love you, I love Mercy" he said and held her hand, the lump on my throat made

it hard for me to speak, I felt like he was ripping my heart out with every word he uttered. How can

he do this to me? I walk towards them and sink down on my knees and held on to his leg for dear life

Me "Vusi, please it's me Siza wakho, please don't do this to me, I love you, look it's me babakhe,

don't do this to us, I need you, we have been through so much, you know you are all I have,

whatever I have done please forgive me, I will change I will do everything and anything you want. I

love you Vusi, please don't leave me please" he wiggled his leg roughly signalling that I should let go,

I have never felt such pain in my life, I felt numb

Her "get up, begging my man is not nice girl"

Him "Sizakele stand up, we are over, and I am coming to the village soon, we will talk about

Phephe's wellbeing then, but for now I need you to leave my house" I sat there still not moving, I

could hear them but the pain was intensifying it was too much, I

wanted to feel physical pain maybe  
that will ease the emotional pain.

Her "you heard my man, get up and get out"

Me "it is already night where do you expect me to go, Vusi  
please"

Him "you should have thought about that before leaving the  
village to come find me" I cry silently

Me "please Vusi"

Him "Sizakele get out of my house" he says roughly picking me  
up and taking my bag then pushed

me out and closed the door. I have never felt so humiliated and  
hurt like this, it cuts so deep, my life

is full of roller-coaster rides, it is too much oh God what have I  
done to deserve all this, don't I

deserve to be happy and loved.

I sit for almost an hour and it was already dark and cold outside  
he

came out and stared at me

Him "I called an uber it will take you to the guest house,

tomorrow morning go back to the village I

will see you soon. You should be taking care of my daughter not gallivanting the city looking for me

as if I am your man” I cry silently and he throws money down on me

Him “that is enough to pay the uber and the guest house and the taxi back to the village” the uber

arrived and I got up and took my things then left to the taxi without taking his money”

Him “Sizakele, take this money” I just look at him heartbroken then continued walking. I got in and

the driver asked me where I wanted to go, where will I go I don't know any place here, as if God

could see my life, the phone rang, the one MaNtuli gave me, it was Mandla I answered

Him “hello mama, unjani” I just cried

Him “Sizakele is that you”

Me “yes it is me”

Him “why do you have mama's phone is everything okay with her”

Me “she is okay”

Him "where are you? Why are you crying?"

Me "I am in the City outside Vusi's house in the uber, I don't know where to go, he kicked me out"

Him "oh shit, fuck, listen, get off that uber and pay the guy, I will come get you there in a few

minutes, stay outside his gate, I will be there soon okay"

Me "okay" I hang up

Me "sir I am sorry to waste your time, I am not from here, a friend of mine say's I should get off he

will pick me up, I am sorry"

Driver "it is okay my sister, and whatever it is pray to God about it, he will see you through"

Me "thank you Sir, please accept this for wasting your time"

Driver "no please don't keep it"

Me "I have enough please accept it" he took it

Driver "God will bless you, and everything will be okay, wipe your tears" I smile at him and walk out.

He drives off and I a minute later Mandla is here, he gets out of the car and hugs me without saying

a single word, and I just broke down, Vusi's words kept on

playing in my head

You know all i ask for is your reaction and comment then for you to share with others. let's grow family and thanks for the support

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 07

Mandla

When she said she is outside Vusi's house and she was crying, I knew exactly what had happened, I

have never seen someone so broken or heard someone cry so painfully, I shed a tear too, she has

been through so much and it seems like the universe is not willing to let her catch a break, Vusi has

really broke this innocent girl, now I wish I had told her the truth maybe she wouldn't have hurt so

much, I feel guilty like it is some kind of my fault. I wish I could take her pain, I took her straight to

my house and she couldn't stop crying and luckily I had a sedative in my medical bag so I injected her so she can stop crying. Palesa wasn't happy about this.

Her "why did you bring that girl here"

Me "Palesa please, she needed my help"

Her "she is Vusi's responsibility, not ours"

Me "didn't you hear me, he kicked her out"

Her "I don't care, I don't want her in this house, take her back to wakanda" I laugh

Me "last time I checked this is my house"

Her "and I am your fiancé, we share this place"

Me "Siza is my close friend, I would never leave her out in the cold"

Her "fine she can stay, but tomorrow I want her out of my house, I am not joking"

Me "she is not leaving tomorrow, I will drive her back to the village on Friday"

Her "WTF, you mean to tell me she will be in this house for 3 days"

Me "that is exactly what I am telling you"

Her "this is too much for me"

Me "if that is the case, go stay at a hotel or better go back home Palesa"

Her "and leave you with that thing? Hell no"

Me "then behave, she is my guest and you will respect her time here"

Her "whatever Mandla"

Me "I am glad we are on the same page"

Her "mxm" she said and walked away and I go back to Siza's room

Siza mothers

I have been having the scariest dream, it keeps repeating itself. It is not clear enough but I can tell

something bad is going to happen, like someone will die, I am so worried about Siza and Phephe,

their living conditions are not okay. My heart is so heavy. I haven't seen them in a while, it hurts so

much. I hope my child and hers are okay. My husband walked in and drew me back from my thoughts

Him "what are thinking about so deeply"

Me "nothing that will interest me"

Him "haibo everything about you my wife interests me"

Me "this wouldn't Dlamini"

Him "dammit man, Khuluma (talk) I won't beg some more, what is wrong" he shouts

Me "you screaming at me will not help with anything, I am worried, worried about my daughter,

only not the one you would take the bullet from, just the one you disowned for making one tiny

mistake, are you still interested?" he blinked a few times and swallowed then composed himself

Him "I will not have you talk to me like that"

Me "exactly my point, you shouldn't have bothered asking me"

Him "I disowned her because she didn't listen to me as her father, and because she humiliated us,



what she did was unforgivable, If I had allowed her have that child here my reputation would be

tainted, I am a responsible man,I will not let anyone take that away from you”

Me “continue living for the people Dlamini”

Him “I am a leader, whatever I do is for the benefit of my people, if I allowed her have a child in my

house, every girl in this village would have followed and I would allow that, we need order”

Me “right” I chuckle

Him “she chose her path not me”

Me “if that makes you sleep better at night my dear husband”

Him “my conscious is clean”

Me “for the pain you have cost my child Dlamini you will rot in hell, remember no evil deed goes

unpunished”

Him “I will pretend like this conversation never happened, I forgive you, you are my wife”

Me “but every word said cannot be taken back, my words will deal with you when you are alone and

I hope guilt eats you alive” I get up and go to the kitchen to cook

Siza

I wake up and the first thing I felt was pain, I wish I didn't wake up, it is better I sleep, sleep forever

and this pain will go away, but who will look after my baby girl, she needs me now more than ever, if

I die my child will suffer, no one will want her, I will not be selfish and die to leave my baby alone in

this cruel world, it is painful, too painful, but I named her Siphlelo because she is exactly that, my

safe heaven, my peace, my place of refuge, she will be there one to help heal me and my broken

heart, she is my happiness, no one but her, it is time I focus on her, Vusi doesn't want me and I will

not force him to. I will go back home and think of ways to rebuild my life, for Phephe's sake, I owe

her that much. The door opened and Mandla walked in

Him "good morning"

Me "hi" he gives me a faint smile and sit on the edge of the bed

Him "how are you feeling"

Me "pain, I feel nothing but pain, anger, betrayal, it hurts"

Him "I am so sorry Siza, I should have told you the truth" I let a tear fall"

Me "no it was not your place, I will get over this, it might take me a while, but eventually I will get

there" he nods and takes my hand

Him "definitely, Vusi is a fool to let you go. Any man that will marry you will be so lucky"

Me "I don't know if I will ever fall in love again, I think it's just going to be me and Phephe"

Him "never say never"

Me "thank you Vusi, thank you so much"

Him "I am happy to have helped" I wipe my tear

Me "my God will bless you"

Him "amen" I sigh

Me "I think I should go back to the village, I don't want to be in Palesa's way"

Him "you are my guest and you are not in anyone's way, I will drive you back to the village on

Friday"

Me "you don't have to do that, I will take a taxi, plus you have work"

Him "I will ask a colleague to cover my shifts"

Me "okay I won't win this one, so okay and thank you"

Him "everything will be okay I promise"

Me "I hope so, coz I won't be able to mother my child with this kind of pain and anger" he hugs me

Vusi

Sizakele shouldn't have come here, she shouldn't have, her job is to stay in that village and take care

of my daughter, not gallivanting, imagine her showing her face here, her actions could have cost me

Mercy then I would be in trouble with Razor, if she was smart enough she would have realised that

my silence means I no longer want her, but what am I saying,

the girl didn't even finish matric. I hope  
for her sake she went back to the village. My lady walked in  
disturbing my thoughts

Me "hey beautiful"

Her "hey handsome"

Me "are you okay now?"

Her "yes my love, you cleared the air, no farm Julia will come  
between us" I smile

Me "I am glad to her that"

Her "so do you think your family will like me"

Me "they will love you baby, I mean who wouldn't"

Her "I need to go shop for gifts"

Me "my mother would love that" she smiles

Her "I hope that girl will leave your parents place"

Me "I would love that, but our laws will not allow that"

Her "in that case, she must know her place, she is nothing but a  
baby mama"

Me "she will, I will ensure that"

Her "see why you are the best fiancé in the world" she giggles

Me "oh is that so mam"

Her "yes Sir, and I know you deserve a reward"

Me "I would love that"

Her "in that case sir let us go to our magic theatre" I grab her  
bridal style and walk upstairs.

Friday

Siza

The day finally came for me to leave this place, I couldn't wait to  
see my baby girl, and these past

few days have been so hard. I have tried getting over it but it is  
difficult, it cuts deeper than I

thought. All I want to do is come up with a plan to get out of  
the Khumalo house. Mandla tried his

best to help me and I really appreciate it so much. We got to  
the village and my daughter was so

happy to see, seeing her put everything to focus, I had to block  
the pain and keep the tears away.

She needed her mother strong, not the weakling that I have been these past few days. I was still at

MaNtuli's house, but I needed to go back and talk to Nonto after all she helped me.

Ma "yazi Siza, Phephe has been complaining about a headache and some dizziness"

Me "is it not from the iron rod Dali hit her with"

Ma "I thought so, I took her to the clinic but they said she should drink lots of water"

Me "thank you mama, I will look out for them if they worsen"  
she smiles

Ma "please do. Siza baby how are you holding up"

Me "it is painful mama, too much, I don't understand why he did this to me"

Ma "only he knows that baby, don't crack your skull thinking about that, it is time you pick yourself up"

Me "I plan to mama, I need to leave that house"

Ma "great step, and you can come stay with me"

Me "really mama, you wouldn't mind?"

Ma "I would love to have you two here, there is nothing left for you at the Khumalo's" I cried at least I

have an out

Me "thank you so much mama, thank you, I should go back, Nonto must be worried"

Ma "okay baby, I will see you when you are ready to move in okay?"

Me "thanks mama" I take Phephe and we start walking to that hell hole, as we approach I see his car

and his words ring more in my ears.

Phephe "is that baba's car?" I fake a smile

Me "yes baby" she didn't even respond she just ran to the yard. I sigh deeply, it is time to face the

man that took my heart and soul and broke them. I am broken because of him. God give me strength

Please react, leave a comment and share with others . love you

Siza's tribulations



## Chapter 08

Vusi

I am happy to be at home and to see my family and what is great is that my mother loves Mercy, she

is all over her like a bad rush. That means I won't have drama like I did with my mother and Sizakele.

I now see why it is important for a man to marry a woman his mother approves of. we were all

seated under the tree, except for my father who stood up and left after I introduced Mercy as the

woman I will be spending the rest of my life with.

Mama "wena makoti wami, don't worry about my husband, he is just strict you know, but I am

happy my son brought you"

Mercy "thank you so much mama"

Mama "welcome again, Vusi you have taste she is beautiful"

Me "she is right"

Mama "she will give me good looking grandkids"

Me "yes she will, kodwa mama where is Siza, did she go get Phephe from school"

Mama "that one hasn't been seen since Tuesday, and Phephe has been at MaNtuli's house"

Me "what she hasn't returned from the city"

Mama "she was in the city?"

Mercy "imagine mama, she came to beg Vusi to stay with her, it was so depressing to witness, she is just so desperate"

Mama "I hope you kicked her out wena Makoti"

Me "yes mama, I told her to leave our house"

Mama "you did well son" a second later my daughter appeared running

Phephe "baba, baba" I stood up and smiled

Me "hey nkosazana ka daddy" I pick her up and spin her around

Phephe "I have missed you baba, I thought you no longer want me and mama"

Me "I would never do that baby, I have missed you so much"

Phephe "I missed you too baba"

Me "how was school"

Phephe "it was great, we are reading a new book, I also wrote mama a letter"

Me "speaking of mama, where is she"

Phephe "she is coming, behind me, I ran as I saw your car" I was about to say something and she walked

through the yard, and her eyes landed on Mercy and I saw pain in her eyes but ignored it

Me "okay nana, tell me what happened to your forehead"

Phephe "Dali hit me with an iron rod because I was eating with the other kids" what, so Siza was tell

the truth, I gave my mother a death stare and she looked down in shame.

Me "I am sorry my love. Ma why would you do that, hit my daughter for food"

Mama "it was just an accident" I don't believe so.

Phephe "mama come hug baba, are you not happy to see him" she just walked passed us and went

to the hut they use, my daughter looked at me then Mercy with a questioning look

Me "oh nana, this is sis Mercy, she is daddy's fiancé"

Phephe "what is a fiancé baba"

Me "she is the woman daddy will get married to, she will be you mommy"

Phephe "but I have my mother, and baba why are you marrying her, what about Siza"

Me "baby you won't understand"

Mercy "yes baby girl you are still too young to understand, but I promise you will love me too"

Phephe "this is why Siza is sad. She is crying because you are hurting her baba and Siza never cries

but I saw her today at MaNtuli she was crying, baba you are hurting Siza and she loves you and she

prays for you every day but you hurt her and make her cry" my heart sank into my stomach, she got

off my lap and walked towards the hut

Me "phephe baby where are you going, you are still talking to baba"

Phephe "I am going to Siza, I don't want her to be alone and cry because if she is sad she might kill

her self, my teacher said we should be there for people when they are sad so that they don't hurt

them self. I want to be there for Siza so she doesn't hurt herself and die, who will I have if mama

dies" I couldn't contain my tears but I wiped them quickly and she got in the hut and closed the door

Mama "leave her she is just a child"

Me "did you hear what she just said ma?"

Mercy "your mom is right she will come around baby"

Me "I hope so coz it feels like she believes she has no one but her mom in the world" my dad

appeared

Him "do you blame her, you left her to suffer with her mother here while your mother mistreats

them, Siza is all that little girl has, you are a useless father Vusi, I am disappointed in you. I am

ashamed to call you my son. You haven't seen them for months and the first thing you do after

coming back is introducing another woman, what about Siza, she has been through so much because

of you, yet she had to suffer alone while you got on with your life in the city and now she is not good

enough to be your wife, Mr Lawyer, The God I serve is not

asleep. You will reap what you sow, and  
when the day comes do not suffer amnesia for all you have  
done to this girl” my father’s words hit home  
Mama “stop that, don’t guilt trip my son, so is it a must to  
marry Sizakele?” my dad just looked at  
her then me and walked away. His words were digging deeper in  
my heart.

Siza

He just had to come back here with her, seeing his car, I thought  
maybe he is here to tell me that he  
made a mistake and that he didn’t mean all that he said, and  
that he loves me and wants to take me  
and Phephe to the City, but I guess I am just naïve. I never  
thought he would do me like this, but I  
guess it is true when they say, never say never. I quickly wipe  
my tears as Phephe walks in

Her “mama, are you okay”

Me "I am fine nana, are you happy to see baba"

Her "I was, but he say's he is marrying that lady"

Me "that's nice, you not happy?" she nods "why baby, she makes baba happy"

Her "baba was supposed to marry you and take us to the city with him"

Me "I always taught you that everything happens for a reason and that God will give you only what is meant for you"

Her "so you and baba were not meant to be?"

Me "yes baby, we were only meant to have you my love"

Her "so you are not sad that he is not marrying you?"

Me "I am sad my love, but I trust in God, don't you?" I smile at her

Her "I do Siza, I love you and please don't hurt yourself and die, I don't want to be left alone" my heart shattered

Me "I will never leave you baby, if I do it will only be God who took me, and he will make a way for you" she smiled and hugged me

Me "how would you feel if we went to live with MaNtuli for good?" she broke the hug with a smile

Her "I would love that Siza, we will be happy there without Dali

na bo malume (uncles)

Me "okay then, let's pack our things, we going to stay with MaNtuli baby" she stood up and got our bags and we started packing, she is so excited, I can't help but smile, she is perfect, Siphephelo sam

Mandla

I had to rush back to the city coz I had an emergency at the hospital, one that required my attention, I have been in surgery since I got back, only now I came out, my feet hurt, kodwa ijob ijob. I need to call my mother and let her know I am okay and she shouldn't worry. I pick up my phone and call her, she answers after forever

Mama "boy boy" I roll my eyes

Me "yebo my darling"

Mama "I was worried"

Me "sorry love wami, I was in the operating room"



Mama "okay boy, ufike kahle?"

Me "yebo mama, I did, how is Sizakele"

Mama "she is not okay, but she will with time, I asked her to come live with me"

Me "that is good mama, for her to heal she has to leave that place, and be around people who love her"

Mama "I will tell you once she moves in, I hope it will be soon though"

Me "okay love, I will increase your allowance to cover the three of you, plus patrol"

Mama "heiiii yes the generator will work full time with Phephe around nge TV yakhe" we laugh

Me "I must just get you electricity once, I will start with the research and start with the arrangements"

Mama "that will be nice, I want them to be happy and comfortable, they have been through so much ngeke"

Me "yeah they deserve a break, look Sthandwa sam I need to go back to work, I will send airtime

later, so you can keep me updated"

Mama "okay boy boy. I love you"

Me "love you too oulady" I hung up and go back to work.

All I ask is that everyone participates, please react, leave a comment and share with others, let's grow. Thanks for the support everyone.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 09

Siza

My daughter and I managed to pack everything that belonged to us and left without any of them seeing us, only Nonto knew about us leaving, it was night when I left, I did that on purpose, Phephe was so excited she didn't even want to say bye to her father and I was grateful for that, coz he might have fought me. We got to MaNtuli's house and she was happy to see us, she immediately turned on the generator for Phephe and she has been watching the TV since

Ma "we are going to have to set rules for her when it comes to that TV"

Me "I think so too mama, when she gets back from school, she does her homework then she can watch TV and 8pm she goes to bed"

Ma "that's perfect, I should ask Mandla to bring toys for her, she mustn't watch TV all the time"

Me "mama, I just want to say thank you once again, I really appreciate what you have done for my daughter and I"

Ma "I love you and Phephe, I want to see you two happy. I am happy that you agreed, this house can get lonely, plus I have someone to cook for me" I laugh

Me "you definitely do mama"

Ma "everything is gonna fine Siza, you will get over that boy, and I want you to let him go even from your heart, don't hold grudges, let him be happy with that woman, vengeance is for the lord"

Me "I will try mama, and I know God will give me the strength, after all he gives the toughest battles to his strong soldiers, this too shall pass it has to for

Siphephelo”

Ma “well- spoken Siza”

Me “I just want to fix my life ma, you know finish school maybe move to the city and attend

University” she smiles

Ma “I am happy to hear that nana, but you will go alone and leave my Phephe with me”

Me “I wouldn’t try taking her from you” we both laugh and my daughter walks in

Phephe “gogo, thank you for allowing us to stay with you, I love it here”

Ma “I am happy you agreed to come baby, we are one family now”

Phephe “I am happy to hear that gogo, Siza and I will finally have a family”

Me “yes baby, we finally have a family”

Ma “let’s go watch TV Siza will dish up for us, we will sleep late tonight, tomorrow you don’t have

school” my daughters excitement. Not even a day in here and we already feel at home.

Vusi

What my daughter said to me yesterday haunted me all night, I kept tossing and turning, I just

wanted it to be morning so I can go see her and spend the whole day with her, I have been

neglecting her that she feels if anything had to happen to Siza she would be alone in the world. I

need to make it up to her. I get up from the bed and make sure not to wake up Mercy, it is already

after 9am. I put on some sweat pants and vest then walk to their hut and knock but there is no

answer, she never sleeps till this time. I walk in and there is no one. Okay where did they go to this

early? I walk out and find my mom outside

Me "morning Dali, have you seen Siza and Phephe?"

Dali "no, but I am sure she went to the farms to work"

Me "who's farm" my dad appears and answers my question

Dad "whatever hires her, that poor girl slaves away cleaning

peoples farms and their homes to make

ends meet for your daughter, coz you never send her money” he said and waked back to the house

Me “ma, you haven’t been giving Siza money like I ask you to each time I transfer it to you

Dali “I buy groceries and she eats from the house, give her money for what don’t bore me in the

morning please” what is my mother forreal right now, she has to pay school fees, buy Phephe

clothes and toiletries, Siza probably thought I don’t support our girl but all along my mom isn’t giving

her a share of the money I send for her, I sigh and my brothers and their wives appear, I ask if they

haven’t seen them and they say she probably went to the farm t work, but Nonto just looked down

as if she knew something

Me “nonto, where are they” I say in an intimidating tone, my brother, her husband roared as he

could also see that she knows something

Nonto “she left last night, they are now staying with MaNtuli”

Dali “finally, she realised that she is not welcomed here” she

ululated

Me "mama you are celebrating my daughters departure?" she stopped and looked down

Dad "you should be celebrating, your slave has left, who will do all your chores now, but I say god

for her to finally stand up for herself"

Me "she can leave but my daughter is coming back, I will take her with me to the city"

Dad "try that and I will curse you boy, I dare you to try and brake that girl one more time, you come

from the jungle and want to take that child away from her mother, a mother who suffered to make

ends meet while you were living like a King with that girl who wears fake hair, I dare you Vusi

Khumalo, try and get Siphephelo from Sizakele, I will curse you"  
I swallowed hard

Me "Kodwa baba, she is also my daughter" he just ignored me

Dali "let them be for now, she will come running to you for help you will see" I am so confused

Thandiwe

This trying for a baby thing is not working, my husband is making all this unbearable, he isn't even trying to be romantic and gentle, I swear it's like he is sleeping with a prostitute, everything is so painful and he doesn't even care, he is pounding me like a piece of meat he bought at a street corner. I couldn't take it anymore and he just continued

Me "Sizwe please, it's painful. Please stop" he groaned

Him "wait I am almost done" he went on for what seemed like eternity

Me "please baby please" he groans louder and stiffens then stop and gets off me and goes to the bathroom and comes back

Me "hao you not gonna wipe me"

Him "stand up and go wipe yourself, you are not stuck to the bed"

Me "what is wrong with you, why do you treat me like this" he narrows his eyes



Him "Thandiwe I don't have time for this"

Me "if you really want us to have a baby, you will treat me good, my body will not be ready for a baby if I am stressed"

Him "go to the spa and get some therapeutic what not bull shit and relieve that stress or go shopping"

Me "you are something else shame"

Him "whatever, I am going to the club"

Me "that's all you know"

Him "I am attracted to gold diggers so I must make sure the gold is enough so I can have a good time"

plus I am trying for another kid, those little creatures are expensive hey, on the other hand

sweetheart, your taste is quiet expensive, so I need to work"

Me "you sick bastard" he smirked

Him "I love you too honey"

Me "go to hell Sizwe" he laughed

Him "like my mom always says, we vacation there from time to time. Anyway, we are having"

another session when I get back, prepare dear wife” he wore his clothes and walked out, my tears

fell, I cried my eyes out, this is all too much really.

Let's do best my people , react, comment and share

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 10

Thandiwe

I am tired of doing this, I cannot leave like this anymore and I can't divorce him, coz I will leave with

nothing, they made me sign an Non-Disclosure Agreement, Sizwe wanted to be sure that I am not

with him for the money, and because I was in love with him, I signed without hesitation, I can't go

back to the village, I wouldn't survive there I am used to the city now. If I am to divorce Sizwe I need

to be able to stand for myself, I need to find a way to save money or do got university so when I

leave I am able to stand on my own. I need to run it passed him coz if I do it behind his back there

will be hell to pay. We were still in bed, him obviously busy on his laptop

Me "honey"

Him "mmhhhh"

Me "I want to talk to you about something"

Him "I am listening"

Me "uhm I want to start doing something, like work or go back to school" he closed his laptop and

looked at me

Him "why?"

Me "I get bored at home Sizwe, all I do is clean, cook and take care of our son, I need to do

something more"

Him "see why we need another child, you won't have too much time on your hands, you will be

taking care of a new born child, and they are a handful when they are young"

Me "and when the baby is grown, what then"

Him "I guess we make another one"

Me "that's not fair Sizwe"

Him "why do you need to work, I make money, a lot of it, you lack nothing Thandiwe, if this is about

you making your own money, then I will pay you to stay at home and be my wife how's that?"

Me "it is not about the money, I need to do something with my life, I don't want to be a housewife"

Him "oh well honey, I don't want my wife to work"

Me "this is frustrating, I don't know why I bothered" he laughs

Him "go take a shower, I wanna try again"

Me "we just had sex 20 minutes ago, can I catch my breath" he gave me a stare and I got up.

Mandla

My mother called and told me that Siza and Phephe moved in, she is so excited, I am glad she will be

with people and also that Siza and her daughter are out of that

place. Everything seems to be coming along perfectly. I just got to my place after the longest shift, Palesa is in the lounge writing something.

Me "hey, what's for dinner"

Her "I was hoping we could go out, it has been a while you know" I sigh

Me "I just came from a 16 hour shift, I was hoping to eat, take a shower and sleep, can you be considerate"

Her "I am being considerate Mandla, I took a step and engaged us, I moved in because I knew you

are always busy to think of such, that is being considerate, look at me now, I spent the whole day

trying to write a letter to my family on your behalf" I paused trying to understand

Me "what letter Palesa"

Her "duh, a letter to come and pay for my Lobola" I burst out laughing

Me "what? Who gave you the go ahead to do such a thing, are you crazy, are you that desperate to

get married, I am a Zulu man, that letter is supposed to be written by my uncles, and who the fuck

said I want to send a letter to your family" I roared

Her "we are engaged, so it is required that you send a letter"

Me "I didn't ask you to marry you dammit, you engaged yourself"

Her "what do you mean you don't want to marry me?"

Me "it means exactly that, I am not getting married to you"

Her "okay we can have a long engagement then its fine"

Me "woman, you are not hearing me, I am not going to marry you, never"

Her "it is because of that girl from the village right, she is the reason you are changing your mind?"

Me "this has nothing to do with Sizakele"

Her "then why Mandla"

Me "I fell out of love with you the minute you changed Palesa, your change was the worst, i don't

want this relationship anymore, I am done with you"

Her "what, Mandla, babe, I know you are tired just go sleep will talk when you are well rested"

Me "I am not tired Palesa, I need you out of my house, and stop telling people we are engaged, i

have allowed this shit to go on for long, it is enough now" I walk away and I feel good damn

Vusi

I couldn't stop thinking about my daughter, I have failed Siphophelo, I am a bad father really, and

how could I have neglected her this much, she suffered even at the hands of her own grandmother, I

need to make it up to her, how I don't know. I was sitting next to the hut they used, deep in my

thoughts when my mother came to me.

Ma "what are you thinking about son"

Me "my daughter, I have failed her"

Ma "stop this, you have provided for her, I fed them and paid

her school fees”

Me “I wasn’t here for her, a child needs love and time not just money”

Ma “how would you have provided if you were in this village with her”

Me “mama you won’t understand”

Ma “listen to me, don’t make let your father make you feel bad for not marrying Sizakele, it

happens, you made a mistake and got her pregnant, you are not responsible for her family throwing

her out, marry Mercy and have other children with her. You can still be in Phephe’s life without

being with her mother. It happens, you are not the first. It is not a crime for Siza to work and

financially support Siphephelo” she was making sense a lot of it at that

Me “I guess you are right”

Ma “don’t try and take her with you to the city, you know she might cause problems in your

marriage co you failed to marry her mother”

Me “she must go to the best school though, maybe a boarding



school”

Ma “no the school in this village is fine Vusi”

Me “I will have to talk to Siza about visitations”

Ma “I don’t want you near that girl”

Me “that is going to be impossible, we have a child together”

Ma “whatever concerns Phephe will be discussed by me and her”

Me “okay then, let her know I will appreciate Phephe coming to me during school holidays;;

Ma “you want her to send that child with muti to break up your marriage and cause you problems so

you can go back to her, hei you and Mercy will come down here to visit her” I frown

Me “you know Siza is not like that mama”

Ma “a woman scorned is a dangerous woman son”

Me “I will talk to Mercy about this mama” I sigh

Siza

We just got back from church and my daughter is definitely not herself, she has been so quiet it is worrying me but mama thinks it is because she misses Vusi, it makes sense though. church was really nice, the pastor spoke of letting go and accepting that God allows some things to happen because he is preparing us for something bigger and better, he said pain is there to shape us, he also spoke of how we should trust in him even though we don't see a reason why. It was like he was talking directly to me, I even shed a tear.

Ma "yazi this Vusi thing is taking a toll on her, she is not even enjoying her favourite TV show"

Me "she is really worrying me mama"

Ma "she needs some time, she will be okay"

Me "I pray so" she appeared crying and I immediately went to her and kneel down to be her height

Me "hey my love, what's wrong? Why are you crying?"

Phephe "my head is painful Siza, I am spinning" I got so alarmed, I touched her forehead and she

was burning hot, oh Lord

Me "mama she is burning up" I felt tears approaching

Ma "aow Nkosi yami, we need to get her to the clinic" she started throwing up and I got more

scared and rushed to get a bucket for her to puke in, she was getting pale

Phephe "mama help me, Siza help me" I just cried

Ma "I need to run and get Vusi mama so he can drive us fast" she nodded and out of nowhere my

daughter collapsed, like having a seizure, her pupils to the back of her head the only part visible is

the white part, I streamed not knowing what to do

Me "phephe baby, don't do this to me, don't baby please, I need you. Siphephelo please nana please"

Ma "run and get Vusi, ask him to come drive us, run fast Siza" I didn't wait for her to ask twice, I ran

like I was hoping to win a gold medal or I wanted to break the world's record, that's how fast I was. I got

to the Khumalo house fast. I found Vusi, his woman and Dali under the tree

Me "Vusi please help me please, Phephe is not feeling okay, I

don't know what to do, you have to  
hurry"

Vusi "what, what happened" I was crying hysterically

Me "she she complained of her head hurting and then she..." his  
mom interrupted me

Dali "you are so desperate Sizakele, you now use Phephe to get  
Vusi's attention sis"

Me "Vusi please, she is your child, I wouldn't be here if it wasn't  
serious"

Vusi "its okay we can go check on her"

Mercy "I don't trust your baby mama, wait I am going to  
change"

Vusi "just hurry babe please" she got and disappeared for about  
20 minutes, I couldn't wait any

longer, I attempted leaving

Vusi "Siza wait, Mercy will be done soon"

Me "you might not care about Siphephelo but I do, she is the  
only person I have left, if you saw what

I saw you wouldn't even be waiting her waiting for your doll" I  
ran leaving them there.

Dali "I told you, she is jealous of your wife" she shouted loud enough for me to hear her, I ran faster back to the house. I was crying uncontrollably, how could Vusi put his daughter last, why is he so evil, even when she is sick she is still not a priority. I got back to the house and found MaNtuli sitting down with Phephe in her hands crying silently, my daughter was not moving anymore, she was so still, the sight of her that way broke my heart into a million pieces, it shattered my soul in the worst way possible, I was left broken and in the dark Ma "I am sorry Sizakele, I am sorry my baby" she said crying, I was just standing there like a statue with tears streaming down my face.

Me "why are you sorry mama" I ask, I need her to say it, coz it doesn't want to register from my conclusion, I need to hear it

Ma "oh Sizakele baby, she is no more, Siphephelo has left us" have you tried screaming but the huge lump in your throat makes it very hard for you to do so. I have felt pain in my life, but God knows the

one I am feeling right now was beyond pain itself. I just sank down and took my child from MaNtuli

and looked at her face

Me "shhhh, it's okay my love, you can sleep, mama will be here when you wake up, I promise, I will

make it alright when you wake up" my heart was refusing to believe the message my brain was

sending

Ma "Siza my baby, she is not waking up, she is gone, heaven couldn't wait for her, she is not coming

back Sthandwa sam" I finally managed to scream, and I just held my daughters lifeless body tighter,

my heart has finally heard my brain, Siphephelo is dead she is not going to wake up, she left me,

what will become of me, the only person I was holding on for has left me, I am all alone in this world,

why God, why do you resent me so much that you allow all these painful things to happen, I

accepted all that but it was just not enough that you also had to come take her, my reason for living,

the person I woke up every day for. I might as well die with her,

if It is true that you love me you will  
strike me dead now and let me follow my daughter.

Please react, leave a comment and share. Thank you for the  
continuous and growing support.

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 11

Siza

My heart was bleeding, I couldn't contain my tears, Vusi and his  
mother finally got what they wanted

they have succeeded in making sure that I am miserable, they  
have taken the only person that

meant the world to me, how do I go on without my baby, I stood  
up and carried my child, a lifeless

as she was I picked her up and walked out, MaNtuli was  
confused

Ma "Siza my baby, where are going, we need to take her to the

mortuary” I look at her

Me “I am taking her to Vusi and his mother, they did this, so let them feast on her body” I say crying

Ma “Sizakele come back nana, don’t do this please”

Me “my daughter died mama, she died coz Dali hit her with that iron rod, she died because Vusi

decided to wait for his wife to change while I told him that Phephe needed help” I cried some more

Ma “I know my baby but please” I ignored her and made my way to the house, the villagers were

already out looking at me with pity, they could tell what was happening, I couldn’t care about them,

my tears were flowing uncontrollably. I got to the Khumalo house and they were still under the tree

but Mercy was not there with them, I guess she is stil changing, they see me and stand up

Vusi “how is she now, please get in the car, Mercy will soon be done and we will go” I just stare at

him

Dali “didn’t you hear him Sizakele, get in the car and wait for my daughter in law to finish” I felt



rage, I was boiling with anger. I approach them and lay down Phephe's lifeless body next to them

Vusi "Siza don't put her on the ground, I said get in the car"

Me "you have finally succeeded in killing my child, I came to ask for help but like always, she was

not a priority to you, you mother hit your daughter with an iron rod and the consequences of that

blow finally claimed my daughter's life. Here is her body, you killed her, so feast on it, celebrate and

be merry" I wipe my tears and they were looking at me confused

Vusi "I don't understand, what do you mean she is dead" I just look at him

Me "your child's blood is on your hands, the both of you"

Vusi "no no no no Sizakele, my daughter is no more what do you mean" he picked her up and called

her name trying to wake her up. Soon as he registers that she is lifeless, he screamed shaking her

Me "she is not waking up, you killed her" he screamed some more, tears running down his face. His

city wife appeared from the main house, walking in heels

Mercy "baby what is going on, why are you crying like this" he

looked at her

Vusi "my baby girl died Mercy, she died because I wasted time getting to her, it is my fault,

Siphephelo baby wake up please baby, don't do this to daddy" I chuckled between the crying

Me "you were never a father to her, you chose to let her die so your wife can go look pretty on my

daughters expense" none of the said anything. He was still sobbing holding on to her, the wife had a

hand to her mouth, obviously shocked. Dali was just standing there looking guilty as hell. I charged

to Vusi and started hitting him.

Vusi "I am so so sorry Sizakele, I am deeply sorry please Siza I am sorry" he said crying and trying to

hold me but I just fought him, a car parked and MaNtuli walked out with two men

Ma "Siza baby stop it please, let us go home mama"

Me "they killed her mama, they killed my child, let them eat her body let them celebrate mama" she

managed to hold me and I cried in her arms

Ma "it okay baby, God knows why it happened. Boys please load

Siphephelo to the car so we can  
take her to the mortuary” the guys took my baby girl to the car  
and mama tried pulling me so we  
can leave, I stopped her and collected soil from the ground.  
Me “Vusi, you will never know the joy of being a parent again,  
you will never ever hear the cry of a  
child in your house, you will die without anyone calling you  
daddy. Dali you wicked woman, you  
hated my child so much and why I don’t know, may the spirit of  
my child haunt you for the rest of  
your life, you will never know peace, even in death you will never  
know peace” I say crying then I  
discarded the soil in my hand. I walk away to the car.  
Ma “baby please take back that curse, let God deal with them  
for you” I didn’t want to hear that.  
We got to the car and drove my baby to the mortuary.

Vusi

What have I done, what kind of father am I, I have failed as a

man, I failed to be there for my child, I  
have hurt Sizakele in the worst way possible, she lived for our  
daughter and now that she is no more,  
she is going to suffer, how could I have been so evil. The pain in  
my heart was too much now, I can't  
bear it, I can't imagine what Siza is feeling. I was still standing  
where she left me, I can't move, I keep  
thinking that maybe if I had rushed to her she would still be  
alive. Mercy came to me and hugged me

Mercy "I am so so sorry my love I am sorry"

Me "if only you didn't insist on changing, maybe my daughter  
would be alive right now"

Mercy "I know and I sincerely apologise baby, I am so sorry"

Me "that won't bring her back" she cried

Ma "you can't blame your wife Vusi"

Me "I am not blaming her. I blame you"

Ma "what?"

Me "you are the one who hit her with that rod, she suffered a  
head trauma and eventually died, you

killed my daughter Dali, and I will never forgive you for this”

Ma “please don’t talk like this, it was a mistake son” I chuckle and wipe my tears

Me “you hated Siphephelo with all your heart mama”

Ma “I didn’t hate her, she was my grandchild. She was my blood I loved her”

Me “you don’t have to pretend mother” she started crying and my dad appeared

Dad “you are such a hypocrite Vusi. You are as much to blame as your mother, you neglected her

and now you want to pretend like you cared for her”

Me “baba please not now, I am hurting please”

Dad “try and imagine how that poor girl is feeling, she loved that child with all her heart. She was

both a mother and father to Siphephelo, while you were having the time of your life in the city with

your Barbie girl. I hope guilt eats through you all days of your life” I cried. My father is also cursing

me, how did I get here though.

Ma “don’t curse your child Khumalo, he needs you now more than ever please baba”

Dad "you just shut up you evil woman, I don't want to even hear you breathe"

Me "baba I am sorry for disappointing you like this, I am sorry"

Dad "you should be sorry for yourself Vusi, the Gods will punish you for this, mark my words" I just

cried and he walked away leaving me with a broken heart, she is gone, my baby is really gone.

Siza's Mother

I couldn't believe my ears, this is the most painful news ever, oh my poor baby must be going

through a lot, and this is heart-breaking, I left work immediately after hearing that my grandbaby is

no more. My only worry is Sizakele. She must be feeling lost, I need to be there for her. I am packing

my bags, I will stay with her until she moves passed this, she needs me, and she needs her mother. I

couldn't stop my tears. My husband walks in

Him "haibo, why are you packing, where are you going?"

Me "I am going to be with my daughter"

Him "but there is no taxi going to the city at this time"

Me "I am not going to Thandiwe"

Him "that is the only daughter we have"

Me "to you maybe, but I still have another daughter and she needs her mother right now"

Him "I thought I made it clear that Sizakele is no longer our child, she disgraced us, I don't want you

near that girl" I stopped and look at him

Me "her child died Dlamini, Siphephelo is no more. She needs me, and I am going to be there for

her" he chuckled

Him "if you step out of this house and go to that girl don't bother coming back" I continue packing

Me "then so be it Dlamini" I take my bag and leave

Him "come back here, I am your husband and you will respect me, you will obey my laws"

Me "leave me alone baba, Sizakele is my child and I will be there for her in this trying time, and if it

means you will disown me too then it is fine” he looked at me eyes wide

Him “don’t you try me”

Me “I guess you and I will meet by the streets, I will call Thandiwe to come pack the rest of my things, since I am no longer coming cak”

Him “you will listen to what I am saying, go unpack that bag and start cooking”

Me “I know you are not deaf so I know you heard me, I am going to go be with my daughter” I

waked out and he kept on calling me to come back.

Please react, leave a comment and share. It motivates me really  
Siza’s tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 12

Siza’s mother

I felt liberated, standing up for my daughter like that did my soul good. If he is going to throw me out



because I chose to be by my child's side in this painful time then  
so be it. Sizakele has been through  
so much, pain seems to be following her everywhere and to  
think us, her family caused it first hurts  
more than she can ever imagine, a part of me hates myself, I  
should have stood up for her from the  
very day my husband threw her out, but I tried fixing my wrong.  
I get to MaNtuli's house and it is  
quite, the atmosphere is sad, there are no people yet, just 2  
neighbours, I walk in and the ladies are  
shocked to see me here since they know that my husband has  
forbidden us to see Siza, MaNtuli  
smiles as she sees me and hurries to give me a hug.

Her "oh MaDlamini, it is good to see you, oh thank you for  
coming, she will be pleased to see you  
sis"

Me "oh kodwa sisi thank you for all you are doing for my baby, I  
failed her as a mother but you  
stepped up for me, I am really grateful" I say crying

Her "it is okay sisi, I love your daughter she is a good child"

Me "where is she? How is she holding up?"

Her "oh my goodness, she is in the bedroom, she is not okay at all, this broke the little she had left,

Siza lived for Siphephelo, now that she is gone I don't know what will push her to want live again"

Me "oh mntanam, I need to be with her till she has healed sisi"

Her "knowing the situation with your family, it is fine you can be here with us and mourn that little angel" I smile

Me "ngiyabonga kakhulu, can I see her now?" she nods and leads me to the bedroom she is in,

MaNtuli has her on the matrass already, and she is already wearing a doek and a throw on her

shoulders, she looks besides herself, she is crying silently staring at one spot, she was holding

Phephe's favourite dress. She seemed so lost in her thoughts, pain that she was feeling could be

seen through her lifeless eyes, and the pain of seeing your child like that is too much. I walk and sit

next to her and only then she looked at me, and I saw a little glimpse of hope, oh thank God I came,

she needed me.

Siza "oh mamami, you are here, mama she is gone, my baby is gone" I take her in for a hug and she cry's in agony.

Me "sshhhhhh. It will all be okay Sthandwa sam, she is in heaven now, she will always watch down over you"

Siza "she was my purpose, how do I go on, I have nothing to live for now mama"

Me "you will live for her memory, you will make something of yourself, something that would have made her so happy, after all she was a happy and jubilant child"

Siza "it hurts mama, it hurts to my soul, Siphephelo sam"

Me "she will always be that to you baby, even in her resting place you will find your peace" I lay her on my lap and hush her until she is asleep. Then I go talk to MaNtuli.

Her "how is she now"

Me "hei sisi, she is hurting so much, but she is asleep now"

Her "I am glad she is sleeping, then the pain won't be too much"

Me "exactly sisi"

Her "I was hoping we could talk about the funeral arrangements"

Me "okay sisi"

Her "I thought we could have her funeral here"

Me "I would really appreciate that sisi, my salary is coming through in two days I will bury my grandbaby"

Her "I took her as my grandchild too, I would like to also contribute, we will give her a befitting burial"

Me "the good lord will bless you so much MaNtuli" she smiles

Her "Siza and I managed to pick out a nice coffin for her, and I paid all the morgue costs" I let out a tear, this woman is godly

Me "I will buy the food and the cow then"

Her "okay sisi, but I will still chip in something, I am just waiting on Mandla so he can tell me where he would like to contribute"

Me "have you informed him yet?"

Her "I am going to call him now"

Me "okay sisi, I think we should go buy baking ingredients, so when people come offer us their condolences we can give them cookies and tea"

Her "good idea, we will ask one of these ladies to go, I don't want us to leave Sizakele alone"

Me "Okay thank you sisi, again God will bless you and your family for your pure heart"

Her "I receive sisi, we need to hold hands and be there for our daughter" we hug and the two neighbour ladies looked at us in total admiration

Mandla

I had a hectic week, so I decided that I will chill with Steve and unwind, Vusi is still not back from the

village so it will be just us, well Palesa is being stubborn about moving out, but I don't have her time,

I am going to give her 2 days for her to leave my house after, if she doesn't move out I am calling the

police to throw her out. Steve clears his throat and I look at him

Him "did you call me here to blues or to drink and have fun"

Me "sorry man, I just have a lot on my plate"

Him "what's up"

Me "I broke things off with Palesa and she is being difficult about it"

Him "you did what? What the hell, why man?"

Me "after what she did, I fell out of love with her man, she has been crazy, she engaged herself,

moved in without my permission and just a few days ago, she was writing a letter to her own family

on my behalf, imagine" he busted out laughing

Him "what the hell, she is crazy man, who does that, no no good thing you ended things damn

dude"

Me "exactly, she is too desperate now, plus she is a liability nje, spends my money on useless

things"

Him "bra tell me about it, she is good enough as a side thing not

a wife" I laugh this one can't stick

to one woman, my phone rings interrupting our conversation,  
it's my mom, I smile and answer

Me "love wami"

Her "Mandla" she says dryly, okay this is not like my mom

Me "how Sthandwa sam, yini you sound down" I hear her cry on  
the other side of the call

Me "mama, talk to me what's going on, you are scaring me  
manje"

Her "you need to come home boy boy, Sphephelo has left us" I  
widen my eyes shocked

Me "what do you mean she has left us?"

Her "she died Mandla, Phephe died today after church" what no,  
man oh God Siza of lord

Me "mama what happened, how is Siza?"

Her "remember Dali hit her with that rod, she has been having  
serve headaches and dizziness, she

complained again today then suddenly, she started vomiting  
and out of nowhere she fainted like she

was having a seizure, then Siza went to ask Vusi for help, but as  
always they didn't care, they had to

wait for that girl to change her clothes wasting more time, and she died in my arms while I waited

for Vusi, your friend is evil Mandla. Sizakele is broken boy she is hurting so bad” I let a tear out and

Steve gave me a concerned looked

Me “I will be there tonight, I need to sort out my work schedule and ask for leave”

Ma “thank you boy boy”

Me “be there for Sizakele mama please”

Ma “I will boy, and good thing is her mother is also here”

Me “that is great, I will see you later then ma” we say our goodbyes and I hang up

Steve “bruh what’s up?”

Me “your friend messed up mfethu”

Steve “what did he do now” I explain all my mother said to me

Me “now his only child died”

Steve “this is fucked up, his mother is crazy, why would she do that, Iron rod bafo, and damn him for

choosing to let Mercy doll up and his daughters expense”

Me “I tell you bafo, the little girl, has been bleeding into her



brain to death. I need to drive down to

the Village, to help my mother with the arrangements”

Steve “I am definitely going with you, I need to punch that fool.”

Me “don’t waste your time, we will be busy with the arrangements to even notice that fool”

Steve “i get you man, what time should we leave? Whose car are we taking?”

Me “we will leave in 2 hours, and we can take your SUV its bigger, we will able run errands with it,

and oh we are far from town, so you will want to carry enough cash on you”

Steve “you are really from Wakanda” we both laugh, and leave the club to go pack and make work

arrangements

Siza

Seeing my mother here made a huge difference in my heart, even though the pain still runs deep but

her being here with me calms me, I miss my daughter so much,

just left me without warning, at least  
if she fell ill then I would have prepared a part of me for this,  
but it was all so sudden. My heart was  
never ready for this. How do I accept this and move on, how to I?  
The bedroom door opened and it  
was my mother's (mama and MaNtuli)

MaN "you are awake baby, let me go make you something to  
eat"

Me "no thank you mama, I am not hungry"

Ma "kodwa Sizakele, you need to eat baby"

Me "maybe later mama"

Ma "okay baby, we have already planned the funeral, so we  
wanted to know when you would like to  
lay her to rest"

Me "I gave birth to her on a Thursday, so I would love to bury  
her on a Thursday"

MaN "okay Sthandwa sam, we will let the mortuary know okay"  
I smile

Me "thank you both so much"

Ma "all will be okay my baby, just mourn your baby girl, deal with this pain" I let out a tear and they

both hug me. we hear someone clear their voice, we look up and it is Dali and her son, I stand up

Me "you have the nerve to show up here, did you come to really see that she is dead?"

Vusi "mamakhe please, I am just here to mourn our daughter with you please"

Me "she was not yours, you were just a sperm donor Vusi"

Vusi "please don't talk like this Siza please. I know I didn't show it much, but I loved Siphephelo she was my baby"

Me "do not talk about my child Vusi, she was nothing to you but a burden which you regretted and that is okay"

Dali "I am so sorry Siza please, allow us to be here and mourn her" I laugh

Me "Vusi take this witch you call mother and get out of here"

Ma "baby come down Sthandwa sam"

Me "listen to me and listen carefully, I don't want to see you anywhere near my daughters funeral,

you killed her so there is no need to come here with your crocodile tears, I want nothing to do with

you the Khumalo's. Take your wife and go back to the city and leave me to bury my baby"

Vusi "Siza please, I need to say my goodbyes to my baby, please allow me I beg you"

Me "get the hell out of this house and never come back"

Dali "Sizakele please sisi, hate me I understand but please allow Vusi to bury his daughter too"

Me "I said get the hell out" I say throwing shoes at them, are they here to mock me and cause me

more pain, they killed her isn't that enough

Ma "I think it is better you leave" my mother say's to a weeping Vusi, mxm crocodile tears

Vusi "I know I wronged her MaDlamini but please beg her for me please"

MaN "we will try, but please leave your presence is upsetting her" he nods and take his mother and

they leave.

Not edited bakithi, I was racing against time, I am very busy.

Please react, leave a comment and  
share with others. Participation is everything I tell you

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 13

Siza

Tomorrow we are laying my baby girl to her final resting place,  
it is hard to tell you the truth but with  
each passing day, I learn to accept that she is not coming back,  
even if I can cry river Jordan. Today I  
am going to wash her body and dress her, in that pink and white  
favourite dress of hers, she loved so  
much, she would beg me to allow her wear it every Sunday, I  
wish she can wake up and just tell me  
that she loves me then go back to her eternal sleep. My mother  
opened the door and smiled at me

Ma "how are you feeling?"

Me "I will be fine mama"

Ma "you will be Sthandwa sam, give yourself sometime"

Me "yes mama, and thank you for coming to be with me, I truly appreciate it" we hug

Ma "I love you ntombazane yam"

Me "I love you too"

Ma "now let's go baby" I smiled at her and we walked out hand in hand. Mandla drives us to the

mortuary and mama and I walked in, I stopped in my tracks, am I ready to see her lifeless body

again? Tears were not far and I didn't even try to hold them in

Ma "shhhhh, it's okay sisi, if this is too hard for you I will do it alone" I just continued crying

Me "no mama I want to give her the final bath, brush her pretty hair and tell her I love her"

Ma "we will stand here till you are ready, take your time" I sigh and wipe my tears then we walk in

Me "I am fine now, we can go in mama" she smiled and led the way. They show us her body and I

start cleaning her, she looks so peaceful, I manage to keep my tears in, and decide to think of her

when she was at her happiest, I laugh

Ma "what is funny baby"

Me "I remember when she lost her tooth and someone at school told her that the tooth fairy will

bring her money, she was so excited but I didn't have any money on me. I had to make a plan so I

cooked her favourite meal and took the dress she had forgotten about, I placed them where she had

kept her tooth when she fell asleep, I took the tooth and kept it, when she woke up she found the

dress and tooth, her excitement was heart-warming, she said she felt really special coz she will have

the dress for longer than money, coz she would have just bought sweets with that money"

Ma "let me guess, this is the dress" I nod and smile with a tear dropping

Me "I will miss her so much" she came to my side and hugged me as we cry together

Ma "god will give you other children, they will not replace Phephe but they will make you happy"

Mandla

The atmosphere in the house is tense, everyone is hurt, that angels passing really broke everyone, she was such a bubbly child, I myself will enjoy my TV buddy when I visit. Steve has really been of help, we managed to arrange everything, and we even contributed and bought the cow and decided that we will erect a tombstone for Phephe. Siza was emotional about that but she showed that she really appreciated our efforts, we are laying her to rest tomorrow and I just want Siza to heal and moved but this painful experience. Steve and I were chilling at my house, and Vusi's car parked outside and he came to join us

Steve "what the hell is he doing here?"

Me "I don't know man, but we will find out soon" he arrives at the corner we are seated

Vusi "gents"

Me "sure bafo"



Steve "yah Vusi" he sighs

Vusi "I am sure you know what happened hence you are this cold towards me, but gents believe me

I am sorry for what I did, I was I could just turn back the hands of time and" Steve interrupted

Steve "and you cannot man so don't bullshit us, you are a coward you chose pussy over your own

daughter, yes you wanted nothing to do with her mother, but your kid man, she needed you"

Vusi "I know this, and I feel guilty enough, and the thought of not being able to attend her funeral

kills me more, it is painful even for me, but I need you guys, I need my G's" he was crying

Me "who are we to judge man, seat down, but soon as Siza comes back you need to leave"

Vusi "how is she? She refused me to help with the funeral arrangements and refused to accept money"

Me "she is not okay man, she is broken, yeah everything is ready, even the team that will erect her tombstone"

Vusi "who is responsible for that, I could pay for that at least"

Steve "Nah. Mandla and I already covered that, nothing is needed"

Me "yeah everything is good, plus Siza would be angry if she found out I allowed you to pay for

anything, sorry bafo" he wiped his tears

Vusi "I regret everything that happened that day, I failed my baby girl bafo, I hurt Siza and she didn't

deserve it one bit" we tried comforting but he just cried so painfully we didn't even know what to

say to him anymore.

Thandiwe

Things have been better in my marriage, okay it is not all rosy and all, but when it comes to Sizwe

and me, rosy and all those romantic things are not part of our vocabulary. He flew to Botswana

yesterday and he gave me the permission to visit my parents, I has been a while since I saw them. So

I am almost at the their house, my son is sleeping in his car seat as I park outside, I remove him and go place him inside, my dad is alone in the house listening to the radio, he doesn't look okay at all.

Me "hey daddy, how are you?"

Dad "oh Thandi ka baba, I didn't hear you come in"

Me "that is because your mind is far away"

Dad "forgive me baby, how was your drive"

Me "just fine thanks, Sizwe asked me to give you this" I hand him the money

Dad "oh thank you, were is he"

Me "he went to Botswana on business" he nods

Me "where is ma?" he sighs deeply

Dad "you mother left me and chose that good for nothing sister of yours"

Me "what that doesn't seem like mama, what happened?"

Dad "her daughter that little girl died" I gasp for air, oh my God

Me "Sizakele's daughter died, but how what happened, she must be devastated"

Dad "I don't know what happened"

Me "I see why mama will rush to her side, I would also need my mother if I lost my child"

Dad "mmmhhhh"

Me "mama will be back baba, just try and understand where she is coming from"

Dad "she is my wife and she chose that girl over me" I sigh, can my dad hear himself

Me "baba I know that you said we should never talk to Siza, but she is still her daughter, she acted

the same way any mother would" he shoots me a death stare

Dad "I know you just got here but trust me I wouldn't mind kicking you out with your son"

Me "I am sorry baba" I stand up and leave the room, my father is ruthless God, even when his

daughter is in such pain he insists on wanting nothing to do with her, it is scary, what will happen if I

get on his wrong side

We like, we comment and we share

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 14

Narrated

The day of little Phephe's funeral arrived and as expected it was such an emotional day, everyone

was hurting, but Sizakele hasn't shed even a tear, she looked so lost and everyone in their right

frame of mind could see that pain was eating through her, she was broken, it was like she was back

to blocking the fact that her daughter was no more. The service was held at the Ntuli household, the

church people came as well as Siphephelo's classmates, and they sang a beautiful song for their

mate, which made everyone tear up. The service moved to the burial site and the pastor performed

the burial rights, and the family and close friends were asked to come and pour soil in the open

grave, Siza's turn came but she was still silent with no tears, but soon as she got to the open grave of

her baby, she screamed in agony and did what everyone wasn't expecting, she jumped into the grave screaming her daughter's name, she was begging for God to bring her back, she promised to protect her better, she vowed to never let anything happen to her if only He could bring her back to her. The pastor asked them to let her be for a minute so she can get rid of as much pain as she could, they kept on singing while she was crying in the grave, it went on for minutes and everyone even the men shed a tear, they had never seen someone so broken before, death was nothing new but the way it had affected Sizakele it was nothing they have seen before. Her crying subsided and Steve and Mandla got her out of the grave and Mandla carried her back to the seat without putting her down, he kept on comforting her. MaDlamini and MaNtuli were so hurt to see her like that, the ceremony progressed, and the man finally went to fill the grave with soil and the team started erecting the tombstone, it was so beautiful, fit enough for and angel

princess. Siza was looking at it with admiration, a part of her was pleased that her baby's final resting place was a befitting one. On the other side of the grave site, Vusi stood by the tree hiding so people don't see him, he was crying so painfully, guilt eating through him, he wished he did everything differently, he wished he had given Phephe all the time and love in the world, he saw Siza jump into their daughters grave and that had him tear up even worse. The team finished with the tombstone and the pastor performed a service for it as well. Once done, Mandla gave a word of thank you and asked the villagers to go back to the Ntuli home to have food and refreshments. He carried Siza to his car and everyone else walked to their transport and went to the house. Once everyone left, Vusi crept his way out of his hiding place and made way to his daughters grave, he saw how beautiful the tombstone is, but got hurt because he couldn't bury his own child, nor contribute anything, he sat down and started begging

Siphephelo to forgive him, and he kept on telling her that he loved her and wished he said it more often while she was still alive, he begged that she looks after Siza and to also forgive him for hurting her mother like that. He stayed for almost 2 hours crying and talking to her silent grave. Then went back to his father's house with a heavier heart.

1 month later

Siza

With each passing day, I heal a little, I will never forget my baby, my best friend and little sister, my mother and MaNtuli have been great, without them I wouldn't have found my strength, Mandla has also been a great friend to me. I haven't looked at my daughters belongings, so today I decided to go through her schoolbag and I found a letter addressed to me, it was decorated with flowers and hearts she drew and coloured herself, it was so beautiful, I tear up and smile, it no longer hurts like



before but the pain is still there. I open the letter and it reads

Dear Sizakele, mama wami

I am writing my letter to tell you that I love you with all my heart and I want you to never cry

because of Dali. I will grow up be a Dr and I will buy you a house in the city and you will never be sad

again. You are the best mother in the world. You buy me dresses and cook me my delicious food,

you take care of me even when you are tired from cleaning the farm. Please buy me the food from

the white man's car again, I enjoyed that day very much.

Phephe wakho

Oh my baby girl, she loved me, she appreciated all the little I did for her, she never wanted me to

cry, I will honour that, I will no cry anymore, because she never wanted to see me like this, my

mother walks in and finds me wiping my tears and smiling

Ma "it is good to see you smile, what is the reason behind that beautiful smile?" I hand the letter to

her

Me "I found that in her schoolbag" she let out a tear and smiled

Ma "she was a special child, this is beautiful, keep it with you as a reminder of her love"

Me "this letter somehow healed a part of me"

Ma "that is a good thing, I didn't want you to mourn forever my baby"

Me "I will live my life for me now, that is what she wanted, to see me happy"

Ma "every child wants a happy mother baby, I am sure she is smiling down on you"

Me "I hope so mama, I will always carry her in my heart"

Ma "that's all you need to do, I love you baby"

Me "I love you too MaDlamini, and thank you for being with me through this"

Ma "I am your mother I will do anything for you" we hug and to

tell the truth that letter worked

magic on my soul, see why I named her Siphephelo even in death she still gives me solace

Vusi

It has been the hardest month but I have finally accepted that she is not coming back, I could blame

myself and all but that won't bring her back, the best next thing is for me to go on with my life and

learn from my mistakes. I have been burying myself in my work to help me cope and kind of

neglecting Mercy, so today I decided to be at home and spend time with her before she gives up on

us, I can't lose her too. I was watching TV in the lounge and she walked in and sat next to me

Her "are you okay?"

Me "yes babe, and sorry for being cold for the last few weeks"

Her "I totally understand my love, you lost your child and I am

partly to be blamed for that and I am  
sorry”

Me “don’t blame yourself, we need to move past that and plan  
our future”

Her “I would love that babe”

Me “I was thinking it is time I send that letter to your father”  
she screamed

Her “oh my love that is good news, please get to it, I will start  
looking for the best wedding planners

in town” I laugh

Me “let’s hope your dad doesn’t charge me an arm and a leg” we  
both laugh

Her “I will talk to daddy love”

Me “don’t you dare, I will pay whatever he wants for you my  
Queen” she blushes

Her “it is great to hear that my baby” I kiss her

Her “have you spoken to your mother?”

Me “I don’t want anything to do with my mother babe”

Her “wont she be needed in our wedding though?”

Me “I will make other arrangements with my aunts babe, don’t

stress”

Her “I know she hurt you baby, but she is your mom, you need to talk to her, even if you guys don’t

back to being as close as you used to” I sigh

Me “I’ll think about babe, but I am not promising you anything”

Her “that is all I ask for love”

Me “I love you Mercy” she blushed

Her “and I love you Khumalo” she says with her snobbish accent that turns me on each time

Siza’s Mother

I am sitting with MaNtuli and Siza outside, basking in the sun, we are having a light conversation and

my daughter seem brighter today, that letter Phephe wrote did her well, and it is great to see her

smiling and laughing again, I want her to be okay that would bring joy back to me as her mother.

MaNtuli said something and we all burst out laughing but our moment is ruined when my husband

parks his car and walked in, we are staring at him and he stops in front of us and clears his throat

Him "sanibonani (greetings) MaNtuli answers while Siza and I remain silent

Her "yebo Dlamini"

Him "I hope you are well, I came to talk to my wife, Nkosikazi can we please have a word" I look at my daughter and she nods

Me "okay" I stand up and we walk to his car and get in, I fold my hands and wait for his to speak

Him "I miss you mfazi wami (my wife) when are you coming back home?"

Me "I thought you told me never to come back to your house, should I come be with my daughter"

Him "I know and that was wrong of me"

Me "what are you saying"

Him "I am saying you can come back home"

Me "I still want to be with my daughter, I will come back only if you accept her back"

Him "I won't do that, I still want nothing to do with her, but if you want to have a relationship with

her you can go ahead but please keep her out of my house"

Me "how will I be sure that you won't change your mind once I am back in your house"

Him "I am a man of my words you know me"

Me "I don't know, I will think about it"

Him "what is there to think about"

Me "a lot actually, Sizakele still needs her mother" he sighs

Him "how long do you need"

Me "I will get back to you Dlamini, I need to talk to my daughter first"

Him "you want to involve her in our marital issues now nkosikazi?"

Me "I will make contact when I have reached a decision, uhambe kahle (go well)" I got out of the car

and walked back to my daughter and MaNtuli. I will talk to Siza about this later on

My lovieş, please do best, react, comment and share. My silent

readers show yourselves tuuu

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 15

Siza

I have been thinking long and hard about my future, I am only 23 years and I can still offer the world

so much, my daughter wanted to be a Dr so I think I will be one just to fulfil her dream, thinking

about studying that long is scary but for her memory I will do it, my mother refused going back to my

father because she wanted to be with me, but she must go back now, I am happy that she finally

chose me, I will forever be grateful to her, but it is time she goes back home to her husband coz this

bird is ready to spread her wings, i asked both this incredible woman in my life to seat down so I can

talk to them about my future plan. They are sitting in front of me looking anxious



Me "you don't have to look at me like that you know" I laugh and they relax

Ma "what is it that you wanted to talk to us about baby"

Me "firstly I want to thank you too so much, you have been the best mothers ever, I love you guys so

much. And mama I will like you to go back to your husband, we will still have a relationship without

hiding at least, he doesn't want me and that is okay, but you do and I am grateful, also you love him

and this time you get to have the both of us without lying" they were crying

Ma "I don't want to leave you just yet Sizakele"

Me "I know mama, but it is time I left" their eyes widened

MaN "left to where Siza?"

Me "I want to go to the city, write my matric again and enrol in medical school" they looked at each

other and ululated, I just laughed

Ma "oh this is the most heart-warming news ever" I smile

MaN "I am so proud of you for choosing this step"

Me "thank you my Queens"

Ma "I will send you money each month so you can survive and pay for that rewrite, then we will find you a bursary for university"

MaN "I will call Mandla immediately about accommodating you"  
I smile

Me "I just want to do this on my own, figure out the world alone, I have depended on people before and it left me broken, I need to make it out on my own, I don't want to owe my success to anyone but God"

MaN "you make so much sense, but promise you will always ask for help when it gets tough"

Ma "we are proud of you Sizakele, but I am sending you that money each month"

MaN "me too, at least we will sleep better at night knowing you have food and rent is paid" I laugh,  
these two won't give up nje, I might as well let them be

Me "okay fine, I will accept the monthly allowance then"

Ma "my daughter will be a Doctor, I am so proud" she wiped her tear

MaN "when are you planning to leave"

Me "I have been in communication with Nonto's cousin in the city, she once helped me out. I asked

her to find me accommodation and a good school to rewrite, and she has registered me and found

me a place to stay, I sent her money to do all these things and I will be leaving soon as day after

tomorrow"

Ma "so that's why you have been so sneaky these past few days Sizakele" I laugh

Me "I just wanted to make you proud"

Ma "I am so proud, more than you can imagine" we smile and notice MaNtuli crying, I quickly went

to hug her

Me "what's wrong Sthandwa sam"

MaN "why are you leaving so soon"

Me "my classes start in a week so I need to familiarise myself with the place"

MaN "it makes sense baby, I am just so sad that you are leaving us so soon my love, I will miss you"

Me "I will visit frequently I promise" she smiled and my mother came to join in our hug

Ma "I want you to go there and stayed focused on your goals"

MaN "don't forget to put God before anything"

Me "I will, I am blessed to have you guys as our mothers"

MaN "we need to prepare a feast, plus I have bottles of wines  
Mandla always brings me"

Ma "it has been a while since I had some, it would be nice" I  
laugh listen to these two old woman

MaN "you better not start drinking alcohol and getting drunk in  
the city" I laugh, I am truly blessed

to have these two really, I am happy they are proud of me.

Mandla

This woman is trying me I swear, she has become the devil that  
tests me, I honestly don't know why

she can't leave me alone, she has been blowing my phone,  
showing up at my house now she is

coming over to my work place, I don't know what to do. Here

she is in my office looking all sexy as

fuck, I don't want to stand up so she can see my erection, and it has been a while since I got some

dammit, but I won't touch her never

Me "you can come here even naked Palesa I won't touch you"

Her "oh come on Mandla, I know you miss me"

Me "don't flatter yourself" she wore her coat and sigh

Her "what is your problem Mandla, I am trying here"

Me "I don't care, I told you we are done"

Her "I know I am responsible for us drifting apart but please I will go back to the woman you fell in

love with"

Me "don't do anything for me Palesa"

Her "I beg you, I saw my mistakes and I will work on them not only for you but to better myself"

Me "you do that but leave me out of it, you are not someone I can built a future with hey"

Her "you are hurting me"

Me "you've done far worse to me, you will get over it, I did"

Her "whoever she is, I will find her and she will know me well"

Me "don't waste your time, there is no she to find, rather use that time to do something with your

life"

Her "you are really trying me here Mandla"

Me "just leave before I call security"

Her "okay fine"

Me "yeah fine, don't ever come here"

Her "you will be mine again baby, trust me" she winked at me then left, I just sighed and went to

check on my patients

Mercy

I am meeting with my sister somewhere near her apartment in Braam, this is not my scene though, I

don't understand why she chose to leave like average person, when she could just have an

apartment somewhere in the North, imagine sharing your space with others mxm, she should just

accept dad as he is and stop this nonsense, she walks in looking so pretty

Olivia "he sis, sorry I am late, I had class"

Me "it's fine babe, how are your studies going"

Olivia "it is hectic I tell you, but I will survive I always do, how is being the daughter of a rich man and

fiancé to a lawyer going" I laugh

Me "it is fabulous darling, no stress no sleepless nights"

Olivia "that is good to hear big sis" I smile and we placed our order

Me "uhm Liv, dad misses you, he asked that we meet him for dinner Wednesday night" she rolls her

eyes

Olivia "why though, arg I hate being in his presence"

Me "will you ever forgive him though"

Olivia "no Razor is a ruthless bastard Mercy"

Me "but you accept his money, hypocrite much" she remains

silent, fuck I shouldn't have said that

Me "sorry baby sis, I didn't mean that"

Olivia "its fine Mercy" I sigh

Me "I love you okay and I just want us to be a family again"

Olivia "I love you too and I will try just for you"

Me "that is all I am asking for my love"

Olivia "count me in on that dinner"

Me "he will be so thrilled" she fakes a smile

Olivia "you will owe me big time"

Me "oh boy wonder what this will cost me" she laughs and sips her cocktail

Olivia "not much don't worry" I laugh and we continue drinking, I enjoy my sisters company so

much, she is refreshing very different from me

Please react, leave a comment and share with others, your participation is a motivation to me

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 16



Mercy

I am happy that my sister finally agreed to give my dad, there has been bad blood between the two,

well let me rephrase Olivia hates dad for a reason I understand well enough but this happened years

ago she must just let it go really, Daddy is truly sorry for what he did and I hope today they can get

over their differences, so we can be a family again. I miss having both my dad and sister in my life

happy and getting along, my mom wouldn't like this at all, God bless her beautiful soul. I was fixing

my hair and a kiss to the neck came through, I blush

Me "oh hey honey"

Him "hey baby, how was your day"

Me "I went out shopping for a dress, dinner with dad and Liv"

Him "how did you convince your stubborn sister to meet with your pops"

Me "she is doing this for me babe"

Him "I just hope they do not kill each other" I laugh

Me "oh Vusi stop joking like that"

Him "what happened between those though?"

Me "that is a story for another day, but just know daddy really hurt Liv, and made her witness something painful"

Him "you scaring me now" I laugh

Me "you know the type of man dad is love, why would you be scared though"

Him "your father is a scaring man Mercy, no offence"

Me "non taken baby, I know how Razor can get love"

Him "at least you are not in denial about"

Me "yeah, I just pray they get along after today, they need to get along before our wedding"

Him "don't give up on them, even if today doesn't work out, keep on trying till you get there"

Me "I won't give up baby, my mom wouldn't want me to, they have to make up"

Him "they will" he hugs me from behind and I smile

Me "okay let me finish, I don't want to be late"

Him "let me leave you to it, I will go take a shower so long"

Siza

Today is the day I am finally going to the city to pursue my dreams, to make something of myself and

make those who love me proud, I want my daughter to sleep in perfect peace knowing that her

mother is starting to live her life and be happy. The two oldies are proud of me for taking this step

but the fact that I am leaving and going to stay alone with strangers is not sitting well with them,

they must understand that I am a big girl now and I can take care of myself, like I always have. They

are crying, giving me hug after hug. At least the taxi is still 3 people short before departure so it gives

them enough time to let it all out. Yesterday I went to Visit Phephe's grave to let her know about my

trip and all my plans, and it felt good like she could hear me and she approved of my plans, coz I left

the graveyard feeling more lighter.

Ma "baby please take care of yourself, I hear the city is dangerous"

Me "I will Sthandwa sam, I will look out for myself"

Ma "and focus on school, remember why you are doing this, stay away from any destructions but

also enjoy yourself this will be the first time you are your age and not responsible for other people" I

smile at her

Me "I will mama, don't worry I make you proud"

Ma "I am already proud of you sweetheart" she kisses my lips and I move to MaNtuli

Me "darly wam, don't cry please"

MaN "I am just so happy Siza, you making us so proud"

Me "thank you for everything mama God bless and keep you for me"

MaN "lalela ke sisi (listen then) I know you will have eyes and see pretty City boys, I want you to

choose a good boy who will respect you and your body, a God

fearing boy baby, and please come

back with a degree not a one with eyes" my mother and I burst out laughing

Me "aow kodwa ma"

MaN "heiii Sizakele these things happen we know, just choose the right boy who will have the best

intentions with you and also remember what your mother said. Focus more on school baby, and we

will be behind you all the way"

Me "I hear you Sthandwa sami"

Ma "we managed to come up with this money, please use it wisely" I smile and try put it in my bag

MaN "no no baby, yei Mandla told me about those boy who snatch bags, put it in your breasts" I

laugh oh I am going to miss these two

Taxi driver "sisi the taxi is full we should get going, the city is a long way" I hug them one more time

and get in the taxi and open the window

Me "I love you guys so much, take care, I will call when I get there" the waved me good bye

Olivia

I wasn't really ready to face Razor, it has been two years since him and I sat down for a meal, he hurt me real bad I don't think I can get over it, but my sister has been trying to get us to reconnect, I am just doing this for her, so she can be happy. I pray I don't snap when I see him. I park outside the club/restaurant and walk in, Mercy and Razor are already seated, and my sister smiles when she sees me walk in and Razor stands up and fixes his belt.

Her "I thought you were no longer coming"

Me "sorry sis, I came back late from school, I needed to go freshen up first"

Her "it's okay, you are here now"

Him "Liv, how are you?"

Me "Razor, I am fine thanks how are you?"

Him "I am happy to see you, I have missed you"

Me "mmmhhh" he cleared his throat

Her "okay let's sit and order" we do that and there is silence for a minute

Him "how is school going"

Me "challenging but I am coping"

Him "I am proud of you, and I am sure your mother is smiling down on you too"

Me "thank you Razor"

Her "daddy once she is done with school how about you set her up with her own accounting firm"

Him "great idea, I will do that only if she agrees to it" I mentally roll my eyes

Her "you would love that won't you Liv"

Me "I don't know, I will have to think about it"

Him "take all the time you need my baby" our food came and we started eating over light

meaningless conversation, it went on for a couple of hours

Me "look at the time, I need to get going, I have an early morning" it was just after 9 pm

Him "of course and thank you Olivia for coming, I really missed

you”

Me “pleasure” I say coolly, I stand up and take my bag and car keys

Mercy “drive safely and call me when you arrive” I nod

Him “drive safely baby. I love you” I give him a fake smile and walk out.

Sizakele

It is 9pm and the taxi only arrives now in the city, this scrap broke down a couple of times on our

way, I am so scared, I don’t know where I am going and it is dark outside, all I have is an address and

name of the apartment building, I don’t know what I am going to do. I get off the taxi and quickly

spot Nonto’s cousin approaching me and I sighed in relief

Me “oh thank God you waited for me”

Her “where have you been, what time did you take a taxi kante, I have been trying to call”



Me "I am so sorry sisi, the taxi broke down and I had no network"

Her "now it is so late, I can't walk you all the way to Braam coz I stay far myself, I don't know what

we going to do, my phone is even dead I can't request an Uber" I felt tears threatening

Me "oh my God so what are we going to do" a lady from the same taxi as mine approached

Girl "I can walk with you I am also going to Braam, which side are you going to?" Nonto's cousin tells

her

Girl "It is no far from my place I will show you" thank God

Her "oh thank you so much, I should start going, I live so far from here and it is already late and I am

alone" I feel guilty now

Me "I am so sorry sisi"

Her "don't worry about it, I will call you when I get to my flat" I smile at her and she leaves

Girl "I am Zinhle by the way"

Me "nice to meet you and thanks, my name is Sizakele" she nods and we start walking so fast at

least my luggage is not much just one suitcase. We got to a tall building and she stopped

Zinhle "I stay here, your apart is that blue wall over there, I am sorry I can't take you all the way, just

try and walk quickly or even run" panic came back

Me "it's okay sisi, I will be fine thank you" I lie I am so scared right now. She nods and gets in her

gate, I start walking so fast to where I am going, I am so scared I can hear my heat beat from my

chest, it gets worse when I see two boys approaching me, walking like they are jumping, oh God

please protect me I beg, I say a short prayer, but I guess my prayer didn't go all the way coz they

blocked my way

Boy 1 "yes wena. Walking in the streets at this time"

Boy 2 "she thinks this is her mother's place" I start crying and they laugh

Boy 1 "where are you from dressed like this" I didn't answer them and one pulled me by my dress

Boy 2 "we are talking to you wena, you think you better than us ye?"

Me "no please don't hurt me please" oh God why did I come to this city to die like a dog on my first day

Boy 1 "where is the money" I blink a couple of times, I saw one pull out a knife, I decided to reach

out to my breast and give them the money, but a car stopped near us and hooted swearing

Voice "hey fotsek fotsek, leave her alone or I will shoot you dead right now" they grabbed my

suitcase and ran away, I just stood there crying, oh my God I almost died, the car door opened and

the driver came to me and hugged me I was just so scared to even see who it was, it could be

another person wanting to kidnap me

Voice "shhh its okay sorry, come let me give you a lift to where you are going" it was a female voice,

I decided to accept her help she opened the door and I got in still crying, she got in and started the

engine

Me "thank you for helping me"

Voice "it's okay, where are you going" I show her the piece of

paper with my new address

Voice "no way I stay at the same place babe, I guess you are the new flatmate" I sighed in relief

Me "yes I am" she smiled

Her "well in that case let's get you home roomie" she drove and we got there soon enough and

parked, the building is nice outside and has security at the gate. We got out of the car and got into

some small silver room that moved us up and I almost screamed God, city things. She opened the

door and the place was nice, fully furnished

Me "you have a nice place"

Her "don't be silly it's our place, come let me show you your room" I followed her and she showed

me a room with only a bed and a wardrobe

Me "thank you it's nice" she laughed

Her "stop this, the room is empty and dull what is nice about it, and since you don't have clothes

and toiletries how about you share my room tonight and first thing tomorrow morning I will take you

to the mall and you can buy all you need" I looked at her and she is so beautiful and sweet

Me "thank you, you are God sent"

Her "don't sweat it babe. My name is Olivia by the way"

Me "you have a beautiful name, my name is Sizakele" she hugs me unexpectedly

Her "thanks, come shower, I will order something so long and you will tell me why you were walking

alone at night" I smile and she leads me to her bedroom and it is nothing I have seen before, she has

everything.

Lets comment, react and share.

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 17

Siza

I open my eyes and I don't recognise my surroundings I almost panic but quickly remember that I am

now in the city and I slept with Olivia in her bedroom, she is such a lovely person, easy to get along with. Funny enough I managed to sleep throughout the night and I normally struggle sleeping in a new environment, her bed is so comfortable Jesus Christ. Olivia walks in looking so pretty and bubbly

Her "good morning beautiful" she says and sits next to me"

Me "good morning sisi, how did you sleep" she rolled hers eyes

Her "Siza just call me Liv please this sisi thing is making me feel so old Gosh" I laugh

Me "I apologise Liv"

Her "see that wasn't so hard, here I made you coffee I am not sure how you take it but if its bitter or

too sweet I will go make you another" I take sip and it is just perfect

Me "thank you it is just the way I love it" smiles

Her "I would have cooked you breakfast but honestly I have no ingredients in the pantry I always eat

take outs plus I can't cook for shit" I laugh

Me "I enjoy cooking so we must get groceries"

Her "i am going to love having you here babe, now finish your coffee, we need to hit the mall"

Me "okay" she goes out and I finish my coffee and make the bed, last night she gave me a towel and

toothbrush and I had a shower for the first time ever and surprisingly I enjoyed it. She had just

gotten out of the shower and I got in, I enjoy this, once done I lotion and walk out

Her "babe, I took out an outfit for you it's on the bed" I smile

Me "thank you Olivia" she smiled and continued on her phone, I must admit everything of hers is

beautiful. I get to her bedroom and she laid out a legging and boots that get to my thighs Jesus what

do we call such long boots, she gave me a beautiful half coat, as much as I liked it didn't cover my

behind and it is quiet huge and exposed, I looked at myself and I felt very beautiful, she walked in

and whistled

Her "damn girl you have curves in all the right places, that

granny dress was hiding this beautiful

body, if I were a boy" I looked down shy but it felt good being complimented

Me "thank you, you have beautiful clothes " she smiles

Her "I will be your personal stylist babe worry not" I laugh

Me "I would like that" she smiled and I started combing my afro and she says she loves it too

Mandla

Thursdays we normally meet up with the boys and have drinks but since Phephe's death Vusi has

been distant, so it would just be Steve and I, he is one hell of a joker this one, it was around 2pm we

were having beer and laughing over his stupid experiences and jokes

Me "ai no man Steve, you are lying" I say laughing

Him "I am telling you man, why do you think she lets me get away with shit at work, and what makes



you think I can get off early at work to meet up with you”

Me “so you banging your boss, you making serious moves” he sips his beer

Him “and man she is will”

Me “so where do you too do it?”

Him “started as office sex, then moved to a hotel now she comes around my place”

Me “shit boy, but isn’t she married?”

Him “she is but her husband has diabetes” I burst out laughing, this guy takes risks

Me “that white farmer is going to kill you when he finds out you banging his wife” he laughs and Vusi

seats down and joins in the convo

Vusi “you you eating white pussy now”

Me “oh hey bafo” Steve remains silent, he is still mad at him, I was taught to never judge

Vusi “sure bafo, I knew I’d find you here, I have missed you my guys, no Homo” I laugh

Me “yeah it has been a minute ntwana” he looks at Steve

Vusi “Stevovo bra wam, I know you are still mad at me and trust

me bafo I hate myself for what

happened to my baby girl, it still hurts, I have no one to break down to, I need you guys, I need my

bro's. Please forgive me, and I also want to thank you both for supporting Sizakele like that and

giving my daughter that kind of burial"

Me "sure ntwana it was just from the goodness of our hearts"  
Steve sighs and takes a sip

Him "what you did hurt that lady, but I won't continue judging and being hard on you, let's let it

slide after it won't bring her back, even if we begged" they fist bumped

Me "hello sisi, can we have a round" I say to the waitress

Vusi "no make that an expensive bottle of whisky"

Steve "now we talking"

Me "good thing I am working tomorrow"

Steve "and I am fucking the boss, she won't mind me coming in late" we all laugh

Olivia

I like Siza a lot, she is not your typical Jozi girl, who will befriend you because of who you are and what you have, she is so genuine and innocent, she told me a bit about where she comes from and that explained a lot. I took her to the mall and we have been here since morning, she managed to buy things for her room and I helped her chose some clothes, so she is sorted with all she will need even if it is not much, but it will come together with time. I think we are going to be such good friend, okay okay maybe it is too early to say.

Her "haibo Liv, I am tired. We got all we needed why can't we go home" I laugh

Me "you are the first girl I know who wants to go home when they are at a mall"

Her "I am from the village you know" we booth laugh

Me "okay we still need to do some grocery shopping and then have lunch"

Her "we can just go cook at home" I roll my eyes

Me "Sizakele we are going to eat, then I will dry by and show you your school" she smiles

Her "can we skip lunch and go straight to the school" I smile at her excitement

Me "you need to eat please" I give her my puppy eyes and she sighs

Her "okay then" it feels like I have known her all my life" my phone rings and its Razor arg this guy, I

answer and we talk for a while

Me "my dad wants us to have lunch with him"

Her "he won't mind me coming"

Me "no he won't, plus going with you will mean less awkwardness"

Her "what does that mean now"

Me "I will explain some day"

Her "okay, we can go" he said he was already at the mall so we just walk to the restaurant and find

him already seated, he stands as he sees me, he should stop doing that really, he smiles and that is

weird on his face modimo

Him "Liv, hey baby" he says

Me "hello Razor" I say and Siza looks at me shocked maybe because of how I just addressed him

Him "where you already at the mall when I called" I nod and he sighs

Me "umh Razor, this is my friend and flatmate Sizakele, babe this is my father Razor"

Him "nice to meet you Sizakele"

Her "nice to meet you too baba" I laugh

Me "don't call him that, my father doesn't want to age Siza"

Her "I can't call him by his name though, it's disrespectful"

Him "just call me Liv's dad or Mr Motaung"

Her "Mr Motaung it is"

Him "sit down girls and order" we sit and place an order, I help Siza with something she might enjoy,

my dad is watching Siza it is so creepy Gosh

Him "done with your shopping" he even asks stupid questions

Me "no we actually have to do buy groceries"

Him "oh okay then, have my card" he say's handing it to me and I take it, I don't want to embarrass

him in front of Siza

Me "thank you Razor"

Him "your sister tells me that your car is giving you problems"

Me "it's fine Razor"

Him "its not baby, I don't want you driving around in a messed up car. Please for my peace of mind

please choose a car and tell me I will make sure it is delivered to you" okay Razor I will hurt your

pocket just a little then.

Me "fine" he got off my back and continued asking Siza a lot of questions for my liking, it was

making me uncomfortable for her, we stayed with him for about 2 hours then he had to leave. I took

Siza and we went to Woolworths to buy groceries, tomorrow I am bringing her for more shopping

after I drive her to her school, we have Razors black card after all let's try hurt his pocket a little

Razor

Have you ever looked at someone for the first time and it felt like you were seeing your angel on earth, one person you would leave it all to, I just did and it sucks that it had to be her, I have lived my life, I have seen it all but that kind of beauty, innocence and humbleness I have never witness in my life from one person, her eyes pulled me to her so much I got lost in them. Man she is perfection, I need to know more about her. I want her to be mine, she is the woman that will make me give up everything and anything to see her happy. They spoke of love at first love and I laughed but I just experienced it. I took out my phone and called my right hand man, he picked up first ring

Him "sure boss"

Me "my daughter Olivia has a new flatmate, her name is Sizakele I need you to get one of the boys to keep tabs on her, every move she makes keep her under surveillance and report back to me once a week, also make sure she is safe" I hung up and my head goes

back to imagining her beautiful face,  
soft voice and her well sculptured body, oh Razor what is  
happening to you.

Please react, leave a comment and share.

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 18

Siza

I have never had a friend in my life, I got pregnant at a young  
age, and everyone decided that their  
children should stay dear with of me, so having Olivia is  
different, she is making me comfortable, it  
has been a week in the city and I feel at home, she makes  
everything so simple for me, I dress better  
way better, she helped with that too, even went and bought me  
so much clothes with her father's  
card, I couldn't even decline coz she didn't give me a chance, she  
is the sweetest thing I tell you, I



haven't met with Mandla coz he has been so busy with work, but today we are having lunch at some place, I thank God I haven't bumped into Vusi and his wife, I don't know how I will react to the sight of them. I spoke to my mother's a few times and they are well, mama went back to her husband but apparently added to her conditions of going, she will now be allowed to visit and sleep over at MaNtuli's once in a while. I am making breakfast for us and she walks in and hugs me from behind me

Her "you are the greatest my friend" I smile

Me "good morning, have a seat breakfast is ready" she smiles

Her "what would I be without you, like I don't even understand how I survived all those years

without you" I laugh Olivia can be dramatic Lord

Me "you are full of jokes Liv" she laughs

Her "so I am going to meet up with a few friends later for lunch and drinks, wanna join us?"

Me "I would love to but I am meeting Mandla remember"

Her "oh yeah the guy from back home, I remember"

Me "maybe next time"

Her "they all wanted to meet you, they wanna see who's this Siza that stole their friend and makes delicious food" we both laugh

Me "how do I get to the mall" she chuckles

Her "see your stubbornness Sizakele, you should have let me buy you that phone" I roll my eyes,

here we go again

Me "that is your fathers money Liv, he didn't give permission to do that, plus you bought me a lot of things already"

Her "do you know how much money Razor has, a few thousands won't hurt his pocket trust me"

Me "but I don't need a fancy phone" I say waving my small phone

Her "that thing is a fridge and it's ringtone will send me to an early grave Sizakele, you need a smart phone babe, so you can be able to request for an uber when I fail to drop you off or pick you up"

Me "fine, I will see what I can afford"

Her "we still have Razors card you know" she say's chewing on her food

Me "my answer will still be a no"

Her "oh my God I am so done with you shame, I am going to buy that phone with or without your consent"

Me "do that and you will use it" she laughs

Her "mxm this child, I will drop you off then, when you done you will call me to come get you" I

smile, she is so considerate, but she is right I need a proper phone to get this uber thing

Me "thank you Olivia"

Her "that's what friends are for my love, and by the way you look so beautiful, your hair, to die for"

Me "thank you" I am in a black bodycon dress and with a black leather jacket and block heels ankle

boots. Olivia is has great taste. I love my hair but I just want to plait it, combing every day is a full time job.

Her "ready to start school?" I smile like a lunatic

Me "yes I am so ready, all I need to do is buy those things they want"

Her "I will take you to the stationary store tomorrow how is that?"

Me "you know you are the best right?" she smiles

Her "I know it might be too early to say this, but you are my best friend Siza, I feel like I have known

you for ages, you are so welcoming and warm, that I have found myself on the verge of talking about

things I have bottled up for so long" I grin, I feel the same way with her

Me "and you are also that person for me Olivia, I have never had friends" she stands up and comes

to my side and we share a warm hug. Thank you God for Olivia Motaung

Razor

I have been starring at a picture of Sizakele everyday, don't ask where I got it, I have my ways. This

girl is the prettiest innocent thing I have ever laid my eyes on,

and she just had to be Olivia's friend,  
this will complicate a lot of things, Liv and I just started talking  
and I am sure she will never approve  
of a relationship. I wouldn't want to hurt her and lose her again,  
but I can't let go of Sizakele, she  
makes me feel some type of way, I get weak thinking about her  
and I hate being weak not in my line  
of work, I hate that she is unmasking me, she makes me lose my  
senses without her knowledge. I got  
some information from Olivia, she is here to write her matric  
and study Medicine once she is done  
and that got me thinking, hence I am now here at a bank with  
my banker

Her "so you saying it is an education trust"

Me "correct"

Her "how much do you want it to be worth"

Me "make that 5 million maybe" he eyes widened

Her "is it for one child" I laugh, I child I am madly in love yes

Me "yes just one"

Her "okay sir but I think 5 million is more than enough, unless is they will be studying over seas"

Me "she hasn't chosen which institution she wants to go to, but this money will cover her tuition, stationary and accommodation hence it is that much"

Her "not a problem Mr Motaung"

Me "okay then, I will contact you once she get accepted at university" she smiles at me and we

shake hands and I go back to my house and find my right hand man waiting.

Him "sure boss" he say's handing me an envelope and a glass of whisky on the rocks

Me "thank you" I sip and seat down and open the envelop and the first picture is of her laughing,

dammit she is beautiful, I stare at it for a while and Gadafi clears his throat, I continue looking at the

pictures and she is forever with Olivia. I am glad she is not seen with a man.

Me "so your boys never let her out of their sight"

Him "she is always under 24 hours surveillance boss, the guys have an eye on her even now"

Me "so they didn't spot her with any boy, of boys going to that apartment?"

Him "no, no boyfriend" I sigh in relief

Him "the mighty Razor is in love, I have never seen you like this with any woman"

Me "she is no ordinary girl, she is making me feel things I never knew existed"

Him "but Olivia and you know our business bafo, she might be used to get to you once they know

that she not an ordinary fuck but a woman you love"

Me "Olivia would hate me for loving her friend, we only trying to work things out after what I did, I

don't want to lose my daughter again but at the same time, my heart wants Sizakele. We managed

to keep my children safe all these years. I am sure we won't fail to do it with Siza, provided that I

manage to make her fall for me" he chuckles and gulps his whisky

Him "I am more concerned about your daughters reactions and the public should you and this girl be

an item"

Me "I will buy Mercy's support, a holiday in the Maldives, shopping in Paris or promise to promote

her fiancé to something bigger, I don't care about the media and strangers opinions my problem is

Olivia. I just need to think"

Him "here we are stressing about this, that time she doesn't even know you love her. You are not in a relationship" I laugh, true.

Me "then we will have to go on with trying to pursue her, get me and her at the same place at the same time, play fate, find out where she loves going and make sure Liv is not there, so I can talk to her alone"

Him "you gonna tell her straight up?"

Me "don't be stupid. I need to make her fall for me too"

Him "okay, that's smart"

Me "I need to see her in person though"

Him "I will try to find out her favourite place quickly then"

Me "that is too far"

Him "Razor I know I work magic but this one needs magic, you



are so whipped imagine when you  
have tasted the forbidden fruit, you will even kill a fly for  
passing by her face annoying her, I feel  
sorry for boys that will try their luck with her, coz they will  
experience the wrath of the mighty Razor

Me "I am going to their apartment this evening" he laughs

Him "I give up"

Me "get the hell out of my house" he laughs louder and walks  
out. I take her picture and smile to

myself

Me "oh Sizakele what are you doing to me. this is not the man I  
am but for you I would give it all up"

I say to myself and trail my thumb on her face, My Queen, the  
only woman who has my heart

Mandla

I am so happy to be meeting with Sizakele, she has been  
through a lot and she deserves this big

break, I am so proud even. I got to the restaurant before her,  
she said her friend will drop her off

when I asked to pick her up. I pray this friend is a good person, I don't want Sizakele to lose focus

and end being a typical Jozi slay queen. She walks in and I am shocked, man she looks beautiful I

found myself starrng, I can't believe this. God she washes up pretty good. She spots me and smiles

excitedly. God dammit who knew what new clothes and can do. Her beautiful body is now coming

out to play too, she must embrace those thighs and curse, don't me started on the ass, she has one

for days. She is doing justice to this outfit. Stop it Mandla, you can't be drooling over Siza like this. I

compose myself and approach and we hug and I spin her a little then she giggles

Her "it is really nice to see you"

Me "how have you been? You look amazing, the makeover" she smiles

Her "I have been great, thanks, it was all Olivia's doing"

Me "Olivia?"

Her "the friend I mentioned" I nod

Me "oh yeah, no kudos to here, she knows her staff, come let's seat"

Her "how have you been,"

Me "I am just fine hey. Work is too hectic these days. When are you starting school?"

Her "on Monday, I can't wait" she is so excited God, we place our order and start eating

Me "please don't lose focus, and promise to remain the sweet and humble person that you are, this

place has a way of changing people to their worst" she smiles

Her "I will remain the Siza I always been"

Me "so do you need money or anything"

Her "I have all I need, the old ladies gave me before I came here, but life here is expensive, I need

job"

Me "I wouldn't mind helping you out too, and don't try working yet, at least check if you will cope

with your school work before you add to your responsibilities" she nods

Her "thank you I will do just that, but you can't be giving me more money"

Me "but when you need it talk to me" she smiles

Her "I will remember that". We spend the rest of the day together and I go drop her off later to see her place.

Olivia

I get home and I find Siza preparing supper, this one is a blessing to me guys, she is amazing and her cooking is everything, she spoils me too much with all these delicious things. She cleans around too, but she must stop doing these chores when school starts, she needs to pass. The lady that cleans will continue doing her job. I go to her and kiss her forehead

Me "oh I love you shame" she laughs

Her "just because I am cooking right"

Me "Siza I haven't had home cooked meal in years, and you my dear friend, make the things to be done shame"

Her "you are crazy, come on grab that chopping board and start

with the vegetables”

Me “yes mom” she laughs

Her “I am going to teach you how to cook shame, then we will take turns”

Me “I would love that very much. Do you want a glass of wine?”

Her “no thank you” I pour myself a glass then juice for her. She finished cooking and starts dishing

up when a knock comes through, who the hell could it be, I walk to the door and open, It’s my dad.

Why is he here oh boy.

Me “Razor what are you doing here so late?”

Him “hey baby girl”, he gives me a hug and I let him in

Me “so what brings you here?” he smiles and stares at Siza, oh Razor is so weird

Him “Sizakele, how are you”

Her “evening Mr Motaung. I am fine thanks how are you”

Him “I am great thanks”

Her “I was dishing up when you arrived, would you like a plate” he smiles at her then looks at me

like he wants me to approve, I nod

Him "I would love one thank you. It smells great"

Me "she made dumpling and stew" he smiles wider, that is his favourite meal.

Him "oh my God. I have been craving it for days now"

Me "she is such a great cook"

Him "she must teach you then" I chuckle

Me "she will soon"

Siza serves us and we eat in comfortable silence, Razor is the first to finish and he asks for another

plate, and Siza dished up for him again, and he cleaned it out too, I took the plates and washed the

dished

Him "Olivia, why are you still using that death trap, I told you to chose a car" I roll my eyes

Me "I want a yellow Ferrari Razor"

Him "okay then I will talk to my PA, I will let you know once it is done"

Me "I am kidding Razor. A Mercedes wagon would do though"

Him "are you serious this time?" I laugh

Me "yes, a Mercedes G63" he smiles and shakes him head

Me "a white one please" he nods and looks at Siza who looks intimidated by my dad, I understand

why though, his presence commands respect and fear at times

Him "so Siza, what are you enjoying the new environment"

Her "yes I am Mr Motaung, just want to start with school already"

Him "that's good, where would you want to study after completing your matric"

Her "I was looking to study medicine at Wits"

Him "that is good Siza, all the best. Have you started applying for funding"

Her "not yet sir" she nods and continues asking her question after question, Jesus Christ, what is

wrong with Razor. He has never been this friendly with my other friends, he is even smiling, I have

never seen this sweet, calm man before. My dad is a monster when he wants, but besides what

happened he has always the man I could talk to, he is a totally different man to us his kids, if I didn't

see what I saw I would still argue with people who call him heartless, I would be defending his

honour. The person who is talking to Siza right now is a man I don't recognise, Siza has even warmed up to his presence. Razor never ceases to amaze me shame, I need another glass of wine.

Please react, leave a comment and share with other. I love you guys and apologies for Friday.

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 19

Mercy

My father called me and apparently things between him and Liv are much better, he says they are making progress, I haven't seen Olivia in a while, when she texted me to go out for lunch I jumped at the opportunity, my sister is fun to hang around with. We are having lunch at the hotel, she is never on time, I have been waiting for an hour, I have drank my 4th glass of champagne. She walks in



glowing, already wearing that beautiful smile so I don't shout at her, I roll my eyes and stand up to embrace her

Me "you are such a bam Olivia, how do you invite someone and be late"

Her "sorry sis I had to drop of my friend at school"

Me "why is that your responsibility Olivia, stop hanging with such friends, they are using you"

Her "she is not like that, she is the sweetest thing under the sun, ask Razor he will tell you"

Me "if you say so. And vele how is it going with you and dad"

Her "it is okay, we making progress, he bought me car and gave me the black card"

Me "what you don't say, what car did he buy you" she laughs and narrows her eyes

Her "a G63 honey" I widen my eyes

Me "why would you buy my car Olivia, you and your father don't have taste shame" she laugh

Her "you can just change it you know"

Me "your father will never agree, he just bought us a new house, and it is still being redecorated"

Her "thatha wena, I need to see this new house" I smile

Me "you should see it babe, it is to die for, my kids are gonna love it there, it is the best family house"

Her "are you pregnant?" she asks eyes wide

Me "not year, maybe when we get back from our honeymoon"

Her "okay sis, I need a vacation"

Me "why don't you go babe, you can bless yourself" we both laugh

Her "my friend only started school, I want to go with her"

Me "who is this amazing friend of yours, hai you don't stop talking about her or what do you like her in that way?" I roll my eyes and she laugh

Her "I prefer dick thank you very much"

Me "then what is it with that girl?"

Her "I will come with her when we go view your new house, they we will go out, you will love her

instantly it is hard not to. She is my best friend" I clap my hands

Me "so quickly Olivia, how long have you known her?"

Her "just over a month" I laugh

Me "hai, I need to see this girl, the way you speak highly of her I swear it is like she is the best thing since sliced bread"

Her "don't be like that. You know we hardly find real friends so I am happy I found someone who is real to me, without expecting things from you. I do things for her coz I want to not because I feel forced" I smile

Me "that is good sis, we need real friends, the world is full of haters and fake people, when you find good people hold on to them" she smiles

Her "you have become smart" I laugh.

Me "yeah yeah whatever"

Her "let's order I am starving Christ"

Me "you are paying right" she smile

Her "darling I am in the big leagues in, I don't mind paying" she says flashing her black card

Me "yoh why did Razor give you that card, we won't hear the end of it" she laughs. The waiter

comes and we place our order. Our day goes on very well, like I said spending time with her is amazing

Sizwe

I have been trying for months to get Razor to give up the territory but he is being stubborn about it, I don't want to work with that man, he is difficult and he loves having his way, if only I could find something to use against him, his daughters are his most treasured possessions and they are heavily guarded, even if from afar but if I try make my move I am fucked for real, plus I don't want him suspecting me of coming after him so I will, maybe I should just wait a little and work on a strategy a proper one at that. A knock on the door disturbs me, I tell the person to come in and it is one of the waitresses. I give her a let it out look

Her "sorry sir, but the whisky suppliers are being difficult again, he says he only wants to talk to you"

Me "okay I will give him a call" if I didn't need this club as one of my fronts to clean the money I

would have long closed shop, dealing with such petty things bore me to death. Let me finish off and go home, Thandiwe is taking her precious time trying to fall pregnant, I need another child.

Siza

I started school 3 weeks ago and so far so good. I am managing well, we right class tests every Friday

as a practice for the exam. I am doing really well, I give myself targets for every subject and I have

never gotten anything below 80% . All my teachers are great people except for this guy that teaches

Mathematics, he makes me so uncomfortable all the damn time, he gives me weird looks and make

inappropriate comments about my body, it is sickening shame, I am even afraid to go consult with

him and this chapter is really showing me flames, I cannot afford not to understand, I am writing in 2

days. I am in the classroom practicing, he walks in and flashes me a smile and I flinch, can someone

walk in please. He comes near me and looks at what I have been doing

Him "you missed a step here, and here you can't use this formula" I sigh

Me "I was going to come and consult I need help with a few things"

Him "you know you don't have to do this"

Me "what do you mean"

Him "you are a beautiful girl Sizakele. I mean look at your body, it can give you everything you want

in life, even a distinction in all my tests" what is this man saying to me

Me "I am lost sir"

Him "sir, why so formal beautiful, you can call me Jabu and don't act like this you know what I

mean"

Me "if I did I wouldn't feel lost now would i" or should I know what she is asking of me"

Him "okay let me give it to you straight then. Sizakele you don't have to be sitting here practising

mathematics, you could be with your friends somewhere having fun, I mean this is Braamfontein

after all. You could pass my subject without writing anything, you just need to pleasure me sexually

in exchanged for marks" my eyes widened and I quickly put my books and attempt to work away

without saying a word, but he stopped me and whisper in my ear

Him "atleast think about it, I promise I will make you come like you never did before" I was now

scared I yank my hand and he hits my behind and I take my bag and quickly run out leaving him

laughing. Why are city people like this, is everything all about sex to them, how will I ever face that

man, and listen to him while he educates me when all that will be in my head is listening to him

telling me to have sex with him with so I can pass, do woman

actually do this? Why though, it is his  
job to educate us, what will be the point of passing something  
you clearly don't understand, this  
man has ruined my perfect day, he is making me fear school and  
attending his classes, he is such a  
demon, I wipe my eyes as I get to the gate, I don't want people  
thinking I am crazy for crying like  
this. I need Olivia right now, she would know what to do.

Razor

I have been parked outside Siza's school for an hour now,  
waiting for her to come out, Gadafi told  
me she is still here and her classes are finished. I had to strike  
now while she is alone, it has been  
almost a month now and these feelings are getting stronger  
and stronger, a week ago I decided to  
leave her alone but the boys brought me the report on her and  
she was so serious on that picture,  
like her innocence was visible from her eyes, I got drawn back  
and strongly so this time around. She



appeared from the gate like she was running from something, I decided to stay a bit to see what is going on, and she wiped her eyes I assume she has been crying. No one appears after her. She keeps looking back, I start my car and drive towards the gate and stop then roll my window, and she was so scared until she saw that it is only me.

Her "Mr Motaung, how are you" oh that voice

Me "hello Sizakele, I am fine thanks, how are you"

Her "I am weel thanks" she wipes her eyes again

Me "have you been crying? What is the matter"

Her "oh nothing serious, something got into my eye" I give her a stern look

Me "don't lie to me, and please get into the car I will drive you home" she got in

Me "now tell me what happened"

Her "just that my maths teacher slapped my body inappropriately, and he wants me to sleep with

him so I can pass maths" what the hell, he doesn't know who he

messed with

Me "is he still in?" I ask boiling in anger

Her "yes sir he is, we were the last two people" I nod

Me "okay wait in here I am coming back" I don't give her a chance to respond, I quickly storm out

and go find that prick. The security guard shows me his office and I get there and open without

knocking, he is clearing his desk

Him "who the hell are you to storm into my office like a mad man" he asks and I laugh and tighten

my knuckles

Me "I am your worst nightmare you fucked, you messed with the wrong woman, Sizakele is not your

toy do you hear me" he laughs

Him "I would be mad right now, but I understand why you would boil like this, she is a fine piece of

meat, that ass, I would fuck it no breaks" I charged to me and punched hard the nerve, does he

know how precious the woman he is referring to as a piece of meat is to me, he continues laughing

Him "after this she never pass my subject" okay I will deal this fool. I walk out and wink at him, I get

back to my car and she is still inside looking so scared and innocent I fall harder for her.

Her "sir what did you do to him"

Me "it is what I am about to do Sizakele" she remains silent and I take out my phone and dial Gadafi,

he answers at first ring

Me "listen, I want you to get Sizakele's math teacher fired, play with his name in the mad, taint his

reputation, I want you to destroy his career and make sure no school will employs him ever, just

break him Gadafi" he laughs and hangs up and I know it is as good as done, I look at Siza she has her

head bowed down, I am sure I just scared her. I take her hand into mine and she looks at me with a

are what you doing expression

Me "it is taken care of, you won't have to see him again, I promise" she sighs and gives me a weak

smile that leaves me melting

Her "thank you Mr Motaung" she say's and I smile at her

Me "allow me to take you somewhere that will get your mind off things" she looks at me confused

but I ignore her and drive. I drive to a secluded place, my spot, it is in the middle of nowhere and it is

a hill, with a view of Johannesburg, I come here to think when I am in a bad space. She is scared,

shaking in her boots and I chuckle

Me "relax, I would never hurt you" I see her relax and we walk out. She is lost in the view

Her "wow this place is amazing" she says keeping her eyes on the view

Me "yes it is, it is very calm and peaceful"

Her "totally the city can get loud at times, how did you find this place?"

Me "I was just driving around, I come here when I need to think and clear my head, life can be too

much at times"

Her "I thought rich people don't have problems" I laugh out loud

Me "oh trust me, that is not the case, we go through a lot, money doesn't buy peace" she smiles

Her "I see" she says sitting down, I do to my car and take out

the food I bought myself when Gadafi

called to tell me about her, it is just a plate from the taxi rank  
nothing fancy, I enjoy eating there

Me' 'I have food, it is not good as yours though" she smiles

Her "thank you Mr Motaung" she accepts my offer and we start  
eating, everything she does I find

attractive, even her chewing.

Me "no thank you Siza" se frowned

Her "for what Sir" I look and her then forward

Me "I will tell you someday" she just smiles and continues  
eating. This is one of the best moments of

my life.

Please react, leave a comment and share. The page is growing  
daily, thank you for the support

darlings. The mistakes, try and ignore please, I am super tired I  
can't edit please babies

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 20

Siza

Today Olivia is taking me to her sister's house, apparently there is a house warming, her father

bought the sister a house for her and her husband, some kids are lucky, the boy hit jackpot, getting

married to a rich girl, whose father does everything for her. We will be catching a lift with Mr

Motaung. The weather is so great, it is early September so you can imagine, I think my fashion sense

is on another level, I no longer need Liv to help me pick out outfits or for her to approve one's I pick

out myself. I am still a no weave girl, my fro is doing best. Olivia shouts from the lounge and I roll my eyes

Her "Sizakele can you finish already, Razor will be here any minute" i grab my bag and walk out of

my room

Me "I am sorry, I had to change the dress I picked out first, it was too short" she was looking at me

mouth open, okay what is wrong

Her "okay tell me, are you the Sizakele I picked up a few months ago with absolutely zero fashion

sense" I laugh so loud

Me "yes it is she" she rolls her eyes

Her "Siza you look breath taking" I smile, it is all her teachings. I was in a white off shoulder body

hugging dress and yellow high heeled sandals and matched them with a yellow handbag

Me "oh well I learnt from the best thank you" she smiled and did a little bow

Her "ohhhh I deserve all the recognition babe" I laugh

Me "dramatic much Liv" I roll my eyes and a door knock disturbs us

Her "come on in" the door swings open and Mr Motaung walks in, he is not dressed in his normal

suit and tie, he is in a black jeans and black red bottoms sneaker, and his crisp white golf

tee. He clears his throat after staring at me for a second, this man is intimidating Gosh

Him "hello Ladies"

Her "hey dad" I saw him smile, maybe coz this is the first Liv is

calling his dad, she always call's him

Razor, which get's me wondering, what is his real man?

Me "afternoon Mr Motaung"

Him "you two look amazing, ready to go?" I nod

Her "yes we are"

Him "shall we?" he says opening both his arms for Olivia and I.  
we get to the car and drive off to the sisters place.

Mercy

Today I am officially opening our house, it is so beautiful, the interior designer did a great job for a

first timer, I was sceptical about her but I am glad I took that risk really it paid off. I will recommend

her to everyone I know. Vusi is not in a good mood and he is sulking, I mean not today, we have

guests for heaven's sake, he needs to get himself together. I walk back to our bedroom and he is still in bed.

Me "baby please wake up, our guests will soon be here" he sighs



Him "just a few minutes Mercy please"

Me "but we don't have a minute, what is wrong with you? Are you okay?"

Him "clearly I am not" he shouts irritated, I feel tears threatening

Me "don't shout at me Vusi" he sighs and run his hands

Him "I am sorry baby, just that I dreamt of Phephe last night" I seat down oh my poor baby, that is

why he has been so grumpy

Me "Isn't that a good thing, most people appreciate dreams from loved ones who have passed on"

Him "not when she was crying the way she did, the dream was so disturbing, it woke up my

wounds" he sighs and wipes his tear

Me "I am so sorry love, tell you what, how about we drive down to the village and visit her grave"

Him "I would love that very much"

Me "I am always available, I will talk to daddy to give a few days off"

Him "no I will talk to Razor myself" I smile

Me "it is all going to be okay" I cup her face so he can look at me then I kiss him

Him "I love you baby" I blush

Me "I love you too, now get your sexy ass out of bed and go shower" he laughs

Him "okay ma'am"

Me "I will go check on the caterers so long"

Him "you look beautiful by the way" I blush some more

Me "thank you hubby" I say winking at him then walking out, I get down stairs and they are really

putting everything together, the food and drinks enough, music enough, everything is just ready, I

should go so some touch up's on my face.

Olivia

I was so excited for my sister to meet my best friend, I want them to get along, I mean they are my

real G's after all. Siza is a bit nervous, but she has nothing to worry about, I mean even Razor likes

her so I know Mercy will be over the moon too. We get to the house and walk, damn this is a mansion and a half

Me "Razor how much did you spend on this house" he laughs

Him "more than I needed to, you know how your sister is" I laugh

Me "that one is crazy, this house is huge, even if they have 10 kids it is still big"

Him "tell me about it my love, come you two let's get in" Siza steps her fine looking ass out of the

car and I see a few guys working for my father drooling over her, we greet them and walk in, my

sister is nowhere in sight, so Razor decides to give us a tour, Mercy is overboard, this place has an indoor pool and Sonar,

Siza "this place is nice, she has taste"

Razor "one that hurts my pocket Siza" we all laugh

Siza "I don't doubt that one bit"

Me "I think I deserve an apartment in the north and a trip for two to Bali"

Razor "I think having you and your sister as my children is gonna get me broke, but we will have this

conversation soon, who will you go with to Bali?" I roll my eyes

Me "obviously I am taking Siza"

Siza "I don't even have a passport Liv, after all I can't afford to even go to Cape Town, so imagine"

Me "don't be silly, Razor will sponsor everything, he will be our blesser" he laughs and shakes his

head

Razor "before I hear more, let us go find your sister" we follow behind him giggling, she is starting to

be comfortable, we have champagne but Siza just took a sip and now I am on my 2nd glass. My dad I

still standing with us.

Razor "you don't drink Siza"

Siza "no Mr Motaung I don't" he smiles at her

Razor "you my darling have a good influence as a friend, you should stop drinking" I laugh

Me "let's leave that one for another day please" he shakes his head, my sister and Vusi came down

stairs looking all nice. She was smiling happy to see us, but their facial expression changed

Me "hey you two, your house is nice, too big is you ask me" the remained silent, I looked at Siza

next to me and she is crying staring back at Mercy and Vusi, okay what is going on

Me "Siza, why are you crying is everything okay?" she just continued crying and saying nothing

Razor "Mercy do you two know Siza from somewhere?" they remain quite

Me "just talk to us guys, what is going on, Siza talk to me babe please" her silence was too much,

the pain in her eyes was visible and those tears broke my heart. I just took her in for a hug, and gave

my sister a questioning look, but she looked down to avoid my gaze.

Mandla "Siza I am so sorry so so sorry" she broke the hug and looked at Vusi and ran out, I wanted

answers and I wanted them now. What the hell is going on her

Me "Mercy start talking" my father ran after Siza, I couldn't I wanted to know why my friend is

crying and my sister and man have the guiltiest look on the faces, what did they do to this poor girl.

## Razor

I am not sure what is going on between my daughter and Sizakele, but the glimpse of the little we saw, I can definitely conclude that, they wronged her, the pain that was written all over her face, when she ran off I just had to run after her and make sure she is okay, deep down I am hoping no one comes after us, I will have a talk with Vusi and my daughter later, they need to tell us the truth, that girl wouldn't just cry like that, I find her kneeling down behind my car, crying so painful, like some wounds were opened from seeing those two, I have seen people cry, I have made people cry, but none of those cries touched my stone heart like the one I am hearing right now. She looks so vulnerable. I can't bare seeing her like that. I open the door and pick her up and get her in the back, she is still crying, I got to my side and drove off. I would take her back to their apartment but she

mustn't be alone right now, so my house it is. She kept on weeping and weeping I drove like a maniac, I need to comfort that pain. We get to my house and I park like a armature and carry her inside, my staff is looking at me like confused, I walk past everything and she is lost in her sorrow, she is not aware of her surroundings. I get to my bedroom and place her down then remove my shoes and join her. I hold her so tight, it was like she needed that, coz immediately after I squeezed, she cried some more and pressed her body to me in a way that say I am vulnerable, I am in pain I need to be protected. I rubbed her back and kept on sniffing her hair. She fits so perfectly in my arms, if this was a different day, I would enjoy having her in my arms on my bed like this. She spoke drawing me back from thoughts

Her "it hurts, it hurts so bad, I thought I was over it but I am not" she says her voice laced with so much pain

Me "it won't last forever, you will heal trust me"

Her "why did God do this to me, I needed her, she was everything to me" I wish I knew what she was talking about

Me "talk to me, what is going on, maybe I can help" she remained silent just crying. I have never felt

so useless, I want to make it all okay, I want to take away her pain. I need to talk to Mercy, she will

tell me what is going on, what they did to this soul to break it like this. I hold her till us both fall asleep.

Please react, leave a comment and share with others.

Siza's tribulations

(Not edited)

Chapter 21

Razor

I woke up before her and she is still so peaceful and beautiful, I need to know what is going on so I



can try to at least help her, I take a quick shower and put on my sweats and sneakers, I tell my helper to make her comfortable when she wakes up, I will be back soon, I need to know what Mercy and her fiancé did to Sizakele, where did their paths cross. I get to their house in a blink of an eye and there are festivities, I get in and I am told that my daughters and Vusi are in the study, I get in there and find Liv crying, she comes to me soon as I walk in

Liv "where is she? Is she okay?" I hug her and kiss her head

Me "she is at my house sleeping, she is not okay, and I need to know why?"

Liv "I need to go to her dad she needs me right now" I look at her and smile then turn my face to husband and wife

Me "Mercy Motaung speak" she looked at me and blinked a couple of times

Me "I said speak up man, I don't have the whole day" I shout and she stands up, I never let out the beast in front of my kids but I just had to make her talk and the truth nothing but the truth

Mercy "daddy, Olivia's friend Sizakele is from the same village

as Vusi”

Me “that is not enough for her to cry like that now is it?” she swallows

Mercy “uhm, mmhh, she and Vusi, were a couple growing up, and they had a child together”

I feel like I have been stabbed in the heart

Me “so she is hurting coz he left her for you?” i ask trying to mask the little pain that stang me, she shakes her head no

Mercy “no daddy, her family disowned her after pregnancy and she had to move to Vusi’s place, his

mother was mistreating her and their daughter, she once hit her with an iron rod and she started

bleeding into her brain and that’s when she took her daughter and left, Vusi and I were visiting that

time, and their daughter got sick, she came to ask for help but I refused Vusi going alone, I said I

didn’t trust his baby momma. I wasted time changing my clothes and that wasted time and she died” I couldn’t believe my

ears, that’s what she meant when she said she was everything to her, she was referring to her

daughter, oh I can’t imagine how crazy I would get if something

happened to my daughters

Me "oh Mercy" that is all I could say

Mercy "I am so sorry daddy, I am sorry" I close my eyes

Liv "you are selfish Mercy, then you and your man come back to the city like nothing happened to that poor girl"

Mercy "I didn't mean to Liv, I wouldn't hurt anyone like that on purpose i swear" they are both crying

Me "Vusi, you such a fuck, you chose a woman over your child I don't give a shit if she is my

daughter but you should have hurried to your daughters side, Mercy's ego would have been dealt with later"

They remain silent

Me "mercy, do you think I will let a woman's jealousy cloud my judgement that I could chose her

over you and your sister in a time where you need me. Your pride and ego cost that woman her

child, you two broke that soul, did you see how broken she is. I am so disappointed in you Mercy"

Mercy "daddy please I am sorry, Liv please I know how much you love Sizakele please I am sorry I

hurt her like that believe me" she is my baby I love her and

seeing her cry breaks my heart my

daughters are my weakness, I just embrace her

Me "we can't undo the past. She will never have her baby back, no matter how many sorries you say. I need to help her heal"

Liv "just pray she doesn't cut me off because of you, Razor please take me to her she need me" I sigh

Me "I will see you later, she needs people around her, Vusi take care of my daughter"

This boy is a weakling

Him "yes Sir"

Me "Liv let's go baby" she gives them a nasty stare and walk out, I can't have my daughters hating

each other I will need to meddle in this when the dust has settled. We walk back to my car and get in then drive off

Liv "Razor can we drive a little faster please" I sigh

Me "we want to get to her alive now don't we" she just nods. We get to my house and she gets out of the car before it even stops and runs inside

Siza

Why did they have to be related to the only person I have become attached to since I moved here, this place was supposed to be me starting over on a clean slate, why did my past come back, this is a chapter I want to bury. I have been up for a few minutes now and Mr Motaung is nowhere in sight, I guess he went out when I slept. My heart is heavy, all I want is to visit my daughters grave and talk to her, I know she will make me feel better, or better yet read her letter, it keeps me going even on days where I feel down. What is going to happen now. Will Liv choose her sister over me? But who would blame her i mean they are sisters and i am just a friend, the door burst open and Olivia rushed in towards me, I quickly sat up straight and she attacked me with the warmest hug ever, and I can't help but cry. She came for me

Her "oh my friend, I am so sorry"

Me "It hurts Liv, I tried but it hurts" she sniffs

Her "of course it does, she was your baby"

Me "I just want to heal from this Olivia, I need this pain gone"

Her "it will, I am here and I will help you"

Me "how though"

Her "we will figure it out I promise" we break the hug and she wipes my tears and I wipe hers

Her "why didn't you tell me earlier"

Me "I was going to open up eventually about Siphephelo but I needed to heal first"

Her "talking helps you know" I nod

Me "I guess I shouldn't have bottled up"

Her "I could ask my father to organise you therapy, it is better to talk to a professional"

Him "I would do that even now, should she agree" Mr Motaung say's from the door

Her "what do you say? No pressure" I nod

Me "I will think about it"

Him "well then, let me ask the chef to prepare you two something to eat" he says then disappears

Her "i thought you hate me" she says with tears

Me "why would you think that? You are the closet person I have

been with, you are my sister my best friend”

Her “I thought because I am the sister to the woman who hurt you” I hug her

Me “no we are good, thank you for coming” she smiles

Her “you are my best friend, I would drop staff for you”

Me “I really appreciate that”

Her “I am just so mad at my sister how could she be that selfish”

Me “don’t be Liv, be okay with her, I also need to forgive to heal from this pain, it is the only thing

holding me back, me and her will be out of each other’s way though”

Her “are you sure you want to forgive them?”

Me “no, honestly I hate them, but I need to let go” she nods

Her “it is okay to feel the way you do, take your time” I smile and we hug again

Me “I love you Olivia and Thank you”

Her “I love you two, now come lets go eat” I smile and we go to the kitchen to eat

Vusi

I didn't know she had moved to the city, I didn't know she was my sister in law's friend, this just opened old painful wounds, seeing her like that reminded me of how broken she was at our daughters funeral, seeing us brought her back that pain, I need her to forgive me, I wronged her so much. I really don't know how to make everything right. We have a party and I can't even go out there and host our guests. I just wanna take it all back and bring my daughter back. The door opened and Mandla walked in

Me "hey bafo, come in" he gave me a confused look

Him "bafo, what's going on"

Me "Sizakele" he narrowed his eyes

Him "you bumped into her? I forgot to tell you that she moved here"

Me "it is okay bafo. She was here earlier on"



Him "I don't understand"

Me "Siza and Olivia are friends, she came to the house warming and she saw Mercy and I, she broke down bafo, she still hurting ndoda"

Him "shit shit shit, oh this is going to set back her progress, she didn't need this"

Me "I need a favour bafo"

Him "what talk to me" I sigh

Me "I need you to look out for her man please"

Him "I was supposed to do that from the beginning but I failed her, I have been so caught up in my  
shit I forgot she needed me too, I will look out for her"

Me "please drive her to the village soon maybe visiting Phephe will do her good" he nods

Him "I will go see her soon"

Me "thank you man"

Him "okay, sitting here and mopping won't help the situation, let's go to the others" I get up

Me "go on I will follow soon" we fist bump and he walks out.

Razor

I just explained what happened to Gadafi and he is shocked. He hands me a drink and seats down.

Him "this is not even a love triangle, I don't know what to call this mess"

Me "I know man"

Him "so what are you going to do?"

Me "I just want to hurt everyone that has ever hurt her but one of them is my own daughter, I can't

do that, all I can do is hope she says yes to me getting her a therapist, Olivia suggested it"

Him "therapy sounds good"

Me "I hope it helps her, she needs to move from all of this"

Him "it is going to take a while but she will get there, so now what is doing to happen?"

Me "with what G?"

Him "your feelings for her? You still want her"

Me "i think I want her more now,her strength is admirable, she's

been through hell but she is still standing trying to do this life thing. I want to protect her and make her happy” he sighs

Him “there is no talking you out of this one is there?” I laugh

Me “nope, I am exploring this Gadafi and if all hell breaks loose I will find a way to put out the fire”

Him “okay then, you know you have my full support”

Me “I know and thanks brother” we toast and get talking about business.

Please do react, leave a comment and share. Participation is everything

Siza’s tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 22

Siza

I have thought long and hard and I think therapy will do me well, so I decided to go and see Mr

Motaung today to tell him I accept his help. School has been amazing and I have been doing really

well, my final exam will be soon and after that I will know my fate of whether I qualify to study

medicine or not, but with the way I have been performing I don't doubt my capabilities at all. I even

find myself bored coz I finish studying earlier and just idle around the house, so I think it would be

better that I find a job, I could save that money for my needs. I finally bought a smartphone so I can

uber. I got to Motaung Attorneys and the place is huge, people fill the place in their suits looking

elegant and professional, I land my eyes on Vusi and we stare for a minute till I decide to walk away

and go to reception, at least I didn't cry this time, or maybe coz I knew he works here so in the back

of my mind I thought I might see him, I get to reception and the girl sitting behind that desk has all

the make up in the world on her face, okay maybe I am exaggerating.

Me "hello" she looks at me then back to her computer screen

Her "hi, how can I help you?" aren't receptionists supposed to

be warm and welcoming coz wow I

feel like I am in London during winter she is freaking cold.

Me "I am here to see Mr Motaung" she laughs

Her "Do you have an appointment?" shit how can I just rock up here without informing him, I mean

the man owns a Law firm

Me "uhm no, but I won't take long" she gives me a look and I roll my eyes mentally

Her "I am sorry girl but Mr Motaung is a busy man, he can't even spare a minute" I sigh and attempt

to walk away and the intimidating man that looks younger than his age appears and smiles when he

sees

Him "Sizakele, what brings you here? Is everything okay?

Where is Olivia?" oh one question at a

time

Me "I came to see you but I didn't have an appointment sorry and your receptionist wouldn't let me

in" he gives her a death stare and I immediately regret selling her out like that

Him "please forgive her, come let's go to my office and talk, how did you get here?"

Me "I took an uber" he flinches

Him "I hate those things, girls get kidnapped while riding those cars, we should get you a driver

while we work on getting you a license then find you a small thing to take you from A to B" my eyes

widen, okay this man is out of his mind why would he buy me a car. We get to his office and it is

huge, suits his personality too

Him "please seat" he points a couch and sits next to me

Me "thank you sir" he rolls his eyes

Him "can't you at least call me Razor Siza?"

Me "I wouldn't feel comfortable, I am sorry" he smiles a genuine smile

Him "okay then, tell me what brings you here" he asks concerned

Me "I just came to ask if the therapist offer is still on the table? I would like to take you up on it"

Him "of course it is, I will give her a call, I also used her way back" him seeing a shrink what

problems could he possibly have

Me "thank you so much"

Him "that is what you do for the people you love Sizakele" heee  
did he say love, I felt some type of

way and I am not sure how to label the feeling but I found  
myself smiling back at him

Me "let me not waste anymore of your time I should get going, I  
need to go study"

Him "don't be silly, waste all my time I don't mind, so how is  
school going?"

Me "great actually, I have my exam coming up soon then I will  
know which direction I will take  
afterwards"

Him "medicine is what you wanted, why medicine if I may ask" I  
smile thinking of the reason

Me "Siphephelo my daughter" I take out the copy of her letter  
from my wallet and hand it to him  
and he smiles

Him "sounds like she was an amazing child"

Me "she was everything a mother could ever ask for" I say  
smiling and a tear escaped

Him "hey it will be okay" he wipes that tear and hugs me and for some odd reason his arms feel safe

Me "thank you sir, I hope therapy helps" he nods

Him "it will, give me your number so I call once I have spoken to the therapist" I take his phone

Me "there you go, I will hear from you then"

Him "tell me how would you feel if I helped fund your studies" okay now I am shocked

Me "oh no Mr Motaung, I can't you and Liv are already doing so much for me I couldn't"

Him "it is nothing really, no pressure just think about it okay" I smile and nod

Me "thank you once again and bye" he stands and hugs me again longer this time, why am I not freaking out.

Olivia

I am happy Siza went to tell Razor that she accepts his offer, I didn't want to be the one to do it in

case she changes her mind, I want her to decide this on her own, and I am pleased that she took this



step, Razor just called to tell me that she came by to the office. It has been a month since the truth got revealed and she has been sharing bits and pieces, I won't pressure her but I am glad she is now talking about it and crying less. On the other hand Siza has been nagging me to make amends with my sister and Siza also asked me to forgive her, see why I love this girl, I finally decided to text her last night to meet up and she said I could come to her house. I have been parked outside her gate for 10 minutes not knowing if I should go in or not. Finally decided to get in, she came to get me soon as I parked and attacked me with a hug.

Her "oh baby sis, I have missed you so much, and I am really sorry Liv, please don't hate me"

Me "I don't hate you Mercy" she tightens the hug and we walk inside

Her "I asked the chef to make us lunch, we can go sit in the garden" I smile she hasn't changed one

bit

Me "don't you think this house is too big?" she rolls her eyes

Her "of course you would think that Olivia, this house is going to be enough for my family"

Me "how many do you plan on making again?"

Her "maybe 2" I laugh "family of 4 in a 8 bedroom house okay then"

Me "cool" there is awkward silence between us for a minute, I sip on my champagne, Mercy and I

have never ran out of something to talk about, she decides to break the silence

Her "uhm Liv, I don't mean to offend you or seem insensitive, but, how is she?"

Me "she is hurt, she misses her daughter, but she is learning to talk about it and she will get there in

time I will be there to support her" she nods and looks down

Her "I am really sorry for hurting her really, I regret acting like a brat that day believe"

Me "it has happened, it won't change no matter how much we wish it could"

Her "you are right and I am sorry"

Me "you need to apologise to her not me"

Her "I would love that but right now I want to give her space to fully heal, maybe seeing me will set

her back again" I smile how considerate, I know my sister she has always been selfish

Me "okay then, where is the chef with that food I am famished" I say trying to change the subject I

don't want to turn my best friend into a conversation with my sister. I love them both and I will have

a relationship with the both of them without hurting the other

Her "let me go check up on him, we know how grumpy you can get when you are hungry" we laugh

Thandiwe

I have been feeling besides myself these days. I decided to go buy pregnancy tests and find out if I'm

finally pregnant, I have had enough sex to last me a life time, and I want no more. Sizwe has been

humping me like a prostitute every night, I wonder why he desperately wants another child this

much, but I will not question him, he is my husband and the

man of the house, wouldn't want him

calling baba and telling him that I have not been obedient at all,  
for peace sake I have learnt to do

everything he says. We are waiting for the timer to go off so we  
can check the tests he is so anxious

Him "how long should we wait for these things man yeses" I roll  
my eyes without him seeing

Me "patience babe hao" he drinks his cognac and starts pacing

Him "I just hope you are pregnant" he says looking at me and I  
shrug my shoulders

Me "God gives children baby, if I am not it means it is not the  
right time"

Him "don't start with that bullshit Thandiwe please" saved by  
the alarm, it goes off and he hurries

and looks at the test, then start laughing

Me "what does it say" I ask standing up

Him "you are pregnant, I was starting to think maybe I shoot  
blanks" I laugh

Me "no you don't, and one proof is alive and the one is in here  
baking" I say caressing my belly

Him "damn straight, listen I want you to relax and take it easy, I don't want you putting this

pregnancy at risk okay" I smile oh he is going to treat me like a Queen

Me "okay baby"

Him "I will get someone to help you around the house"

Me "thank you love" he winks at me

Him "I will see you later okay, I need to go to the club" I frown

Me "I thought we could spend time together celebrating these news babe"

Him "I would love that but I need to deal with a few things then I will be back I promise"

Me "whatever Sizwe"

Him "don't be like that please, I will be back" he kisses my cheek and walks out whistling a nice

melody. Here is to the most amazing 9 months maybe things between us will get better.

Please react, leave a comment and share. Your support means everything to me.

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

## Chapter 23

Siza

I left Mr Motaung's office feeling lighter, I can't wait to start therapy and be able to let my baby rest

in peace without crying each time I talk or think about her, I know she hated seeing me sad and

crying. I promised that I will be happy. I would go home but I will be bored to death, Liv is having

lunch with her sister, I am glad she reached out to her I wouldn't want to be the reason their

relationship failed. I decided to uber to club nation, it is an eatery too so I will have lunch there and

have a few non-alcoholic cocktails. The uber drops me off and I pay him then walk in. I find a table

and place my order. The service seems to be slow I wonder what is happening. The waiter comes to

apologize for the inconvenience, it is no problem really it is not like I am rushing anywhere. I am on

Instagram looking at fashion sides, I don't really post I just check celebrity news and latest

fashion trends. A text comes through, it is a number I do not recognise.

\*I hope you are safe, I really hate uber. Razor\* I laugh Liv's dad is dramatic

\*Sir I am safe and sound and thank you once again\* I respond, it beeps again

\*it is a pleasure, I spoke to the Dr by the way, she says you can start your sessions from next week,

you guys will meet 3 times a week. Stop calling me Sir, just Razor\* I smile

\*I really won't feel comfortable calling you by your name. And I will wait for the address and time,

not unless you tell me your real name\* I let my curiosity get the better of me.

\*LOL my real name huh, nobody ever asks me that. Well my birth name is Molemo Motaung\* My

God did he just say LOL? okay nice name, why the hell would he call himself Razor

\*okay then since calling you Mr Motaung annoys you, maybe I should just call you But'Mo\*

\*But'Mo huh, sounds nice I like it LOL” what is with the Lol nkosiyam.

\*where did you learn saying LOL\*

\*hahaha blame it on Olivia, she is the one who taught me these things\* I laugh

\*Of course she did\* why am I talking to this man like he is my friend. Oh my God no

\*you are the most beautiful woman I have ever laid my eyes on Sizakele\* my eyes pop, oh no did he

just, I am sure what he just said is not right, but why am I smiling like a lunatic. I decide I shouldn't

respond, what do I say to that, no we are being too friendly now. I place my phone down, my head is running wild with thoughts.

My food finally arrive and I start eating. The food here is fresh and

amazing, the chef really knows his or her staff hey. I hear shouting from near the office and it is

approaching towards me, some guy in a suit is screaming at his



staff, luckily it is just me here or his customers would never come back. They stop by the bar near my table

Him "you are all incompetent, wena I don't even know why I call you a manager" the man in the suit says

Guy "sorry sir, but they just left without notice, I didn't know" I guess this is the manager

Him "you know we have a high class function here on Friday, and that is in two fucking days. Where will we get waitresses that soon?" okay they are looking for people and I am looking for a job, is this a sign?

Guy "I will get to it right away sir" he say's sounding scared. This is my chance

Him "you better or else you will be fired I am not kidding" he says. I stand up, I don't know where I took the confidence from but wow

Me "sorry sir, I can fill one post, I am looking for a job" he looks at me from head to toe, as if he is undressing me

Him "and you are? Do you have any experience?" I swallow but quickly compose myself

Me "my name is Sizakele, and no I do not have experience but I am really a fast learner sir" he sighs

Him "I am desperate so I will take you, this idiot here will train you, be here tomorrow at 1 pm" just like that okay I am really lucky

Me "thank you sir I will be here" he nods and walks away. The manager came

Guy "thank you for saving my but" I smile

Me "it's a pleasure, thing is I have school during the day so I don't know"

Guy "we will work around that don't stress a lot of the waitresses and waiters are students" I nod

Me "that's a relief" he smiles

Guy "I am Katlego by the way" we shake hands

Me "nice to meet you Kat"

Guy "I should go back to work, see you tomorrow" I nod and he walks away. I go back to my food

and my phone beeps again and I look at it, it's But'Mo, I sigh

\*I am sorry I shouldn't have said that. I didn't mean to scare you away\* I really don't know what to say to him.

Razor ‘

My day started off amazingly and now I think I ruined it, I shouldn't have jumped right into it, she

was starting to warm up to me now she is ignoring my texts.

What if she thinks I am a freak, God I

messed up damn. If I call I will seem desperate, I don't want her to think that I am a psycho or

something. My mood just went south, I can't stay in this office anymore, I pack my stuff and walk out

looking at my phone, and it is taking me all my strength not to call her. I go to my PA

Me "I won't be coming back"

Her "but Sir what about your meetings" I look at her

Me "cancel those damn meetings will you"

Her "is everything okay Mr Motaung?" she is starting to annoy me now

Me "you asking me that is not part of your job description, just

do your job”

Her “sorry sir, I will get right to it” I walk and drive to my house, a part of me wants to start in

Braamfontein to check up on her but I decide against it. I get to my house and to straight to my

bedroom and change into my gym gear, I get to the gym and start blowing off some steam, I am

taking out all my frustrations on the punching bag. I spend about an hour in there, I take a shower

and decide to check my phone and there is a text, it is from Siza, you should have felt my heart. I had

a smile so huge my enemies would deem me weak, my mood just went from 0 to 100 real quick. I open the text

\*sorry I took so long, I just didn't know what to say, honestly I still don't know, I just texted so you don't think I am ignoring you, I don't want to be rude\* I blush

\*sorry I made you feel that way. Are you at home?” I send

\*yeah I just got in, I want to start cooking” my stomach starts grumbling, she knows her way around the kitchen

\*please keep a plate for me, what are you making?” I send

\*nothing fancy, just pap and beef bones with cabbage” oh my God this woman reminds me of the days in my grandmother’s house. I would marry her in a blink of an eye

\*you are torturing me here Sizakele, please keep a plate for me” I send

\*I will ask Liv to deliver it to you\* she responds

\*no please you bring it please\* I respond sounding desperate, this woman is unmasking my beast

she is making me weak, and funny enough I love it

\*okay okay, I will bring it before I go to work\* what work, I didn’t know she works

\* You work? That is news to me\* I respond

\*will tell you about it tomorrow\* she responds and Gadafi clears his throat then laughs

Him “who the hell are you texting with, blushing like this” I blush some more

Me “who else brother”

Him “this girl has got you by the balls Razor”

Me "it feels damn good I must say" he laughs

Him "hehehe Sizakele the village princess comes to the City to tame the beast" I smile

Me "I wanted to talk to you about that"

Him "what?"

Me "if she decides to give me a chance, I am going to give you the reigns of all our illegal dealings. I

will focus on the firm and other legit companies, you know our business once they now about her

they will target her to get to me and I would hate myself if anything happened to her" he is shocked

Him "I don't believe this, you would step down for her?" I laugh

Me "I would do anything for her trust me" he claps his hands

Him "I never thought I would live to see the day were I hear the mighty Razor talking about stepping

down from the game. now I am sure that you really love this girl" I smile

Me "best believe it brother best believe it"

Him "not to sound negative but what if she rejects you?" my face falls

Me "then I will let her be but continue protecting her from the side, I pray that is not the case though" he looks at me and nods vigorously

Him "it will work out bozza yam don't stress, she will love you the same" I smile

Me "pour us something to drink" he salutes then walks to pour us drinks

Him "while at it tell the chess to fix us supper I shout

Me "sure" he shouts back. I take my phone and go back to my conversation with Siza via text

Mandla

I need to start making time for Sizakele, things at the hospital are dying down my time will be

balanced to be able to spend time with her and work and also have time to myself. I don't want her

to think that ever since she moved here I am not giving her attention. She is important to me and it

is time I proved that to her. I will call her tomorrow to ask her to hang with me, we will just Netflix

and chill. I need to find out how things have been with her. I know this city can be overwhelming and

a familiar face is needed once in a while. Vusi said he is coming over with a few beers just to unwind after work. A knock comes through but the person doesn't wait for an answer coz the door opens, I

don't bother checking who it is, coz only my friends do that.

Him "bro bro, what's up" he say's placing the 12 pack corona on the table

Me "sure ntwana, fokol just watching the highlights" he sits down and takes off his shoes opens two beers and hands me one

Him "it was a long day, court can be shit. I think I need to rethink this career" I laugh

Me "you were born to be a lawyer man" he side smiles

Him "I saw Siza today" I sat up straight

Me "she came to see you?"

Him "I wish, she came to see Razor and I was wondering what that was about, she was in the for a

while, and I must admit, she looks amazing" I laugh



Me "I never thought I would hear you complement Siza ever again"

Him "arg ftsek" I laugh and sip my beer

Me "yeah she is amazing, she dresses proper now, the first time I saw him I couldn't believe my eyes" he nods and sighs

Him "today when I saw her I thought of when I first laid my eyes on her all those years ago in the Village, she was so innocent and beautiful" I narrow my eyes

Me "you still in love with her?" he sips

Him "I never stopped loving her I just wasn't attracted to her anymore" okay I am confused

Me "you have Mercy bafo and you are marrying her, don't confuse Siza please"

Him "I doubt she would want anything to do with me man, I was just saying. And yes I am marrying Mercy" he says not sounding convinced

Please leave a comment, react and share. Can our post likes increase the same way the page likes

increase. Thank you for the support.

Siza's tribulations

(Not edited)

## Chapter 24

Siza

I wake up in the morning to make breakfast but Olivia has beat me to it, hai this is the first shame I hope

I don't have a running stomach this whole day. Last night she was so ecstatic about me finding a job

especially at club nations, apparently it is the litest club in town and now that I work there I will buy her

booze at staff price, imagine a whole black card holder speaking of staff discounts, she is crazy that one

but I love her still. I get to the bathroom without her seeing me and brush my teeth then take a hot

shower. Once done I go back to my room and opt for a simple comfortable outfit. I get to the kitchen

and she smiles when she sees me

Her "good morning beautiful, come sit I made breakfast" I smile

Me "thank you sweetheart" she hands me my plate

Her "are you ready for work"

Me "very ready, I cant wait to start buying you things too" she rolls her eyes

Her "stop being silly please, you are going to save most of that money, that's what we agreed on last

night Siza don't go back to your word now" I laugh

Me "relax will you"

Her "just eat your food"

Me "I hope I don't have a running stomach on my first day at work" she gives me a warning look

Her "hahaha very funny, be grateful, I woke up early to make you that" I laugh

Me "I know come, I am just pulling your leg"

Her "good coz if I am a bad cook then I will blame it on my teacher and that is you honey girl"

Me "what time is your test"

Her "at 12, but I will drop you at work first"

Me "no babe I will get an Uber"

Her "are you sure babe?" I smile and bite my toast

Me "I am very sure"

Her "okay then I will go shower so long then head out to campus"

Me "okay sweetheart" she goes to the bathroom and I finish eating then wash my plate and dish up

but Mo lunch box, he did beg for last night's meal. I pack it in my bag and wait for Liv to finish so I can

wish her luck. I watch an episode of real housewives of Atlanta and I honestly don't see the fuss Liv

makes about this show, I mean all they do is have lunch, drink champagne, gossip and make noise, this

show is trash shame. She appears and grabs her water bottle and a fruit.

Me "go before its late babe" she sighs

Her "yeah I am out of here"

Me "good luck, I love you"

Her "I love you too babe, see you later" she runs out and I request an Uber, it gets here in 5 minutes

and I am out too, heading to Motaung attorneys

Razor

Here I am in a meeting with my juniors, they are updating me with their cases, we normally have this

meeting every month end, but today my head is not in it, I am thinking of my goddess and if she will

really come today, she said she will drop off the lunchbox before she goes to work but honestly I love

her food but I don't care about that right now, all I want to do is to see her face and hear her soft voice

that's it, Vusi drags me back from my thoughts

Him "sir did you catch that" he says

Me "uhm yeah sorry, please let's have this meeting later in the day, my head is all over" they all nod

and start taking their files. My phone rings and it is my PA, I answer and stay silent

Her "sir, there is a Sizakele here for you" you should the smile on my face, this woman is my mood lifter

Me "okay, please get her to my office, I will be done in 5 minutes"

PA "okay sir" she hangs up and take my things and practically run to my office

Vusi "sir can we have a word" I look at him and sigh

Me "someone important is waiting for me, can we do this later" he nods and I leave, I get to my office

and she is standing by the glass looking at Jozi, I clear my throat and she quickly turns and gasp, shit I

scared her

Her "but'Mo don't do that, do you want me to have a heart attack" I smile

Me "sorry beautiful, I didn't mean to" she smiles and I seat on the couched and she comes to seat next

to me

Her "I brought your food, but you going to have to warm them up before you eat"

Me "thank you, I will have this for lunch. How did you sleep?"

Her "I had a good one thanks, what about you?"

Me "I spoke to you almost all night that made me sleep like a baby" she laughs

Her "I am glad to hear that"

Me "okay tell me, where do you work?"

Her "I actually got the waitressing job yesterday at club nations" what no no no my world stops, why that place

Me "okay, wont working disturb your studying?" I ask

Her "I don't think so, my exam is coming soon and I am prepared for it, but if I feel it is too much I will resign"

Me "please do, I don't want you loosing focus" I am not happy about this but I won't tell her not to work

there what I will do rather is to tell my boys to be vigilant when it comes to Sizwe

Her "I need to get going, my training starts at 1" she say's flashing her beautiful smile

Me "okay then let me not keep you. When will I see you again" she looks down

Her "I don't know but'Mo" I blush, the way she calls me damn

Me "okay but can I at least call you later?" she nods and we both stand up and hug so tight, she doesn't

flinch or move away, could this mean she is falling for me too?

Vusi

Work was hectic, very hectic. I just want to take a shower, eat then hit the bed, today I saw Siza again

and she was leaving Razors office, what could those two be talking about, I mean she is Olivia's friend,

what is she doing with her father, I just hope Razor is not taking advantage of her, I mean she is still

vulnerable and men like my father in law are predators. She is really looking good, even her confidence

is building up, you can see from the way she walks and how she carries herself that she has become a

woman who knows what she wants from life. I am just hurt that she had to go through so much before

she got her break. I mean I had the means and resources to help her out but I chose to let go of her and

look for something better, life is funny hey. I get to my house and park, I look at all that I have and

realize that none of this is mine, none of this belong to me, they were all provided to me by my father in



law, I am nothing really, I am an empty man hiding behind all this power and status, do I really want to

marry Mercy or was it just infatuation and the fact that I am who I am because of her and her father,

have I even loved any woman but Sizakele? Oh why is my brain doing this to me. I need to get my head

right. I walk out of my car and walk in and find Mercy in the kitchen having a sandwich

Her "oh welcome home baby" she comes to me and pecks my lips

Me "hey" she frowns

Her "are you okay?"

Me "I am fine, just tired, when is hectic"

Her "I will talk to daddy, why is he making you work like this, he should give you a break"

Me "you will do no such thing Mercy, I don't need you fighting my battles for me" I shout

Her "bathong Vusi, why are you acting like this"

Me "I am tired of not being a man in this house, you don't have to run to daddy every time" she blinks

and a tear drops

Her "where is all this coming from all of a sudden"

Me "what do you mean all of a sudden, can't you see"

Her "see what baby" she say's crying, I roll my eyes

Me "that your father is the man of this house and you and I his wives, he buys us houses and cars

everything we have belongs to him, when will we have a life of our own, far from your family"

Her "far from my family Vusi, do you think you salary will afford all these luxuries, now you telling me

bullshit" she says wiping her tears, she is mad now

Me "oh now you saying I am broke, what are you doing with a broke man then" she laughs

Her "wake up Vusi, you are all that you are because of my father, you should be grateful not telling me

this bullshit" I laugh

Me "and I will never hear the end of this for all of our married life will I? What happens if all the money

vanishes and we survive only on my salary will you leave me for a rich guy?" she blinks

Her "of course not my love, I didn't mean it like that sorry babe"  
she say's taking my hand

Me "whatever, I am going to shower"

Her "baby please, let's talk, please" she say's coming after

Me "go talk to your daddy I am very sure he will listen and give  
you all you want"

Her "Vusi I am sorry please"

Me "go drink champagne Mercy and leave my broke ass alone" I  
say closing the bathroom door

Dali

My son is very angry with me with me and it is all because that  
good for nothing thing he had a child

with, if he didn't sell me out to Vusi about what I did to that  
brat we wouldn't be here at all, now I am

stuck with no money and he won't even answer my calls. I don't  
know what to do anymore, my eldest

son's have moved out with their wives, these boys pick out the  
worst girls I don't know why. Imagine

those things I used to treat better than Sizakele turned their backs on me and poisoned my sons against me too. I don't have a cent on my name and I don't have an address of where they now stay so I can go and ask for money, I would go to the city but that requires money to pay for transport. My husband is sitting outside under the tree eating peanuts, the way I am so hungry I would kill even for that, I kneel in front and he stops and looks at me

Him "yini (what)?" he asks annoyed

Me "myeni wam please"

Him "please what wena?"

Me "I will die of hunger please have a heart" he laughs

Him "I would rejoice" I gasp for air

Me "don't talk like this I am still your wife baba"

Him "you know I didn't think God will deal with you so soon" he laughs again

Me "I beg you please"

Him "where is your precious son Dali, why don't you go ask him

for help”

Me “please don’t do this to me”

Him “begging doesn’t look good on you, imagine how you made Sizakele feel all those years, do you

remember how she used to beg you to treat her right, did you?”

I swallow

Me “qha baba (no)” I let a tear out

Him “your bitter heart has led you here and let me tell you something, this is only the beginning Dali,

worse is yet to come and I will be waiting with a smile to see you suffer the same way Siza suffered” he

gets up and leaves me there. Oh is this what my life has become.

Please react, leave a comment and share with others.

Siza’s tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 25

Mercy

I never thought that my man had a problem with daddy doing everything for us, I mean he never mentioned it even in passing, I always run things pass him before I ask my dad to do them, and he also has never made Vusi feel less of a man because he does all these things for us. My father loves me and my sister more than anything in the world, he wants us to have everything we desire and more so him making sure that Vusi is comfortable is to make me happy coz he makes me happy, most people label my father as a heartless gangster, I just see a loving man who makes ends meet and takes care of hundreds of people who work for him, legally or illegally. It has been two days since the fight and he has been so cold towards me, can you believe I haven't even seen him since that night, he leaves early while I am sleeping and comes back late when I am in bed, this is all so frustrating really, I don't what to do so he can see that I didn't mean everything I said, I was just mad and said things in the heat of the moment. I honestly don't know what to do so I called my baby sister to

come cheer me up, she is due any minute

from now, I need to offload really or I will go mad, I don't want to resort to retail therapy, I am slowly

running out of closet space. A car pulls up in my drive way and a sec later my bubbly sister gets in holding a bottle tequila.

Me "exactly what I needed" she laughs

Her "TGIF then" we laugh

Me "exactly babe, let me go get glasses and lemon"

Her "don't forget the salt" I nod and quickly went to my kitchen and brought those things

Me "and we can begin then" she frowns

Her "I know you, come on spill it already, what is eating you?" I sigh

Me "my relationship babe, my fiancé is not speaking to me"

Her "why is that sis?"

Me "he came home 2 days ago and started telling me that he doesn't feel like the man of the house

because daddy buys us everything, we had a heated argument and I kind of implied that he was broke

and he cant afford this lifestyle” she closes her eyes

Her “Mercy my goodness”

Me “I know, I know. It’s bad”

Her “you bruised his ego sis, the man has a right to be mad at you”

Me “I feel so bad Liv, I wish I can take the words back”

Her “only you can’t babe, I don’t even know what to say” I sigh

Me “I can’t lose him Olivia, Vusi has been the longest relationship I have ever had, you know my history

with man, I can’t keep one, but I did with him and now I am afraid I am going to lose him”

Her “just talk to him, tell him you are sorry and mean it please, he loves you” she hugs me

Me “thank you sis”

Her “I love you okay” I smile

Me “I love you too sis” I smile, she is exactly what I needed and I feel better, I will surely talk to my man

about this and ask for forgiveness. I can’t lose this man, I love him.

Her “and stop accepting everything from Razor” I laugh then



nod

Siza

It is safe to say I am ready to start working, the manager and the owner is happy with me. Apparently

tonight the boss is hosting his business associated and it is a top event, we were asked to dress in black,

Olivia helped me pick out a tight black palazzo jumpsuit and black block heels, my fro was on another

level, rose gold hooped earrings and watch, haii man I am nice, ndi muhle guys. All the other girls opted

for dresses. We are waiting in the staff room waiting for instructions from the big boss; he walks in,

serious as ever and looks at us one by one then nods

Boss "okay everyone looks nice, you all will present me well, Kat is everything ready?"

Kat "everything is okay and ready boss" he nods

Boss "okay here is what's going to happen, tonight Sizakele will

be working in the VVIP serving my table

with my high valued associates, then” he couldn’t finish when a waitress interrupted him

Her “but Sizwe VIP is mine, everyone knows this”

Boss “Vicky are you seriously planning to argue this right now really” okay what is all this about

Her “I am not arguing, I am just surprised why mafikizolo suddenly goes to VVIP and she hasn’t even been here for a week”

Boss “this is my place my rules or am I lost”

Her “Sizwe are you sleeping with her” we all gasp for air, whaaaat is this girl for real right now

Kat “Vicky that is no way to talk to the boss, know your place”

Boss “no Kat please, leave her to say her mind” he says and folds his arms

Her “are you all going to accept being sidelined by some new girl who just trained 2 days ago” okay I couldn’t stand this

Me “sir sorry for speaking out of turn, but it is fine I can be on the general section, I don’t want to cause

tension between your staff, this event is important to you, I wouldn't want to be the reason it is ruined "

Boss "exactly why I want you to be in the VVIP section, unlike some people, you have class" she laughs

Her "oh really now, is that what you got to say" he gives her a death stare and she shuts up

Boss "Vicky you will be in the VIP with Sindy and Retha, then Kat please allocate waitresses that will

assist Siza with orders, her job tonight is just to go round the table to ask if everyone is still fine should

they need anything she will call the waitress to come take orders" she clicks her tongue

Kat "sure thing boss"

Boss "okay team let us work our magic" he say's and walks out, the Vicky girl comes to me

Her "better not be comfortable, you won't be here for long" she walks out and the others follow her

Kat "don't worry yourself about her"

Me "what is her problem"

Kat "she is sleeping with the boss, so she assumes every girl is doing it too" I gasp

Me "why would she do that" he laughs

Kat "this is Jozi Siza, girls want man with money and Sizwe happens to have a lot of it"

Me "right" he laughs

Kat "just ignore her and you will be okay"

Me "I will try"

Kat "good, you look nice by the way. Come let's go show you VVIP section one more time"

Me "thanks" I follow him

Razor

I ended up accepting Sizwe's invitation to his stupid event coz I want to see my goddess and ensure that

those thirsty men don't take advantage of her, I honestly can't stomach the fact that she is working for

that animal, okay I am being a hypocrite coz him and I are cut from the same cloth, but I care about

Sizakele so I am allowed to act like this right? Right. I laugh at myself, I have become this weak loving

man and tonight I must try by all means to let the beast out even in Siza's presence I hope that will be possible straight. I laugh when Gadafi walks in wearing a suit, he is not a suit man, he is forever in sweats and jeans with sneakers.

Me "look at you, you clean up good"

Him "fuck you Razor, I look like a clown" I laugh again

Me "of course not, you look a gentleman, I can't have Sizakele seeing you looking like a thung"

Him "oh right we going to that stupid event just to see your woman. This is why I hate love and shit"

Me "I will remind you when you meet your own Sizakele" he laughs

Him "oh fvck no, I am not falling in love, so I can be a puppy like you" I chuckle

Me "okay fine you not falling in love. Let's get going. We already late"

Him "that is good, grand entrances, they must know we have arrived"

Me "right" one thing Gadafi loves besides money is attention.

We get to the car and drive off, security is following behind us, all Mafia's and Kingpins will be there, those bastards cannot be trusted. We get to the club and walk in, the fool Sizwe come towards us by the door, Gadafi whispers

Him "oh here comes the clown, this boy thinks he can match up to his old man"

Me "that's what makes him a fool" we laugh and he gets to us

Sizwe "gentleman, welcome to club Nations, I thought you were not coming"

Me "we are here now, where shall we be seated"

Sizwe "oh yes that, you guys are in the VVIP let me show you" we follow behind him

Gadafi "you have a nice pozi sani"

Sizwe "oh thanks, it is just a hobby"

Me "I bet it is" we get to VVIP and I see her and my heart is alright

Sizwe "Siza please come here" she comes and lay's her eyes on me then smile, Gadafi pokes me and I laugh, this one can be childish

Her "yes Sir"

Sizwe "these two gentleman, are important, take care of them, guys this beautiful lady will take care of

you, I need to attend something" we nod and he walks away, Siza and I stare at each other for about a

minute and Gadafi clears his throat

Me "oh sorry, beautiful meet my brother Gadafi, man this is beautiful" she laughs

Her "nice to meet you, why do you two gentle have such names" we laugh

Him "nice to meet you beautiful, regarding our names, we just don't like our real ones, it would take

Razor I don't know what to tell you his real name" I chuckle

Me "actual she knows my name, my real name" he laughs

Him "of course she does"

Her "come let me show you to your table" we follow her and I wish I could cover her with a blanket

these thirsty old dogs are looking at her, undressing her with their eyes, I hate this. She gives us a table

by the corner and it is dark, we can see people but people can't see us, this is good. The rest of the night

Gadafi makes us some contacts and I am just staring at Sizakele, when she is busy going up and down attending these fuckers.

Siza

The night comes to an end and I must say I have never made such a lot of money in one night, these tips could actual pay 5 months' rent. I didn't see but'Mo leave I don't know why but I am hurt he didn't say  
bye, my feet are hurting me God, I just want to remove these shoes and take a shower then sleep, my  
uber is outside, I say bye to everyone and leave, I am about to get into the car but someone held my  
hand, I look up scared and it's but'Mo, I sigh

Me "you won't stop till I have a heart attack ne" he laughs

Him "sorry beautiful I didn't mean to"

Me "what are you still doing here, I thought you had left"

Him "and leave you here to take an Uber, I don't think so" I roll my eyes



Me "it is already here I should go"

Him "nope not a chance" he takes out his wallet and takes out about a thousand and gives it to the driver

Him "sorry for wasting your time" the driver smiles and leaves

Me "that was a lot"

Him "enough for wasting his time, in my world time is money beautiful" I smile

Me "okay then, since you sent my Uber away care to take me to the apartment"

Him "actually I was hoping you would stay with me tonight" my eyes pop

Me "I don't think that is a good idea"

Him "I promise I won't do anything, we will just sleep" I sigh, this is so wrong and I want it so bad

Me "I don't know Molemo" he smiles

Him "please don't over think this please"

Me "Olivia will be worried"

Him "send her a text and tell her you sleeping at a colleagues" I take out my phone to text her, but

there is already one from Liv, saying she will be sleeping over at her sisters coz she is not feeling okay

Me "she beat me to it, she will be sleeping at Mercy's" he smiles

Him "problem solved then, come let's go home" he takes my hand and we walk to his car and get in, he

drives us and we are in comfortable silence, I drift off to lala land, and I wake up in his arms walking up

the stairs. why does this feel so right and yet so so so wrong

Me "why didn't wake me I would have walked" he laughs

Him "you looked so peaceful" I smile, we get to his bedroom and he puts me down and disappears into

his walk in closet and comes back with shorts and a t shirt

Him "okay wear this, I bet those shoes are killing you, I will go get water and advils so long" he walks out

and I change, he comes back a minute later and takes my clothes to his closet and comes back with only

pajama bottoms, his bare chest looks hot those tattoos, let me shut up. I get under covers and he joins

me and pulls me to his and holds me tight, suddenly it hits me.

What am I doing I mean this is my best

friend's father, I breath faster in panic

Him "hey what's wrong" he asks panicking

Me "you are Liv's father what we are doing is wrong" he stares deep in my eyes and sighs

Him "I know Siza but I can't help it. My heart yearns for you, I can't stay away, the more I try the more I

want you, I love you Sizakele and I am sorry that I do. If you want to leave I will take you home now"

Me "you love me?" I asked shocked by my heart feels at ease like I have been waiting for him to say that

Him "I do, more than you can imagine, I love you" I don't know why but I just snuggled closer to him

and he tightened his arms around me and kissed my forehead. I feel so safe, it is scary

Him "let us sleep you are tired, we will talk about this when we wake up okay?" I nod and smile at him.

And a minute later I am out. Off to dream land.

Please react, leave a comment and share.

Happy woman's day lovies

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

## Chapter 26

Siza

I wake up and I am all alone in his bed, oh my God I really slept here in his arms, it felt so good now I

understand why they say sin is nice, coz wow. He said he loves me, does he really, why am I not scared

of this, not scared of being here with him and enjoying myself, does it mean that I feel something for

him too, would be it be so bad if I did? Will people understand our relationship should we have one?

Would I be condemned and called names for loving a man society expects me to see as a father, did I

just say love? Do I love him? This is all so confusing, a part of me screams run Siza run but most parts me

are so relaxed and content like this is who I should be with, what happens when Olivia finds out that her

father's claims to love me? Will she hate me or will she understand that no one has control over whom

they love, why do I keep saying love? Do I really reciprocate this

man's feelings? The door opens and he  
walks in holding a tray of food and a rose, I blush and hide my  
face

Him "do you know how beautiful you are when you do that,  
makes me fall in love with you more"

Me "you are saying that again" he frowns

Him "saying what?"

Me "the L word" he laughs

Him "that is because I do Siza"

Me "but it is wrong we both know it" he sighs

Him "okay tell me, why do you think this is wrong?"

Me "you are my best friend's father Molemo"

Him "so if Olivia wasn't your friend you would give me a  
chance?"

Me "maybe I don't know" he sighs

Him "let me ask you something and please be honest with me  
Siza" I nod

Me "okay, I promise I will be honest"

Him "do you feel something for me like even if it's small even if it is not love, but something whatever anything, is it there for me"

Me "yes I do feel something for you and it scares me" he smiles

Him "then please let us explore it Siza, let us try and fail rather than to not give it a shot and wonder 5

years from now what could have happened and if it could have been real" why is he making sense

Me "but what if it is nothing serious then I lose Olivia over nothing"

Him "I also have something to lose baby, I mean I recently fixed things with her too if she hates you over

this it means she will hate me more rato laka" out of all the man in jozi It just had to be him

Me "I might feel something for you but I came here for a purpose I don't want to lose focus Mo"

Him "I totally understand and I support your dream 110% and I will make sure you fulfill it I promise, you

mentioned that this might be a mistake I get your point, so how about we spend time together without

people knowing so we can explore each other and know if this is

love and once that is established we

make it know to people but Olivia being the first”

Me “so we will be doing this discreetly” he smile

Him “much as I hate hiding yes, It will also give me time to also get my affairs in order”

Me “how will it work then”

Him “we will mostly do get aways so we don’t get to worry about people seeing us, you can come here

too plus my kids never come here and my staff is discreet and the rest we will figure out as we go” she

smiles

Me “okay”

Razor

Does she mean what I think she means, did she just agree to being with me, I pinch myself and I am

definitely not dreaming, okay I never sound so cheesy ever but this has to be the best day of my life, she

is young and scared and understand but she is willing to be

mine so I will have her anyway that she will  
be comfortable even if it means I have to hide to love her then I  
will, the day she decides that she is  
ready for the world to know that we are together I will be  
thrilled, my daughters are my worry but if  
they love me they will accept that she makes me happy and I  
want to be with her. I am looking deep in  
her eyes, and that 'okay' to me sounded like an I love you too  
and right now that is all I need.

Me "okay?" she laughs

Her "okay we can give it a try" I get up from kneeling and pick  
her up from the bed and spin her around

and she is giggling like a happy school girl, I love her, judge me  
but I love her, I might be a dirty man with

a filthy life but my love for her is pure and deep down I know  
and believe she might be the one to

redeem me. I finally put her down and she looks at me and smile

Me "you are beautiful do you know that?" she blushes and I  
make her look at me and peck her lips she

looks away embarrassed



Me "look at me" she does and those eyes win me off every time  
I look deep inside of them

Her "you are starring stop it" I laugh

Me "listen I don't want you to be afraid, I know you are  
inexperienced even though you had a child, I

will not rush you into anything I promise you, you should never  
feel obligated to do anything you are not

ready for, I am willing to take baby steps with you even if we  
have to take turtle steps I will, I love you

and I want you to be happy and comfortable when you are  
around me baby, never fear that we might

get up to no good, until you ready I will wait" I felt like I needed  
to get that out of the way I saw how she

froze when I pecked her lips. We are still looking in each other's  
eyes when she attacked me with a

warm passionate kiss, I kissed her back till we broke and hugged  
so tight like our lives depended on it.

We stayed like that till we heard voices approach and broke it,  
it's my daughters

Me "don't worry I will get rid of them okay?" she smiles but you  
can see she is scared they might come

in here. I kiss her forehead and head out; they were almost at my door

Mercy "hey daddy" I hug them

Me "girls what are you doing here" I ask faking a smile

Mercy "what kind of question is that, can't we visit our father?"

Me "I didn't mean it like that baby, I am happy to see you too"

Liv "Razor do you have a visitor" I laugh

Me "no Olivia" I blush

Liv "oh my God daddy, look at how you are blushing, who is she, can we meet her?"

Mercy "she must be loved if you brought her to your house, you never bring woman to your house"

Me "stop it you too" I laugh and smile

Liv "oh my God, she has you, you love her, I know that smile and it is for those you love only, me and

Mercy, dad who is the woman, I really need to meet her and kiss her feet"

Me "why kiss her feet?"

Liv "she finally melted Razors stone heart and got him to love

someone besides his daughters” I laugh

Mercy dad please allow us see her” I shake my head

Me “nope you will scare her off, you too are monsters” they laugh

Liv “but honestly it’s good to see you like this” o I hope you can still say that once you know who she is

Mercy “let us leave dad to go back to his woman the” they laugh and go away and I go back to my lady and lock the door in case they try peep.

Vusi

I have been avoiding my fiancé for days now, I just can’t look at her right now, what she said to me really

cut deep, i never thought she saw me that way and knowing that she does breaks my ego more. I am

humiliated, a part of me wished to believe that she didn’t mean and that she said it because she was

angry but I know it wasn’t, that is exactly how she feels about me. I asked the boys to come through to

my ‘house’ to chill; it has been a minute really. The door bells comes through and I go open for you

Steve "look at you opening the door like Bill gates" we laugh

Mandla "rich man problems

Me "ftsek nina, come on in" the laugh and walk in whistling

Steve "how many kids are you two planning to have coz this is a fvcken mansion bruh"

Me "at the rate we going at none"

Mandla "kahle wena what's going on"

Me "guys I can't just drop my problems you just got here, let just relax first" they nod

Mandla "fair enough bafo"

Steve "okay then" I sigh

Me "okay firstly what do you guys want to eat?"

Steve "we can braai no stress" Mandla nods

Me "okay grand, let me tell the chef to marinate it for us, should he braai or we will?"

Mandla "we will braai ntwana" I went to tell the chef and find them at the same spot

Me "aow guys why didn't you get comfortable?" the laugh

Steve "you want us to get lost in this big ass house" we laugh

Me "let's go to the bar and get freaky"

Mandla "now you talking"

Me "sdakwa" we get to the bar and they literally scream, we choose a bottle and go chill in the garden

Mandla "talk to us then" I sigh

Me "I told her I am not comfortable with Razor buying us all this shit and my fiancé bluntly told me that I

wouldn't be able to afford this life, she indirectly told me I am broke and I can't afford this lifestyle for

her" they whistle

Steve "shit that is bull ntwana"

Me "I know, you can imagine how bruised I am bafetho"

Mandla "totally bruh" I sigh and gulp my glass

Me "I just want to have my own shit, what is she leaves me then what?"

Mandla "exactly, I suggest you buy your own staff on the side, like now, buy a house and rent it out,

with the rent you buy another one and start investing in businesses and staff"

Steve "mindlos is right bruh, start acquiring your own shit, this

is so guaranteed”

Me “it’s time like these I miss Sizakele, she was a supportive woman” they laugh

Steve “I know you didn’t just say that ntwana”

Me “I know I shouldn’t be thinking of her”

Steve “do me a favor boy, leave that woman alone, let her find herself you have done enough damage,

no offense

Me “I hear you boy” let me go check on the chef”

Steve “hamba Bill Gates” I laugh mxm this fool

Please react, leave a comment and share. See you monday

Siza’s tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 27

Siza

I don’t know how to express myself but I have been so happy with Molemo, he is amazing really, I don’t

think I have ever been so appreciated and alive like I am now. We have been seeing each other for over a month now and we are still discreet about it, I hate having to do this behind Liv's back but for now I don't have a choice. My exam results will be released tomorrow and I will know my fate, but to be honest I know I nailed it, I wrote very well. I want to go to the village to see my mother's it has been a while and I miss them so much. I am at Mandla's place, we have been good friends of recent. Molemo doesn't like it one bit but he doesn't forbid me from seeing him.

Him "so are you ready for tomorrow?" I smile

Me "I am excited, I just want to see how I performed really, I gave my everything" he nods

Him "I am so proud of you Siza, you turned your life around and you are looking to make something out of your life, I am very sure Phephe is proud of her mommy right now"

Me "I hope she is, I am doing this to honor her memory"

Him "it is good to see you speak about her and not cry" I smile

Me "therapy is really helping Mandla, I feel so much better, I have learned to let go and let her rest in perfect peace"

Him "I am glad to hear that sweetheart"

Me "what do you want to eat?" he smiles like a lunatic

Him "you cooking?" I roll my eyes

Me "yes I am" he stands up and cheers

Him "woman do you know how much I've missed your cooking"

Me "judging from your expression right now I can say I have a clear idea" he smiles at me

Him "okay how about samp and stew" he says licking his lips

Me "okay sir let me get right to it"

Him "I could help what do you need me to do"

Me "you could help peel and chop the veggies"

Him "okay beautiful"

Me "did you take the weekend off at work?"

Him "eish shit I totally forgot" I frown

Me "oh come on you promised me mos" he laughed and came to hug me



Him "I am kidding babe, we are still going home later tomorrow"

Me "don't play me like that man" he laughs

Him "forgive me sweetheart"

Me "all is forgiven sir but you owe me for almost stopping my heart"

Him "dramatic much Sizakele" we both laugh

Me "mxm shut up and start chopping, I need to finish and go back to my apartment"

Him "I thought you are sleeping over"

Me "Olivia would kill me dead trust me" he laughs

Him "if I didn't know better I would say you too are secretly dating" I laugh if only you knew whose my

secret love

Me "oh well that's not the case" we both laugh and get on with the cooking

Razor

I am having late lunch with my daughters and my mind is miles

away really, my woman went to spend  
the day with Vusi, he is from the same village as her and  
according to her he is just a brother to her,  
damn that he is a man and Sizakele is a beautiful woman, she is  
a goddess and I know man would kill to  
be with her, just that she is mine and I don't want man eyeing  
her it gets me crazy, but I trust my woman  
and I know her she would never for fall for other man. So we  
have been together for a while now and I  
am happy very happy. I love her and I am in love with her.

Liv "daddy come back to us" I snap out of it

Me "sorry baby, I am thinking about work it is pretty hectic"

Mercy "nope that's not it, had a fight with madam?" I laugh

Me "no, we are good, great actually I just miss her"

Liv "then why not go and see her" I sigh

Me "I will Olivia"

Mercy "whoever that lady is I love her for making you this  
happy"

Me "do you mean that?" I should test the water while at it

Mercy "of course I do, right Liv?"

Liv "definitely, she managed to warm up your cold heart"

Me "what would you do if I told you that she is way younger than me?"

Liv "daddy are you her blesser?" I laugh

Me "no silly she is a great woman, I genuinely love her and she loves me too"

Liv "then that's all that matters" I gasp for air

Mercy "is that why we haven't met her, coz she is younger than you?"

Me "one of the reasons yes" they laugh

Mercy "you want us to be happy daddy, you do everything to ensure that we are happy why would we

stand in the way of your happiness, I have seen how you have been since you got with her and I love

seeing you like this, whether she is younger or older than you we support you fully"

Liv "yes 1000% daddy be happy" I smile, I hope they still feel the same way once they know who she is

Me "I really appreciate this guys and just know that I truly love her girls I really do" they smile sweetly at

me

Liv "do you know how I know that you love her" I shake my head

Me "tell me please"

Liv "because you have never ever told us that you love mom or at least loved, the way you are

expressing your love for her right now"

Mercy "that is true, very true"

Me "I hope you accept her once you meet her"

Liv "I have never seen you so nervous before, this one really has you shame" they laugh and high five

Mercy "can we order please I have a man to go back home to"

Liv "oh yes please I also have a best friend I told to come back early, I need to order a takeaway for her,

she is not cooking tonight, I also want to get her a gift her results are coming out tomorrow" I smile, I

just hope their relationship will not be destroyed because I love her friend and she loves me too

Me "you really love don't you"

Liv "she is the most humble and realest person ever daddy, she is my sister"

Mercy "and you wonder why I am jealous of her, she replaced me" she laughs

Liv "I told you that's not true hey"

Mercy "I know just pulling your leg, but I have seen her she is a good person hey"

Liv "she is more than that. I want to be her best friend forever" I smile and we place our order

The next day

Siza

I open my eyes and Olivia is shaking me roughly and screaming in my ear, oh can she give me break right

now. I groan and she laughs, I take my pillow and cover my head, but she roughly removes me and gets

on top of me screaming and singing, and she can't sing to save her life really.

Liv "please wake up Sizakele, we need to go by your school"

Me "what is the time?"

Liv "its 7am" I frown

Me "but Liv they said we should come at 9 am come on its still early"

Liv "what the fuck is wrong with you, are you not nervous" I laugh

Me "my nerves won't change the results really"

Liv "okay please wake up for me then" I smile

Me "okay I will, go make me coffee so long" she gets off me and goes to the kitchen, I sigh and my

phone rings and it Molemo, my smile goes from ear to ear

Me "good morning"

Him "morning beautiful, how are you"

Me "I am great thanks, yourself"

Him "I am okay, shouldn't you be nervous for your results" I roll my eyes what's with daddy and

daughter with nerves

Me "nope I am okay" he laughs

Him "you never cease to amaze me my love"

Me "I am glad to hear that" I say blushing

Him "just wanted to tell you that I am proud of you and I love you so much" no one can blush like me,

when he tells me he loves me

Me "I love you too Mo"

Him "I will never tire of hearing you say those words to me.

baby listen, I have a breakfast meeting and I

am about to go in now, come to the office after you get your results I will be waiting okay?" I smile

Me "okay I will"

Him "okay rato laka, I will see you later"

Me "okay Mr. Motaung"

Him "okay get up and go get the results now Sizakele" with that he hangs up, I get up and tidy up my

room and go take a shower.

Olivia drives us to the school and some of my classmates are already there some crying tears of joy and

screaming their lungs out with excitement, some are crying coz they didn't make it at all. The nerves

start kicking in now and my palms are now sweating like crazy,  
she parks and we walk out and she takes

my hand and squeeze it reassuringly and I smile at her, we get  
to the office where our statement of

results are given out and I find the principal of the school and  
some of my teachers there.

Principal "and here comes the girl of the moment" my heart  
races what does that mean

Me "good morning everyone"

Principal "hello Ms Dlamini, I would love to be the first to  
congratulate you, you have made this center

proud, you have proved that second chances are needed, thank  
you so much for bringing shine to this

adult centre, people view this centre as a joke they don't believe  
in those who couldn't do it the first

time but you have proved them wrong, thank you so much" I  
look at Liv and she is smiling like crazy

Me "thank you Sir" he hands me my results and I almost fainted,  
Liv takes them and starts screaming

Liv "oh my God oh my God, Siza I am so proud of you baby" she



hugs me a while jumping, I look at the results again and cry, for once in my life I have cried tears of joy, I made it, I single handedly made it, I have my matric and to top it all I got 5 distinctions out of 7 subjects, English and IsiZulu just had to slack kodwa it's not a problem, I can't believe I got a distinction for mathematics it was giving me some problems. I smile and say a little prayer in my heart to thank God

Principal "Jozi times asked to interview you on this achievement" what I am going to be on a newspaper

Liv "she would love to, where is the journalist" I laugh and I do the interview I feel so happy I am really proud of myself, I made it through it all I did it.

Liv " I am so proud of you my friend, you are an inspiration Sizakele, a strong woman, I love you so much" we hug tight

Me "thank you babe, I love you too"

Liv "listen I have class now in 15 minutes, let me drop you off at home then we will celebrate when I get back"

Me "go to school I will Uber babe" she smiles and hugs me then drives off, I Uber and head to Mo's

office, I get there and his PA gives me a nasty look

Me "hi is he in?" she chuckles

Her "yes Mr. Motaung is in, what can I do for you?"

Me "nothing but thanks" I say walking towards his door

Her "you just can't go in there ousi"

Me "he is expecting me" she clicks her tongue but I ignore her and open the door. He smiles as he sees

me and comes to me and folds me in his arms and gives me a passionate kiss that lasts so long I had to break it

Him "I have missed you so much, show me the results please" he say's smiling

Me "here you go" I hand them to him and he looks at them and smile then spins me around while I

giggle, I love him when he gets this playful

Him "my strong woman, I am so proud of you baby, my future Dr" I blush

Me "thank you much" he kisses my forehead

Him "I have back to back meetings and you are leaving later tonight, I couldn't plan anything big, but I

promise we will do something when you get back okay?" I nod

Him "come I organized us a picnic for two" he takes my hand and leads me to his mini meeting room, in

his office though just separated by a wall but it has no door. We walk in and there is a romantic picnic for

two with the words congratulations spread out with rose petals, I stop and laugh and pull him towards

me and hug him.

Me "I love it thank you Mo" he blushes

Him "anything for you beautiful" we seat and there is sea food, which has become my favorite coz of

him, he is obsessed trust me, there is non alcoholic champagne too and some other treats, we seat but he

insists that I sit in between his legs, he is taller than me so we are eye to eye with me tilting to one side,

he feeds me till we are done.

Him "I have something for you" I smile

Me "what is it?" he takes out a box open it and it is a necklace with a heart it is silver with little

diamonds, it is so beautiful but I can see it is expensive Gosh, I turn it and it is engraved with the words

'my one true love' I blush and he laughs

Him "you like it?"

Me "are you kidding me? I love it baby" he smiles and pecks my lips

Him "I am glad to hear that my love"

Me "I am going to miss you so much" he blushes

Him "I am happy to hear you say that"

Me "why you thought I wouldn't miss you?"

Him "maybe" I laugh and kiss him

Me "I told you to stop thinking that I don't care about you didn't I?"

Him "yes you did, I am sorry rato laka, so tell me when are you coming back"

Me "Mandla has to be at work Sunday night, so we will be here Sunday early in the morning"

Him "come to the house that morning"

Me "he will know that it is your house" he laughs

Him "I will have one of the boys to wait for you outside the apartment and bring you to me"

Me "okay then"

Him "I love you so much"

Me "I love you too it's scary"

Him "don't be baby, I would never hurt you intentionally" his office phone rings and he goes to answer

it and comes back after some time

Me "is everything okay?" he sighs

Him "duty calls my love" I frown and he puts on his shoes and blazer and helps me up

Me "okay then, I need to go pack plus Olivia wants us to go celebrate"

Him "okay my baby, I will see you on Sunday, and behave for me okay" I nod and we kiss slowly

Me "I will baby"

Him "I will call you later and promise to call a thousand times while you are away" I laugh

Me "I don't doubt that" he puts my necklace on and we kiss one

more time

Him "please don't go"

Me "I have to Mo, my mother's miss me and I miss them too so much" he sighs

Him "I know baby I know" he kisses my forehead and takes my hand and place his black card in my hand

Me "no no no baby no" he rolls his eyes

Him "Sizakele please, just buy something nice for your mothers please and a few things for yourself"

Me "fine Razor" his eyes pop

Him "you never call me that, you must be annoyed with me" I laugh

Me "let me get going, your client is waiting"

Him "let him wait, you are more important"

Me "I know but still, I need to leave, I have a black card in my hand so let me go spend some money"

Him "now you talking" he say's sounding excited and we share one last passionate kiss and I leave. I

pass by the annoyed PA and bid her farewell and she dicks her tongue. I bump into Vusi on my way

Me "oh sorry" I try walking away but he grabs my arm

Vusi "hey, can we talk?" I sigh

Me "I am in a hurry right now sorry" I yank my hand from him and walk

Vusi "Siza please just a minute please" I continue walking and get in my Uber without looking back at him.

Please let us share, react and leave a comment. Love you all

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 28

Mandla

I picked her up and she was already tired and tipsy, apparently she had a few glasses of champagne and they

knocked her out like that, I love how she hasn't lost herself because of this city, she is still so humble and

respectful and more beautiful, I don't know why but I think I have started developing feelings for her,

like her independence, focus, drive and determination just draw

me to her, she has grown to a fine  
young woman I wouldn't mind to wife up, though there are a lot  
of things standing in my way, like she is  
my best friends ex and the guy code is already in my way with  
that plus I bet she sees me more like a  
brother and I hate that shit, the pain of being friend zoned no in  
fact family zoned by a girl you fancy is  
unbearable, I make a stop to pee and take a second to admire  
this beauty sleeping in the passenger seat  
that is reclined back, her thick lips are pouting, her fro is falling  
to a side covering her eye a bit, her  
smooth brown skin is glowing in a way I can't explain, I take out  
my phone and snap a few pictures of  
her then go out to pee, I come back and she is awake and  
yawning, I get back in and smile at her and she returns it

Her "how long have I been out?" I laugh

Me "a couple of hours, we are an hour away from the village"  
she gasp for air

Her "I slept through the entire drive, oh God sorry Mandla"

Me "don't sweat it babe, aren't you hungry?" she sighs



Her "I am actually"

Me "we will stop by the garage it is just five minute away" she yawns again and sits properly

Her "okay" she finds her phone and she starts smiling from ear to ear, that gets me jealous immediately

Me "can't wait to see the oldies" she laughs

Her "me too hey, I miss them so much"

Me "they are going to be so proud of you babe, as I am, I owe you a big present" she smiles

Her "I will hold you to that trust me, I couldn't contain my excitement, I already called to tell them about

my results, they even cried, I called them separately though, MaDlamini said she will be going to your

house after work" I smile

Me "the news were too good not to share I understand"

Her "can I play some music?"

Me "of course you can, you can do whatever you like beautiful" she smiles and connects her phone to

the aux and starts playing Frank Ocean I am shocked

Me "you listen to this guy?" she laughs

Her "why do you sound surprised" I am amazed

Me "honestly I am"

Her "don't be man, I love Frankie" she says chuckling

Me "you never cease to amaze me babe" we get to the garage and go inside to find something to eat,

there is not much, there is pie and sandwiches we opt for pies and juice then she take sour worms and

lays chips

Me "is that all you want?"

Her "yes thank you" i nod and pay then we walk back to the car and eat before continuing the journey

Siza's mother

I can't remember a day where I was this happy, my daughter has made me so proud as a mother, she

has been through so much already, but she fought and made it despite all the challenges and heart

breaks she made it and triumphed, she is an inspiration and one day I know her name will be known and

respected by many, she is a step closer to being a Dr, I pray God keeps her and continues to bless her for

me, I am humming a nice melodic sound while packing my bags, I am spending the weekend with my

daughter at maNtuli's house. I am so excited honestly. I finish packing and my husband walks in

Him "haibo you are in a good mood what is going on" I smile

Me "I received some good news" he smiles and spots my bag

Him "manje, the bag? Where are you going?" I frown

Me "I told you I will be going to MaNtuli for the weekend" his expression changed

Him "I see"

Me "don't be like that, you knew about this for a while now"

Him "I didn't say anything nkosikazi"

Me "I made sure that everything you will need is available, your clothes and food for the weekend"

Him "thank you"

Me "it's a pleasure baba" he clears his throat

Him "So, what is going on at MaNtuli's house?" I sigh

Me "do you really want to know"

Him "hao of course I do, you are my wife"

Me "if you must know my daughter is visiting from the city, she passed her matric with 5 distinctions"

his eyes popped

Him "Sizakele" I smile

Me "the one and only, my baby girl" I say with pride

Him "are you sure?"

Me "I am very sure Dlamini, my child is making something out of her life, despite all the challenges she

been through, she made it" he swallowed and I laugh a little

Him "you should leave before it gets dark" he say's exiting and I laugh, he couldn't contain that his

disappointment of a daughter is winning in her life, God loves us all Dlamini even Sizakele. I take my bag

and walk to MaNtuli, I get there in no time and she is done preparing a feast, we seat and enjoy a bottle

of wine she stashes when Mandla brings her some from the city, I can't wait to see my baby girl and tell her how proud I am of her

Siza

I can't wait to see those oldies and hug them so tight, I miss them so much, my pillars of strength,  
imbokoto zami. On the other hand my heart is missing it's owner so bad, I should be snuggling next to him, while he tells me all these crazy stories and me laughing like a school girl in love. He sent me the cutest text ever it had me smiling from ear to ear; he is such an amazing man. Supportive and very loving  
I just wish Liv approves and understands our relationship, as much as I love Molemo, I don't want to lose Olivia, she is not only my best friend but she is my sister. I pray it all works out. We almost at the village and I think it would be best I start at the cemetery and visit my baby first, after all she is the reason why I am this woman right now

Me "mandla " he smiles and looks at me

Him "yes babe"

Me "can I ask for a favor"

Him "anything for you"

Me "can we please start at the cemetery, I want to visit Phephe first"

Him "okay no stress, we can do that" I smile and he makes his way there and parks not far from the grave

Me "thank you, I won't be long"

Him "take all the time you need, I will be right here waiting for you" I smile and walk to her grave, it is

so clean shows someone keeps visiting and cleaning it, I smile approaching and sit on the tomb and brush it

Me "hey baby girl, it's me Siza wakho. I miss you so much, I couldn't start anywhere but here, I hope you

are watching over me and that you are proud of the woman I have become, I came to tell you that I

passed my matric with 5 distinctions, and oh a distinction is when you have passed with the highest

marks, I know you would ask what it is, you have always been so curious my smart girl. Next year

mommy will go to university and study medicine, it is almost next year though, I also wanted you to be

the first to know that I have a boy friend and his name is Molemo and he is older than me, he loves me

baby, and he makes me feel appreciated, valued and respected, and honesty I love him too, my only

worry is that Liv won't understand and she might hate me, and I love her I don't want to lose her yet I

also don't want to lose her father, am I selfish to want to have them both? Anyway I will be here till the

early hours of Sunday then I have to go back to the city. I hope you are proud of me Siphephelo, always

know that I love you mamma girl" I wipe my tears and take a little stone kiss it and place it on top of her

tomb then walk back to the car.

Him "you okay?"

Me "I am fine thank you" he smiles and leans in

Him "come here" I lean in to him and we hug

Me "thank you Mandla, you are the best" he nods and smiles

Him "let's get home I am sure they are waiting impatiently now"  
I laugh

Me "I know they are" he drives off and we get to the house, they  
appear and start ululating and singing

their lungs out, the neighbors even peeped to see what is going  
on, they came and hugged us so tight, It

feels good to be home

Me "how I have missed you two" they laugh

MaD "missed you too my baby, I am so proud of you Sizakele"  
she say's crying and I wipe them and hug

her some more

MaN "Woza lana wena (come here)" we hugged and she kisses  
me all over my face

MaD "baby you look amazing, umuhle man" I blush and thank  
her

maN "let's get in, I cooked all your favorites and I even started  
the generator" I laugh

Me "thank God kodwa mama I now understand why Mandla was  
obsessing over electricity"

Him "thank God now I have someone in my corner" we all laugh  
and the help carry out our luggage



Me "I have something for you" I bout them the same thing just different colors , slippers and PJ and

gowns, didn't want to buy fancy things coz I wouldn't be able to explain where I got the money. Phela

the only money they think I have is the one they send. And that only pay's rent and groceries.

MaD "oh my baby thank you so much"

MaN "I love them nana, thank you"

maD "now show me the results" I laugh and retrieve the statement of results from my handbag and

hand it to them

maD "you have made us really proud my baby, I love you so much"

Me "I love you too mama wam" we hug. We go sit in the lounge and watch a movie while MaNtuli

dishes up for us, oh I've missed this place really, she comes back and hands us our food, my phone rings

and it's Mo, I blush and stand up to take the call in my room

Me "babe"

Him "owner of my heart and soul" I blush, it is going to be a long conversation, let me prepare myself to climb everything in

that bedroom coz Wow, conversations with Molemo are everything.

Please react, leave a comment and share, thank you for the support lovies

Siza's tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 29

Siza

Being home has been really nice, I am definitely enjoying myself but truth be told I miss my better half

so much, I feel like sharing my relationship with someone and telling them how amazing Molemo is, but

then again it will happen with time I should just hang in there. I decided to take a walk and breath in the

nice village air, I miss this calmness, the city is chaotic, I think one can go mad from staying there too

long, I get to the river, it has always been my favorite place with my daughter, I would also come here

alone when she was at school to pray and ask my ancestors to open my paths, I just thought I should

show face again. I sit for like 30minutes thinking about my future plans and I must say it feels nice

knowing which direction your life is taking. I leave and take the longest route home, I run into someone I

was hoping to avoid till I leave but I guess life had other plans, she looks at me shocked, I laugh a little

and shake my head, she should really pick up her jaw before flies get in her mouth, she tries to say

something but swallows her words, okay I knew I had transformed, I shook myself too, but I didn't know

I was beautiful to a point where Dali can be mute, I attempt walking away but she speaks

Her "Sizakele, is this you?" I smile

Me "it is me Dali, in the flesh"

Her "I see, where have you been?" I roll my eyes

Me "how is that any of your business again?"

Her "I just want to make sure that you are living off my son in that city"

Me "so you knew where I was but you just had to ask, you can test a person shame like the devil"

Her "mxm, just stay away from my son Sizakele" I laugh

Me "oh please Dali, I want nothing to do with your son, I wasted enough of my time with him, and I

realized that I am beyond your precious son" she blinks

Her "you think we don't know that you are selling your body in that city, jumping from man to man"

Me "still petty and evil I see, I guess something's will never change Dali" she laugh

Her "nothing will ever change me girl" I shake my head

Me "even when your children have turned their backs on you, you still want to be this person? Aren't

you tired Dali?" she blinks and swallows

Her "you don't know what you are talking about" I laugh

Me "trust me I do" she clicks her tongue

Her "you are still so disrespectful no wonder you lost your child, you were not good enough to be a

mother" I laugh

Me "is that what you tell you self to sleep better at night?" she

remains silent

Me "I will say I hope my baby girl haunts you but I want her to rest in perfect peace not haunting old

woman with evil heart" I say then walk away from her, thank God I managed to keep my cool, I always

thought I would slap her when I see her but I guess therapy activities are really helping, I don't even feel

somehow, I am at peace and that is all that matters, my peace won't be affected by people like this old

woman, huuu shame I refuse. I walk back home slowly and I look back to find her still gawking at me, I

just sway my hips left and right, why have all these asserts when I can't flaunt them to some people's annoyance.

Vusi

I walk out of my house and go get the weekly Jozi newspaper from the gate, I love this paper, it is

informative really, has all the important current affairs, and being a lawyer means I have to keep up, I

even listen to radio and watch the news like a mad man, Mercy

hates, I walk back inside and find her

placing lunch on the table, no she didn't prepare it, the chef, she still can't cook to save her life but ke

we are not there, I seat and she starts dishing up, we are in complete silence she hands me a drink and I

page through, I come across an article and it is captioned 'Queen of Second Chances aces 5 out of 7' and

there is a picture of the beautiful Sizakele with the most beautiful smile plastered across her face, I read

and find out that she got 5 distinctions and she wants to study medicine next year, I choke on my drink

and cough uncontrollably, Mercy quickly stands up and comes to my side and starts rubbing my back

Her "baby are you okay?" I continue coughing, I am in shock, is this my Siza? She has become this

ambitious woman oh my God

Her "what did you see, another murder of a lawyer?"

Me "uhm no nothing like that baby" I say to get her to back off

Her "then what is it that you saw that made you choke on your juice?" can't she let it go

Me "it Is nothing in the paper" she narrows her eyes

Her "give me the paper let me see" oh this is not happening

Me "but Mercy I am not done with him" she laughs

Her "what is in that paper that you don't want me to see

Khumalo" I close my eyes and she snatched it

away and I felt helpless so I let her be. She laughs when she sees what made me choke

Her "so she is the reason you are choking" I exhale

Me "no she is not"

Her "do you think I am stupid Vusi?"

Me "no I don't think you are stupid" she laughs

Her "so you still have feelings for her is that it?" I roll my eyes

Me "don't be silly please" she chuckles and I know her psycho mode is activated, so I stand up and

attempt to leave her there, she grabs my hand and pulls me back

Her "don't you walk away when I am still talking to you" I sigh

Me "I am trying to avoid an unnecessary fight that's all and I suggest you do the same, before we both

say things we mean" she laughs louder and throw the paper

Her "don't you dare, I asked if you still had feelings for Siza, I demand an answer now"

Me "don't ask me something you don't want an answer to" I yank my hand and walk away

Her "UUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUSSSSSSSSSSIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII come back here" she shouts but I continue walking,

next think I know, I am hit by something so hard on my head, I fall but luckily I don't become

unconscious, I hold my head and I am bleeding, she rushed to me panicking

Her "baby I am so sorry I didn't mean to please, I am sorry" I gave her a stare and shake my head

Her "please allow me drive you to the hospital" she tries to help me stand but I just push her to the side

not roughly though

Me "I will drive my damn self" I get up and take my car keys then walk out the door.

Razor

I miss her, I miss her I think I am going crazy, I can't get



anything done really, this one is driving me too  
crazy, and funny thing is I love being weak just for her. If my  
enemies can see me this way, let us say  
people will walk all over me. I have a gift for her and I definitely  
know she is going to love, I might even  
see her cry, I am so excited, I can't wait to surprise her, I am  
grateful for this money, it works wonders,  
less than 48 hours I got her something she desires with all her  
heart, and that is what I want, to ensure  
that I give her all her hearts desires and help her reach her  
dreams and goals, I want to be her  
superman. I take out my phone and look at a picture of us  
together, I mean look at that, our very own  
version of beauty and the beast, my baby is just so innocent and  
perfect I can talk about her the whole  
day and not get bored. Gadafi walks in and hits me with a  
peanut to get my attention

Him "what the fuck are you looking at making you smile like a  
damn lunatic" I laugh

Me "what else you fuck, I am looking at my woman" he laughs

Him "come on let me see" I hand him my phone

Me "be blown away brother" he rolls his eyes and I laugh

Him "damn but I can see why you are so fucking wipped, yena ke paola man (she is a beauty)

Me "with brains, don't forget to say that" he laugh

Him "about that, how did you go with that plan"

Me "it is a done deal, she is going to be so happy" I smile

Him "I am happy for you brother" we fist bump

Me "thank you man, I want to do something" he narrows his eyes

Him "what?"

Me "I want to tattoo her face and name on my chest" he laughs and stops

Him "you are not kidding are you?" I shake my head no

Me "I am legit man, is that tattoo artist still operating?" he sighs

Him "I don't mean to be negative, but what happens if you too don't work out?" I smile

Me "I told you brother, Siza is my soul mate, my one true love, I am going to die a happy man knowing

that I died after experiencing what it is like to be with the woman you would give the world to and who you could also give up the world for, she is young and I sometimes stay awake and think of the possibility that she might meet her soul mate someday and that breaks my heart but honestly she would have loved me when I needed her to and I know that the possibility of me being her soul mate is low but I am fucking sure that I am her true love, if it ends it is fine, she would have given the most beautiful thing ever, LOVE, and that is something gangsters like you and I die without experiencing, but I got the chance to embrace and hold my soul mate in this life time, and to me that is the biggest blessing after my children I kid you not brother” he looked at me and smiles Him “enough said, all I could say is I respect you and your love for this woman is inspiring, you giving a mafia hope” I laugh Me “I would love to see the day you fall in love brother” he laughs Him “mxm fuck you! I am going to pour myself a drink do you

want one or you gonna seat there and smile like a retard?" I laugh and stand up and follow him, I will call the queen later.

Please react, leave a comment and share. Thanks for your patience; I think this is how it is going to be for a while. School is hectic, too hectic

Siza's tribulations (Not edited)

Chapter 30

Mandla

Being at home was exactly what I needed, I missed my mom and I wanted to spend time with Siza away

from the city and I am glad to that she is still the woman she was before she moved to the city, she is

just a better and improved vision of herself, I must say, I am falling for her deeper and it pleases me that

she hasn't mentioned a boyfriend to me, so I guess it is safe to

say I have a fighting chance to pursue

something serious with her, today we are going back to the city,  
I have to work tonight so I need to rest

before my shift, it is exactly 3am and our staff is already in the  
boot. She is so sleepy and the moms

won't finish talking.

Ma "listen you two, drive safely niyezwa?"

Me "yebo ma, we will I promise"

Me "good, Siza nana, I want you to continue taking care of  
yourself" she smiles

Her "I will mama, I promise" they hug and Siza turns to face her  
mother who is now crying

Her "don't cry mama, I will visit you soon"

MaD "don't mind me baby"

Her "then don't cry, you breaking my heart now" she wiped her  
mother's tears

MaD "I am sorry, but Siza, I want you to know how proud I am  
of you mntanam, you have proved many

wrong, you are proof that God's timing is the best always, I

want you to go back to the city more bold

and determined, I want you to go and pursue your daughters  
dream and become the first female Dr this

village has, I need you to remain humble, most importantly I  
want you to be happy baby you deserve it

my love, and baby know that I love you with all my heart and  
that I am so proud of the woman you have

become Sizakele” she was now crying, her mother wiped her  
tears and they hugged so tight

Her “thank you for those words mama, I love you too” they  
break the hug

MaD “you two better get going so you make it in time”

Me “yes mama we should, Siza you ready to leave?” she nods

Ma “okay then my children, safe travels” we get to the car and  
wave them goodbye, it is still dark

outside which means there are not many cars on the road, it will  
be a nice

Me “buckle up baby” she does as I request

Her “I am so sleepy” I laugh

Me “you can nap. I don’t mind” she yawns

Her "nope this time I am not sleeping, we doing this together" I smile

Me "okay thanks then, I think you should play your music, it will keep you awake" she smiles

Her "definitely" she connects her phone

Me "I am so not looking forward to going to work"

Her "ijob ijob" we laugh

Me "eish tell me about it" we continue driving while chit chatting, her sense of humor is on another

level, this weekend indeed proved that Sizakele is the one I want hell the one I need

Siza

You should have seen my excitement when we entered Jozi, excited coz I am seeing Molemo after so

long, okay maybe I am exaggerating a bit, but you know what I mean. I texted to tell him that I am

almost there and he told me his guy is already outside the apartment, my smile is one I cannot hide, we

get to the patrol station and he fills his tank.

Him "you going with me to my house?"

Me "uhm no, please drop me off at my place" he frowned

Him "okay no problem, when am I seeing you again?"

Me "I am not working next week Thursday, I will come through and sleep over how's that?" he smiles

Him "sounds perfect" I nod and he drives me back to my place and parks outside.

Me "thank you, and I will see you Thursday"

Him "let me walk you inside" I laugh

Me "oh come on it is just one bag I will manage, go sleep now will you" he smiles

Him "okay babe, see you soon" we hug and he drives off. A second later I spot one of Molemo's cars

and walk towards it and get inside

Me "hello"

Him "good morning boss lady" I blush, he told them about us.

We drive to my mans house and I walk

out and practically run inside to his room and I find him



applying lotion, he is only wrapped his lower  
body in a towel, I jumped on his and he picks me up and we hug  
so tight, oh it feels good being in his  
arms, my home. He keeps on kissing my neck and squeezing me  
tighter, I don't want to let go

Him "I have missed you so much my love" I blushed

Me "I missed me too Mo so so much" we break the hug and we  
look in to each other's eyes then our

lips meet for a warm passionate kiss, I feel something poking  
me, and he groans, I get nervous and break

the kiss and look down and see his erection and gasp for air, I  
look up at him and he is smirking, I quickly

look down embarrassed

Him "hey look at me" I don't then he cups my chin to make me  
look at him

Him "I told you we will never do anything you are not ready for,  
that doesn't mean that I won't crave

making love to you, I do trust me but I won't die. I am a matured  
man baby I don't let my erection

control me, I control it and well you will once you are ready  
okay?" I smile

Me "thank you Mo, I love you so much" he blushes, I still can't believe I make this intimidating man

blush like this

Him "I love you too my baby" we kiss

Me "I want to cuddle" he laughs

Him "okay remove those and get into my T-shirt" I strip naked, for the first time in front of him and I see

him biting his lower lip and narrowing his eyes, I am left with my lace underwear then walk to his closet

and come back wearing his white tee, it is oversize on me. I find him wearing his boxers.

Me "come let's get in bed" he smiles and we get in, he pulls me towards him, I have my back towards

him and I am in his arms totally

Him "guess what" he say's sounding excited, I can't help but get excited too

Me "tell me already love" he kisses my shoulder

Him "well, since you my love said you wanted to study medicine, I took it upon myself and got you

admission at Wits to study next year" okay wait is he kidding me right now, I sit up and face his side,

with no expression on my face, he has this huge smile, beautiful smile that exposes his one dimple

Me "are you for real right now" my heart is pacing like a mad man

Him "I am serious as a heart attack my love, you are accepted to study, all you need to do is register" I

just let my tears fall, I can't believe this man, did he really do this for me? he hugs me and I continue

crying

Me "thank you so much baby, I don't even know what to say Molemo" he laughs

Him "you don't need to say anything baby, all you need to do is get there and show them what you are

made of, I am so proud of you my lady" I blush and he wipes my tears and kiss my eyes and I giggle

Me "tell how did you do it?" he smiles

Him "I know some top dog in that faculty and that connection and money made this possible" i hug him

Me "thank you my love, thank you so much babe"

Him "I would do anything for you" I get on top of him and he lays down and we cuddle like while

whispering sweet nothings in each other's ears. I love this man, and I am not ashamed to admit it

Vusi

I hate private hospitals for this, I got here and they tell me, I am fine but they will rather I get admitted

over night for observations, we all know that's bullshit they just want to charge me more, but honestly

speaking they did me a favor, I didn't want to face Mercy, I am damn mad at her right now and I am not

sure how I will react when I set my eyes at her, so to avoid hurting her and having Razor on my ass it is

better I stay here again this night, I know very well that they will not disapprove, they love money after

- all they are also a business. A sexy nurse walks in, she has been taking care of me since I got here

Her "evening Mr Khumalo" I smile

Me "please call me Vusi" she blushes

Her "okay Vusi, I just came to check if you need anything?" I smile

Me "just your number beautiful" she laughs

Her "I am afraid hospital policy doesn't allow that"

Me "I won't be a patient forever you know, and who will tell them you gave me your number"

Her "uhm okay" she wrote it down on a piece of paper and gave it to me, I look at it and it has a name

Me "Uriel, beautiful name for a beautiful lady, you are indeed an angel" she blushes and, we had

someone clear his throat and it's Mandla

Her "uhm sorry Dr I just came to check if the patient needed anything" he nods

Him "you can go check up on sick patients nurse" she nods and hurries out

Me "ahhh come on man, you are such a cock blocker man" he laughs

Him "what the hell are you doing here Vusi" I sigh

Me "only sick people get admitted so I am sick" he shakes his head

Him "I have your chat bafo and you are definitely not sick and

the blow you suffered on the head didn't  
do any damage so tell me why are you still in this hospital, you  
were supposed to be discharged this  
morning and according to this chat you insisted on staying  
another night" I roll my eyes

Me "let's just say I am running away from my demons" is eyes  
narrowed

Him "can you not speak in riddles right now bafo, what  
happened to your head?"

Me "Mercy happened" he shrugs his shoulders

Him "what did she do now" I explain the event's of yesterday  
during lunch

Me "so that is how I ended up here bafo"

Him "damn u girl is crazy, she will kill you one day"

Me "tell me about it bro" he sighs

Him "well tell, do you still have feelings for Siza" I remain silent  
but he is looking at me waiting for a

response

Me "honestly, I don't know mfethu, I am confused" he sighs  
deeply

Him "get your affairs in order Vusi, you left Siza for Mercy, you made your bed bafo"

Me "and right now I am afraid that I made the worst decision of my life"

Him "you will have to leave with it" I burry my face in my hands"

Me "if only I could turn back the hands of time"

Him "well you can't"

Me "I know man hao"

Him "do me a favour, stop flirting with my nurses, if your fiancé finds out she will kill you this time" I laugh

Me "fuck off wena"

Him "I am not playing bafo. I need to do my rounds I will see you later"

Me "sharp" i answer and he walks out

Mercy

I don't know what came over me yesterday, I am so scared coz he didn't even come home last night, I

hope I didn't cause any damage, I am even scared to go and try

find him at the hospital coz I tried calling  
him and he literally told me to fuck off, he is mad at me and I  
understand why, I let my jealousy get the  
better of me, what if he leaves me because of this, oh God I  
can't survive another failed relationship, I  
need to get out of this place, seating alone depresses me, I  
called him again and again but he doesn't  
answer or text me back, I think should allow him time to cool off.  
I can't stay in this huge house again, it  
is better I go see Olivia. I drive to her apartment in  
Braamfontein, luckily she is at home coz her wagon is  
parked, I take the lift to her floor, I knock and get in without  
waiting for an response, she is in her Pj's on  
the couch with a bottle of Hennessy on the table

Her "don't you fucking wait for a response, this is my house,  
what if I was having sex right here" I laugh

Me "well you are not" I throw my bag on the couch and go get a  
glass in the kitchen then come back

and pour myself a drink then gulp it down in one go.

Her "and then wena?" I sigh



Me "I messed Liv, big time"

Her "you and drama sis" I roll my eyes

Me "hey don't judge"

Her "I wouldn't dare" I pour myself another drink but mix it this time

Me "why are you sitting with an entire bottle of Hennessy on a Sunday?"

Her "I had a feeling that you will come bother me with your problems" I laugh

Me "oh fuck you Olivia" she laughs

Her "okay jokes aside what's up"

Me "I got physical with Vusi Li, I hit him with a metal centre piece on the head, the one on my dining table" she puts her hand to her mouth

Her "why the hell would you do that Mercy, have you lost your mind, how is he"

Me "he pushed me okay, I was talking to him and he walked out on me and I don't know how he is, he told me to fuck off, last saw him yesterday after that fight just after lunchtime"

Her "what caused your fight"

Me "please don't judge me" I say coz I am ashamed

Her "just say it man" I sigh

Me "your friend appeared in the newspaper and then he choked while looking at it, I asked firstly what

he saw but he insisted on hiding it, I snatched it and saw it then I asked if her still had feelings for her, he

told me that I shouldn't ask anything I wouldn't like an answer to" she rolls her eyes

Her "are you for real right now, he might have been just shocked like the rest of the people who knew

her from that village"

Me "Liv you didn't see what I saw"

Her "but that was not enough for you to act the way you did Mercy, what if he is really injured, what

then" I sip on my drink, not knowing how to answer that

Me "just tell me the truth Liv, has my fiancé ever been here to see Siza?" she laugh

Her "what no, he has never been here and Siza would never even give him the light of day, get over your

insecurities already, Sizakele is over Vusi trust me I know” I sigh

Me “I am sorry I just don’t want to lose him Olivia”

Her “you won’t lose him to Sizakele, you will drive him away yourself” ouch, that hit home.

Please react, leave a comment and share. You are very appreciated guys, thank you for the support

Siza’s tribulations (not edited)

Chapter 31

Siza

I must admit I am at my happiest, I don’t think I have ever been this happy, well except from when I gave

birth to Siphephelo, she was the best thing life ever gave me, but right now I am really blessed to have

Molemo in my life, he is just the perfect gentleman, I am happy with that man, content and respected,

there is nothing more I could ask for, in a month’s time I will be registering with Wits, I am super excited

and really proud and thankful for this opportunity, a year ago I was hopeless and wondering how I will make ends meet but look at me now, what I have learnt is that God's timing is the best, he gives you what is yours when the time is right, when you are in the right space to receive which that he wants to bless you with. Molemo suggested that I resign from my job coz I need to focus on my studies, I think he has a point, this is medicine not matric I don't think will be able to juggle both school and work, plus the club can get really hectic, I don't want to find myself between a rock and a hard place. I am at work and my shift starts in an hour, I don't know I came in so early though. I am in the staffroom playing with my necklace; I never take it off, Vicky walks in and looks at me from head to toe, she doesn't really like me much, I think it is because of our boss.

Her "that necklace screams fake, I am pretty sure you bought it at small street" I laugh

Me "even if I did Vicky, it is mine and I like it, where I bought it

doesn't matter" she smiles and walks

towards me

Her "you think you are all that ne?"

Me "depends of what you definition of all that is"

Her "don't act smart with me Sizakele" I sigh

Me "what do you want Vicky, I really don't have time for this"

Her "I want you to steer clear Sizwe, he is mine do you understand" I laugh

Me "oh my God how many times must I tell you that I have nothing to do with the big boss, besides he is

married, I would never settle for being the other woman so please" she rolls her eyes

Her "married or not, I don't give a rats ass, this is Jozi nana"

Me "I have heard you now will you leave me alone sis?" she was about to answer when the door

opened and the boss walked in

Him "I have been looking for you all over, this is where you are hiding"

Her "oh no love sorry I just came to iron something's with Siza here"

Him "oh no I wasn't talking to you. Siza can I have a minute in my office" Vicky's reaction changed

instantly, she was fuming, the look on her face would send me straight

Me "okay sir, I will follow you just now" he smiles

Her "Sizwe can we talk"

Him "is it work related?"

Her "no but..." he cut her before she could finish

Him "then I am afraid there is nothing we have to talk about on a personal basis"

Her "Sizwe" he just looked at me

Him "Siza my office please" okay this is awkward, he walks out and I attempt following, but she held my arm

Her "don't be too comfortable here girl"

Me "I will keep that in mind thank you Vicky" I leave her with that and go to boss's office, I wonder

what he wants naye loyo. I take a deep breath

Vusi

Things between Mercy and I have been really rocky, I am uncertain about my future with her at this point. She is not the person I thought she is, now I see that she is a psycho, no wonder none of her relationships don't last, she is abusive and she wants the relationship to be her way or the highway, I don't think I will be able to live with her in my house and call her my wife, I know it should be easy for me to decide if I want to or not but there is a lot at stake here, plus her dad on the other side. I don't know really, do I tell Razor what Mercy did, but will he understand and not take her side coz she is his daughter, deep down I don't want to believe that I might have made the biggest mistake of my life by leaving the mother of my child and my first love for Mercy for whatever we have to just collapse like this, whoever that came with the say that goes, if only I could turn back the hands if time was surely referring to me, coz damn I just want to have the only woman who loved me, supported and respected

me, problem is she won't give me the light of day. What do I do with myself now; I am caught between

LOVE and SURVIVAL. Mercy appears with her gown on, I assume she has been in the sona room.

Her "what should I tell the chef to prepare for dinner"

Me "I don't know, whatever you want"

Her "but baby, we are going to eat it together, so let's decide together please"

Me "nah, I won't be eating here, I am going to leave in a few, I will eat dinner there"

Her "you never mentioned anything about not joining me for dinner mos" I roll my eyes

Me "I just did Mercy"

Her "baby please I am sorry please"

Me "what are you on about now?" I say sounding bored

Her "I know you are still about me throwing the centre piece at you, and I am sorry"

Me "I am so over that" she sighs and I see tears forming in her eyes



Her "you are just saying that, I am sorry please I will do anything, just tell me what you need me to do to make things right between us baby and I promise I will do it" I laugh

Me "don't waste your time, we are beyond repair you and I" she lets out a tear

Her "what is that supposed to mean"

Me "I am still trying to figure that out"

Her "I will change Vusi please, just don't leave me please"

Me "I don't have time for this right now Mercy, give me a break please"

Her "I know I wronged you and acted like a spoilt brat, I really am sorry babe, you know I love you, I am

sincerely sorry, I will attend therapy and deal with my issues, just don't leave Vusi please, I wouldn't

survive it Lord knows I wouldn't, one more chance is all I ask for"

Me "I have heard that before Mercy and you turned around and acted crazy again" she kneeled

Her "just a chance that is all I ask, I will change baby please don't give up on Us"

Me "I really don't know, this is too much"

Her "tell me what you want me to do and I will do it"

Me "firstly you can get up and stand" she did and wiped her tears

Me "then you are going to give some time to clear my head and to decide if I want continue with this relationship

Her "as painful as it sounds I will give you a breather, but I need you to know that I am sorry and I love you Khumalo" I stand up and walk out leaving her there crying again

Razor

Things have been hectic, trying to get out of this criminal life is proving quiet difficult, my other partners

don't want to accept this while others are thrilled with this coz they want my position they want to the

KINGPIN, but they are all power hungry and that makes them dangerous and not fit to be the leader of

our cartel. I need to step down ASAP, but I can't step down like this it will cause too much chaos coz

they will start killing and backstabbing each other. I need to get them all on board with Gadafi being the

new cartel leader, I mean he is perfect for the job, he is my second in command so she definitely knows

how to run things, I don't know what I am going to yet, my worry is that our enemies will try use this

time to try and take business from us, coz we are currently divided and that is a weakness they will use. I

just want to step down before Siza finds out what I really do besides being a Lawyer; I don't think she

will accept that, I am worried she will leave me once she learns the truth, so you see why I need to step

down. I miss her but right now I want to keep my distance till I resolve this, people are following me and

watching my house, they might see her and put 2 and 2 together then hurt her, I wouldn't be able to

live with myself if something happens to her because of me, I need a strategy and I need it fast before

she notices that something is wrong, I love her and I don't want

to jeopardize this special thing we got going on, her safety first.

Him "I told you to stop stressing about those mvther fvckers, look at you now thinking so deep"

Me "Gadafi man this is serious" I sigh

Him "I know brother I know, but you seem to forget that you are the boss and it is your decision,

whether they like it or not, your word in our cartel is law"

Me "I wish it were that easy, I want to step down clean, I don't want to make enemies so they can

retaliate during my retirement, I want a clean life for Sizakele's sake"

Him "you have a point, but what are we going to do, time is not on your side"

Me "I just have to win them over" he sighs and pours himself a glass of cognac

Him "yeah but how Razor"

Me "they are all puppets being stringed along by that little boy Sizwe, I need to neutralize him"

Him "okay I will organize a sniper then" I laugh

Me "not anything is resolved with murder man Gadafi" he gives me a look then sip on his drink

Him "okay then fill me in, what are we going to do"

Me "he promised them something that I am sure of, if I can find out what it is and make a better

counter offer" he smiles

Him "now you thinking like a leader" I chuckle

Me "just get me the information man"

Him "you know your woman works there right" I shake my head

Me "don't even think about that, I am not using my woman and having her involved in this shit, I am

stepping down to protect her here nor to taint her innocent soul, she is my angel Gadafi she won't be

involved do you understand that?"

Him "I was just saying brother, we won't involve her, my apologies for even saying that"

Me "no problem G"

Him "speaking of which, where is Mrs. Motaung, I don't smell anything from the kitchen"

Me "oh so that is why you are here, to score a plate, that is my

woman not your personal chef" he

laughs

Him "hey the woman can cook you can't blame me"

Me "she will come tomorrow for the weekend, she is with that Dr Friend of hers" he laughs

Him "

Me "you not afraid that he might try his luck, I mean have you seen her" I give him a serious look

Me "I trust my woman, and besides if he tries anything I will cut off his balls" he burst out laughing

Mandla

I had a really long day, a new year comes with all sorts of surgeries and we work like crazy, don't even

have a second to nap when at work, my personal even took a seat back coz I have to be a Dr first, good

thing I am off tomorrow so I will just chill and have a beer or two. I get to my house and park and funny

enough the windows are open and there is Frank Ocean

bursting my speakers, I immediately smile coz I know who loves Mr 'Lwandle'. I get out of my car all excited, and I open my door, and God the aroma that welcomes me, damn I could get used to this, coming home to a beautiful wife and her delicious food. I find her in the kitchen, dancing to her music, she is moving her booty and it is damn sexy yeses.

She has her back to me so she is not aware of presence, she keeps shaking her ass effortlessly and as a man I must say it had an effect on some of my body parts, I go to her and tickle, she screams and I laugh

Her "hey don't do that, do you want to kill me" I smile

Me "I am sorry beautiful"

Her "whatever" she say's and makes a face

Me "oh come on I am sorry, don't be mad at me"

Her "just don't do it again okay?"

Me "never will I, I am sorry. When did you get here"

Her "I got off early at work, so I decided to surprise you, I know I have been promising to come over but

disappoint you last minutes, this is me making it up to you” she knows where I put my spare key

Me “well I appreciate it sweets, smells nice in here”

Her “wait till you taste it”

Me “now I can’t wait”

Her “go take a shower first, I will be done when you get out” I quickly rush to the bathroom and do my

process and I am done in about 30 minutes, I was about to seat down and enjoy my beer when someone

knocked, I wanted to go open but the door opens, I roll my eyes why won’t my friends wait for a

response. This is going to be awkward though, with Siza here

Me “one day you will find me having sex you know”

Him “nothing new there, what are you watching”

Me “just highlights” he nods

Him “it smells divine, you cooked”

Me “actually Siza is the one cooking” he sat straight

Him “she is here?” he say’s fixing his shirt and I laugh

Me “yeah in the kitchen” as if on cue she appeared holding two plates, she freezes when she sees Vusi,



they look at each other for over a minute

Him "hey Siza, you look good"

Her "thanks" she hands me my food

Me "thank you" I look at Vusi who is looking at Siza intensely

Him "can I also have some" he say's

Her "doesn't your wife feed you?" his smile disappeared

Him "she does just that I know how great of a cook you are"

Her "right, the food is in the pots, go help yourself, Power I will be in my room" she walks away

Me "go dish for yourself"

Him "she is sleeping over"

Me "she does once in a while" he nods but his facial expression has changed. He stands and goes to the kitchen, okay that was weird

Please share, react and leave a comment, thank you all for your patience.

RE-POST FOR THOSE WHO NEVER GOT THE CHANCE TO READ SINCE IT WAS REPORTED TWICE.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 32 (not edited)

Siza

I honestly can't believe that I am a registered medicine student at Wits, I can't contain my excitement, I

want to start already, I have 2 weeks before classes start, I already have a list of the text books that I am

going to need and everything else, I called my mothers and their excitement is on another level, my

mother screamed and made me talk to all the nurses at the clinic where she works, she has already

asked me to come assist during the holidays as a student Dr, imagine that, I haven't even started classes

and I am already in demand. I called my Mo and he is happy for me, that one nje is the most amazing

lover shame. I told him I will come to the house after my mini celebration with Olivia at Club Nation, plus

I need to tell Sizwe that I won't be continuing with my job, I will serve my 2 weeks' notice though so they

can try find my replacement, I get to the club and there are students here already drinking and having fun, it has been slow since they were at home for the festive season and now that they are back the place will be so busy. On the other hand Olivia is doing her final year in Accounting, she wants' to be a Chartered Accountant but it is going to be while till she gets there, she is smart and I know she will archive it, she is one of the smartest people I know. I walk to Sizwe's office and knock then he shouts come in from inside the house, I walk in and he smile's too friendly at me

Him "oh hey Siza"

Me "hi, uhm do you have a minute, I need to talk to you about something"

Him "yeah sure, sounds serious though, is everything okay?"

Me "actually everything is great, I just finished with my registrations at Wits, so I will be starting school in 2 weeks"

Him "that is great news, congratulations"

Me "thank you Sir, problem is I won't be able to juggle both work and school so I will serve my 2 weeks

and then I can't continue working la ekhaya" his face fell

Him "oh no Siza, you are one of my best hostesses, my VVIP section needs you, you can do both I know

you can, plus most of the employees here are students" I sigh

Me "I know, but I am studying medicine, I am not saying their courses are less important, I know my

capabilities and I won't be able to do both"

Him "I understand that, but at least take weekend shifts then, please" I sigh

Me "I don't know Sir" he loosened his tie

Him "okay let's do this, once you start school try the weekend shift and if it is not working out you can

stop, just try that is all I ask"

Me "I will think about it"

Him "okay thanks, I will wait for your answer" my phone rings and its Olivia, she says she is the club, I

tell her I am here in my bosses office and I will be down in a minute.

Me "I have to go, celebrating with my friend here"

Him "no sweat" he walks me out and I spot Olivia already downing shots

Him "Kat please take a bottle of champagne to Siza's table, it is on the house"

Kat "sure boss" Sizwe walks away

Me "I will be over there Kat"

Kat "sure thing, and congratulations again, proud of you"

Me "thank you" I walk to Olivia and she is already hyped up, she stands and embraces me screaming

Olivia

Look at her walk, but my best friend is fire man, and she doesn't even know it, woman has a pretty face

no pimple, body to die for, waist small ass large boobs medium, she is well balanced, that afro just

makes me wonder why I waste my money on weaves, coz Wow the girl can make you question your

artificial beauty modimo waka. All the men here are staring at

her like lions waiting to devour its prey.

Men are trash nje, but what am I saying I am even drooling over here, if I didn't like dick shame I would

turn lesbian just for her. The yellow bodycon dress she is rocking just commands attention without

trying to, I swear I have never seen a melanin girl making the color pop; she makes light skin look

somehow, she sees me and smile, I stand up already excited to get this party on. I embrace here and she hugs me warmly too

Me "baby, my Future Dr, I am so proud of you" I say screaming

Her "hey honey, thank you" she relies and we sit

Me "here we need to toast" I hand her a shot and she frowns

Her "but Liv you know I can't stomach this, plus I haven't ate" I roll my eyes

Me "that is why I ordered a heavy meal, ribs and chips, we all know that the meal before getting drunk

is the most important than breakfast" she burst out laughing

Her "yeah right" she takes the shot and I count down and we gulp it down, you should see her face right

now

Me "fix your face, it is not that bitter man" she laughs. I guy places a bottle of champagne

Her "thanks Kat" I frown

Me "why would you spend your money baby, I told you we spending Razors money" she laughs

Her "oh come your tits down Liv, it's on the house, my boss" I smile

Me "I think he likes you" she laughs

Her "he is married, plus I don't want him" I frown

Me "is this about the mystery man you won't tell me about?"

Her "I told you babe, he asked that I keep it between us for a while, he has things to sort out before we

go public" I roll my eyes, if that fucker is playing my girl I will find him and burn his penis then cut it off

and make him eat it

Me "I don't like this, yes he is a gentle and all but I don't want him to string you along and hurt you

afterwards, coz I will make his life a living hell"

Her "I know baby, and you will be the first to know once he feels

ready to go public about us”

Me “hasn’t he seen you, you can get any man you want and they wouldn’t hesitate being seen in public

with you” she frowns

Her “I love him Liv that’s the thing”

Me “I know that’s why I won’t pressure you into telling me about him yet. I just pray he loves you too”

she blushed and I laugh

Me “you are so deep in it, I still hope you not sleeping with him”

Her “no we still haven’t had sex” I sigh in relief, I don’t want her to get here, Joburg man can be evil. I

will support her though, through it all

Me “okay enough about Boys, they are trash after all man, let’s get drunk now” she rolls her eyes

Her “oh boy it is going to be a long night”

Me “you got that right, but so you not surprised, I am going to Pule’s place after here, I will drop you at

the apartment first, I am getting some tonight”

Her “nope I am going to his place too” I laugh

Me “okay go cuddle sweetie” we both laugh. We finish the bottle



of champagne and our food arrive we  
dig in and finish. I order two more bottles of champagne and  
water let the fun begin

Razor

I managed to get some of the cartel members to side with me,  
the others are just being stubborn, trying  
to prove a point really, but don't mind, I will get them to all  
accept my decision without turning them  
into my enemies, that is the last thing I need, at least there is  
progress, I am a step closer to getting out  
of the underworld and it feels good, never thought I would leave  
the game but I guess love makes a man  
do things they wouldn't normally do hey. i am waiting for her to  
get home, she is with Olivia at club  
nation, and to tell you the truth I hate this, but I won't stop her  
at all, I will be relieved when I see her  
walk through that door, it is just after 12 am. I have been trying  
to keep busy with some of my cases so I  
pass time but my concentration is short lived even though I

know she is safe coz I sent one of the boys  
to wait for her and bring her over. I hear giggling in the lounge  
and I decide to go and see who it is, I get  
to the lounge and it's her, I sigh in relief. She is trying to take  
off her shoes but she is failing. She gets  
frustrated and ends up giggling, she is drunk. She doesn't notice  
me. the TV is on some music channel, a  
song plays and she hears it, she stands and increase the volume  
and starts dancing, okay much as I am  
mad that she is this drunk, she is amusing to watch. She is  
obviously enjoying her moment, totally forgot  
that she was trying to get her shoes off, she dances with so  
much ease, when the song finishes and she  
throws herself on the couch, I shake my head and chuckle, she  
turns and notices me

Her "baby" she say's with a wide beautiful smile and I can't help  
but smile

Me "hey beautiful" I make my way to her

Her "how long have you been standing there"

Me "quite a while" she laughs

Her "why are you still up"

Me "I was waiting for you to get home"

Her "okay, I had so much fun" she laughs

Me "I can see that my love, you had too much to drink"

Her "I know right, we had champagne and shots" she giggles  
and tries to remove the strand of hair in

her face

Me "okay, it is late we need to get to bed" she laughs

Her "oh Molemo don't be a party pooper" she stands up and  
disappears to the kitchen, comes back

holding a beer and a glass of wine

Me "oh no, you already had too much to drink" she frowns

Her "just have a drink with me please baby" she made a face I  
can't say no to, I sigh and take the beer,

she sits on my lap and kisses me passionately then pulls out. I  
look at her and smile

Her "I love you Molemo" I blush

Me "I love you more my drunken beauty" she giggles and hides  
her face in my neck

Her "I had so much fun"

Me "I'm glad you did, but you going to wake up with a massive hangover"

Her "you will nurse me back to health then" she kisses me again and we stop and continue drinking

Her "baby"

Me "yes" I say looking at her

Her "I am spinning" I laugh

Me "you are drunk baby"

Her "I am going to faint Mo" just after saying that she went unconscious. Oh boy she just blacked out.

Luckily the glass of wine was on the side table, I placed my beer there and picked her up and took her to

our room, place her on the bed and took of her dress and shoes, I get to my closet and take out a t-shirt

and go back remove her bra and put on the t-shirt. She is out of it, I remove my clothes and get with her

under the covers and pull her towards me and I sleep, I can't wait to tease her with this.

Siza

I open my eyes and I feel like crap, I try to get my head up from the pillow but it is too heavy, oh Olivia is

such bad influence, I have never drank like that in my life, I chuckle and look to Mo's side and he is not

there, I remember that his guy came to fetch me at the club, I remember trying to remove my shoes and

that is the last memory of last night, but I had fun yesterday shame, we really celebrated. The door

opens and Mo walks and laughs

Him "and the drunken beauty is awake" I immediately feel so embarrassed

Me "baby you are shouting please lower your voice" he laughs again

Him "oh trust me, I am not loud, you have a hangover" I sigh, I can't even look at him

Me "I am sorry" that is all I could say

Him "for what now love" he asks lost

Me "for getting that drunk and coming back that late" he smiles

Him "I don't mind you going out and having fun love, I just don't want you to drink that much, you can

get all kinds of drunk when you are with me I wouldn't mind, coz I will be here to protect you, there are

monsters out there who would take advantage of you when you are in that state" I smile relieved that

he is not mad at me, I was worried

Me "I hear you" he kisses my forehead

Him "i am here to give you something for the headache, like you said, I will nurse you back to health" i

laughs and drink the pills

Me "thank you and I love you" he blushes

Him "I love you more, and I must admit woman, you can dance" I hide my face, I never dance for people

I do it in private, I am never drinking again shame

Me "I need a greasy breakfast" I say changing the topic

Him "already on it, the chef is whipping something for you" I smile, he comes to kiss me but I look away

Me "baby, I haven't brushed my teeth" he laugh

Him "I don't care about that, come here" he pulled me down and

got on top of me and kissed the living  
day lights out of me, it was so slow, passionate and I could feel  
our emotions and the connection we  
have. His hands started squeezing my thighs and moving to my  
breasts and he went to suck my nipple  
while the other just kept on squeezing the other boob, I let out  
a moan and he come back and started  
kissing my neck sending shivers down my spine, I couldn't hold  
it in any more, I was rubbing my hands  
all over his built body, I was feeling hot, I needed him inside of  
me, i open my legs wider so I can feel his  
erection and his bulge made me moan some more, my breathing  
is spiking now, his hand moves to my  
privates and my panties are wet, she inserts one finger and  
groans he stops and say's 'fuck' under his  
breath, he tries to get up from on top of me, but I wrap my legs  
around him signaling him not to stop, he  
looks at me in the eyes and I nod, he attacks me with a kiss but  
this time I can feel hunger for me, he  
wants me as much as I want him, he removes my t- shirt and  
licks my body, oh that is making me feel

more hot, he kept on licking till he got to my puna, he started doing things with his tongue, this is the first time a man does this to me, he keeps on licking, and biting, I was moaning and screaming out his name, like that gave him a boost he went on and on until I felt myself wanting to pee, oh no not now, I tense up my body and tells me to let it go "let it go for me baby, cum for me love, relax your body and cum for me" he said and continued with his tongue a minute later I explode and my legs are shaking uncontrollably, I have never felt that kind of pleasure in my life, he come to my face with a smirk on "damn you taste good" I blush and he removes his boxers and his erection springs out free, my eyes pop and he smiles wider, he came on top and kissed me again, he placed his penis on the entrance of my puna and started rubbing it, it feels so damn good, I want to feel him inside me, he has to make to me now or I will lose all my senses. As he could read my thought, he entered me slowly and I ached my back and curled my toes screaming his name, he was fully inside of



me and he stop with his eyes closed, a second later, he started moving in and out of me and I was out of my senses, he stops after a few thrusts

“fuck Sizakele, damn what are you doing to me baby you are so tight” he say’s and started moving

again, I couldn’t do anything but let my moans out, he was so gentle and his thrust equal and deep

making me go crazy with each strike, I have never enjoyed sex like this. My body is reacting to his every

touch, his pace started being faster and his groans deeper, the feeling came back, the tension built up I

let go and that pleasure is nothing I can explain. I am screaming his name and he held me tight and his

body stiffened and he started calling out my name, cursing and kissing me and a second later he stops,

and collapses on top of me, we are both breathing and sweating like crazy, we catch our breath and he

kisses my forehead then my lips, we deepen it and it goes on for a while until he breaks it

Him “you are driving me crazy Sizakele, I love you so much baby. Thank you for giving me your body to

love" I blush

Me "I love I felt Mo. I love you too"

Him "damn you are so tight and warm, I am addicted already"

Me "I enjoyed myself too, I have never felt like that before"

Him "I am glad to hear that baby" I blush

Me "Mo" I say and he squeezes me tight in his arms

Him "yes my love"

Me "uhm, why did I feel like I was peeing on myself, and it felt so good" he laughs

Him "I love you innocence. It is an orgasm baby, means you having great sex" I guess I was wasting my

time with Vusi coz I never even for once felt or experienced an orgasm

Me "oh okay" I turn to face him and the glow in his eyes makes my worries disappear

Him "thank you baby, I will worship this body all days of my life"  
I giggle

Me "just continue making me feel the way I was feeling" he smiles

Him "how is the hangover" I giggle

Me "all gone my love, I guess you healed it" he laughs  
Him "oh Sizakele you driving me crazy, you have turned my world upside down with your beauty, innocence and humbleness, you have changed a G into a love stricken puppy, thank you for coming into my life and giving me a purpose, a chance to know how it feels to love effortlessly and fearlessly " I could say anything I just kissed him and we embraced each other  
Him "come let's go shower and have breakfast" I follow his and we take a shower and once done he lathers me and I choose clothes from his closet, just a short and vest, and wears the same. We walk down stairs holding hands, I can't help but blush, I had an interesting morning, and I am not even feeling guilty and I never will, I love this man and him making love to me felt right. We get to the garden and the table is already set for two, he opens my chair and I seat then he kisses me before going to seat down.  
Me "thank you baby" he smiles and we dish up and start eating. We having a light conversation until he

frowned and cursed shit

Me "what is going on, are you okay"

Him "I am sorry babe, released inside of you, need to get you the morning after pill, much as I want your

baby, we are not ready for one, you have school" my heart started racing

Him "calm down baby, the pill will ensure that you don't get pregnant. I will send one of the boys to go

get it ASAP" I sigh in relief and he takes out his phone and calls one of the guys

Me "I love you" he blushes and takes my hand and kiss it

Him "I love you with every fiber of my being"

Please react, leave a comment and share.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 33 (not edited)

Siza

I haven't been able to stop thinking about the delicious memories of me and Molemo, to be honest I think I am more in love with him now, I don't regret giving him a chance, I have never felt so loved and appreciated in my entire existence, Mo is every woman's dream I kid you not. All I pray for these days is for Olivia to accept that her father and I love each other so much. I don't want her to see this as a betrayal, coz I never meant to fall for him, I think no one ever plans to fall in love it just happens and no matter how much we try not to, and try by all means to pretend to not feel, we fail dismally because the heart wants what it wants, I love him and fearlessly so. i am glad that I took that pill so I don't get pregnant, I am not ready to be a mother again, I haven't completely healed from the scars of my daughter and maybe I never will. It is a Sunday and a lazy one at that, I am in my shorts and one of Mo's t shirts, I miss him so much, I last saw him yesterday after we had a very relaxed day, he has been calling nonstop telling me how much he loves me and all he does he

does it for me coz he wants me happy and  
safe all times, I have been blushing like a lunatic, Olivia even  
stopped asking me a million question, she  
wants to know what happened to me yesterday that has me  
glowing like I own the world, apparently ke  
ya halalela, I am melting, butter. I am cooking some seven colors  
for us; I am happy so why not, I will  
save some saved for my man and take it to him for lunch  
tomorrow at work. The yellow beauty that  
looks so much like the man I love appears from her room  
singing some song. I smile at her and she  
comes and sits on the bar stool, I go pour us wine and hand it to  
her

Her "whatever that happened yesterday, I love it man, you seem  
happy and relaxed babe"

Me "I am happy Olivia so happy" she smiles

Her "I am glad to her that my friend, I want you to be happy at  
all times, you deserve all the happiness"

Me "thank you Liv, and whatever that happens always know  
that I love you and I am grateful to have a

best friend and sister in you, I will never hurt you on purpose,  
that is the last thing I ever want to do”

she wipes her tear and comes to hug me so tight

Her “I love you too babe and I know that okay?” I nod and blush

Me “the food will be ready soon”

Her “it smells divine”

Me “you know me mos” she laughs and a knock disturbs us, she  
goes to open and comes back with a

roses and a box of chocolates and a bottle of champagne

Her “this is so fancy, whatever you did to that guy mmhhh” I  
laugh

Me “are those for me?” I ask blushing

Her “yep they are, let me read the card” I let her coz I know Mo  
won’t write anything that will give away

his identity, he knows his daughter might read the card

Her “my beautiful queen, thank you again, it is times like these  
when I wish I was poetic or read novels

by Charlotte Bronte or Thomas Hardy, I am sure I would have  
the right words to say to you, but I will just

say what I know and feel deep in my heart, I love you Sizakele,

you mean everything to me even the  
ones I didn't believe till I set my eyes on your innocent and  
humble soul, you make me want to be a  
better man my love and for you and it is a small price to pay, I  
will lay my world at your feet and ensure  
you get whatever your heart desires. Thank you for loving me  
the way you do my baby it gives me hope,  
something I never had before" she reads the note and I am in  
tears

Me "I love you Olivia, I really do" she smiles sweetly at me  
Her "and it is obvious he is crazy about you too, I don't know  
why you two are hiding a love so beautiful" I smile at her and  
think of my Mo, he can be so romantic my God. Let me call him

Razor

I think I have slept with a million woman in my life (not literally),  
I am just trying to emphasize my point,  
but to tell you the truth, I have never felt what I felt when I  
made love to Siza, I felt myself connect to  
her, my soul reaching to hers, I don't know why but it feels like



doing the deed made me fall deeper in  
love with her, she let me love her, she gave herself to me coz  
she wanted to because she loves me, and  
knowing that she loves me makes me think of all the other  
possibilities I can have with her, my first lady.  
I can't get her out of my mind, Sizakele has a strong hold on me,  
I am wrapped around her finger and  
she doesn't even notice that, if she could say Jump, I would ask  
how high without thinking twice, I  
wouldn't hesitate doing all that she might ask of me, I never in  
my life thought I would love a woman the  
way I do, let's just say I have always seen woman differently, like  
a man is just suppose to marry one,  
have kids, give her all the money to take care of the kids and the  
household then service you in the sack  
when you want to, and like a G I did all that with the mother of  
my daughters, I loved her yes but I was  
not in love with her. I know this because she didn't make me feel  
the way Siza is making me feel, all that  
I am doing for Sizakele willingly she begged me to do it but I  
refused. I goes back to what I have always

taught my children, you don't have to tell a man what to do or how he should treat you, but if he loves

you he will do everything for you without having to ask, and I finally believe in my own teachings.

Gadaffi walks in to me whistling a nice melody, soon as I see him I get up and dance to my own tune, he laughs

Him "what's with you" he say's pouring a drink

Me "I am a happy man In love my friend and it feels so damn good" he narrows his eyes

Him "you look stupid right now with that grin on your face" I laugh

Me "I don't expect you to understand"

Him "oh shit, you hit that didn't you?" I smile

Me "let me correct you brother, I made love to her" he laughs and jumps on top of me like crazy and we both laugh.

Him "finally man, so how was it?" he says sitting down

Me "I am not telling you that"

Him "oh come on Razor bra" I laugh

Me "let's just say tight, warm, drives me insane " he gets more excited

Him "you lucky bastard, you have a full package, beauty, innocence, brains, great cook, fire body, and she ticks all the boxes in the sack too" I laugh

Me "she is a goddess"

Him "damn right she is, I am happy for you man"

Me "I am happy for me too"

Him "so is she upstairs"

Me "nope she went back last night, her other boyfriend Olivia called and said she misses her and just

like that she left me" he laughs

Him "they have a good thing going on, I just hope it won't be ruined when you tell your daughters who

your woman is" I sigh

Me "I know man, that alone gives me so much stress"

Him "but if they want to see you happy like they always say, they will have to accept it and support you

two"

Me "I hope so, because I love her man, and I love them, I just

don't want to have one without the other,

I know that's selfish of me"

Him "no it isn't brother, you deserve to be happy too" I nod and my phone rings and it's the Queen

Me "I need to take this, it's the Mrs" he nods and I walk out of the study

Vusi

The fact that Siza spends time and even sleeps over at Mandla's place is not sitting well with me really

why would he do that, why would they do that, they have no right to be that close, Mandla is betraying

me really, I thought he was my guy, and that he would take care of my interests but I guess he has

always been jealous of Sizakele and I, he should be helping me make amends with her not trying to win

her over to his side, are they even sleeping together, I hate this. I have never been so betrayed before,

what happened to the bro code, we are suppose to look out for each other not stab each other at the

back, she was mine first, the mother of my daughter, he has no right whatsoever to be trying anything with Siza, I am pissed, I have been in a foul mood ever since that day, all I can think about is her, after all that has happened she is still the woman who has truly had my heart. i couldn't spend one more minute in my house coz all I keep thinking about is Sizakele while Mercy keeps annoying me, I need a breather really, so I asked my guy Steve to join me. I was waiting for him at club nation, I was already having a beer, he walked in and spotted me then made his way through and sat down.

Him "having beer no ways" I laughed and called the waitress

Me "what do you want to drink"

Him "I feel like having Remy martin" he said

Me "get us what he just said and 6 bottles of water" she left

Him "what's up where is Mindlos, he is never late" I frowned

Me "he is not coming, I didn't invite him over"

Him "why, what's going on"

Me "can you believe your friend, he spends so much time with Siza, she even sleeps at his house and cooks for him"

Him "and what is wrong with that, they are friends"

Me "are you for real right now Steve, the broke the bro code" he laughs

Him "he is not sleeping with her mos, and what is it to you" I roll my eyes

Me "must I spill it out for you mfethu"

Him "I am afraid you going to have to do exactly that" I sigh in frustration

Me "she was the mother of my daughter"

Him "there one you treated like trash because she was not your type"

Me "that's a low blow but yes" he laughs

Him "don't be a hypocrite Vusi, Mandla was there for that girl when you broke her, he was one her

support system, you once even said Mandla can have her when he asked to you to treat Sizakele better,

now that she all cleaned up and looking like a city girl who can compete with your Mercy she is suddenly

the mother of your daughter, don't make me laugh wena" I  
swallowed hard, that hit home

Me "you didn't have to be rude about"

Him "then I wouldn't be your man if I didn't give it to you  
straight now would I?"

Me "I love her Steve and honestly I want my woman back"

Him "stop this shit Vusi, leave her alone, she deserves better,  
you broke her and she will never look at  
you the same way trust me, the bridge is burned man"

Me "it wouldn't hurt to try"

Him "go ahead and embarrass yourself, what I will tell you is she  
is no longer that farm Julia, who's  
world used to start and end with you, she is her own woman  
now, she doesn't need you"

Me "we will have to wait and see I guess" he laughs and shakes  
his head

Him "yazin let's just drink and leave all this talk it is depressing  
me" I sigh and the waitress comes back with our order, and we  
change the topic instantly.

Thandiwe

He promised that he will change but he never will, Sizwe will always be a dog, he thinks of no one but his damn self, now he has put my health and that of our unborn baby at risk, I am looking at these test results and the medication on the table with tears in my eyes, why have I subjected myself to this kind of life, for what exactly I don't know, I am miserable here, and now I let his convince me so have another child, I am stuck here, I am nothing more to him than a baby making machine and a woman who the public will accept in his eyes, a woman who is good enough for his image not his loyalty. I am fed up with this man. I went to the gynecologist coz my private part was not feeling so good, the symptoms were very alarming, she ran some tests and I tested positive for gonorrhoea, the Dr said we caught it early and if it was undetected I could have miscarried or had premature deliver and if my baby made he or she would have been born blind or even have a blood infection amongst other things. Why is my



husband such a cheat, if he can't keep it in his pants why doesn't he use a condom at least? He walked in all happy and shits. He kissed my cheek, I could smell a cheap perfume on him, I couldn't so I just let the tears falls. He sat opposite me smiling and he frowned soon as he saw my face

Him "hao maTha what's wrong baby" one would think he cares

Me "why don't you use a condom with your hoes Sizwe?"

Him "don't start with your shit Thandiwe, can't I have peace in my house, and you wonder why I am never home" he attempts to walk away

Me "I can smell her all the way from here, at least give her money to buy a decent perfume not that small street paraffin" he laughs and I wipe my tears

Him "I don't have time for this really" he said and turned his back

Me "if anything happens to my child because of your infidelities Sizwe, I will leave and take my child with me" he turned back and came back

Him "what the hell are you talking about" I throw the results at him and he looked at him, his faced changed

Me "you gave me gonorrhoea Sizwe, it could have affected the baby, I could have lost this pregnancy

Sizwe, do you ever think about my health when you slepp with them without a condom" he swallows and stays silent, that's a first

Me "you are so selfish Sizwe, you think of no one but yourself, do I really mean nothing to you that you could put me at risk like this" he brushed his forehead

Him "I am so sorry my Love. I don't know I keep doing this to you baby I am sorry" I laugh

Me "who is she"

Him "no one baby, she is a mistake, I will end it I promise"

Me "don't lie you know you won't" he sighs

Him "did the Dr give you a shot of antibiotic? How are you feeling? Is the baby okay?" I laugh

Me "as if you care" I take my pills and walk away

Him "I am sorry maTha"

Please react, leave a comment and share with others. I have missed you guys so much . Have a wonderful weekend.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 34 (not edited)

Sizwe

I have never been so powerless in my existence, there is no way I can talk my way out of this situation, I

can't use reverse psychology on this one, and I don't want to even, I just want Thandiwe to forgive me, I

understand I hurt her a lot and she didn't deserve all I did to her, she is the mother of my kids and she

deserves better, I mean how could I have been so stupid to sleep with j without a condom, I always use

a condom, but I don't know I decided not to with her, now my decisions almost cost me my unborn child

and I don't think Thandiwe will ever forgive me, I don't know if she knows this but I need her more than

she needs me, I mean the plantation in her village is still operating and I still work well with the villagers coz of her dad, and that means I can launder my money through the plantation, again my international business partners are very strict when it comes to business they insist on working with family man and Thandiwe is very acceptable in their eyes, so losing her means I lose stability and I can't have that. So I need to start getting my shit together until things die down, I haven't set foot at the club for a week now, I even went to get treatment at the Dr too for that infection, I need to go have a word with that tramp, I won't lose everything because of a floozy. I finish preparing her lunch and I walk upstairs with it and her meds, she was told to rest, so she spends most of her time in bed. Our son went to my mother's place for a while till she feels better. She frowns as she sees me walking in.

Me "I brought you lunch so you can take your meds"

Her "thanks" I place the food in front of her and she starts

eating

Me " so how are you feeling today?"

Her "much better" she says coolly and I sigh

Me "I need to go to the club and sign some documents"

Her "do what you must Sizwe"

Me "baby please, I know you think I am going to her but I am not I need to sign some documents and I

will come back I promise"

Her "I don't care anymore Sizwe, do what you must"

Me "I love you and I am very sorry believe I am" she continued eating like I wasn't there talking to her, I

just kissed her forehead and walked out driving to the club, I get there and the is already a vibe and I

spot her and tell Kat to tell her to come to my office immediately. I get in first and pour and gulp my

drink then she walks in and comes to me and starts rubbing my D. I let her be for a second and anger

just consumed me. I hold her throat and she struggles to breathe

Her "Sizwe please you hurting me" she says with a voice barely

audible

Me "you give me filthy infections you skank"

Her "what are you talking about?"

Me "you gave me a damn STI man, you were busy sleeping around while sleeping with me huh"

Her "what are you kidding me, you also sleep with your wife she could have been the one who gave it to you for all we know" I got angrier; I tightened my hold around her throat.

Me "my wife would never ever sleep with someone who is not me, don't you dare blame my wife for your filth, I will kill right here and now"

Her "okay, okay I am sorry babe"

Me "don't you dare babe me, I don't want to see you near me again, whatever that we had is done, you

can keep working her but our fooling around is over, I want nothing to do with you sick ass" I let go of

her throat and she falls down coughing, I took my car keys and left, I am going home to my wife, I don't

want to waste time and have her think I am sleeping with someone else. Until we are in a better state

and she safely delivers the baby I am done with this shit. I need to get her to trust me again

Siza

Oh my God school has been the most amazing experience ever, I started a week ago and I must admit I

was so scared but I quickly adapted, I remember my first I got lost so much trying to find my lecture

halls, I think I was late for all my classes that day, I swear it was like I didn't attend orientation, but I

quickly got the hang of things and I can safely say I can navigate myself around campus with less

difficulty. I haven't made friends as yet but I am in a group with 2 girls and a guy, one of the professors

told us to group ourselves into 4's for study groups and some assignments. They all seem smart,

especially the guy, he is irritating though, he always wants to be close to me, he is some kind of a rich

kid, he thinks he is entitled to everything, so I just let him be.

The other girl is so mean my god, she

thinks she is the most beautiful girl in the entire universe, oh boy and she loves attention to the moon

and back. Then last one is sweet and down to earth, her parents are both doctors hence she chose to

study it too. We work well as a team but as individuals we are totally different people I tell you. We have

only just started but the pressure is already there, I am handling it very well though. I am on my way to

see my man, it is Friday and luckily we have only two classes, so I decided to surprise him. The Uber

drops me off and I make my way in, the receptionist rolls her eyes and I just chuckle.

Me "hey, is he free?"

Her "even if he was he would make an opening for you so go right in there" she says with so much

annoyance. I walk into his office and he is on a call, he smiles as he sees it's me. I go and sit on his lap

and hide my head in his neck, he snakes his free hand on my waist and squeezes, I take in his scent and I

am lost in it, he takes a few kisses all over my face, the call goes



on for about 20 minutes and he is done

he looks at me deep in my eyes then kiss me passionately.

Him "what a lovely surprise, I have missed you so much" I blush

Me "I missed you too love" we share a hug

Him "you know I love you right?"

Me "I know that Mo, and I love you too Mr. Motaung" he blushes

Him "come let's go seat on the couch, I get off him and a knock on the door comes through

Him "come in" he shouts and his PA walks in

Her "sorry to disturb sir, but I am leaving now, everyone has already retired for the day, it is only you in

the building but the security is still here"

Him "okay thank you, see you on Monday" she walks out and I sit on the couch and Mo starts

unbuttoning his shirt, I thought for one minute he wanted to do it here

Him "I want to show you something, I got it last Sunday night"

Me "what is it?" I ask as I see a wide beautiful smile on his face, that makes his dimples so visible makes

me feel some typha way. He takes off his shirt and the vest and the is a huge tattoo of my face on his

chest OMG is he crazy, it is me on his body, it looks so beautiful, tears form in my eyes and he blushes

Me "baby I uhm what why though" I mumble

Him "because I love you and I want to see your face even when you not around" I blush and let a tear

fall

Me "I love it so much, it is beautiful, I am beautiful" he smiles wider and chuckles

Him "what about this one?" he turns around and there is my name tattooed across his back, I gasp for

air, I am shocked I don't know what to say really

Me "I love you so much" I stand up and hug him from behind; he turns and folds me tight in his arms.

This man never ceases to amaze me

Him "I love you more Sizakele, and you are my one true love" I blush and we go seat on the couch and I

am between his legs with my head on his chest, we are having a light conversation and he keeps telling

me stories that crack me up, he can be so funny when he wants,

we sat like this for hours, we ordered pizza and we ate, he was now wearing his shirt, we continued talking, he was sharing his childhood with me and, I am impressed that he made something of himself from the kind of background he is from. I also shared some parts of my life with him, and he asked me to tell him more about Siphephelo and I gladly did, it felt good talking about my own guardian angel. He asked me to kiss him and I did. His office door opened and we heard something break, we got up and it was Olivia, I couldn't miss the shock on her face. I was so embarrassed, I didn't want her to find out like this, I wanted to be the one to tell her

Her "now I see why you wouldn't tell me who your boyfriend is, you are sleeping with my father Sizakele how could you"

Me "I am so sorry Liv, I didn't want you to find out like this, I am sorry"

Her "why, is it because of the money, is that it?"

Me "no it is not I swear, I love him Olivia I really do"

Her "are you hearing yourself speak right now, he is my father

and you are supposed to be my best  
friend”

Me “I know and I swear it was never my intention to fall in love  
with him it just happened” she laughed

Her “I can’t believe you, you acted all innocent kante you are  
nothing more than a wolf in sheep skin,

you seduced my father Sizakele, I mean what is this are you  
having daddy issues” I was now crying. Mo

stepped in front of me

Him “okay Olivia that is enough, if you want to blame someone  
blame me, she was afraid to explore her

feelings for me because she was scared of what it might do to  
your friendship, Sizakele loves you Liv,

please don’t condemn her for loving me coz I love her too,  
please try and understand, we never planned

for this to happen, we are just two people in love” she laughed

Me “Liv please”

Her “I give it to you shame, the muti you used on him is strong”

Him “Olivia that’s enough please”

Her “no daddy it isn’t, can’t you see, she is using you to get back

at Mercy for taking Vusi from her” I

cried harder, how could she be saying all these things to me, it hurts

Me “that’s not true I swear, I love him, I love you father Olivia I really do”

Her “he is my father Siza, my father. Couldn’t you avoid this”

Me “I tried believe me I tried, but I just couldn’t Olivia. I love him please try and understand”

Her “don’t make me laugh”

Him “Liv baby I know you are hurt and feel betrayed but please, you have seen how happy I have been

for the past months, she is the reason, she makes me happy, she loves me Olivia, I am even changing my

ways because of her, she makes me want to become a better man for all of you, please support us”

Her “daddy please see her for who she really is”

Him “she is the same person you befriended, the same innocent and humble soul you love like a sister”

Her “there is nothing innocent about her daddy, she is a schemer and she has been exposed, I regret

ever loving you Sizakele” her words pierced through my heart,

why saying all this, I love her father, that  
is the only crime I am guilty for

Her "daddy you are going to have to chose, it's either Mercy and  
I OR he"

Him "baby please don't make me choose between the my  
daughters and my soul mate, I wouldn't

survive without either of you" he says going closer to his  
daughter and cupping her face

Him "please Liv please accept this please"

Her "I am going to pack my staff and move in to Mercy's for a  
while, I am giving you two weeks to find a

place and get the hell out of my apartment. Daddy I am giving  
you 24 hours to make your decision"

Me "Olivia please I beg you"

Him "Liv please, I love her please" she walked out and banged  
the door, I sat down and cried my eyes

out, Mo took me into his arms and comforted me

Him "I am sorry my love, but I am not loosing you, I will have  
you and both my kids in my life I promise.

Olivia

I left my father's office fuming, how dare she, she seduces my father and acts like an innocent saint,

knowing that deep down she is a conniving little bitch, who came to Jozi to survive, why did I think she

was any different from all the others who tried to get in my father's bed for money. Siza really hurt me, I

loved her so much, she was like a sister to me, and to think that I sided with her over my own blood

sister sets me off completely. I get to the apartment and start packing a few things and my toiletry and

important textbooks and notes, then I left and drove to Mercy's house, I find her in her bedroom painting her toe nails.

Her "what a nice surprise, what brings you here"

Me "before I can tell you, I need a strong drink" she narrowed her eyes

Her "the bar has everything, go help yourself" I walked down stairs and she followed me, I pours myself

3 glasses of whisky and gulp them down. She was looking at me

shocked

Her "what the fuck happened"

Me "you not going to believe this"

Her "out with it already Liv" she is now agitated

Me "I met dad's girlfriend" she smiled

Her "you don't say, who is she, is she beautiful? Someone I know?" I pour another drink

Me "are you sure you want to know sis?"

Her "obviously Olivia hao" I sigh

Me "Siza" he face changed immediately

Her "wait what? As in Siza your friend? My fiancé's ex?"

Me "the one and only"

Her "I knew it. I knew it that she wasn't as sweet as she claimed to be"

Me "I wish I had listened to you" she pours herself a drink

Her "we can't let that happened"

Me "I already told dad to choose between us and her" she smiled

Her "good girl, and we all know who he will choose"



Me "exactly, Razor lives for us, he will be here soon"

Her "than we have nothing to worry about" I sigh, I still can't believe Siza

Me "I need a place to crash" she laughed

Her "she should have been the one to move out not you"

Me "I told her to move out in 2 weeks time" she smiles

Her "no don't let her keep it, tell dad to get you an apartment in the north"

Me "I might just, I need an upgrade after all"

Her "exactly"

Me "let me go get my things from the car, I need a hot shower"

Her "okay I will go call my man to inform him that you will staying with us in the time being"

Me "okay cool" she walked away and I take out my phone and see a million missed calls from Siza, mxm.

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others.  
remember participation is key Thank you for the support.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 35 (not edited)

Razor

I am not loosing Siza, I am not losing my daughters, I am not selfish for wanting them all, I love them and

my entire existence is for them, I have lived my life for the girls and made sure that they want for

nothing, I have ensured that they are happy, why can't they see that she makes me happy, why is it hard

to accept that my heart has chosen her, yes she is young, but how are we suppose to pretend that we

don't love each other. Sizakele is my life line and I am not letting her go, if they love me they will

understand and support us. I am defeated I didn't want their relationship to be tainted by this, yes I

knew they would be shocked but not to tell me to choose between them and her. They are not being

fair. My woman hasn't been answering my calls for 2 days now, I tried going to her apartment but she

doesn't open for me, she told me to choose my children, she is so selfless but I am not letting her

sacrifice our love like this. I am at Gadaffi's place, maybe he will tell me what to do, in fact I know what I need to do I just need a friend.

Him "this is not happening, Olivia can't ask you to choose" I sigh

Me "well brother she did and my deadline was yesterday, can you believe this"

Him "why, they were the one's ready to kiss her feet for making you happy"

Me "and she makes me happy G, she is my happiness, and the fact that she is not talking to me hurts so bad"

Him "why what happened, why isn't she talking to you"

Me "she says she is making things easy for me, she want's me to choose the girls, so she is removing herself from the equation"

Him "what, no man"

Me "I don't know what to do Gadafi, I miss her, she is not okay too and she needs me, hell I need her"

Him "you need to talk to the girls, I have seen how you look at

Siza, I have never seen you like that, you are happy and they must just let you be"

Me "yeah I am planning on going to see them"

Him "it is Olivia you need to work on"

Me "exactly, Mercy is a none factor in this equation, she will never cut ties with me, no matter how mad

she is at me, but Olivia could, she has done it before, and I can't lose her again"

Him "make them understand what she means to you"

Me "I hope they give me a chance to explain and give me their blessing"

Him "just don't let them manipulate you, stand your ground and fight for you love"

Me "I plan to, I know they are my weakness but now my heart and soul is involved, it has been a hectic

2days without her and I cannot imagine my life without her, I need her more than I ever realized"

Him "please fight this, you giving me hope, you make me want to find my own Sizakele"

Me "let me get going then"

Him "call me after you talk to them"

Me "will do man, thank you"

Him "sure brother" we fist bump and I walk to my car and drive to Mercy's house, I am pleased to see

both Olivia's car in the drive way, I need to talk to her more than Mercy, her support will mean

everything to me and especially Sizakele. I sit in the car a while trying to come up with how I will go about everything

Olivia

It has been 2 days since I gave my father that ultimatum, and he hasn't gotten back to me, he hasn't

even called, what if he decided to choose her over us, oh my God, what if he is tired of living for us, he

might have concluded that he has done so much for us and that we are grown enough to be able to take

care of ourselves. I know I have cut contact with my dad before, but he has been the most amazing

parent I could ever ask for, I wish I didn't make his choose between us and Sizakele. I can't lose my

father; it was selfish of me to ask that of him. I don't know what came over me, on the other hand guilt

has been eating through me alive, all I said to Siza, it was bad, I took it too far, I shouldn't have hurt her

like that, but I was shocked, never in a million have I thought I will walk in on my best friend and my

father in each other's arms claiming their love, I love them both but how is possible for them to even fall

in love with each other, I mean he is old enough to be her father, or am I judging the situation without

understanding it. I have been tempted to go see Siza, but pride combined with guilt won't let me do it. I

have been in Mercy's house not even going to school hoping and praying that my father walks in. The

door bell rings and a minute later my daddy walked in and stood by the door with his hands buried deep

in his pockets, he looks defeated, like he hasn't slept at all. We stare at each other for a minute and he breaks the silence.

Him "hey baby" he says in a low voice

Me "hey daddy"

Him "how are you?"

Me "I am fine thanks, how are you?"

Him "I have been better, where is your sister"

Me "she flew to Cape Town last night" he nods

Him "can we talk"

Me "sure, come seat down" he sits and I go pour us something to drink, juice for me and whisky for him

Him "thank you" I smile not knowing what to say, I have never seen my father like this before

Me "daddy, I know I" he disturbs me

Him "let me speak first please"

Me "no problem" I sip

Him "she is not picking my calls or letting me in at the apartment, she kind of broke up with me so I

could chose you and your sister, and to tell you the truth, I miss her" I am shocked I don't know how to

respond to that, so Siza broke up with him for us

Him "you know Olivia I love her, and the past 2days have been hell for me. I just wish she could answer

her phone, just so I know she is okay at least" I swallow hard

Him "we were going to come clean eventually, she just didn't want to hurt you, she didn't want you to

feel betrayed by her but she loves me Olivia and we make each other happy, at least I know she does,

you know I stepped down as the cartel boss" whaaaaatttt Razor, my father, left the underworld

Me "what? When? Why?" he smiles

Him "yeah, I am no longer a cartel boss, all my dealings are legal now, it has been a few months now,

but it became official a few weeks ago. And the answer to your why is Sizakele, I did this for her in fact I

did this because she makes me want to be a better man, she gives me hope for a better future, a future

with her, I love her Olivia, I need her in my life, I need you to support me, I am happy with her, she is my

soul mate, and I am sorry it had to be her, your best friend, but she is who I need in my life" he sounds

so sincere, he got up and started unbuttoning his shirt, okay what is he doing, he stops on the last

button and looks at me with pleading eyes and guilt continues doing the rounds with me. he exhaled



and did the last button and removed his shirt, oh my God there is a huge tattoo of Siza's face on his chest, it is so beautiful, he turns around and there is one of her name across his back, I am shocked, I can't believe this, he loves her OMG.

Him "Olivia I love her" he says in a low low voice. I feel so bad for breaking them up, he has been so

happy for the past few months, he even left the cartel after I begged him, he finally did it because of

her, am I being selfish for wanting him to choose, he is happy, he is in love, he has never been like this

with any woman, not even our mother. He walks towards me and kneels down

Him "please Olivia please, she makes me happy, I am sorry for hurting you by falling for your friend, I am

sorry but I need her Olivia, I love her, please allow me to be happy allow me to die a happy man, forgive

us baby, please give us your blessing nana, I need her please, he had tears in his eyes, he was trying so

hard not to let them fall but he failed. OMG I have never seen my father cry not for anyone not for

anything. They love each other, who am i to stand in their way, he has lived all his life ensuring that we are happy and taken care of, he has never even once complained, it is time he also becomes happy and if Siza is who makes him happy I will not stand in their way. I will not be a reason for my father being miserable, I will not. I stand up from the couch and kneel in front of him and hug him, he returns the hug and I cry God I feel so bad.

Me "I am sorry daddy, I am so sorry"

Him "I am sorry too baby girl, we didn't mean to hurt, we just fell in love"

Me "the heart wants what it wants right" he laughs

Him "yes and mine wants Siza, and I am sorry"

Me "don't be daddy, I will support your relationship with her" he broke the hug and looked at me with half a smile

Him "really? Are you sure?"

Me "I am very sure, I support you guys" he smiles and kisses my forehead and we hug again

Him "I love you princess"

Me "I love you too daddy, and it is really nice seeing you happy"  
he smiles and we stand up and sit, I put  
my head on his lap and he strokes my hair.

Him "thank you Olivia" I smile

Me "its okay daddy, be happy okay"

Him "that I am, I just need to go and talk to her, tell her you  
support us, after all you are the reason she  
felt the need to dump me" I laugh

Me "then why are you still here, go talk to my step mommy" we  
both laugh

Him "borrow me your key, she won't open the door for me" I  
laugh and take it out of my bag and give it  
to him

Him "I will call you later okay" I smile

Me "okay daddy" he hugs me and walks out happier than when  
he arrived and to tell you the truth, I am  
feeling much better too, I just need to fix things between my  
best friend and I.

Siza

2 days of pure torture, I miss Molemo so much, but I will never let him be in a position where he has to

chose, he loves his children and I had to make it easier for him. I was a parent and I know I would have

chosen my child any day over anything, as much as it hurts I need to sacrifice this for his and Olivia, I

love them with all my heart so I wouldn't want to see them not on good terms because of me. I have

been closing myself in the apartment, he has been calling a million times, I couldn't answer coz it would

hurt so much hearing him asking me not to do this to us, he also came here a few times and I didn't

open for him, the less we see of each other, the faster we will get over this, it hurts though, I wish things

were a bit different, I love him but the circumstances around us won't allow us to be happy. I just got

back from campus, it was a hectic day, I just want to shower eat and then get some studying done. I get in the shower, and stand under the hot cascading water that soothes my body, I feel the

tension get

released, my shower gel is lavender and we all know it has a calming and relaxing feeling, damn I needed

this shower, it did me good. I stood under the water for almost 30 minutes. I get out and wrap a towel. I

go to the fridge and take out the mince, I am making spaghetti Bolognese, it won't take too much time. I

place them on the stove to boil so long I go lotion my body. I walk into my room and scream my lungs

out

Him "shhhh baby ssshhhh it's just me love sorry" I stop, my heart pounding

Me "how did you get in her Mo, I know I locked the door"

Him "I used Olivia's key to let myself in, I knew you wouldn't open for me if I had knocked like a normal

person" I sigh

Me "why didn't you wait in the lounge, you almost gave me a heart attack"

Him "I am sorry my love okay"

Me "it's okay, what are you doing here Mo, I thought I" he cut me off before I could finish saying

anything.

Him "I know but things are different now my love"

Me "you know I love you but your kids will never accept me and that won't be healthy for either of us"

he is smiling like a lunatic

Him "are you going to let me speak my love" I sigh

Me "go on, and why are you smiling like that" he chuckles

Him "because I love you and because Olivia gave us her blessing" my eyes widen

Me "what what do you mean she gave us her blessing"

Him "I mean exactly that baby. We have Olivia, she supports and is fine with me and you being

together" oh my God, my tears fall and I just go and attack Mo with a hug, he picks me up and I wrap

my legs around his waist and bury my face in his neck

Me "how did you do it love" I ask smiling

Him "kiss me first and I will tell you" I giggle and I kiss him slowly and passionately

Me "I have missed you so much"

Him "I was dying without you, never do this to me again okay" I

blush

Me "never ever, I love you so much" he kisses me

Him "I love you too baby"

Me "now how did you do it" he laughs

Him "nothing really, I just poured out my heart to her, I told her the truth, that is all I had" I smile

Me "thank you for not giving up on us"

Him "I am in this till the day I die" I kiss him

Me "I am glad to hear that, my pots will burn, let me lotion and finish cooking"

Him "okay do that, and pack a bag for the entire week, you are visiting your boo"

Me "I would love that" I say excitedly

Him "I will be driving you to school and picking you up myself, we can now even go out in public, I will

be able to hold your hand and kiss it with fear of my children seen us" I smile

Me "I can't wait for all of that" I lotion while he is looking at me like a snack, once done I wear my mini

orange summer dress and slippers, we go to the kitchen and I

finish cooking and I transfer the food in to  
Tupperware containers, he takes my travel bag and with my  
clothes and textbooks, I follow him with the  
food and my handbag and lock the door and we drive to his  
house.

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 36(Not edited)

Siza

Life has been a total bliss, I am happy with Molemo, sleeping  
and waking up next to him has to be one of  
the nicest things in the world, but I am only doing this for this  
week, we deserved this, I mean we almost  
broke up so now we just want to enjoy being in a relationship  
without hiding, but we won't be doing this  
frequently hey I have already been through one cohabitation I  
don't want another one, things between



Mo and I have to be done in the right way, he has kept to his promise, of driving to and picking me up from school, and I must say it is a nice experience really. I haven't seen or heard from Olivia, I guess she has given us her blessings but I have lost her as my best friend, I understand her though, she feels betrayed and too much. I will not pressure her into anything but I will always love her and very grateful to have her support. I am in the kitchen preparing some breakfast for the man of the house, he is still in bed, I whipped a full farmhouse breakfast and squeezed fresh oranges to make juice. He works too hard, I just want us to have a chilled weekend, I am even going to ask him to switch off his phone, those who need to talk to him will have to be transferred to his associates, he is not Mr. hot shot lawyer this weekend, he is simply Sizakale's man. I finish with the breakfast and go set it up in the garden, that's his favorite place to eat in the morning. He comes downstairs whistling a great melody, he is in his denim Capri and his is not wearing any t-shirt and shoes, he looks so

damn sexy, my face on his chest gets me blushing

Him "like what you see" he say's teasing me

Me "who wouldn't, I mean have you seen yourself"

Him "I try hard not to crush on myself" I laugh

Me "arrogant much" he chuckles

Him "not all my baby" he walks towards me and we share a brief kiss

Me "breakfast is ready" he smiles and rubs his hands together

Him "ahhh see why I love you, marry me already"

Me "maybe in about 2 years love" he frowns

Him "fair enough my baby" he takes my hand and we walk to the garden

Me "baby" I say after we seat down

Him "why are you making that face, you know I let you get away with everything when you put on that

face, what am I about to agree on Sizakele" I blink a couple of times and he sighs

Me "I want no interruptions today, so can we kindly switch off your work cell phone whoever needs you

will have to contact your associates or your PA” he chuckles

Him “I didn’t see that one coming my love but okay, what do you want us to do today”

Me “you had a hectic day, so today I just want you to relax and be lazy with yours truly, we can binge

watch some medical and law series in the cinema and order some junk and have some wine” he smiles

Him “okay I am all for that, I could do with doing nothing for today, and is making love to you on the table?” I blush

Me “we have the whole house to ourselves so I don’t see why not” he bites his lower lip and I blush

Him “you sure know how to make a man feel special Sizakele” I smile

Him “I want to take you away, where would you love to go outside the country” I get excited

Me “uhm, I have been craving to see, Zanzibar and recently Bali or the Maldives” he nods

Him “we should get you traveling documents soon then” I find myself on his lap kissing him like tomorrow doesn’t exist

Him “keya o rata motho waka” he hardly speaks his home

language and when he does I get goose bumps.

Mercy

A lot has been happening in my life, my man is acting like a brat on the other my father is dating Sizakele

who happens to be my man's ex, can you see how messed that is, it's like the universe is against me

these days. I just had to go on a mini vacation and fast hence I opted for Cape Town, it was refreshing, I

did some retail therapy, went to get pampered at their spa, went to swim in the ocean and kissed a

stranger or two under the influence, I had so much fun man, I almost forgot my problems for a minute,

now I just landed in this busy city my God, I should have stayed another day, I am not ready to face all

the drama in my life, but what I need to know is if Razor finally got rid of that girl. I can't deal shame, the

uber drops me off at my house and I get in wheeling my luggage, I get in and Olivia has Frank Ocean busting through my speakers

Me "my God Olivia, do you want to break my windows geez" she lowers the volume and laughs

Her "sorry sis"

Me "and when did you became a frank Ocean fan"

Her "he is Siza's favorite artist so his music kind of grew on me" I frown at that mention of that girl

Me "okay delete that, we don't need any reminder of that trash" she looks down

Her "come on sis it's just music, how was Cape?"

Me "it was fun, so has dad gotten rid of her" she sighs

Her "Mercy eish" okay why is she being like this

Me "what Olivia?"

Her "he loves her, they love each other" I can't believe this

Me "what are you freaking listen to yourself right now"

Her "he was here mercy, you didn't see him, he even got on his knees and begged, he cried, he has a

tattoo of her face and name on his body, he loves her sis" I couldn't believe this, is she being for real

right now

Me "so you let him be with her, you are supporting them now"

Her "yes Mercy, I am"

Me "you are so fucken weak Olivia, fuck you, how dare you, she is nothing more than a gold digger, why can't you all see her for who she is"

Her "just give them a chance Mercy"

Me "what chance, there is no chance they are getting from me, they should just forget it, they will never

be together for as long as I leave" I am so mad, how dare she

Her "Mercy please just talk to dad please, you will see how genuine he is" I laugh and throw my phone

to the wall and scream in frustration

Me "you are not hearing me, my father will never be with that girl, you might be okay with this bullshit

but I am not, I will never be"

Her "it is not our choice to make" I give her a death stare and she shuts up.

Me "oh yes it is, and Razor has to remember that sweetheart"

Her "just calm down and go talk to daddy please"

Me "you are making me more angry right now, I suggest you go

up stairs and pack your shit and get the  
hell out of my house” she giggles and claps her hands

Her “just wow”

Me “yes wow, get out Olivia” she walked upstairs and I sigh and  
click my tongue, the nerve mxm.

Olivia

I couldn't believe Mercy, she really threw me out of her house  
like a dog, just because I gave my father  
my blessing to be happy, I wish she could have seen how sincere  
Razor was, he even left the cartel, that  
is big for him, he loved being a crime lord having all the power  
and people fearing him, but now he is  
okay with just being a legit business man, that alone proves  
that he loves her. I was packing my things  
back in my bag, I just wanted to be gone from this house, before  
we get into a more serious fight, I take  
my staff and walk down stairs and she is having a drink  
standing by the door, I just passed her without

saying anything, she bangs the door soon as i am out of the door I laugh, she can be dramatic shame. I

get my things in the boot of my car and drive back to the apartment; I hope Siza is there, I really need to

talk to her. I get there and park and retrieve my bag and take a lift to our floor, I get in and it is so quite, i

get to my room and just leave the bag without unpacking, I sigh and go knock on Siza's door, the is no

answer so I just open and get in and she is not in there, I sigh and walk to her pedestal, the is a picture of

us framed there, I take it and smile, I miss her so much. i pace the frame down and walked out and got a

bottle of wine and a glass and sat down on the couch waiting for her, maybe she went to the mall. But I

finish the entire bottle and she hasn't arrived, it cliques that she might be with my dad, I guess I will see

her tomorrow then, I change into something nice and make my way to club nation. I get there and it is a

chilled vibe, it is not yet packed and I find a table and sit. I call my friend Tebogo who happens to be very

gay to join me, and he says he will be here within the hour so I



just wait for him. I order a bottle of ciroc  
and cranberry to mix with. They bring my order and I start  
drinking and enjoying the music. I spot the  
owner Sizwe approaching, I never liked the guy, he was in  
business with dad, and he sits opposite me

Him "if it's not one of the Motaung's Princesses, Olivia, how are  
you?"

Me "Sizwe, I am fine thanks"

Him "you not going to ask me how I am?" I roll my eyes

Me "that's because I don't care" he chuckles

Him "you have never really liked me much"

Me "you got that right" I sip on my drink

Him "so I have seen you with Siza a few times, you two  
friends?"

Me "best friends yes" he smiles

Him "good to know, how is she? How is school going for her?"

Me "what is it to you"

Him "she used to work here for me I am sure you know that, I  
just wanted to find out how she is that's

all, I am not a monster you know”

Me “she is fine” I say hoping he would stand up and leave

Him “great, so is she seeing someone like a boy friend” I laugh

Me “how is that any of your business”

Him “I am just curious”

Me “you are a married man, you should only be curious about your wife, not my friend”

Him “I know that I am married, so please answer my question”

Me “let me warn, if you were thinking of trying something with her forget it, she has someone”

Him “mmmhh okay, and is the goat someone I know” I chuckle

Me “yeah he is and trust me leave Siza alone”

Him “why” he says laughing

Me “because the person she is with will cut your balls off and make you eat them” he smiles

Him “boooo that is scary” he says and I spot Tebogo, I wave and he comes towards me

Me “if you don’t mind please excuse me, my friend is here, I am sure you have other important matters to attend to” he smiles and gets up and leaves my table

Dali

I get to the busy city and I must say this is not what I had expected, the chaos here is scary, and I wish I could just go back to the village. I ask the taxi driver who drove the taxi here from the village to show me how to get to my son's address. He tells me that I will have to take an Uber because taxis that side are hard to come by. What in the Lords name is Uber, I explain that I don't even know what it is, he pitied me and drove me there and dropped me off, the house is so beautiful and big, nothing I have seen in my entire life. I stand by the gate for about 5 minutes screaming Vusi name, he doesn't appear, the people passing with their cars are looking at me like I am crazy. I stand out there for about an hour and a half until a car appears and parks outside the house, it is a young man, but not Vusi, I frown. He opens his window and looks at me from head to toe and then speaks

Him "hello can I help you"

Me "yebo ndodana, I am looking for my son this is his address"

Him "are you sure you have the right address ma?" I hand him the piece of paper

Me "that is what he wrote for me"

Him "hai mama, this is my house and I have been living here for a while now" oh nkosiyami

Me "hao kodwa Vusi, why would he give me a wrong address"

Him "did you say Vusi?"

Me "yes that is my son, he is a lawyer" he smiles

Him "oh now I understand, I know him, yes he used to stay here but they moved and I bought this house" I hold my head

Me "do you know where he is now, I came all the way from the village to see him I need to see him"

Him "are you sure you are his mother"

Me "100% I am his mother I birthed him and he suckled on these breasts"

Me "okay mama, I will take you to his new house, please get in the car" I get in and he drives to more

big and beautiful houses, hai my son has done really well for himself, he parks outside a big white house,

I can't believe my eyes right now, I have been suffering while he leaves like a King.

Him "this is where he lives mama, I can't come in I need to rush somewhere" I get out of his car and

thank him from the bottom of my heart. I explain myself to the security at the gate and he allows me in

and walks me to the door. He presses a button and Mercy my daughter in law opens.

Security "sorry to disturb Ms Motaung, the lady here claims to be sir's mother" she appeared and she

saw me

Her "oh yes that you. mama it is nice to see you please come in" she hugs me and I walk in

Me "It is nice to see you too my baby"

Her "how did you get here"

Me "I took taxis, and that nice boy from the old house dropped me off" she smiles

Her "oh thank God"

Me "where is my son bandla" she takes my hand and leads me

deeper in the house, this house is

beautiful inside out

Her "babe look whose here" she say's opening the door and we walk in, my son stands up soon as he

sees me

Him "what the hell are you doing here Dali, I told you I never wanted o see you again" I start crying

Her "baby please she is still your mother"

Him "don't tell me that shit. Dali I don't want you here. Mercy I am going to leave and when I get back

make sure that this old witch is gone, do we understand each other?"

Her "baby please, talk to her" he takes his car keys and walks out. I just sit down and cry

Me "he hates me makoti, he even called me a witch, my son hates me"

Her "he will come around mama, he is still hurting" she comforts me.

Let's do best with the reactions, comments and shares

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 37 (not edited)

Vusi

I can't believe that woman had the nerve to set foot in my house, my mother is evil and I hate her with every fiber of my being, she has hurt me in the worst way possible. Seeing her opened up old wounds, I couldn't stay a minute with her in the same house. I just had to get out of there before I man handled her or said something's I couldn't take back at a later stage. I went to get drunk and the alcohol didn't do its job so I decided to finally give that nurse a call, and to my surprise she has been waiting for me to call. She invited me over to her flat, so I bought some drinks and food and drove there, she isn't a shy girl and she knows what she wants. I explained that I am engaged and that she should respect, I don't want drama, I have a crazy woman in my life. She agreed to be my side thing, and damn she is going to

be a nice destruction, I spend the night at her place and this woman showed me a good time the whole time, she is a freak in the sheets. Mercy has been slacking man these days. A man needs to have two women, the stressor and the remover of that stress. And I think I have balanced the equation. My fiancé has been blowing up my phone the whole night I had to flight mode. I am still in her bed and she walks in holding a tray of food, okay breakfast in bed, okay I can work with this.

Me "good morning sexy" I say sitting up straight, shit she is in a fresh lingerie, red in color and must admit it looks fucking good on him.

Her "both your breakfasts are ready daddy" I bite my lower lip

Me "I must admit they both look appetizing" she gives me a look, a sexy look

Her "I know right. But we need you to feed your stomach first so you can get you energy levels up for

the other breakfast" I smile

Me "I like the way you think beautiful" she gives me my plate



and I start eating she is sitting with her

legs crossed, she has long beautiful legs, reminds me of all the delicious things she did to me last night

Her "so Vee" I swallow

Me "yes nana"

Her "what made you give me a call last night"

Me "let's just say, it was about time"

Her "oh I see, so how will this thing between us work"

Me "okay look, we are together but we can't be seen in public together babe, I will still take you out but

far from here, maybe in other provinces and mini vacations to African destinations" she smiles

Her "that's sounds good"

Me "I never asked" she narrowed her eyes

Her "shoot" I put the fork down

Me "are you seeing anyone?"

Her "no I am not Vee, only you"

Me "I am glad to hear that, and keep it that way. I don't share, I will take care of you that is a promise,

you won't even feel like I am with Mercy, I will give you enough time okay" she smiles

Her "I hope so babe"

Me "trust me, but I need to go back to my house and take care of a few things, write me your account

number so I send you money to go spoil yourself, I will come back later on to see you"

Her "okay but you only leaving after eating your other breakfast right?" I smile and place the plate on

the pedestal and pull her by her legs, she giggles and I got on top of her"

Me "I will have it right now thank you"

Mercy

I knew my mother in laws presence will anger Vusi but I didn't think he would take it too far and not

come back home, he is not even answering his phone, did Dali have to come here when we were just

trying to get things back on track, this will be a setback in my relationship. I was frustrated but I

understand he wants to ask for forgiveness I mean we all played a part in his daughter death, he forgave me why wouldn't he forgive her too, I mean we all need to move on from this. I have a lot to deal with the issue with my dad and that thing and the drama that is about to erupt in my house is definitely going to add to my troubles. It is 11am already and he is still not back, I am pacing up and down in the kitchen, trying to call him but it is taking me straight to voicemail, this is so frustrated.

Me "oh damn Vusi, just switch your damn phone on" I say to myself and just as I hear a response I jump

Ma "he did not come back last night?"

Me "no mama he didn't, he phone is even off"

Ma "this is all because of me, I am sorry makoti"

Me "no ma, please don't blame yourself, he will come back"

Ma "I hope so, how have you two been?"

Me "we are trying mama, but we have our own fair of issues"

Ma "every marriage does my daughter"

Me "I now understand that, it is not always rosy"

Ma "exactly, but normally children fixes things, you should try so that he gets over Siphephelo" I was

about to answer when we heard his laugh from behind us

Him "you would love that wouldn't you Dali, for me to forget my daughter, the one you hated so much?"

Ma "I didn't mean it like that ndodana yami" he chuckles

Him "of course you did, you are evil I regret ever calling you my beloved mother" his mother started

crying, I didn't say anything coz I didn't want him to come for me.

Him "Mercy" I blink

Me "my love" he stared at me for a few minutes

Him "who is the man in this house"

Me "you are baby" I say with a voice so low

Him "so why is it that you don't listen to me?"

Me "I am sorry love but what did do?"

Him "when I left here I told you to get rid of this woman didn't I?"

Ma "you did, but please don't blame, can we at least talk first then I will go" he laughs and exits the room, I follow behind him

Me "baby I am sorry, but just hear her out please"

Him "don't tell me that shit" Is this fucker for real right now, why is he angry with me

Me "okay that is enough, I didn't invite your mother her, so I don't know why you are mad at me, I don't

have the energy to be your fucking punching bag, I have my own shit to deal with but you don't see be

taking it out on you, my father is in a freaking relationship with your ex Sizakele, and you are here acting

like a mad man" his eyes popped out

Him "what did you just say? Sizakele and Razor?" I roll my eyes

Me "oh now that caught your attention mxm" I walk out and he follows behind me this time

Him "Mercy come back here and explain what you just said" I took my hand bag and car keys, I don't

have time for this I need to confront my father about this, I am not supporting this taboo, never.

## Razor

I think it should be a universal law that weekends are meant to be spend with your significant other,

because no man nothing beats this, nothing has ever made me feel so fulfilled like loving this woman. I

have had the most amazing week and to think that she said she wants to leave later today is breaking

my heart, I need another week and I promise I will take her back to the apartment, she explained that

she doesn't want to vat and set and I totally understand that, I will make an honest woman out of her

someday. After all she has school and I work late at times, but is has been a bliss having her here, from

taking showers and baths together, to cooking together, cuddling, watching TV (something I never do,

except of it's the current affairs). I am at my happiest with her and she with me. we are in the kitchen,

she just finished cooking Sunday lunch, and it smells divine, I scored myself the perfect 10.

Her "baby, do you want to eat now?" I smile

Me "not yet my love, maybe in an hour or two"

Her "okay no problem then"

Me "should I pour you a glass of wine?" she laughs

Her "yes please, that nice one I had on Friday"

Me "okay you are a fan of merlot, noted"

Her "I guess so"

Me "then I will have to start collecting again and make sure our wine cellar has enough merlot"

Her "even that dry white one" I laugh

Me "chardonnay, you seem interested in wines love, I will have to take you to a wine tasting trip in Cape

Town then, I will get my assistant to find me the best vineyards that side so we can go" she smiles

Her "I would love that"

Me "and baby I am going to need your school calendar so I can plan things for us around that" she

blushes and I smile, she is so beautiful

Her "you are amazing do you know that" I stand up and go to her side and hug her from behind.

Me "I am glad to hear that, I love you okay" she giggles, my favorite sound in the world

Her "I know love, I know that" I smile and kiss her neck and she turns and her hands go snake my head

and we share a kiss. We are in our moment when we hear someone speak. I don't let go of her but we

stop kissing, we are in a relationship and we are not hiding anymore,

Mercy "this is the most disgusting sight I have ever set my eyes on, Daddy what the fuck is this?"

Me "watch your mouth girly" she chuckles

Mercy "what you are doing is wrong Dad, she is nothing but a gold digging hoe, why can't you see this"

Me "you don't get to come to my house and start making noise, and you definitely don't get to walk

here in her space and start insulting her do you understand me?" she laughs

Mercy "oh this is her space now, it is no longer our home"

Me "it will always be your home so long as you respect me and Sizakele. If you feel that will be difficult

don't come here, after all I bought you a house worth of millions,



go be crazy there”

Mercy “you are unbelievable Razor, she is young enough to be your daughter yet you are sleeping with

her” I felt myself boil, I will slap the living shit out of this little brat right now, my body tensed up, I

wanted to let go of Sizakele, but she could sense my anger, so she just held on tight to me so keep

restrained from going to Mercy.

Me “if you don’t want to talk to me like an adult, the same door you used coming in here, use it again to

leave my house, do you understand?” she smirked and giving me attitude, I couldn’t stand here and be

disrespected by this child. I managed to loosen my woman hold and made my way to my daughter, I

stood in front of her, all Razor mode, I scare the devil himself when I am like this

Me “I fully understand that I wouldn’t be easy to accept my relationship with Siza, I totally understand

your frustrations and hurt and I am sorry, but I will never be sorry for loving her and being with her as

my woman, she makes me happy, I am happy. What I will not

accept is you coming here and insulting

her, you were suppose to take your anger out on me not her, let me tell you, I have done my fatherly

duties well over the years and I am still doing it even now, but let me tell you, if you think I will chose

you over her then my baby you are very much wrong. I love you and your sister, you mean everything to

me but so does she, I love the 3 of you. And the kind of love I have for Sizakele is not the same as the

love I have for you as your father, you must never compare the two. You will never have to compete for

it coz you have yours and she has hers. Don't ever repeat this stunt you just pulled do you understand"

she keeps quiet

Me "I SAID DO YOU UNDERSTAND MERCY MOTAUNG" she jumps a bit and blinks a couple of times and

then swallow

Mercy "yes daddy, I hear you" she says in a low voice,

Me "good then, now you will leave and go back to your house and spend time with that boy of yours

and leave me and mine to have a peaceful Sunday, I will call you

tomorrow to meet for lunch and only

then, you will tell me your grievances and I will give you answers.  
Is that fair?

Mercy "crystal clear daddy"

Me "good then, I will see you tomorrow" I kiss her forehead and  
she walks away, I look back at my

woman and she is biting her nail

Me "sorry about that my love" she smiles

Her "its okay my love"

Me "can we forget about what just happened a second ago and  
go back to our chilled afternoon?"

Her "I would love that baby"

Me "now where were we before we were rudely interrupted" she  
giggles as I hold her again

Her "you were supposed to go pour me a glass of wine" I smile  
and kiss her

Me "okay then, one glass of merlot coming up" I go get a cold  
bottle and glass, then I took my cognac

Her "want us to go sit by the pool?"

Me "whatever the queen wants" we make our way there and sit

and I just had to ask

Me "baby can I ask for a favor?" I make her famous puppy eyes, she burst out laughing

Her "what do you want Molemo" I smile

Me "please spend one more week with me, just one love please"

Her "you don't have to ask twice" you should see my smile right now.

Vusi

I couldn't stop hearing what Mercy said about her father and Siza, I am going crazy here, I can't stomach

this, so I decide that the only way is to confront Siza, I am knocking outside her apartment and Olivia opens

Her "oh hey, come in, what brings you over" I was beside myself and she could see me coz she narrows

he eyes and I walk in hoping to find her in.

Me "uhm Liv, is here?" he smiles

Her "oh no she is not"

Me "eish do you know where she is?"

Her "I think she is with her man"

Me "oh she is dating now?"

Her "oh come on Vusi, you know that is the reason you are here, Mercy told you and you came here to

get confirmation, let me put you out of your misery, yes Razor and Siza are in a relationship and they

have been for a while now" I felt like someone stabbed me in the heart with a knife and they are

twisting it" she sounds so casual about this, how could Siza do this to me

Me "and you are okay with all this?" she smiles

Her "they love each other who am I to stand in their way" I couldn't believe my ears

Me "uhm thanks Liv" she giggles and I left with my bleeding heart

Please react, leave a comment and share

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 38 (not edited)

Siza's

I had the most amazing weekend with Mo, and I am not happy to be going back to school, I just want to

stay in bed and snuggle close to my boo and listen to him tell me how much he loves me every chance

he gets, but ke I need that degree. I just finished getting ready, and I have already prepared Molemo's

things for work too, my man and time are not the best of friends, we are already late, and that time I

have to meet up with my group to continue with the group assignment. I don't want the entitled

Siyanda on my case for being late. I move to the kitchen and prepare Mo breakfast but pack it in a

Tupperware, he will eat at the office, coz if I let him seat and eat I will regret it. He comes down fixing his tie and I roll my eyes

Me "you and time shame babe" he laughs

Him "I am sorry babe, I won't even ask for breakfast I will grab something after I drop you off at

campus”

Me “there will be no need for that, already packed your breakfast and lunch” he smiles

Him “oh boy what could I be without you my love”

Me “a man who isn’t sure of whether he is coming and going” he bursts out laughing

Him “it is too early for your humor love, come here” I go to him and we kiss

Me “okay stop before we find ourselves back in bed” he blushes and goes to grab his bag with some

files, I take mine with textbooks and stuff then his food then we walk out to the car, he drive me and we

are in comfortable silence listening to the radio. We get to campus and I spot my group members

already waiting for me

Me “oh they are already waiting for me”

Him “send my apologies baby. And what time should I come get you”

Me “uhm I am going to go to the computer lab and type my assignment part, I will call you when I am

almost done okay” he smiles and kisses me.

Him "okay my love, see you later and have a great day" I smile and get out of the car and he drives off

and I walk to them, Siyanda is already wearing her pissed off face and I mentally roll my eyes

Zee "you are late Sizakele, when we say 9 am let it be 9am, we also have a life you know"

Percy "oh come on Siyanda she is only 10 minutes late, I pretty sure she didn't do it on purpose"

Me "I am sorry Zee"

Mosa "it's okay Siza, let's just go and start with the work"

Percy "so Siza who just dropped you off?" I blush

Me "that is my boyfriend"

Percy "tell him I love his car"

Me "you and half of Jozi dear but I will tell him" he laughs

Zee "are you really going to make a fuss over Bentley"

Percy "it is a nice whip"

Zee "yeah whatever" yoh okay, I just keep quiet and we find a spot and start discussing the assignment

and what is expected from us, once we fully understand we share the work evenly so that everyone



could go and start preparing.

Mosa "okay then team, we will meet again in 3 days to see the progress, if anything changes we will

discuss in the whatsApp group" we all agree

Zee "okay then" she takes her staff and leaves

Percy "she can be a total b\*t\*h at times jeses" we laugh

Mosa "tell me about" we pack our things and walk to class together, with Percy joking around

Mercy

I am having lunch with my father at his office, and I don't want to lie, I am scared, the way he put me in

my place yesterday got to me, he has never been like that before, I have never seen him in that mode,

but I still need to convince him that what is happening between him and that girl is wrong and I will

never accept it, if he really loves me he will do it for me, what will people say, the press will have a field

day dragging his name in the mud, I don't even want to speak of

what they will do to me on twitter and  
instagram, oh Razor hasn't though all of this through. He has to  
take a moment and think of how all this  
will change our lives, I mean, how am I suppose to accept her I  
mean she has slept with my man and my  
father and that alone should have been a stop sign not entry for  
my dad. I can't even see what is driving  
all these man crazy when they see that dark skinned fat girl nxa,  
I am the office parked outside and at  
exactly 1pm I walk out with the takeaway I got for us and made  
my way inside, I get to his PA's desk and  
she has the biggest smile plastered on her face I roll my eyes.

Her "good afternoon Miss Motaung"

Me "hello, is my daddy ready for me?"

Her "yes he is, you can go through" I get in the office and he has  
his feet on the table and his smiling

and giggling like a school boy, he is speaking on his phone , I  
just sit down opposite him and wait for him

to finish

Him "okay my love, I am going to have lunch now, I want to also take a break and go eat some, you

didn't have breakfast" he smiles "please my, don't forget to tell me the time I should come pick you up"

he blushed "I love you too baby, okay later" he hang up and place his phone on the desk and looks at

me then sigh

Me "hi dad"

Him "Mercy, how are you?"

Me "I am well thank you, I brought lunch with"

Him "oh sorry, Siza packed lunch for me, I will eat it"

Me "oh I see"

Him "okay then, I know this is not a social visit, you are here to voice out your grievances and complain,

so here I am let it all out"

Me "may I speak freely?"

Him "you may Mercy, but I am not giving you the go ahead to disrespect me" I nod

Me "daddy, Sizakele was my fiancé's daughter's mother, she is young enough to be your daughter, again

daddy me and her have a history, she might be in a relationship just to get back at me for all I did to her,

I honestly don't want you to continue with this relationship, and if you love me the way you claim you

will stop all this you are doing with her immediately" he looks at me and laughs

Him "all your reason don't mean anything to me Mercy, they don't have any ground to make me want

to leave the love of my life, I love you, you and your sister are my children, I have done everything to

make sure you are both happy and comfortable. I will not force you to accept her and our relationship

but I am not ending it, you will have to learn to live with it" I couldn't believe my ears

Me "then I guess you don't care about my feelings and what hurts me" I try play on his emotions

Him "so what do you think is a better way forward?"

Me "since you won't dump her, I guess me and you are relationship ends here" his face changed, yes I

have him, he wasn't expecting this at all. He sighs and rubs his hand on his forehead

Him "if that's what you want Mercy I won't stop you" my heart started beating faster my eyes pop out

Me "daddy are you hearing yourself" he nods

Him "that is what you want baby and I have always ensured that you get what you want, so why will I

stop now" I couldn't believe my ears, he just accepted to part ways with me coz of her, I just let my

tears fall, looking at him but he seemed unbothered by what he just said or the crying me.

Vusi

The thought of Siza and Razor together, touching, having sex and all that is sickening, It makes me so

mad, I just want to take Sizakele far away from jozi, I don't approve of this damn relationship. I need to

talk to her, she need to know the kind of man my father in law is, he is a ruthless son of a b\*t\*h, he will

hurt her so bad, he will control her. She will never live a normal life while tied to that man. Oh this is all

so messed up, I just need to convince her to stay away from this

man, yes he has all the money in the world but it is not worth her life, I need to meet up with her and talk, I need to see her. I had a meeting with around Braam so I decided to have lunch at some restaurant before heading back to the office, like the universe has heard my plea, Sizakele walks in looking so beautiful God, I swear dresses were made for her, they suit her more than trousers damn, she walks to the table outside and a waitress attends to her, she smiles warmly and speaks, she has always been welcoming and kind. The waitress walks away and she takes out her phone and plays with it, she smiles and a part of me flinches, maybe it is a text from Razor making her blush like that, I couldn't sit there anymore, I took my food and moved to her table, I place them down on her table and she moves her eyes from the phone to me and she frowns, she attempts to stand up and leave

Me "please don't, I just need 5 minutes of your time"

Her "what is it that you want you say" she says sounding so

bored

Me "can we seat and talk please" she gets back to her seat

Her "I have nothing to say to you, so I will just listen"

Me "thank you" I seat down too and sigh deeply

Her "I don't have all day Vusi, I came here to eat and go back to campus"

Me "firstly I want to apologize for all I have ever put you through, I am really sorry Siza, I hope one day

you will forgive me and we can be cool again"

Her "is that all" I close my eyes

Me "actually no, is it true that you are in a relationship with my father in law"

Her "not that it is any of your business but yes I am in a relationship with Molemo" she answers with so

much confidence and hearing her confirm it broke my heart even further

Me "Siza do you know what kind of man Razor is" she laughs

Her "yes I do, but I am pretty sure you are going to tell me another vision of him"

Me "Sizakele I care about you, I just don't want to see you

getting hurt, he is a dangerous man Siza”

Her “okay I don’t have to listen to this nonsense”

Me “if you don’t believe ask him what else he does besides owning a law firm”

Her “okay listen here, don’t you ever and I mean ever again think you can come up to me and talk about

my man, my relationship has nothing to do with you, so please remove yourself from the equation,

don’t give yourself unnecessary headache about anything that has to do with me, you are nothing to me

but someone I used to know, stay in your lane and I will gladly stay in mine, do you hear me?” I was so

embarrassed but I won’t give up

Me “I love you Siza and I care. I don’t want you to get hurt or in messy situations” she laughs

Her “what a joke” she stands up and takes her bag and moves to another table leaving me there staring

at her, with nothing but regret eating through me like a sickness. Why was I so stupid, I should have

cleaned her up myself, brought her to the city, we could have been married now, leaving in our own



house with our princess and I and I think we could have had another child or at least trying for one. Oh I really messed up and I have no one else to blame but myself.

Olivia

I was walking in the mall looking like a zombie, I just came here to try and relax, school has been hectic and on the other side I haven't seen Siza, I am scared to go see her at my father's in case she is still mad at me, I miss her so much, life without her hasn't been the same, I just want us to go back to where we used to be, I regret all that I said that day, I was too hush and I hurt her, I can still hear her cry from the venom I spit through my mouth, if only I could take back the hands of time. Yes I was hurt and mad but I had no right to say all that to her, I know the kind of person she is, I shouldn't have let my anger cloud that, but there is no point in crying over spilt milk, all I need to do is rectify my mistakes and show her how sorry I am. I am so lost in my thoughts that I bump into

someone

Me "oh I am sorry sir, wasn't looking at where I am going" he laughs and I look at his face and laugh too

Dad " so this is how polite you are to strangers huh" I laugh

Me "I was the one at fault that's why" he smiles

Dad "you look like you are carrying all the worlds troubles" I give him a weak smile

Me "I feel like I am daddy"

Dad "come let's go have a drink, I have an hour to spare" I take his hand and he leads me to a

restaurant, we sit and place an order for drinks.

Me "what are you doing at a mall" he laughs

Him "came to buy these" he gives me the plastic from istore and I peep through

Me "yours giving you problems"

Him "no baby, these are Siza's things, she straggles when she has to do her school staff" I smile

Me "how is she" he smiles

Him "she is very good nana" I get so emotional and tears form

in my eyes

Me "I miss her so much daddy" he takes my hand

Him "and she misses you too Olivia, she might not say it directly but she does" I smile

Me "I just need to fix things between us, do you think she will give me chance"

Him "she loves you so I know she will, plus you know Siza, she doesn't hold grudges and she is quick to forgive, she has probably gotten over it"

Me "I doubt papa coz there things I said to her were very painful" he sighs

Him "yes they were painful Olivia, but you are sorry, tell her that" I smile

Me "I will come to your house to talk to her"

Him "you do that"

Me "can we order please"

Him "you go ahead, I don't want to eat anything, I am leaving enough space for her food" I laugh

Me "not fair dad, I miss her food too Christ" he laughs at me

Him "I though she taught you how to cook"

Me "she did, but I will never be as good as she is" he smiles

Him "true, but don't worry, she is coming back on Sunday" I smile and nod

Me "I hope we will be okay by then" he squeezes my hand, his phone beeped and he looked at it and

smiles

Him "baby girl I am going to have to love and leave you, I need to go pick up Siza from campus"

Me "you are so happy, you are even glowing" he blushed

Him "I am very happy Liv" he takes out his wallet and hands me a couple of notes then kiss my forehead and leaves.

Please let's leave a comment, react and share with others. One love .

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 39 (not edited)

Siza

I am sited at the bench waiting for my Molemo to arrive, he said he is 5 minutes out, I don't mind I am actually enjoying the evening breeze here, I had a long day, I just want to get home, soak myself in the tub then cook, eat and sleep. I actually did a lot today, by the rate that I am going I will be done with my part for the assignment and it will be perfect, I am planning on going to consult with Prof tomorrow to check if I am on the right track, the sooner I am done with this assignment the better, coz I will be able to concentrate on other modules equally. I see his car approaching and smile instantly, he passes me and winks, he goes to do the u turn then park, I get in and close the door, he is already leaning in for his kiss, I blush and give him some sugar

Him "I have been craving that the whole day" I laugh

Me "oh my poor baby sorry" he laughed

Him "you look like hell baby"

Me "I am love, been in the computer lab most of the day" he smiles and we drive away, I actually feel

myself nap a little, I feel him shaking me gently, I open my eyes and we are home, okay that was quick.

Him "we home baby, let's get inside"

Me "that was very quick love" he smiles and we got out of the car, he retrieves a white large flat box

with a pink ribbon, but I don't ask him what is inside. We get in and I throw myself on the couch.

Him "you are really tired, tell you what, I will go prepare the bath so we can go relax, then I will order

take out, you are not cooking tonight" I smile sweetly at him

Me "thank you so much my love" he blushes

Him "this is for you" he hands me the box and I take it curiously, I untie the ribbon and inside is a

MacBook air, iPad and an iPhone Xr and a wifi router. Oh my God baby, I just look at him not knowing what to do say

Him "that's for school, so that you don't have to go to the computer lab at school, now you will be able

to work in the comfort of your home at your own time" I just let out a tear he is so considerate my

goodness, I stand and circle my hands around his head and pull him down to him then kiss him

Me "thank you so much baby, you are the best Mo"

Him "anything for you my baby" he kisses me again and then picks me up bridal style and I scream a

little then giggle, he makes his way up stairs to our room. He places me down on the bed and

disappeared to the bathroom, I hear the tap opening and the pleasant smell of the foam bath fill the

room, I feel myself relax a little. He comes back and removes all my clothes and strips his off too, he

carries me again and places me in the bath tub then he enters and we are eye to eye. He takes my foot

and starts rubbing it, oh my God that feels so good, I moan involuntary.

Me "oh baby, that feels good"

Him "I will give you a full body massage when we done here okay" I blush

Me "how can I not fall deeper in love with you when you spoil me like this"

Him "you are the queen of my castle baby, my life's mission is to make you happy" I blush. Thank God I

am dark skinned coz wow

Me "flattery will get you everywhere Mr. Motaung" he laughs

Him "I am glad to hear that sweetheart, what do you feel like eating?"

Me "we can have pizza and wings from chicken lickin and some fries from McD" h smiles

Him "okay I will call one of the boys to go get them"

Me "thank you sthandwa sam"

Mercy

I have been in this position since I got back from my father's office, I locked the door so that my fiancé's

mother doesn't come in and annoy me, I had a shitty day and I am not in the mood to hear her cry and

complain about her precious son not wanting anything to do with her, I have my own shit going on, my

own father told me that I can cut ties with him, I couldn't believe that he didn't beg me to reconsider, do

you know what he said, he said, "take a week to think about this and let me know so I can know to also



not support you since I don't have your support, after all you man is a lawyer, I pay him enough, he would e able to support you" my own father choosing a woman over me, I am fucked, coz I even fought with my own sister, oh my God how the hell will I survive without my father, I am used to getting everything I want and if I cut off my father I will suffer so much, it is not a risk I am willing to take, what choice do I have but to support that sham of a relationship. I need fix things with my sister, our last encounter was not a pleasant one, I kicked her out and insulted her, and knowing Olivia she will not reach out to me first, but I don't mind coz I am the one in the wrong here. The door handle rattled as someone tries to open

Him "Mercy opens the door" I got off the couch and made my way and open for him, he gets in and gives me a look

Him "why did you lock"

Me "I didn't want to be disturbed that's why" he chuckles

Him "oh I see. Are you sick"

Me "of your baby mama yes"

Him "you should be mad at your father for approaching her, a girl young enough to be his daughter"

Me "oh because she is the innocent one right?"

Him "exactly Mercy, Siza would never do this willingly, he must have threatened her" I laugh

Me "oh wow, just wow"

Him "mxm, why do I even bother"

Me "you bother because you still have feelings for her, well news flash honey, she is Razors woman

now, she opens her legs for him now, he pleasures himself with her now. And if you value your life you

will stay away from her coz if you don't you will face Razors rath" he sighs and sits on the edge of the

bed and bury his head in his hands

Him "how did we get here"

Me "what do you mean"

Him "we used to be so happy Mercy, what changed"

Me "I don't know" I joined him on the bed

Him "I don't like what we have become my love, I am sorry for

being a jerk, can we start again” oh o

have been waiting to hear this for the longest time now

Me “I would love that”

Him “ we will start by sending the letter to your father so I can pay your lobola and then we can just

start living our life”

Me “thank you Khumalo” I say and we share a hug and it lasts for so long

Him “we just need to set some rules”

Me “can we do that tomorrow babe, I have missed you” he laughs

Him “I have missed you too my bunny” he say’s getting on top of me. oh thank God my man is back. I

love him and these past few weeks have been hectic for us, I didn’t even realize how much I have missed

him really. I am glad we are both back to our senses.

Olivia

TGIF. Yoh this has been a week from hell. I just need to have a

calm weekend and I think I should visit my  
father and Siza for the weekend, maybe this will do the both of  
us good I mean, I can't wait for Sunday  
to talk to her, I get to our apartment and go straight to my  
room and pack my weekender, I change into  
a comfortable outfit and leave. Getting to car in the parking lot,  
I spot some guy I almost dated when I  
first got here he is damn handsome and sexy but the  
personality is a definite no no. I quickly get into my  
car and drive away before he can see me. The traffic is on  
another level, this is why I hate Fridays and  
driving. And my dad just had to live far le yena man. Getting to  
his place, I see his car in the drive way  
and I know he is at home, the security guard opens for me and I  
greet and drive in, park and take my bag  
and make my way inside. I hear giggles from the kitchen and my  
father speaks

Him "oh come babe it would be fun" Siza laughs and responds

Me "I don't see how that could be fun Mo, I mean attending a  
client with me doesn't make sense"

Him "it's actually me and a few other lawyers from other firms, he is a hot shot so he wants us to all

pitch imagine, he feels special" she laughs

Me "in that case you should be serious not planning on taking me with to the meeting"

Him "those things can get very boring but with you in there it would be much better, I mean seeing you

nje brightens my days and lifts my mood" she giggles. Oh my God they are so happy; I can't believe I

almost stood in the way of something so beautiful. I walk in the kitchen and they are kissing I clear my

throat and they stop but don't let go of each other

Him "Liv baby, what a nice surprise" I smile

Me "hey daddy, I came to visit I will be sleeping over, I hope you don't mind"

Him "I don't nana, baby is that okay with you?" he asks Siza who hasn't even looked at me once

Her "of course it is, this is her home she can come whenever she wants" she say's looking at dad

Him "okay nana, let me take your bag to your room then" he said taking and walking upstairs leaving

me and Siza alone. She goes to check the oven. I sigh and decide to speak first

Me "hey babe"

Her "hey Liv" I sigh

Me "what are you making?"

Her "sticky wings, pork chops, with fries and Greek salad" she says without looking at me

Me "please look at me please" she does but remains silent

Me "I said some nasty things to you Siza and I am really sorry my friend so sorry"

Her "I am sorry for falling in love with your father and for hiding it from you for months, I am sorry for

betraying you like that. I love him I really do"

Me "I know you guys love each other and I fully support you"

Her "thank you for that, I truly appreciate it Liv"

Me "can we please go back to where we were before all of this" she sighs

Her "I would love to pretend like it all didn't happen but it did Liv, you said some things and they hurt

me to the core, I wish I could unhear them but that is

impossible" I close my eyes

Me "I know babe and I am sorry from the bottom of my heart I really am" a tear escaped from her eye

and she quickly wiped it with her hand

Her "please excuse me I need to go refresh before dinner, I will be down soon" she walks away and I

just cry. My father comes in and hugs me, I cry in his arm

Me "she wants nothing to do with me daddy, I am really sorry I said those things to her, I miss her"

Him "just give him a little time baby, the words were hurtful but you said them in the heat of the

moment, she will come around I know she will" I sob in his arms for a while

Me "let me go freshen up before dinner, please go check on her, she was crying"

Him "you sure you will be okay?" I nod and he kisses my forehead and we both go to our rooms.

Please share, leave a comment and react. See you on Monday.  
Have a great weekend

## Siza's tribulations

### Chapter 40 (not edited)

Siza

Razor decided that he wanted us to all alone in the house since I came here, so he gave his staff leave,

and gave them heavy payments so they enjoy their time at home apparently nothing is as painful as

being at home and broke, so he made sure that they are financially stable nyana. He is a good man, very

considerate, since they are not here I have to do things myself and I definitely don't mind, not even a

bit. So last night at dinner I just ate and went straight to bed, Mo chilled with Olivia till late, he got to

bed around 1am and decided to disturb my sleep, and gave some deliciousness, he made me go crazy

screaming his name, at least Olivia's room is a bit far from his, I don't want to traumatize her. I wake up

early and he is sleeping peacefully on his side, and his chest is bare exposing that beautiful tattoo, I find



myself blushing every time I see, I still can't believe he has my face and name on his body. I get up from the bed careful not to wake him up. I go to the bathroom and wash my face and brush my teeth, since I started having sex with Mo I sleep naked, for easy access. So I wear my legging and his over sized t-shirt and make my way downstairs, I hear the noise coming from the cinema so I make my way to there and they forgot to switch off and there is a bottle of whisky and two glasses. Those two had a party in here last night mos. I take the things and head out to the kitchen after switches off the screen. I make myself a cup of coffee and brewed some on the coffee machine, I am pretty sure they will need a strong cup for the hangover they will be having. I go to the utility room and throw some clothes in the washing machine then make my way back to kitchen and started with a greasy breakfast, your complete farm house breakfast, it is now around 9pm and neither of them is down yet, I use the chance to hang the laundry outside and I am done in no time. I start cleaning

around and I have Thandiswa Mazwai playing

in the background, she is giving me the energy to clean this big ass house, I am not cleaning every room

just the ones we frequently use. Once I am done I decide to eat coz no they don't seem to want to wake

up this morning. I hear voices and giggles approaching, huuu at long last.

Mo "good morning my love" I smile

Me "hey baby, finally I thought I had to come up and pour ice all over you" he laughs

Mo "sorry baby, it was a rough night" I smirk thinking of the things he did to me in bed

Liv "hey babe, let me start helping with breakfast" I smile, I mean genuinely smile

Me "morning Liv, don't stress it's done"

Liv "forever the superwoman, thank you"

Mo "and here I was hoping to take you out for brunch" I smile

Me "we can go out for dinner then"

Liv "that sounds perfect"

Me "okay sit down you two let me dish up for you" the seat and I dish up and pour them coffee

Mo "just exactly what I needed, thank you Mrs. Motaung"

Me "you are welcome baby" Liv smiles at us

Liv "you two will remind us that we a single tjo you not being fair" I laugh and He gives her a look

Mo "I don't want you near boys Olivia, books before boys because boys bring babies" she laugh

Liv "oh wow daddy, Siza I hope you are listening "

Mo "oh no you don't Olivia, our case is different, Siza is my soul mate, we are in love, these boys will break your heart" I laugh

Liv "I hear you, and from the bottom of my heart I see how happy you guys are and It gives me peace to

know that the people I care about deeply are okay and happy, I am sorry Siza for all I said please I miss

you and I want my friend back please baby" I go to her side and give her the warmest hug and we both

cry, I have been missing her so bad, I am happy we are okay now.

Vusi

Things between Mercy and I are much better now, we spoke and decided to give ourselves another try, it is clear that Sizakele will never be mine again, but it still buffers me as to how she and Razor got together, it hurts you know but then again I need to keep my distance from her now, coz if he finds out that I am troubling his woman, he will make my life a living hell, I am not ready to his enemy at all. I had to switch off my phone coz Uriel (the nurse) was blowing my phone, I couldn't risk Mercy getting suspicious and have us fighting again, I mean we just ironed out our differences and honestly I don't want drama, I am sure she is mad at me, phela I smashed and disappeared after promising to see her later, I need to go see her before she decides she doesn't want my ass anymore. Mercy and I had a good morning; I have been trying really hard to avoid my mother. I just want her gone. Speak of the devil, she appears from the lounge and come sit next to me. I

sigh and stand up from my sit.

Her "Vusi my son please"

Me "please what Dali" she starts crying and I roll my eyes

Her "I am sorry please find it in your heart to forgive me"

Me "will your sorry bring back Siphephelo, will it remove the pain from Siza's heart"

Her "it was a mistake Vusi I swear"

Me "no it wasn't and you know it. You hated my child and you led her to her death ma"

Her "I will forever regret my actions towards Phephe, I am sorry please" I was about to say something

but decided not to. I just walk and drive to the mall and get some flowers and chocolates from

Woolworths, then went to the jewelry store to buy her a Michael Kors watch then I drive to her condo, I

get in and take the things I bought and walked to her door, I knock and she comes to open after a while

and was laughing with a glass of wine in her hand, she looked fucken sexy, she frowns as she sees its me

on her door step, she wants to shut the door in my face but I block it with my shoe and she sighed

Her "what do you want Vusi"

Me "baby please don't be like that" she takes a sip from her glass

Her "just coz I agreed to your side thing doesn't mean I am going to let you walk all over me"

Me "I know and I am very sorry, just that Mercy was furious that I didn't sleep at home, I had to put of

the fire first beautiful, I really am sorry, these are for you" I hand her the gifts and she smiles

Her "next time it won't be this easy to get me to forgive you" I smile and she allows me in.

Me "there wont be a next time babe, I will act right for you" she blushes

Her "you better, you said you want two woman, handle your business Vee" we walk in and I stop

walking, she has company, two other girls and a guy, I swear he is so gay coz the way he is undressing

me with his eyes yoh

Her "chommie stop lurking at my mans like that" they laugh

Guy "haiiii he is too hot leyana"

Her "urg stop it man you making him uncomfortable. Baby these are my friends, Palesa, Sharon and

mash. Squad this is Vee" I greet them and try by all means not to entertain Palesa, she is Mandla's ex

Me "nice to meet you, baby let me leave you then I didn't know you had company, I don't want to

impose" she smiles

Her "nonsense, they will survive an hour or two without me, there is enough alcohol, I need to take care

of you first" I smile, dammit this girl is something else

Me "if you say so baby"

Her "definitely, coz this wine went straight to some part and it is itching and only you can scratch it

dzaddy" she is flipping bold fuck I have a boner klaar.

Me "well in that case lets go fix that" I whisper and she takes the closed bottle of wine from the ice

bucket and we make our way to the bedroom.

Mercy

I just had to go see my dad and tell him what I have decided on, this whole thing is a mess and I am glad that my fiancé and I fixed things, I couldn't be in bad terms with everyone, I wouldn't be able to cope. I took a quick shower and opted for a maxi dress and flops, messy bun and sunglasses; I grabbed my keys and walked out. I met Vusi's mother in the lounge, she is eating a plate full of food that could feed about 3 people Christ, she is even seating with a 2 liter of juice. I can't shame that sight almost made me faint, how the hell will al that fit in her stomach? It can never be me I refuse. Her chewing is on steroids, it is disgusting. I just fake a smile and greet her

Her "where are you heading to looking this beautiful Koti wam"  
I smile

Me "I am just going to see my father"

Her "I would love to meet him, he will be in law after all"

Me "you will soon mama" she smiles



Her "okay, I can't wait"

Me "let me get going, I don't want to miss him, when its weekend like this he tends to disappear" she

says okay and I walk out drive to dad's place, his car in not on sight but I see Olivia wagon, I might as

well kill two birds with one stone. I walk in and I am surprised there is only one security at the gate, this

is unlike Razor. I walk in the house and its quiet; I soon hear voices from the outside, I peep through the

window and they are sitting in the garden, laughing, that girl is sitting on my father's lap, Olivia say's

something that makes dad laugh and he steals a kiss, and she blushed. I feel myself infuriate. Look at

them this is disgusting, but I don't have a say knowing my dad and seeing the way he is behaving like a

love struck puppy he will cut me off for sure. This girl had him wrapped around her finger. I take a deep

breath and walk to the garden making sure that I look as innocent as possible. They stop laughing as

soon as they see me, she tries to get up from his lap but he holds on to her tighter. I break the silence

Me "dumelang" the respond

Me "daddy can I please have a word with you"

Him "okay take a seat, I am all ears" I clear my throat and grab a chair and seat down near Olivia, facing

them" I sigh and play with my fingers

Me "first of all I would like to apologize to you, daddy for giving you that ultimatum and for

disrespecting you like that, I am really sorry. I will ask you to choose between me and her anymore"

Him "you can refer to her as Sizakele"

Me 'sorry dad, I give you and Siza my support, she makes you happy and that is all that matters really" I

lie coz deep own in my heart I would never accept this bullshit

Him "oh well I appreciate that. I love Sizakele and I am happy with her, I want you to be okay with us

genuinely" I fake a smile

Me "I do daddy I really do, Siza thank you for making my daddy so happy"

Her "I love your father Mercy and he makes me happy. I am not with him to get back at you for what

happened with my daughter and Vusi, I genuinely love Molemo”  
he looks at her and he blushes, I

mentally roll my eyes

Me “I am glad to hear that” I look at Olivia who is holding on to  
her glass

Me “sis I also want to apologize to you, our last encounter  
wasn’t pleasant, I am sorry for how I treated

you, I miss you forgive me please”

Her “yeah whatever” I know her she loves playing hard to get

Me “I will take you shopping tomorrow” she laughs and I know I  
have her back

Him “we going out for dinner, join us”

Me “I would love to but Vusi and I have something planned  
already, oh and expect a letter from his

family” he nods and I stay a little then drive back to my house, I  
was suffocating God.

Thandiwe

He has been acting like the best husband in the world, I know

Sizwe he is just doing this to make me forget his infidelities, and if he thinks I am just going to forgive him just like that he is very much mistaken, this time I am not forgiving him for shit, he put my love in danger, hell he almost cost me my baby. Deep down I know that he will go back to that whore or find another one, I want to see this girl that makes my husband to stray like this, I know for a fact that she works at that bloody club that is where he spends most of his time. He left early in the morning and said he had to take care of something there. I decide to dress up and I must admit I look like a yummy mommy. I look the part of the business mogul's wife. I take my car keys and drive to Braamfontein, at least my son is with my mother in law, that one is a snake but I know she loves her grandson and would do anything for him. I park and walk in, it is still early so the place is not packed, but there are a few students already drinking their life away, but they look so happy God, I wish I experienced this. right after matric I got married.

The waitresses are idling in the corner and laughing their outfits are so skimpy, I spot a few dirty tables and make my way to those prostitute looking woman.

Me "can't you see those tables need to be attended to, what will customers say when they find this

place so dirty" I shout at them and they look at me from head to toe. One of them with an attitude

speaks and I conclude that she is the female alpha of the pack.

Her "and who are you to come in and tell us how to do our job"

Me "baby girl, it doesn't matter who I am, what you should worry about is making sure that this club

remains the best, I don't want to see those dirty tables when I get back" she laughs and Kat the manager

came and smiled at me, he knows me so yeah

Him "aow sister boss, it has been a minute"

Me "I know right, hence I decided to pop up and see you, I see you have lazy girls working under you. if

you ask me I would suggest you fire them all and start again with people who can do their job"

Him "oh sorry sister boss, I will get my house in order" I look at them one by one and they are shocked

and confused, wondering why he is calling me sister boss, let me put them out of their misery"

Me "I will be coming here frequently to inspect on my investments, anyway where is my husband"

The bad attitude one gasp for air and I look at her

Him "he is in his office, he is having a meeting with some hot headed suppliers" I laugh

Me "oh well in that case, can I have a plate of your ribs and wings with chips. I am eating for two, this

one in here gives me an appetite for days" he laughs

Him "what would you want to drink"

Me "passion fruit and lemonade"

Him "Vicky you heard sister boss, tell the chef it's her he must make it snappy" she gives him a look and

walks away, the others rush to clean the tables, Kat ushers me to the lounge outside. I wait for about an

hour then my food came, the one with an attitude named Vicky brought the order and she faked a smile.

Her "I am sorry for giving you attitude please, thing is people

here came and just order us around

making us feel like we are below them so some days we just put up defensive walls” I take a sip of my

drink and look at her.

Me “oh well, let it not happen again” she smiles and I know I will use her to find out who has been sleeping with husband.

Please babies, let us react, leave a comment and share with friends. Your love and support keeps me going. Thank you very much

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 41 (not edited)

Siza

My weekend has been the greatest, in fact the past 2 weeks have been a total bliss, my man is just the

most amazing lover ever, and he makes me feel like I am the only girl in the world. I love him so much

and I am glad that we are no longer hiding our love. The

thought of having to go back to the apartment with Olivia is killing me, you know when you have had the pleasure of sleeping next to your partner for some time sleeping alone becomes a problem, I am definitely not looking forward to it but at the same time I don't to cohabite with Mo, this time I am doing everything by the books. Last night at dinner I received a call from Kat, the manager of club nation, he told me that the big boss asked to see me today. The look on my man's face killed me and Liv, I explained to him and he told me that I am not going there alone, Olivia volunteered to take me and he straight up refused, said he will take me himself. So now we are driving there together, then afterwards we will have lunch and go watch a play at the theatre. You know Metro FM on a Sunday guys, it is an entire mood, and he has his hand on thigh, benefits of driving an automatic. We were in comfortable silence, the type where you keep on stealing glances at each other and blush, God but this man is handsome, those dimples and smile, he melts me and the fact



that he is mine and he loves me completes me. we get there and park then he walks to my door and

opens for me, he takes my hand and we walk in, the staff is already there working, the look on the look

on the faces is everything, I just want to burst out laughing, Kat notices us and comes to me trying to keep his cool

Kat "Siza you made it, Mr. Motaung sir" oh he knows Mo, he has this serious face, he doesn't say anything to him but just nods

Me "yes I did, is he in?"

Kat "yes he is in the office, you can go through" I smile at him, and his eyes are fixed on our hands

Me "thank you, I will say bye before I leave" he nods and walks away so I take my baby and we go to

Sizwe's office, I knock and he shouts come in, I appear first and he smiles and frowns soon as he sees

Mo. Okay that is weird, I thought they are business associates

Me "big boss, how are you"

Him "hi Siza, thank you for coming, please seat" he looks at Mo

Him "Razor what brings you here"

Mo "I brought my woman, you asked to see her" his eyes popped and he swallowed in disbelief

Him "your woman? Sizakele?" I smile

Mo "you heard me right, so what is it that you wanted to talk to her about, we have to be somewhere"

Him "oh well, Siza I know you told me that you can't work here anymore coz of school, but I honestly

need a favor, I am hosting a gentleman's weekend which is more sophisticated than the last one"

Me "okay but I don't understand what you need from me"

Him "honestly you were the only classy woman I had here, you knew how to keep it professional, I just

need your help for 1 weekend that's all till I find someone of your caliber"

Mo "my woman is in med school, she needs to focus on her books plus weekends she needs to rest"

Him "I understand that but I need her help Razor, I wouldn't ask if I wasn't desperate, I will pay her

good" Mo laughs and shakes his head

Mo "I can financially take care of Sizakele" Sizwe sighs. Okay this is nothing but a pissing contest, who

has the biggest ego and the highest testosterone level. I need to step in now

Me "uhm Sizwe let me discuss this with my partner first in the comfort of our space" he nods

Mo "don't call her she will call you"

Me "baby get up let's go now, Sizwe I will call you" he gets up and places his hand on my waist and we

leave, oh my God Molemo can be dramatic, but I let him be.

Razor

I am glad she hasn't touched on the Sizwe topic, I want us to talk about it, when we get to the restaurant

so we can keep calm and talk properly, we get to Sandton and I take her to Pigalle, we are walking there

and all eyes are on her, I must admit she is looking so simple yet so nice, she is in a denim skirt and red

Alexander McQueen sneakers and a white t shirt tucked in her skirt, her body is out to play, those thick

firm thighs gets all these guys turning heads and the confidence that gives me is on steroids, her afro is

perfect and make up on a minimal, in fact I don't think I should call it make up, she only has on red

lipstick to match her shoes and small bag. I have my hand in hers and she is holding on for dear life, my

woman is a beauty I tell you, the only brown skin girl I know who can give all these light skinned girls a

run for their money no let me rephrase she can give all these girls a run for their money. We get to the

restaurant, and some slay queens are sitting on another table in a group I think they are about 7, I spot

one I used to smash before I got with Siza, she smiles at me and I just ignore her. I pull a chair for my

woman and she seats, I go around and take my seat too,

Her "thank you my love" I smile

Me "for what now"

Her "for being Molemo Motaung, for being my man" I blush

Me "baby please we are far from home, you know I can't hold myself when you talk like that"

Her "I wouldn't mind us going back home and spending the whole day in bed" I bite my lower lip

Me "I have a boner already" she laughs

Her "let's order cold water for you" she says care free, and her beauty radiates

Me "you are perfect Sizakele" I take her hand and kiss it. We are disturbed by my ex, if I can call her

that, oh Thato jezz, I look at her and frown, and she is looking at Siza with a nasty look.

Thato "the mighty Razor blade" I look at my angel and sigh, I don't want to lose my cool in front of her

Me "yes Thato" she smiles

Thato "you have been scarce, I waited and waited for you to call me" eish this girl

Me "we are in the middle of something, do you mind" she looks at Siza again

Thato "hello, I am Thato, who are you" my queen looked at me and remained quiet, Thank God, she is

too much a queen to deal with trash I will take care of it.

Me "hey hey don't you dare, don't talk to my girlfriend, she is not your friend, so please know your lane,

she is not a playing field" I say seriously

Thato "Girlfriend huh, wow some girls are lucky some of us

couldn't even get you to take us to KFC"

Me "baby come let's go home" she shakes her head no

Her "no Mo I want to eat here" I sigh, Thato is testing me, she can see that Siza tames me and I can't be

an animal in front of her. I stand and ensure that a have the Razor face on

Me "I am not going to repeat myself to you, my woman and I are here to eat and bond, we need our

space back so if you don't mind, it is a Sunday and we are hoping for peace, don't be the devil" she

laughs and leave. I need to pay her a visit so she doesn't repeat this bullshit again, she might do this to

her when I am not with her too, my past is not about to taint this perfection I found. Siza's mood is

already south, I just hope she is not far gone already, I take her hand and she allows me and looks at me

straight in the eyes.

Her "what was that Mo" I sigh and kiss her knuckles

Me "baby I am sorry"

Her "Molemo you are not answering my question" okay she is mad

Me "okay my love, that is Thato, I had a fling with her before I met you but I promise I haven't seen her

since we got together I promise" she still has her eyes on me

Her "I hope so, what does a girl eat here" she says looking at her menu

Me "please don't be mad at me, I love you and only you, I would never hurt you like that angel" she gives me a side smile

Mandla

My life has been revolving around work only, I haven't seen Siza in a while, we only speak on the phone

and my mother is not happy with that so I send her a text earlier on and she said she already had plans

but she will come see me tomorrow. I need to get out and play with the other kids. I haven't had a beer

in days. I don't know but it feels as if I have aged so much, everything at work is hectic, it's like everyone

needs an operation these days. I am off today and tomorrow so I plan to go see the gents and have a

few beers with them, Vusi invited us to his house, he said he will

braai and we will have a chilled one,

Sunday alcohol is lekker so I am game for anything. I get to his house and the security opens for me and I

park and make my way in, I press the door bell and Mercy opens for me

Her "oh my God power after such a long time"

Me "hey sweetie, it has really been a minute hey" we hug and I walk in

Her "don't be such a stranger man" I smile

Me "never again I promise, where is your person" she blushes

Her "he just finished taking a shower, he will soon be down, you can go wait in the garden, he has

already set up drinks for you guys help yourself, Steve will be here soon" he door bell rang it she opened

and Steve walks in, they hug and she ushers us to the garden, their house is beautiful I give them that

Steve "let's fix a drink, I have missed your asses" I laugh and he continues with mixing our drinks a

second later Vusi appeared with a wide smile



Him "ei majita, how are you boys" we all fist bump and he seats down

Steve "look at you glow" we all burst out laughing

Him "let's just say I am a happy man"

Me "things good between you and the madam?"

Him "we very good, I am sending the letter to her father during the week"

Steve "what changed" he sighs

Him "let's just say we found out that her dad has a girlfriend and she was mad about that and so was I

and the midst of a heated argument we decided that it is not worth it"

Steve "eh Razor blade has a girlfriend, eh who id the lady, and why would you be angry about that, mad

that your allowance will be decreased" I laugh

Me "they probably think she will be the evil step mother" Steve and I laugh but he keeps a serious face

Steve "come on man it's just a joke hao, lighten up"

Me "yeah man come now who is this girlfriend" he rubs his forehead

Him "are you sure you want to know"

Me "say it already, curiosity is killing me here"

Him "oh well it has been months now, Sizakele and Razor are in a very serious relationship" I felt my

heart shutter, I can't believe my ears right now, why would she associate herself with Razor, he is bad

news, a crime boss, she will be caught in the cross fire.

Steve "what as in like your ex, your baby momma?" he asks laughing

Him "the one and only"

Steve "fuck chick isn't playing, from baby mama to mother in law. She is baddass" I couldn't say

anything, I had a thousand thoughts in my head, I need to see her and talk her out of this

Steve "mercy takes her man and makes him hers, and she takes her daddy and makes him hers ai fok"

he burst out laughing,

Him "stop joking man this is serious staff here" he shuts his mouth and I continue trying to make sense

of all of this, why could she be doing this, did he force her to be in a relationship with him

Me "you know what guys let's get this party started"

Steve "yeah let us leave this ex turned mother in law drama" he bursts out laughing again

Him "fuck off bruh" he says with a smirk. Why are they finding this funny.

Thandiwe

I decided not set my foot at the club today, I woke up feeling a little sick, I just hope that gonorrhoea

didn't affect my child, tomorrow I want to go see the Dr, better safe than sorry hey, i was still in bed, my

husband went to the club in the morning, he made sure to leave me with food so I don't downstairs, he

said he will be back soon, oh speak of the devil, my door opens and he walks in with flowers, I mentally

roll my eyes. He places them on my pedestal and kisses my forehead.

Him "how are you feeling now" I shrug my shoulders

Me "I am still the same"

Him "oh I am sorry baby, Let me prepare a dress for you and take you to the doctor now"

Me "it is late already and they will insist on admitting me Sizwe, plus I have already contacted my gynae,

I will go to her first thing tomorrow morning" he sighs

Him "promise me that you will never leave the house and come to the club, maybe you cught a bug

there or something" I want to laugh

Me "I highly doubt that, and oh I will be at the club frequently"

Him "why is that, you are pregnant and look at you now you sick and we don't know from what" oh yes

he just confirmed it, his mistress works at that cub and I will definitely find her

Me "I told you I need to do something, all this seating around is making me go mad, plus you are

forever at the club you will look out for me as well" he sighs

Him "MaTha but we spoke about this baby, I told you I don't want you working angisho"

Me "Sizwe please" he shakes his head and sigh

Him "I am going downstairs to prepare something for you to eat" he gets up from the bed and walks out.

Vicky

Oh so Sizwe has been keeping his wife from the world and using us and discarding us like old shoes, well

he played the wrong one this time, he will eat out of my palm or I will make his life a living hell, man like

him have a clean public record with wives who are accepted by the society, but they treat us like trash in

the background when no one is watch. If he thinks he is going to dump me he has another thing coming,

I am going to befriend his wife and threaten him to take me back and increase my allowance, this time

he is not going to turn me into a sex slave for peanuts. I am looking at my phone screen, I went to

instagram and searched for her till I found her page and luckily her account is not private. She is

beautiful and has everything, look at her house, her clothes, the cars, I want that too and Sizwe will give

them to me if he doesn't want me to spill the beans. My friend and flat mate Thato walks in.



crazy if I saw another bitch in his arms chowing the money and having the life I want.

We share, we react and leave a comment yes?

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 42 (not edited)

5 days later

Razor

I decided to pay Thato a visit after the fucken stunt she pulled I had to put her in her place, I almost lost

my children coz of my relationship with Siza and we pulled through I won't lose her because of a girl like

Thato, I have gave up so much in order to be with this woman. If I don't put out the fire now, she will

think I am weak and I am everything but weak, my only weakness is called Sizakele and right now I am

doing this to protect her. I won't harm her I am done with that life but she must know to never cross

that line again. I get to her place and park. Making my way in, I get a call from my woman, I smile and answer

Me "hey beautiful"

Her "hey my love, where are you"

Me "I am managing risk down town love, wena"

Her "I am making my way to club nation now, I just wanted to let you know"

Me "baby I thought you only working tomorrow and Sunday"  
she giggles

Her "baby we need to set up angisho sthandwa sam" her Zulu accent comes out to flex and I blush

Me "I hope Olivia s dropping you off"

Her "I requested an Uber love, she is campus" I know she rolled her eyes after saying that

Me "oh hell no Sizakele, you are not taking that thing, rather wait for me then"

Her "Mo please love I will be okay, plus you just said you managing risk"

Me "when it comes to you anything else can wait shame"



Her "I know and I love you for that but babe I am good really"

Me "okay I will pick you up then"

Her "I will wait for you, I love you okay" I bush

Me "I love you rato laka" she says bye and hangs up and I walk to Thato's flat and knock, she opens and

smiles at she sees its me

Her "couldn't stay away huh?" I push her aside and walk in, this is the first time I am coming here, I

would normally just pick her up and drop her off at the gate, she would invite me but I would refuse

each time. The place is not well kept but the girl has bathed with milk while leaving in a pig sty

Me "for a girl who is always looking on top of her game, your place is very messy" she looks down

embarrassed

Her "I am busy with school and work Razor I only have the chance to clean on weekends" I laugh

Me "right, if you say so" I make sure to not touch anything, this is why I didn't take any of the woman I

dated or fucked to my house, I am a neat freak, and I am glad Siza is a neat freak too.

Her "I am pretty sure you didn't come all this way to tell me how dirty my flat" I sigh

Me "that is correct" she bites her lower lip and I roll my eyes

Her "what you miss me?"

Me "don't flatter yourself "

Her "I am here to warn you to never repeat what you did on Sunday, you see that lady I was with, that is

the queen, she is not your mate, she is not on your level Thato, I want you to change sides when you see

her walk down the road, I want you to close your eyes when you see her, vanish if you can, don't ever

say a thing to her, don't even bother her, if I hear complain that she even smelled you I will break your

neck do you understand me" I said with a straight face and she is holding on to her dress, I don't even

wait for her to respond, I just walk out and leave the door open, since it is a Friday, I might as well go see Gadafi or Olivia and pick up Siza later.

Siza

So after a lot of convincing Molemo finally agreed for me to go and help out at club nation. I get that he

doesn't want me working and going to school and I have stopped but Sizwe was desperate and it is not

in my nature to not help out when someone needs me to and for that fact I will help, whether he was

going to pay me or not, he gave me a job when I needed it and I will help him back too. my Uber drops

me off and I get inside, I see that I am about 15 minutes late, the staff is already going up and down, the

event starts tomorrow so he will be closed tonight so we can prepare very well. These men will be

discussing businesses worth of millions so the place needs to look the part. Sizwe sees me and practically runs to me

Him "oh my God Siza, thank you very much for coming through"

Me "I am glad I could help"

Him "you don't know how relieved I was when I got your call" I smile

Me "don't sweat it man, I am happy to help"

Him "so you and Razor huh" I blush

Me "yep me and him"

Him "I didn't see that coming not in a million years" I laugh

Me "you and the rest of the world"

Him "so is it about security you know financially" I roll my eyes and laugh

Me "no it is not, I love him, I love that man"

Him "oh okay, just that the age difference you know"

Me "I am not comfortable discussing my man and our relationship, so if you don't mind"

Him "oh I am sorry please forgive me, thank you again for coming"

Me "it's okay" I was about to walk away when Vicky decided to join us and speak

Her "I heard you are back"

Me "just for the weekend don't die" she laughs

Her "oh honey please, you don't shake me at all"

Me "then my presence shouldn't worry you right" her face changed

Him "okay ladies let's play nice please"

Her "why did you go beg her to come back"

Him "I explained to everyone that she is the perfect person to the VVIP hostess"

Her "can you please elaborate Sizwe"

Him "why do you always have to be like this huh"

Her "I am just trying to understand, Is that a crime"

Him "you are impossible"

Me "Sizwe whet do you need me to do"

Him "you are doing me a favor being here, so do you think you can help me count the stock and ensure

that we have enough for the weekend"

Me "okay I can do that"

Him "good plus your outfit is comfortable enough" I am just wearing my nike black and white legging

with my white air force 1 and a white vest. Let's just say I am not afraid to use Mo's money these days.

Her "It should be illegal for a girl as fat as you to be allowed to wear leggings" I laugh

Me "I don't have your time boo, you are too bitter man, boss I will see you in the store room okay"

Him "I am right behind you, just want to go check how their

doing that side” I nod and walk away

swaying my 'Fat ass and thighs' i just want to annoy Vicky. An sms from Mo comes through and it reads

\*get out of my head Siza, I can't be thinking about you all day every day. I love you so much angel\*

BLUSH BLUSH BLUSH BLUSH.... KODWA INDODA YAMI  
GUYS I CAN'T SHAME

Mandla

I just had to cancel my appointment with Siza, I couldn't look at her, my heart was so sore, out of all the

man in Jozi, she just had to choose Razor, one the most notorious drug lord in this country. I just wanted

to numb the pain I was feeling in my heart, I honestly thought I had a chance with her, I wanted to

explore where life would take us, I mean have you seen her beauty, her humbleness, her innocence

and ambition, she would have made a great mother and wife and now that she is with Razor I might as

well forget about her and a possible future. I have been staring

at a picture I once took of her on our  
way to the village, I can't I need a body just to release on the  
anger and disappointment and hurt,  
because of this I find myself outside Palesa's parents house in  
Soweto. I called her and she told me she  
will be out in a minute. I waited for another 30 minutes and she  
appeared looking like the exact snack I  
need to feast on. She gets in the car and her perfume fills the  
car.

Her "power" she say's without looking at me

Me "hey babe" she turns and raises an eyebrow

Her "oh I am babe now" oh she wants to play hard to get I see

Me "how have you been"

Her "I am fine" she say's with an attitude

Me "that's good to hear beautiful" she laughs

Her "why are you here Power"

Me "I will be straight with you Palesa I miss you"

Her "oh really now, I am still the same girl you thrw out of your  
house and broke up with like a cheap

prostitute" I sigh

Me "I know and I am sorry, I didn't heal from what you had done to me" that makes her drop the

attitude

Her "but I begged you for forgiveness"

Me "I know baby" she sighs, and I know I have removed all the defensive walls

Her "what are you saying to me" I take her hand and kiss it

Me "another try?"

Her "start where we left of or?"

Me "I just want us to start on a clean slate babe, no grudges or anything. I want us to date and take it a

day at a time" she blushes

Her "I promise I will be the girl you once fell in love with all those years ago love"

Me "please baby, no more blessers and cheating and drinking alcohol like a fish"

Her "I am done with all of that"

Me "good then, do you think you can pack an overnight"

Her "mom was glad that you were outside, I don't think she will



mind, let me go in and pack" she gets out of the car and comes back after 15 minutes or so. we drive back to my place but drive through at chicken licken and also get her a few bottles of wine coz I have a bottle of whisky in the house. To get over Siza, I need to have someone in my life and better the devil I know.

Her "thank you baby"

Me "for what now"

Her "coming back to me" I smile at her.

Me "I should be the one thanking you for accepting me back"

Her "we both made mistake, we will grow past that trust me"

Me "I am glad you have the confidence in us"

Her "I missed you so much love" I take her hand and kiss it.

Olivia

My dad surprised me and popped up at the apartment, I wasn't expecting this at all. I was in the kitchen

trying to fix him a sandwich, he disappeared to Siza's room and I wonder what he is doing in there. He

has been in there for quite some time now, I was just making him bread with guacamole, cheese, ham

and cheese then a glass of clear apple juice. He appears with Siza's weekender bag and I frown and he laughs.

Me "you taking her again"

Him "yes Olivia she is working at the club this weekend and I am going to have to pick her up"

Me "I would have gladly done that dad" he smiles

Him "I don't want you driving at night nana"

Me "oh my God papa, you are taking my best friend each weekend now"

Him "Olivia, she is my woman, you understand that don't you"

Me "okay I am going to die really. what do you expect me to do all weekend"

Him "Olivia you can study, or watch TV. I pay for DSTV and that Netflix thing, plus you have your phone you will go to the internet"

Me "or I can visit you guys" he laughs

Him "are you planning on being a spare wheel in my relationship now" I burst out laughing

Me "I know my best friend dating my father will only take her away from me, what you are doing to me

is not right at all daddy"

Him "oh well, I have never thanked you for introducing me to the love of my life" nco man he is so in

love just look at his smile, I want a man that will love me and sacrifice just the way my dad does for Siza

Me "well you can increase my allowance"

Him "I might just" I punch the air as a sign of victory and he laughs

Me "you are the best" we hug

Him "but on a serious note baby, thank you so much, Sizakele is the best thing that has ever happened

to me except for you and your sister"

Me "I am glad to see you this happy daddy"

Him "baby which driving school did you go to"

Me "oh my God Razor you forgot, you the one who got me that

former car racer to teach me” he hits his forehead.

Him “oh yeah I will tell Gadafi to contact him. I need to get Siza a car, this uber thing is not sitting well with me” I smile

Me “daddy, you do this boyfriending thing too well shame, you excel, if it was a course in university you would graduate cum laude I tell you man” he laugh

Him “aren’t you being dramatic Olivia”

Me “I am being foreal right now. You are the best papa. You and Siza are goals”

Him “thank you nana, do you have any idea which car she likes?”

Me “she hardly talks about such thing, but I definitely know that she loves your Bentley”

Him “mmhhh well in that case I will get her a Bentley” I scream in excitement

Me “when I grow up I want a boyfriend just like you Mo” he laughs coz that’s how Siza calls him

Him “leave this silliness and give me my food before she calls me to come get her” I hand him his food and we seat on the

couch

Me "I love you daddy" he smiles

Him "I love you too princess" oh God he hasn't called me princess in a while that I just had to hug him shame.

Please react, comment and share . this is the insert I owe you from Monday

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 43 (not edited)

Siza

It is Saturday and the day of the event, yesterday I worked till 10pm, was suppose to be the till 12am but

Mo didn't want to hear any of that, so to avoid a pissing contest between him and Sizwe I decided to tell

my boss that I needed to leave and he could tell that my man was not happy so he decided to let me go

before Mo changed his mind about me helping out entirely, I wonder what's with them. Anyway i am

looking at all the dresses Mo brought from my place yesterday and I don't feel like wearing any of them,

I need to look amazing, I am not a petty person but I want to increase the heat on Vicky. I am depressed

even my afro is not behaving today my goodness I can't believe I am already having a bad day, oh what

am I going to do. My man appears from the bedroom coz I am in his walk in closet, being depressed and

all. He smiles sweetly at me and hands me a cup of coffee. This can't even brighten my mood.

Him "baby it's already 11am and you haven't decided on what to wear, you need to be at work by 6pm"

Me "please don't remind me Mo" I sigh ruffling my already messy hair

Him "what's wrong my love talk to me"

Me "Molemo I don't know what I am going to wear" he laughs

Him "oh angel, you can't be stressing over that come on"

Me "well I am, none of my clothes make me feel good about tonight, I need to look good" he exits and I

am left shocked, did he just walk out on me while I vent. He

walks back in

Him "take this and go find something" he hands me his black card and a smile creeps my face, when did

I become this girls?

Me "oh thank you, thank you baby" I say jumping to him

Him "next time just find my wallet, you know the pin. In fact I need to get you your own card"

Me "you spoil me too much Mr. Motaung"

Him "baby you are my queen, if I don't take care of you who will" I blush and kiss him.

Me "go change, you are driving me"

Him "yes ma'am" he grabs a vest and I am just in my black floaty dress and flip flops I grab my red bag, I

look like a messy rich girl. Mo's money did wonders to me. we get into his Bentley, lord knows I love this

car, it is so comfortable and spacious and it would suit me. he drives to the mall and I go from shop to

shop finding nothing, when I was about to give up, I find this cream white stripped, over the knee with a

slit in the back plain dress, God it hugs my body so perfectly, I am literally drooling over my ass. The

price tag makes me want to choke on my saliva by Mo gives me the looks, the 'you know money is not a problem' look. I need to find shoes that will make a statement, and I find the perfect pair. High heeled orange sandals. I found my outfit you guys. Pays and I ask him to take me to the hair salon, the boo did and waited for me. My gay hairstylist kept on telling me how lucky I am to have begged him, rich and loving, I asked how he knows he is loving he said "girl are you blind, can't you see how that man looks at you" I just blushed. He worked magic, he didn't relax my fro but it was so flat and shinny in a high bun, he then did some cute fake 'baby hair', I got my eyebrows shaped coz I don't draw them so they need to be on shape. Then got my orange gel nails to match my shoes. He paid again and he we made our way back to the house and he kept on stealing glances at me and blushing Him "your hair really looks amazing baby, I am glad you didn't opt for a weave" Me "you don't like weaves?"



Him "I don't have a problem with them, you can wear them from time to time, but your natural hair is

your crown, you look amazing with it" I blush

Me "how am I not suppose to fall in love with you deeper and deeper when you say such perfect things"

Him "you are perfect Sizakele, never leave me baby" my heart just melted shame

Thandiwe

I am feeling much better, the Dr said I just needed rest for a while and I did. So today I will be going to

the club to supervise the waitresses, those girls can be bitchy and fish for rich man, then slack while at

work, I don't want any of them to give my club a bad name.

Work first then they will mingle later and do

whatever they want, they firstly need to make the club money. I found the perfect dress for the evening,

it doesn't show my bump and I am grateful coz I don't want people wondering why a pregnant woman is

doing at the club. It is already 16:30 pm so I take my handbag

and leave. The drive is fast coz surprisingly there is no traffic. I get there in no time and get in, there place looks amazing I must admit. People will start arriving at 6pm and we will be briefing the staff at 17:30. I go straight to my husband's office and walk in without knocking; he is on his phone with his feet on the desk. He stands up when he sets his eyes on me.

Him "you are early"

Me "I am just excited to be helping out tonight" I say sounding so excited

Him "but I want you out of here by midnight" I roll my eyes

Me "I know Sizwe. We have already agreed on that"

Him "I am glad you remember that, did you eat"

Me "I will grab something now"

Him "please do maTha" I smile, he can be sweet when he wants

Me "so is everyone here yet?"

Him "yes everyone is, except our VVIP hostess"

Me "did you try call her to find out what is keeping her, I mean we pay her to be here, I need to have a

word with her when she gets here”

Him “no don’t do that, she is actually doing us a favor baby, don’t make her get out of here, coz VVIP

will have no one, she is perfect for that area you will see her, she has class and elegance, not bitchy”

Me “what do you mean she is doing us a favor”

Him “maTha listen, she was working here but resigned when school started, she is in med school, so she

said the pressure of school and work will be too much for her. I asked her to come help out and she

agreed, if you give her a hard time her man won’t hesitate to drag her out of here, he didn’t want her

here in the first place, so please” I was about to answer when a knock came through, Sizwe shouted

come in and the door opened, I didn’t bother to look back to see who it is.

Voice “oh sorry to interrupt, I was just telling you I have arrived” Sizwe smiles, I recognize the voice

though

Him “oh thank you once again, I was just telling my wife about you. Baby this is the goddess we were

discussing, tell me if I made a mistake practically begging her to help out” I turned and I almost fell, no

this can't be. But there horror on her face confirmed that it is her

Him “Siza meet my wife Thandiwe, and love this is Siza” we didn't move, we continued staring at each

other; I was the first to move my eyes from hers. She was looking so elegant, her outfit screamed

expensive, her afro is perfectly styled, and she has always had the perfect hair. I looked at my husband

and he had a confused look

Him “ladies is everything okay?”

Me “I know her, Siza is my sister” I looks at her again and she is still starring at me.

Him “what do you mean your sister, I never knew that you did, I only know you as the only child”

Me “uhm I, uhm baba disowned her when she fell pregnant at 16, we hadn't met at that time so that's

why you didn't know of her existence” Sizwe wanted to answer but Siza beat her to it

Her “uhm big boss I will be in the VVIP section familiarizing

myself with the setup and doing final touch

ups” he nodded and she walked out, I have never really been a fan of my sister, she is so beautiful, her

complexion and body and hair, she is just perfect too perfect.

My husband is looking at me full of

questions, I sigh and ignore his gaze, and this is the perfect time to go get food. I walk out

Siza

I can't believe my sister is my boss's wife, I never thought and I actually prayed that I don't bump into

her while I am still in this city, I guess it is not as big as I thought. Seeing her brought back all those

memories of the past, I never really understood why Thandiwe hated me, from a very young age, each

time I did something wrong, she would run to my father to report me and that man would beat me for

the smallest of things, and that would make my sister so happy, because she was the perfect daughter.

When I fall pregnant she was ecstatic, being disowned meant

that she will be the only child. I went straight to the bathroom after seeing her and cried a bit, I am glad I don't put on make-up coz I would be a mess right now. I walk out and go to the staff room for the briefing. They are already gathered in there, Thandiwe is holding Sizwe's hand. I make sure to keep my eyes away from them.

Sizwe "so for the VVIP, there 5 of you will be working under Siza, remember she will signal you to when you should go to each table"

Voices "sure boss"

Thandiwe "and who is supervising Siza" I keep my cool still not looking at her

Sizwe "no one is, she handled everything perfectly herself the last time, I increased the number of waitress and that will make work efficiently"

Thandiwe "I think she will need some help baby"

Vicky "I think so too sister boss" I just chuckle

Thandiwe "is there a problem Siza?" I look at her

Me "uhm Sizwe I don't think this will work out I am sorry" I attempt to walk out but Kat holds my hand

Kat "no Siza please without you in there, that section will be chaos, we have never had in well

maintained like you did when you worked here"

Sizwe "please Siza, I called you because you are the best please"

Me "it seems like my capabilities are being questioned, and that will be hard for me to do my job, I

would have been at home having a quiet night working on my assignments, I mean I am a med student,

but I sacrificed my time and I will not be insulted" he gives his wife and Vicky a look

Sizwe "I sincerely apologies Siza, please" I sigh and go back to where I was. He continues to tell us what

to do for the night and all that and after he is done, I am the first to walk out and my team follows me. I

tell them where to wait and how we will be working and they all agree with my system and I am glad. It

is around past 6 pm and people are already arriving, the music playing. The mood is set, but not for me,

still can't believe Thandiwe still looks down on me, she is

unbelievable. My phone rings and it's Mo, I

move to a quiet space and answer

Me "my love"

Him "I hope I am disturbing you baby" I sigh

Me "not at all babe, I am glad you called"

Him "is everything okay, you don't sound fine?"

Me "I will tell you later at home"

Him "okay, I will be there in about an hour okay, just waiting on  
Gadafi"

Me "okay love, don't forget my flats for when I am done here"

Him "already in the care baby, need anything else"

Me "no love just those shoes, I love you"

Him "I love you too, I will see you later, whatever it is don't let it  
get to you"

Me "thanks baby" he says bye and we hang up, I am already  
feeling much better, I won't let Thandiwe

and Vicky ruin my mood, especially my sister, she has already  
had a fair share of that and now I don't

leave under her Mercy, this might be their club but her husband  
begged me not the other way round



Vicky

Sizwe's bloody wife just had to show up tonight, isn't she pregnant, she must be at home looking after the other child and making sure that the house is in order, it clearly shows that she doesn't know her place well. I mean she ruined my plans, I wanted to some fun with her husband a few times tonight, after all that is what we normally do, on the other hand that black fat thing just had to show up looking that hot, as nice as the outfit is it would have worked on a petite yellow bone like myself. I wonder where she gets there money to buy all these expensive clothes from, there is nothing innocent about her, she low key but I swear she is just like the rest of us trying to make it in Jozi. I am already in my post, VIP is not as fire as VVIP phela that side we have the big fishes, the kind that buys you a house a car and a black card, I am talking trips to Paris, New York the likes, if you do your thing well honey you

can even get the ring. And Sizwe just had to give it to Siza mxm.  
My phone beeps and its Thato, she says

she is at the entrance, I go and get here and quickly usher her to  
the VIP section before they see her.

atleast when she is in there they will not ask question, my  
section is already packed so it won't be a

problem for her to find someone to buy her drinks all night.

Thato "yoh chommie thank you for the invite babe, this place is  
going to be fire I tell you"

Me "I told you mngane, we are securing the bag tonight"

Thato "eish but the sharks are that side"

Me "don't tell me about that hle"

Thato "where is that whore that Sizwe replaced you with?"

Me "I will show her to you"

Thato "do you think she is sleeping with him"

Me "that is the only logical explanation" she was about to  
answer, when Siza appeared from her section

Me "there she is in the cream white dress" she stands and takes  
a look at her

Thato "her outfit is elegant man, looks expensive. But she is still a bitch nxa"

Me "tell me about me" she frowns and looks at Siza again

Thato "oh no she isn't"

Me "what, what is wrong?"

Thato "she is the bitch that was with Razor, the one he introduced as his girlfriend, and came to

threaten me for" now that explains a lot, the expensive clothes, phone, jewelry and cosmetics

Me "what, what do these man see in that fat ugly thing"

Thato "I wonder too, I mean just look at how black she is even"

Me "she has crossed the wrong girls this time, we will show her flames"

Thato "but chommie remember what Razor said" I sigh

Me "we will make a plan" we see Razor and that scary looking man who is fucking handsome at the

same time walk in, and his smile when he sees Siza is the widest ever. He pulls her to him gently and

kisses her lips his hands on his waist. He says something to her and she giggles hiding her face on his

chest, they let go and she hugs Razors friend and then leads them to her section, I look at Thato and she

having chest pain

Thato "just look at them chommie, they were exactly this lovey dovey at the restaurant"

Me "these men think they can play us then dump us"

Thato "this is all so wrong, why can't they love us, we also deserve it"

Me "wait and see my friend, they will come back to us begging and screaming" we laugh and high five

Razor

Arriving at the club she is so excited to see me, I love how she isn't ashamed to be seen with me in

public. That gives me so much confidence, I take her I pull her to me and kiss, we keep it brief and

passionate, I don't want to mess up her lipstick, she looks amazing God, I knew how to wait man, she is

perfection, look at how sexy and elegant she looks, she let's go of me and hugs Gadafi, then she walks us

to the section, and places us in the dark area she gave us the last time. I love this spot coz people can't see us but we can see me, so I can see all these thirsty man drooling over my woman. She leaves and comes back with a bottle of Glenlivet and mixers and bottles of water.

Her "here you are baby. did you guys eat before coming over"

Me "yes baby we passed by the taxi rank, and got skop and pap" she laughs

Gadafi "real food he"

Her "okay then, let me go back to my post, enjoy and call me, when you need anything" she attempts to walk away.

Me "you gonna leave just like that now?" she comes back and pecks my lips

Her "I love you" I blush

Me "I love you angel" she blushed and walks away.

Gadafi "don't take this the wrong way brother but your woman is beautiful yeses"

Me "she is a goddess Gadafi, I am blessed"

Gadafi "I see why you are this obsessed about her, I would go crazy wouldn't even allow her here" I

laugh, if only he knew

Me "I don't want to control her, she loves helping and I won't stop here, I will only be present to protect

her from vultures like Sizwe" he nods and mixes our drinks

Thandiwe

I am looking closely at Sizakele, and I must admit her section is well coordinated, the man in there are

eating out of her palm, they are ordering the most expensive drinks and platters. Tables are all full of

alcohol. She might be working well but I don't appreciate my husband standing up for her like that and

even going as far as begging her to come help out. I spot Vicky and walk to her, she is slutty this one, but

she will answer my questions. She is attending some table and a guy is brushing her behind and she is

giggling, she sees me and whispers something to him and comes to me

Her "sister boss"

Me "don't mix business with pleasure, you can entertain him outside of here, we don't want to be

accused of pimping out our waitresses" she smiles

Her "I understand"

Me "so tell me, are you a trustworthy person"

Her "I believe I am"

Me "good, I am going to as and be honest"

Her "I promise, what's up"

Me "who is my husband sleeping with amongst the waitresses" she looks down and back at me

Her "are you sure you want to know"

Me "I am positive" she looks at the VVIP section and sigh

Her "Siza is sleeping with your husband sister boss" I nod and walk away, I will deal with that tramp

once the event is over.

Please react, comment and share. My silent reader just a

reaction at least, show me some love cummon

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 44(Not edited)

Siza

The night has been so busy, I haven't even had the chance to seat down and rest my feet, these heels

are killing me right now, but I have to soldier on, these men love attention they keep on calling me for

nothing, some even asking for my number, this one time Mo had to step in and kiss me so they could all

see that I was taken, I know right, mine is too clingy. People are already leaving and I am thankful for

them, my section is left with a group of men about 6 they are in deep discussing, I can't exit this room

before they do, I have to usher them out. They seat for about 30 minutes and they all stand up, I sigh in

relief I just want to get out of bed and drift to lala land. I escort them out and one of them thanks me for



the excellent service. I smile and attempt to walk back inside when the bouncer stopped me and informed me that 'ta Razor' said he went to get my flat shoes from the car, I smile and thank him. The place is empty now and the music has stopped playing, thank God for the silence. Only the waitresses and waiters were waiting and some girl I assume is Vicky's friend, I don't spot my sister so I assume she has retired for the night. Sizwe comes through from his office

Him "everyone please gather around" we did and he was wearing the biggest smile

Him "thank you for a staler performance, we reach the target and exceeded it, we even have to go buy more alcohol for tomorrow" we all cheer

Voice "hopefully we will get big fat bonuses" one waitress says and we all laugh, Thandiwe appears

from behind her husband and stands next to him

Him "we will see how you perform tomorrow, oh I mean later on today. I know you are all tired, so I will

hire a cleaning company, and you guys can rest and come here

at 5pm, how is that” they all cheer

Kat “sure thing boss, will you manage getting a hold of the suppliers alone?”

Him “I will try mfana if I find trouble I will contact, and thank you all especially Siza and the team you

made us a lot of money” the others clap for my team and we smile

Him “okay everyone, you can all go home, be safe. Those with no transport the taxi I hired is waiting for

you at the back entrance” I was about to walk away when my sister approached me

Her “Sizakele” I just look at her and say nothing, she stared at me for a minute and then gave me a hot

slap across the face, it stings, I just cupped my cheek and look at her with tears in my eyes, everyone

was shocked and her husband quickly came towards us

Him “Thandiwe what the hell are you doing”

Her “stay the hell away from my husband do you hear me”

Him “what the hell are you talking about, why would you slap her”

Her “you have no shame Sizwe defending your mistress” what

she thinks I am sleeping with him, I didn't  
have the strength to engage in an argument with her. I just turn  
and walk away I bump into Molemo  
who immediately panics as he sees my tears, he drops my slides  
and holds me

Mo "hey baby what's wrong? Who is making you cry" I sob

Me "Sizwe's wife slapped me, she think I am sleeping with her  
husband" he let go of me and looked at  
my face

Mo "she did what" he walks past me and makes his way to  
finding my sister, anger visible from his eyes

and posture, I try running after his begging him to let it be but  
he doesn't want to hear me, he finds her

and the rest in the spot, Sizwe notices him and tries to shield  
his wife but he wasn't quick enough, Mo

grabbed her by her dress and gave her a killer look I have never  
seen before. Sizwe tried pleading with

him but he didn't want to hear it, Thandiwe was so scared, I  
swear she could die, tears already formed

Sizwe "Razor please man, forgive her, she made a mistake. She  
is pregnant"

Mo "shut the fuck up boy, you should have kept her off mine"

Sizwe "it will never happen again"

Mo "damn right it won't" he still held Thandiwe by the dress

Me "baby please let's go home" he didn't look at me, he moved his eyes to my now crying sister

Mo "if you ever, I mean ever again try this bullshit again, if you ever lay a hand on my woman again, I

will peel off your skin, take out this child inside of you, chop it and make you eat it, do you understand

me" she nods vigorously and he let her go and fixes her

Mo "I am glad we are on the same page, wena Sizwe, you can forget about seeing Sizakele back here,

better start trying to find another hostess do you hear me"

Sizwe "come on brother please, I will make sure my wife is not here man please"

Mo "I am not you brother" he looks at me with soft eyes like he wasn't boiling a second ago

Mo "let me get you home my love, you are tired. He held my hand and saw that my feet were paining,

he left me there and went to get my slides, instead of changing my shoes, he just carried me over his

shoulder with everyone watching like we are a scene from a movie. We got to the car and he place me in my seat and strapped my seatbelt and walked to his side and got in. he started the engine and the car roared to life and he sped off, guess he is still angry.

Thandiwe

I have never been that scared in my life Jesus, I thought that man will kill me, he way he was looking at me, I didn't even for once think that he was joking when he said he would make me eat my baby, I have heard of the Razor Blade, I just didn't think I would be on his bad side, my husband couldn't even pull him off me, but who would, everyone in the club was scared to even breath, how did Siza end up with such a powerful man. I am literally still shaking; I can still hear his voice threatening me. We are in the car, my husband is driving like a man mad, obviously mad at me. I am even afraid to say anything. We get to the house and he just parks not even bothering to come

to open my door. He walks straight to the house, I make my way inside fearing for my life, I know that mood and he is not pleasant when he is like that. I get to our bedroom and he is changing, I stand and just look at him, can he at least shout at me, this silent treatment won't work please. Since I am the one in the wrong I should be apologizing, I walk to him and attempt to hold him, he roughly untangles my hands from his body and turns to give me a slap I scream.

Him "I don't want to see you at the club ever again do you understand"

Me "I am sorry baby" I cry.

Him "you fucked up, you provoked Razor, and he will forever hold this against me, like that isn't enough

you accuse me of sleeping with Siza, she is your sister I am amazed that you don't know the kind of

person she is Thandiwe. Now I have to go find a replacement, where will I get a replica of her, do you

know why those man spend the way they do, it is because of her, they have never seen such perfection,

it makes them spend more and more, now you've fucked that up"

Me "I know I messed up Sizwe, I am sorry I will never happen again"

Him "who the hell even said I am sleeping with Siza, where the hell did you hear that bull"

Me "from one of the waitresses" he laughs

Him "you are so stupid, do you know that? You are easily manipulated, how did I get married to a dumb

fuck like you, yeses" he says with so much hate in his voice, I just cried

Him "don't even start with the water works. If you going to cry like a flipping baby go sleep in the other

room, I need to rest so I can wake up in the morning and go fix the mess you created" he got in the

covers and I stood there regretting my actions, could that girl have deceived me or my husband is just a

great liar, did something happen between them before she got with Razor.

Razor

I wake up before my woman, she is sleeping so peacefully, I can still feel the rage for that woman, how dare she lay her filthy hands on my queen, the nerve. I still need to go pay her a visit to make sure that she heard me, no one brings tears to Sizakele's eyes and go scot free, it doesn't work like that. I lost my cool and I never wanted her to see that side of me, but people can't hurt my woman, she is innocent and fragile, she loves seeing people happy and comfortable, and why would they want to give her a dish she never gives to others. My anger doesn't want to go away I feel like inflicting pain on Sizwe's wife like she did my angel, but I know better that to harm a woman. I make my way to the gym to blow off some steam, I would bury myself deep inside of her and loose myself, but she is tired plus when we got home I gave her one fire round and it knocked her right out like sleeping pills. My gym session takes an hour tops and I go take a shower and she is still out of it, I call one of my boys and tell them to go get us



breakfast from some restaurant, he should tell them it's me, they will fix him my usual, but it should be

for two. He comes back in no time, before the Mrs. Wakes up, I place the food on the tray and go back

to our bedroom. She looks so beautiful but she need to wake up now, I miss her. I shake her a bit and

she makes a cute noise and pulls the covers up, I laugh

Me "come on baby, I miss you"

Her "give me 5 more minutes" I sigh

Me "no my angel I have been up for hours now, what do you want me to do alone in this house" she

laughs and removes the duvet and sits up

Her "okay, okay I am up" I blush and kiss her

Me "I got us breakfast, we should eat coz it's still warm" she smiles and we eat in comfortable silence

till we done. I take the tray back downstairs and come back and she is in the bathroom brushing her

teeth and washing her face.

Me "let me look at your face" I examine where she slapped her,

she is bruised a bit and a change of color. I kiss her cheek and she giggles

Her "it is no longer painful baby don't worry okay"

Me "I wanted to straggle her"

Her "don't baby even when you see her next time just let her be, she is still my sister though" I frown

Me "what do you mean your sister baby?" she sighs deeply

Her " she is Thandiwe my big sister babe"

Me "does she know she is your sister" she laughs

Her "of course she does love, my sister always had a problem with me baby from a very young age, even

when I was disowned she was happy" I clench my jaws.

Me "I am sorry my baby"

Her "its okay, I am over that. I am a big girl you know"

Me "you are my fierce, strong, ambitious, innocent, beautiful, sexy girl" she giggles my favorite sound

Her "yes baby yours, and only yours"

Me "I love you okay, and I am sorry I wasn't there to stop her from slapping you yesterday" she blushes

Her "you stood up for me and that is enough love" I smile

Her " and I love you most" I kiss her fully on the lips.

Me "what do you want us to do today"

Her "since I am not going to work today, how about we go to the fourways farmers market" I smile

Me "is it nice? I haven't been"

Her "I haven't been either, but I hear it is great"

Me "okay then fourways it is then"

Her "I am choosing our outfits okay" she takes my hand and leads me to the closet

Vusi

Today is a Sunday and Mercy asked to do something together, that time I promised Uriel that I will be

spending the afternoon with her, I won't lie juggling two woman who love attention is not easy at all,

but I am not letting go of either, they both have their benefits if I could I would marry the both of them, I

told Mercy that I had a client who invited me to a round of golf

and she understood because she grew  
up with a father who would do such. I made sure I gave her hot  
sex before I left and promise to take her  
out to dinner when I got back, she was so excited, at least I am  
not making either of them suffer or feel  
neglected. I get to Uriel's place and get out. She told me to  
come empty handed. I open; oh she gave me  
a key by the way. I make my way to the kitchen and it smells  
nice, I walk to her balcony coz I see the  
door open. There is a romantic setup for two and soft music is  
playing, she clears the throat and I turn to  
look at her, she is in a sexy red lingerie. I bite my lower lip and  
she smiles

Her "welcome home baby"

Me "now this is the life, you look amazing and the food smells  
divine, you cooked?"

Her "yes I did daddy just for you" I smile this girl knows how to  
take care of a man

Me "you are amazing do you know that"

Her "I love hearing it from you. Come those clothes are not

comfortable love" I follow her to the

bedroom and she gets me naked and gives me a gown and sleepers from Woolworths

Me "you got me these"

Her "yes I want you to be comfortable love" I smile

Me "you are so considerate"

Her "I know how to take care of my man Vee. How long do we have"

Me "I have to back at 7pm, taking her to dinner" she giggles

Her "I will make sure not to feed you too much" I laugh, this one is naughty.

Olivia

Oh this house is boring shame; my dad is killing me always taking Siza no man not fair. I have been

locked up in here watching back to back series, my social media is boring, I don't know what to do with

myself, I have been drinking Hennessey from Friday night, there is a knock on my door and I go open, it's

my sister, she has a gift bag with her

Me "hey, what a lovely surprise, come in" she does and we seat

Her "you look so miserable"

Me "blame your father"

Her "why, what did he do?" I sigh

Me "he took my best friend, who happens to be his girlfriend"  
she laughs

Her "is she always at his house"

Me "your father even comes here to pack her bags in her  
absence" she frowns

Her "are they that serious" I smile

Me "very serious, and they are so happy Mercy you should see  
them, I swear they are goals"

Her "oh I thought they are both having issues, thought it will  
blow over soon"

Me "not a chance, I wouldn't be surprised if they were to get  
married that's how in love they are" she

chokes on her saliva and I quickly give her my glass laughing

Please leave a comment, react and share with others guys.  
Happy weekend.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 45 (not edited)

Siza

I was spending the day with Olivia today, I have been neglecting my friend, and it's not fair, she probably feels like I don't care about her since I got it going with her dad, and that is impossible because she is the first person that ever showed me love when I first got to this city and I will never turn my back on her no matter what. she went to school earlier on and I took it upon myself to cook her a very nice meal and went to buy us some wine. Today I am drinking with her, and doing whatever she wants, she needs to know that she still has a best friend. I made lasagna, I know she loves it, my cooking skills for these fancy things has improved, thank to these cooking shows and books. The flew open and she walked in looking

like hell, I smile sweetly at her and she threw herself on the couch

Me "hectic day" she sighs

Her "day from hell babe, I just want to eat shower and sleep" my excitement fell

Me "Oh I was hoping we could, never mind you are tired babe" she looked at me and frowned

Her "spill it out Siza" I sigh

Me "I cooked your favorite and I bought some wine, thought we could maybe have a meal and drinks,

talk shit and just bond. I miss you" she smiled and stands up and comes straight to me and embraces me

so tenderly

Her "you are so considerate, I have been missing you" we break the hug

Me "so what do you say"

Her "I say, go dish up and I will pour us wine, you drinking right?"

Me I am doing whatever you want me to do"



Her "now you talking" the smile on her face, priceless.

Me "so how was your weekend"

Her "please don't ask, I had the worst weekend ever babe. I was all alone in this apartment and

watching series. I have never been that bored"

Me "I am sorry Liv" she pours our wine and I dish up

Her "its okay. How was your weekend" I laugh and take a sip of wine

Me "dramatic babe. Apparently Sizwe my boss is my sister's husband" she gave me a look

Her "and how did you not know"

Me "remember I was disowned before she could get married, so I didn't have the luxury of attending

their wedding, my dad made it clear that I wasn't a part of the family anymore" the pain I felt saying

those words.

Her "I am sorry okay"

Me "its okay, that was a long time ago. She slapped me and accused me of sleeping with her husband"

Her "she what? That bitch touched the wrong one, I need to tell

dad about that” I laugh, she is Mo’s daughter this one.

Me “don’t worry about that, Mo took care of her instantly, she will never try that shit again” she laughs

Her “now that is my daddy. I hope you won’t set foot at that club again. It’s time your boyfriend gave

you an allowance” I laugh and she takes a bite of her lasagna

Me “he wouldn’t let me go back there even if I wanted to. And he already does a lot for me Liv, I am

comfortable, I don’t worry about rent, tuition and clothes so I am comfortable don’t need an allowance.

I just want his love everything else is a bonus” she smiled

Her “the way you guys love each other, it makes me feel so guilty for ever wanting to breaking you up”

Me “its okay we are passed that now”

Her “I’ve been wondering you know” I frown coz she has that look on her face

Me “oh my God, what?” she laughs

Her “it is so wrong of me but I can’t help but wonder”

Me “ask already Olivia” she laughs and clear her throat

Her "how is the sex?" I narrow my eyes and blush to the side

Me "you really want to know?"

Her "I am dying to know" I smile, she is my best friend, I will just pretend like he isn't her father

Me "he is a sex God Olivia. He makes me feel things I didn't know I could, he knows when to make love

to me and when to fuck the living shit out of me" she screamed in excitement

Her "oh my God Siza, you lucky thang, does he go down on you?"

Me "honey girl, that man eats it up every chance he gets and I explode in his face each time " she stood

up and ran around the house like a madwoman screaming like she had won the lottery, I couldn't stop

my laughter.

Her "who knew my dad had it in him. I thought you were having plain boring mediocre sex"

Me "I am having none of that honey, I have mind blowing, earth stopping, time stopping sex"

Her "I am so jealous right now, you have it all in one man, I mean some of us have to date one man for

love and another for an orgasm that time we are on daddies paycheck. Oh my God, I hate you” I laugh.

Me “you can be so dramatic you know that right”

Her “the in nothing dramatic here, I am simply telling you the truth baby”

Me “I think this wine has moved to my bean plus all this sex talk just escalated it, I might just call him to

pick me up” she frowned

Her “no chance, tonight it is about me and you. Best friends only, no boyfriends allowed” I laugh

because I was teasing her, but not about craving my man

Me “I am just kidding babe, today it’s just me and you”

Her “thank you for doing this. I honesty missed our sessions”

Me “me too. I love you okay” she smiles

Her “I love you too stocko sa Razor” I laugh and smack her shoulder

Me “no ake stocko doll ke regte (I am not the side thing, I am the main)” she laughs

Her “that you are sweetie” we continue drinking the wines and being the ghyles.

Thandiwe

My husband hasn't even set his eyes on me, it safe to say he is mad as hell at me for what I did to Siza.

He leaves before I wake up and comes back when he knows I am asleep. I can't take the silent treatment

any longer, we were doing very well before I pulled that stunt, I took us back 10 steps back and I feel

very bad for that. It is going to take a miracle to get us back to where we were before that event

happened. I wish I could to the club and apologize but he made it clear that he doesn't want to see me

there. I wonder why that Vicky girl could lie to me like this, does she maybe hate Siza and wanted to get

her into trouble, I stop trying to crack my skull and walked out of my car and made my way in the

restaurant to eat, I couldn't spend another minute alone in that big house. I walked in and the waitress

took me to my table and gave me a menu then walked away giving me a minute to decide on what I

wanted to eat. I spot Vicky with another girl, they are laughing so loud. Their outfits are so expensive

you will wonder how they can afford those designer clothes on the salary of a waitress, I bet you they

are some rich man's toys, they please them sexually and they are taken well of financially. I anted to

know why she lied to me, I took my pregnant self to their table and she smiled when her face landed on me

Her "boss lady, how are you"

Me "hello Vicky" I keep a straight face

Her "how are you, please join us" I pulled a chair and sat down

Me "I am well. Remember I asked if you were a trustworthy person"

Her "yes I remember"

Me "and what was your answer" she frowned and looked at her friend, who just shrugged her shoulders

Her "and I said I am trustworthy" I laugh

Me "and then why did you lie"

Her "I didn't lie boss lady"

Me "my husband is denying having any kind of relationship with my sister, but you said he does"

Her "of course he will deny it, which husband do you know will agree to his wife's face that he is

cheating with her sister above it all" I sigh, she was making a lot of sense right now

Me "you do know that Razor is her man right"

Her "I am aware"

Me "good, he is a ruthless man, if you ever lied against her and he finds out he wouldn't think twice

about snapping your neck like twig, you saw how he handled me with my very powerful husband near

me, so imagine what he would do to someone like" she swallowed and blinked a couple of times and

looked at her friend

Her "I am not lying" I stood up

Me "I hope so" I walked away before she could respond

Razor

I am sitting in my study, going over cases I am handling at the moment. These clients are so guilty and they should be locked up and the keys thrown away, I laugh because of the hypocrisy. I have done far worse and if I am still on the outside I guess I shouldn't think I am a good man, coz I have been clean for a few months, I am still a cold hearted criminal whose heart is only warmed up by one woman besides my children. Being a lawyer means you shouldn't have a conscience and morals, you represent everyone for whichever crime they have committed. The only reason I became a lawyer was because I was a big shot crime Lord, so I needed to understand how the law works so I can protect myself and my cartel and it worked wonders coz I during the years I was able to take myself out of some sticky situations. Earlier today I received a letter from Vusi's uncles, they want to come pay Lobola for Mercy, finally it has been long now I thought that boy wanted to turn my daughter into Lord of the Rings, Engaging her for years without intending to pay for her traditionally. They say they



want to come this Saturday I don't have a  
problem with it, the sooner the better. I miss Sizakele so much,  
this house is too big without her, and  
the bed is cold and my heart longing for her. the knock on my  
study door brought me back from my  
thoughts, before I could even answer he was already inside, I roll  
my eyes, Gadafi knows nothing about waiting for an answer

Him "brother"

Me "G, my man" he fist bumped me and sat down

Him "what's good" I sigh

Me "nothing much, was just going through some cases I am  
handling, what about you"

Him "business is good, the arms deal went through and they  
send the money last night. I am going to wire your share"

Me "you know you don't have to do that, I am no longer in the  
game"

Him "I know but you are the father of this operation, you made  
it the success it is today, so I will always  
send you something, consider it a retirement fund" I laugh

Me "thank you G, but you know I have enough money to last me a lifetime and the next generation"

Him "I know that man"

Me "thank you anyway"

Him "don't sweat it okay. So why did you call me here" I gave him the letter from the Khumalo's

Me "I want you to be part of the delegates, if you are not too busy"

Him "I would love to. Your kids are your mine too. I will do everything for them, so yeah I will be there charging that boy an arm and a leg" I laugh

Me "I doubt he will pay it after all I am the one who's supporting him" he chuckles

Him "that's true brother"

Me "thank you for always having my back"

Him "we are brothers; I will forever have your back man. Now I want you to do something for me"

Me "what?"

Him "help me smoke it" he took out a joint of weed and I laugh

Me "I haven't had one in years"

Him "I know. I woke up craving it so bad"

Me "I guess one joint won't hurt" he smiled

Him "pour us drinks and I hope there is food, you know the munchies will hit hard" I laugh and pour us

scotch then move to the garden to get stoned

Vusi

My uncles called to tell me that they had already sent the letter to Mercy's dad; I was relieved that we

are finally moving forward. My woman is thrilled that we are finally getting hitched and quick frankly I m

too, but I have another woman and I also don't want to hurt her, she is an amazing woman, I need to

explain what is going to happen this Saturday and I hope and pray she understands and doesn't end

things with me, I mean Uriel is an angel, he name was not a mistake, she takes care of me like I am only

hers. She doesn't for once talk about Mercy, when I am with her it is all about us and I am grateful for

that, I just finished eating the dinner she prepared and I tastes amazing, she has all the wifely qualities

and it is a shame I can only have her as a side thing. She takes my empty plate to the kitchen and comes back.

Her "baby" she say's sounding so sincere

Me "yes beautiful" she sighs

Her "you have been in a foul mood ever since you arrived, did I do something wrong maybe?" he

question just hurt me knowing that I might hurt her any moment now

Me "no nana, you did nothing wrong love, I am sorry. I just have to tell you something"

Her "talk to me, I am here for that" I smile at her and stand and kneel in front of her, her palms are

sweating as I take her hands in mine, she is even trembling a bit

Me "I am sorry beautiful okay, I never want to hurt you"

Her "you are scaring me Vee, what is going on baby"

Me "nana, I am paying lobola on Saturday " she closed her eyes and exhaled deeply

Her "oh okay congratulation then" I sigh

Me "I am sorry nana, you don't deserve this one bit"

Her "so you are ending things?" my eyes widened and hers become watery from tears

Me "no never I don't want to lose you Uriel, unless you don't want me anymore I will respect that but I

hope that is not the case"

Her "I always know that you were to her and you guys were engaged, it hurts a bit but I knew,

congratulation Vee" I kissed her

Me "I am sorry baby okay, I want you to go away on a mini vacation this weekend so you don't stay here

and think about the negotiations"

Her "that is very sweet of you Vee" I kiss her back and she smiles and I wipe her tears

Me "you will leave on Friday and come back Sunday, that fine?" she nods

Her "Cape Town will be okay" I kiss her again

Me "okay baby I will arrange everything for you okay" I didn't want to lose this woman and I don't know

why, I just don't want to imagine her with any other man, she is mine and mine alone.

Please react, leave a comment and share Apologies once again, the electricity came back a few hours ago

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 46 (not edited)

Razor

It is Friday and the negotiations will be taking place tomorrow here at my house, Mercy came home on

Wednesday since it is our culture to be present at home during the proceedings. Me and her haven't

had the luxury of being father and daughter like we used to be, even though she says she has accepted

my relationship, I am well aware that she hasn't and I will not hold it against her and force her to like her

after all I am the one who loves Siza everyone else must just

respect that, simple. My big brother will be coming down to help with the negotiations, him and I don't really get along, he has always looked down on me and judged me but funny enough he still accepts my "blood money" to live lavish as if he has worked hard for it, I am just glad he is only coming tomorrow and leaving, I don't want to be in his face for too long that we end up at each other's throat. Then it will be just Olivia and Siza. My woman didn't want to come not because her ex is marrying my daughter but she thought the house will be crowded, of course I told her to stop thinking like that, this is also her space and I like it when she is here with me. they are due anytime now, when I called she said she was waiting on Olivia, this is why when they have a recess in a weeks, she will go start with the driving lessons, she will be perfect in no time, the instructor is quiet good, she needs a car soon, this thing of my woman having to wait for people to catch a ride is not on, I mean I can afford to get her any car she desires, but Olivia mentioned her loving my

Bentley so that is what I am going to get her. Gadafi had errands to run, props of being cartel boss; he will come tomorrow morning for the negotiations. Mercy walks in with her aunt, her mother's sister and I frown, already pissed at her for not telling me she was going to fetch her, this woman is a pain in the ass. Immediately when she sees me she walks towards me and attacks me with a hug

Her "oh Razor, it is nice to see you after so long" she said squeezing my ass

Me "Donna, it has truly being long"

Her "you age like fine wine man, no wonder my sister almost killed me for you" she chuckles and I

frown, she is a mistake I will regret all my life, but that is a story for another day

Me "I guess so" she laughs and brush my chest with her manicured fingers

Me "Mercy didn't tell me you were flying in" I give my give my daughter a chilling look and she looks down



Her "oh come on give her a break she has a lot on her mind, I mean she is nervous about tomorrow"

Me "I see, how long are you planning to stay"

Her "bathong, I just got here and you want me to leave already"

Me "you are not answering my question"

Her "still a men who doesn't like small talk I see" I laugh

Me "you know mw too well"

Mercy "okay you two, aunty come see my dress" she says trying to get Donna away from me, she can

see how pissed off I am already and this is because of her.

Her "we will get to it soon sweetie, firstly where is Olivia, oh my sisters last one"

Mercy "she will be here any moment, she has school"

Her "why did she bother with that, why couldn't she be like you, your father has too much money, you

guys must spend it before he gets a gold digger that will trap him, you know young girls of today, they

have no shame, they will sleep with a man old enough to be their father if he is loaded" the smirk on

Mercy's face, I know she didn't tell her about Siza because

Donna would have said it straight to my face  
without shying away, that is how forward she is

Mercy "I know right, but you know Olivia, she has a mind of her  
own"

Her "just like her father" she said snaking her arms around, the  
front door opens and Liv walks in with

my goddess, soon as she saw Donna on me she raised an  
eyebrow and I removed her from me and I

moved a step away and her eyes come up to meet mine, her  
expression is one I couldn't read, fuck.

Her "oh Livy baby come give your favorite aunt a hug" my  
daughter doesn't really like her

Liv "aunty when did you get here, I didn't know you were  
coming"

Her "I got in a few minutes ago. I couldn't miss my baby girl's  
big day" I roll my eyes

Liv "oh okay" her eyes moved from Liv to the dark beauty in a  
red off shoulder below the knee dress

that has buttons from the breasts down, it is hugging her  
beautiful body I am drooling, I just want to

take her upstairs to our bedroom and bury myself inside her

with no care in the word.

Liv "oh sorry, this is my best friend her name is Sizakele, but we call her Siza, babe this is my aunt

Donna" my baby smiled sweetly at her, those black beautiful eyes lit up

Her "oh nice to meet you, you are beautiful, I love that dress looks good on you" Donna never gives out

compliments, I am going to use this to annoy her

Siza "thank you and likewise" I walked to where my woman was standing and put one hand on her waist

and kissed her passionately, she even let out a moan

Me "hey baby, I've missed you so much" she blushes and looks down, she wasn't expecting me to do

that

Her "Razor what are you doing to that child" Liv laughed. Donna was so shocked

Me "oh sorry, Sizakele is also my woman. Olivia forgot to mention that part"

Her "what! you are dating your daughters friend, Olivia how do you even approve of this, Razor I forbid

this nonsense, my sister must be turning in her grave" I laughed

Me "love come" I take her hand

Liv "dad she was suppose to make something to eat, she lost a bet we made"

Me "she will be down in a second Olivia, we just going to drop her bag in our bedroom, I need to go to the gym anyway so relax"

Liv "you better not be shielding your girlfriend daddy" I laugh

Me "she will hold to her end of the deal" I take Siza's hand and weekender and we walk upstairs, we

just gonna have a quick fuck and I will have her back down in no time.

Siza "your sister in law seems to be a bully" she say's when we up the stairs where they won't hear us

Me "she is a piece of work my love, please try not to be offended by her, this is our home" she smiles

sweetly at me

Siza "thank you Mo"

Me "okay let me get you up stairs pull that dress up and bend you over quickly"

Siza "I would really love that baby" she say's blushing. One of the things I love about her is that she is

not shy to tell me she wants me and that she enjoys me in the sack as much as I do. I appreciate all the love making sessions, quick stolen sex and the hard fucks we have, I am the only one who knows her innocence and dark side all at once and that just strokes my ego. I am one of a few man who has had the privilege of having their soul mates.

Mercy

I did it on purpose, inviting my aunt to my lobola negotiations, I knew my father will invite that girl and the only way to frustrate them was by inviting aunt Donna, she and dad had a thing a while back, let's just say my aunt made sure it happened, made sure dad drinks more that he should and saw to it that my mother walks on them in their matrimonial bed. That almost broke up my parents and let's just say that is what my aunt wanted so she could have dad, she has always saw her sister as weak, said that she didn't deserve being married to dad, in her head they would

have been Bonnie and Clyde. She is a go  
getter that one and she will be perfect to make Sizakele and dad  
fights till she decides that it is too much  
for her. we were still were my father left us and my aunt was  
too shocked to even talk, when she finally  
gathered her voice, she turned and faced us then sighs

Her "can somebody just pinch me please"

Liv "oh well I suggest you get over it Aunt D, Siza and dad are  
very much in love, don't bother yourself  
trying to separate them, you will only wake up the mighty Razor  
blade and you know you will be cut"

Her "do you really approve of this Olivia?"

Liv "trust me at first I was breathing fire, but when I almost lost  
my father coz he would have chosen her  
I had to take time and study how much they made it other  
happy"

Her "my sister must be turning in her grave right now, what the  
hell is her husband doing"

Liv "mom would want to see my dad happy, and in all honesty  
aunty D, dad loves Siza more than he did

our mother, hence I am telling you to not provoke Razor” she walked away after saying that and

disappeared upstairs, my aunt looked at me

Her “I hope you are also not in support of this bull” I laugh and peeped through to see if my dad is on

sight before I answer her

Me “I am so against it hurts, but Liv told you he would choose her over us”

Her “I will make her so uncomfortable she will have no choice to leave your father” I laugh and we high

five

Me “yes wena aunty D. I trust you”

Her “take me to your room and tell me about your fiancé” I smile and help her carry her luggage

Mandla

Vusi is paying lobola tomorrow and he invited us over at his father in laws house for the celebration

afterwards, Mercy is cheesy like that. The only thing I am

worried about is Siza and Razor, I am not sure  
how I will stomach seeing them and knowing that she is  
sleeping with him, the thought of it hurt me  
alone. I would not go but I would be seen as jealous or what not,  
so I will just have to put on my big boy  
pants and shove my feelings aside, I get home from work and  
find Palesa in the kitchen cooking, we  
have been doing really well, even though I who my heart in  
aching for. I go kiss her

Me "hey baby"

Her "hey love how was work"

Me "the usual babe, what are you making"

Her "just veges and chicken" I nod

Me "oh tomorrow we are going to lobola celebration, Vusi is  
paying for Mercy tomorrow"

Her "okay baby, I will find something to wear"

Me "sorry for not telling you on time"

Her "I just hope Uriel is fine, maybe going to cape will do her  
good you know"



Me "Uriel?" I ask confused

Her "my friend baby, she is a nurse at the hospital you work at. She and Vusi are in a relationship and I

think she has fallen for him, he even paid for her trip to cape so she doesn't think of the negotiation and

feel bad" I was shocked, how does Vusi's mind work though

Me "how long have they been together"

Her "not too long baby but they sure act like a couple in a serious relationship, this lobola thing must be

killing her you know" I nod

Me "uhm baby, please don't mention any of this tomorrow okay"

Her "I promise I won't my love"

Me "thank you. I am going to shower yezwa" she smiles

Her "dinner will be ready soon as you done okay"

Me "you are a star"

Vusi

We just made love like we were saying goodbye, and this is definitely not goodbye, I just want her to go

have fun and not think about me paying lobola for another woman while I am at her house almost every

day, spending more time with her than my wife, I never want her to feel used, she will never feel like I

am married once she gets back, everything will be normal but I think I will be more delicate with her,

this woman takes care of me like her life depended on it, she is a woman everyman would want to wife

up, but now I have Mercy and if I play a number on her I will definitely be playing with fire and I will be

burned, but letting Uriel go is not an option, she reminds me of Sizakele so much, maybe this is why I

want to keep her so bad, to replace the one I lost. I kiss her forehead when I hear her cry

Me "I am sorry baby"

Her "you don't have to be Vee, I know why I sighed up for, I just don't understand why it hurts"

Me "nothing will change okay"

Her "you promise"

Me "look at me" she did

Me "I promise you. if things were different I would choose you Uriel, but it is way too complicated, it is not as black and white as it may seem"

Her "I understand baby"

Me "now let's go shower, your flight leaves in two hours and we still need to pick up your friend" I kiss

her and she kisses me back

Me "have fun okay try not to think about this lobola thing, I am going to call you each time I get a chance" she smiles.

Razor

I am in my gym working out, and I can't stop thinking of the way she rode me a few minutes ago, that

one is a goddess, I have reached a point where I can't even explain how she makes me feel, but the look

on my face when I look or think about her says it all. She is my queen and I am not ashamed to love her

the way I do. I didn't have any t-shirt so my tattoos were visible,  
the one of her face more beautiful than

the rest, I blush thinking of her. The door opens and Donna  
walks in

Her "you are still as sexy as I can remember" I kept quiet

Her "you even have her name tattooed on your body" I just had  
to turn so she can see the one on my

chest and go more crazy, maybe she will understand how much I  
love her

Me "what do you want Donna I am busy" he eyes falls on Siza's  
face on my chest and I mentally dance

Her "God Razor, what is wrong with you, she is a child. Your  
daughters friend"

Me "your point?"

Her "you shouldn't be sleeping with her, it is wrong"

Me "say's who"

Her "say's me. She will never know how to satisfy a man like you.  
Razor you need a matured woman like

me, I know what you need well " she cupped my face and kissed  
me the door opened and Siza walked

in, he smile disappeared soon as she saw us, shit I was slow in yanking her off me

Siza "I thought you might need water and since I didn't stock the frigde last time I was here" I could hear

the pain and hurt in her voice, she placed the water and closed the door

Me "baby please wait, it's not what you think" I say approaching the door, loud enough so she can hear

me. I paused a little and moved back to Donna and held her by the throat

Me "don't you ever fucken touch me like that do you understand me? if you ever toy with Sizakele's

feelings like that I will boil you alive Donna. If you want to stay till tomorrow, you see that girl old

enough to be my daughter, you will respect her with your life coz this is her space and this is her man" I

said with so much fury and ran after my woman, fuck this old hag thinking I would have eyes for her did

she see my woman, why would I look at another woman when I have a goddess like that, nxa.

Participation is key

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 47 (not edited)

Siza

First she had her arms around him, now I find them kissing, am I being tested bakithi, is it test Sizakele

with her man day, what is that old hag trying to play at here, Molemo made it known to her that he is

with me, and I am pretty sure Mercy also filled her in, I am mad at Molemo for letting her be that close

to him, he should have cut her off immediately when she started talking bull in there coz I am pretty

sure it didn't start with her getting in there and kissing him, it should have started with a conversation

which he had to immediately cut off. I am so pissed if she wasn't Olivia's aunt and an elder I would have

slapped her across the face. I practically ran to his bedroom, funny I am not even crying I am just pissed

at him. I got to our bedroom and sat on the bed feeling so furious. He walked in a second later and sat near me, he sighed deeply

Him "baby" I remained quiet not knowing how to answer him. You must think I am a crazy woman but

no, he must never give other woman a chance to be that close to him, coz I bet if it was me he found in

that compromising position, he would be breathing fire right now probably the poor guy would be black

and blue as we speak on his way to the hospital in need of emergency surgery that will later lead him to

ICU.

Him "I know what it looked like but I promise it wasn't, she came on to me"

Me "don't justify what I saw Molemo"

Him "I am not baby please"

Me "I am so mad right now Mo you don't understand, I would slap you" he smiles in amusement like he

just enjoyed hearing me threaten him like that

Me "oh now I am funny right" his expression changed

Him "baby I am sorry please, I know I should have yanked her off and I didn't and I was wrong for it"

Me "yes you were definitely wrong Molemo"

Him "and I am sorry baby, sincerely"

Me "why the hell would your sister in law kiss you I mean that is not on, not unless you had something

with her" he looked down and I just got more angry

Me "are you kidding me right now Razor seriously"

Him "baby please come down, it happened a long time ago and it was a mistake I regret"

Me "don't tell me that, come down for what, would you be come if you were the one who found me

with another man" he tightened his jaws and clenched his fists

Him "I would have killed that fucker immediately" I laugh

Me "yet me you want me to come down" he sighs and his expression softens again

Him "Rato laka please I am sorry" he made a puppy face and it warmed up my heart but I couldn't just

let it go, I needed to make him understand that what he did or



allowed was wrong, let him sweat a bit

Me "you know what I can't look at you, just get out of my bedroom Mo" he smiled again like he is

enjoying to see me this mad and possessive of him

Him "our bedroom my baby" I frown

Me "just get out Molemo before I throw this at you" I say picking up the vase

Him "I can't believe we just had our first fight" oh yeah that's true but I never want to fight with him

Me "just go before you make me more mad" he runs his hand on his face and sigh

Him "I love you though, even when you mad" I wanted to blush but I had to keep my face straight

Me "I am not joking with you right now get out" he saw my face and his fall fell with sadness and he left

our bedroom, I blushed and I knew I had to put on my bullet proof vest if I was gonna go to war with

that old hag, she has an agenda but she will meet a soldier ready for battle, Mo is mine and mine alone.

Saturday

Mercy

The day of my lobola came and I was so nervous, my father's brother had come from Welkom to help out my dad and uncle G. I am grateful for that coz him and my father and water and oil really, so him doing this for me means a lot. I was sitting in my bedroom with my aunt and sister, waiting for someone to walk in and tell me that it is all over, my uncle came with his wife, so she was the one who will come inform me when they are done. I was in a very beautiful dress, it was custom made for me, and it was our traditional seshweshwe cloth but designed in a more modern way and It was blue and white and I had on a matching doek. I had on a blankie on my shoulders looking like a real Mosotho princess. Olivia was in a traditional gear too as everyone else because I had asked everyone to come wearing their traditional attire. I am a nervous crack right now, I just want it to be all over. I take my phone after it

beeped notifying me of a text, it was a ring and cow emoji from Vusi, and made me blush and I

immediately calmed down. The door opened and my uncles wife walked in, I looked up at her and she was smiling.

Her "hey nana they are done now, everything is concluded" I felt myself relax entirely

Me "oh thank God everything is over" she smiled

Her "they want to see their bride now"

Me "oh aren't they being dramatic now"

Her "show some respect when you get in there, don't give us a bad name please" I mentally rolled my

eyes, we are actually stepping back into the fifty

Me "I won't"

Her "good, now come we don't want to keep them waiting" I got up and fixed my dress to go see the

Khumalo delegates who have just demanded to see me

Her "now listen, don't look at them in the eyes and each time you give an answer bow to indicate that

you have heard them, and address them as baba" oh can I just

die right now, I just nod and I walk out

after her until we are downstairs. They are laughing in the lounge and I get in and greet them

Me "sanibonani bo baba"

Voice "makoti, we have concluded and you are now a Khumalo, we hope to see you at our home now

that you are one of us"

Me "yebo baba" I bow

Voice 2 "we hope you are Vusi will get down to business now that we have married you" typical

Me "yebo baba" I bow

Voice "show me your hands" I pull out my manicured hands

Voice 2 "yoh yoh, with such long nails ntombazane, can you even clean"

Voice "is she able to cook our son his meals" I felt myself boil but I managed to hold my tongue

Voice "you are excused now" my uncles wife took my hand we walked away. I spoke only when we got

to kitchen

Me "such disrespect imagine" my aunt just gave me a look and

shook her head. I took out my phone  
and called Vusi, he picked up first ring

Him "wifey" I blushes

Me "hey husband, where are you"

Him "I am outside your house, with my friends, we will walk in  
just now" I smile

Me "okay baby I will come find you"

Him "okay wifey see you soon" he hangs up and my spirit is  
floating, finally I am Mrs Khumalo,

traditionally, I need to start finding the best wedding planners  
in town immediately, my wedding

deserves to be on vogue guys hehehe they will wonder what hit  
them. The wedding of the Motaung Princess, Khumalo Queen. I  
blush at my thoughts

Razor

A part of me is really proud of Mercy for getting married, maybe  
she will have kids and grow up to be a

better person coz the person she is right now is one a parent

can only love but there is nothing to be  
proud of coz she refused to make something out of her life, I  
will not live everyday and my money might  
be enough but anything can happen, life is unpredictable and I  
just wanted her and her sister to have  
something to fall back on should anything happen. I honestly  
hope that she and this boy will get to  
trying to have kids, if she doesn't want to change for herself  
maybe she will do it for her children,  
everything went well and she is happy which makes me happy  
too, that is what I have always wanted for  
my kids for them to be happy but right now a part of me misses  
my woman, she has been ignoring since  
yesterday, at night she initiated sex and we made love but right  
after that she went back to ignoring me,  
so imagine how frustrated I am. I am sitting with my brother,  
Gadafi and the Khumalo men, enjoying our  
whisky; Mercy brings our food to show she is a real Makoti. I  
haven't seen Sizakele since I left her in our bed this morning.

Gadafi "brother what's wrong?" he whispers

Me "eish G, madam and I fought yesterday"

Gadafi "what did you do" I sigh

Me "Donna kissed me and she walked it on it"

Gadafi "I just hope you put that bitch in her place man Razor"

Me "I did and I am glad she has been ignoring me"

Gadafi "good then" he then whistled and I looked up to see a queen in a Zulu attire, Jesus Christ. My

woman is in a orange zulu wrap skirt with beards on her tiny waist, she has on a white sports bra that

has beards falling covering her flat stomach but exposing her back, she has a Zulu beaded necklace on and

bangles on both her hands, she also has something on her hair decorating her nice afro, she has on her

white pair of Alexander Mc Queens. I have never seen such beauty in my entire existence. The

Khumalo's are gawking at her like they can recognize her. my brother clears his throat and speaks

Him "who is that?" I smile

Me "her name is Sizakele" he narrows his eyes, with a tell me more expression

Him "is she Mercy's friend"

Gadafi "nope she is the woman of this house, Razors woman" I blush at that statement

Him "oh I see, she is nice and respectful, ran into her a few times in the house, she seems young though" no judgment from my brother, okay that is definitely a first.

Me "yes she is all you mentioned" once of the Khumalo men spoke

Him "you have chosen a beautiful Zulu girl Motaung, she is a fine site, but I think I know her from

somewhere" I just smile not wanting to tell him that she was the mother of their grandchild

Me "can you gentleman please excuse me" I say and stand, I couldn't wait another minute of not talking

to her or touching her, this is torture, she was sitting with Olivia and some girls, I just wanted to hear tell

me that she loves me at least I will feel better. I get to them and greet but she just keeps quite

Liv "hey daddy, you look handsome" I smile

Me "thank you baby" I look at mine and she is looking anywhere but me



Me "baby can we talk" she still silent, I had to use a name that I only use when I am inside of her in the throes of passion.

Me "Soft please just a minute" she sighs and she stood up and I took her hand and we walk inside to our bedroom, people are watching us with a million questions, we get to our room and I close the door she is already sited.

Me "baby I am sorry please I miss you" her expression softened  
Her "Mo, we are cool"

Me "if that is true kiss me and tell me you love me" she stands up and sits on my lap and kiss me slowly

Her "I love you Mo, more than anything, and just coz we fought it doesn't mean I stop" I blush and kiss

her again wanting to take it further, how can I not when she looks so sexy, she moans in my mouth and stops me

Her "baby stop, we have guests"

Me "I know Soft I promise to be quick"

Her "be quick Mo like a speed of light" I chuckle and kiss her

next and move to her ear lobe and she lets  
out another moan that sets me off wanting me to be inside her  
warm tight nana

Sizakele

I wasn't mad at him I just wanted to make him sweat a bit and  
that seemed to have worked, coz I didn't  
speak to him all morning and I must say the 'make up' sex was  
fire, we should fight frequently. He knows  
how to subdue me, all he has to do is call me Soft and I am sold,  
I wonder why he calls me that and I  
have never bothered to ask, I just love it. We both fix ourselves  
and walk out hand in hand, people are  
looking at us shocked and I couldn't care less, I spot Mandla  
with Vusi and Steve, and the bride and  
Palesa, I thought they broke up but okay, he has been scares  
these days it is nice to see him.

Me "baby let me go greet Mandla it has been long"

Him "okay my love" he brings his lips to me and pecks mine,  
that just answered everyone's unspoken

questions, I walk to them and they are all looking at me, if I  
were in heels I would have fell I swear, I get

to them and greet

Me "hi guys" they all greet back

Me "mandla it has been a minute, how have you been" he smiles

Him "I know I know, and I feel very bad. I promise to make time"

Me "please do or I am calling home " he chuckles

Him "if you want me to die you will do that" I laugh, Palesa  
cleared her throat and I moved my eyes to

to look at her direction

Her "Siza, you look different; I didn't see you there for a minute.  
You are so beautiful this outfit was

made for your body girl" I smile genuinely, she used to not like  
me but okay

Me "thank you Palesa, you look great too"

Steve "I agree with Palesa, you look amazing Siza" I smile  
sweetly at him

Mercy "that is my father's money for you" Vusi chocks on his

drink and I life

Palesa "why do you say that Mercy" I had to answer mercy and embarrass her since she was trying to

do that to me

Me "oh Palesa you don't know, I am dating Molemo now, Mercy's father, you know after she took my

daughters father, I read somewhere that the best revenge is to take her father and be her stepmother"

she smiled at me trying to hide her shock, Mercy was fuming and Steve was laughing so hard, Vusi and

Mandla just kept a straight face

Palesa "oh " I laugh

Me "I am just kidding, the last thing I have time for is getting revenge, I am with my man coz I love him,

nothing more nothing less, Mandla please make time for me" he smiles

Mandla "I will promise" we hugged and I walk away

Mercy

How could she embarrass me like this on my day, what the hell is she doing here still I thought after

what aunt D did she would have been out of here but no, this girl is a nuisance, I can't stand her no

matter how hard I try. But I am not going to let her get to me. today is my day and I am going to enjoy

every minute of it, but my man doesn't seem to be himself, he keeps drifting away, like now his mind is not here, I pulled him softly from the others till we were in the garden out of sight, he sat and I sat on

his lap he smiled at me but it wasn't reaching his eyes

Me "baby are you okay, you seem stressed"

Him "I am perfect, I just can't believe we finally did it you know"

Me "yeah me too, I am so happy"

Him "I am happy to hear that love, you look so beautiful"

Me "thank you hubby" I kiss him

Him "so can my wife go fix me a plate to eat" I blush

Me "of course she can, I will be right back" I kiss him and walk to the house to ask my aint to fix my man

a plate.

Vusi

My head isn't here at all, I am just physically present but my mind is in Cape Town, I wonder if she was having fun and not thinking about any of this. the thought of hurting her is killing me, and seeing Sizakele with Razor just reminded me that I will never get her back, and as sick as this might sound it made me want Uriel more. She is not Siza and will never be but she is the closest woman I could replace the perfection I have lost. I took my phone and dialed her and she picked up first ring and her angelic voice just melted

Her "baby" she sounded so happy to hear from me

Me "hey beautiful, are you okay"

Her "I am okay I just miss you" I smile

Me "I miss you more, are you having fun"

Her "I am trying to baby, how is everything there" I sigh

Me "baby don't do this please, I wanted you to go to Cape so you don't think about this"

Her "I am sorry" I sigh

Me "I am not mad; you don't have to apologize babe. Please have fun, spend daddy's money"

Her "I will daddy" I felt her relax

Me "okay now enjoy yourself and have plenty of fun, I will call again later"

Her "I will be waiting Vee" I smile and we say our goodbyes and I feel so much better, I get up and go

back to the others. I met Mandla making my way to me

Me "sure bafo"

Him "ntwana congratulations" I fake a smile

Me "tha poi"

Him "so Palesa tells me about Uriel" I smile

Me "yeah man, eish "

Him "you know you are playing with fire man" I sigh

Me "can we not talk about this here" he nods

Him "where is your mother I haven't seen her" he tries to change the subject

Me "I asked her not to come, I thought since Siza is with Razor she might have told him about my

mother's treatment towards her in the past you know, I didn't want drama"

Him "totally understand, let's go back and enjoy this day" we walk back and find Steve making the ladies

laugh so hard, I wonder what this clown has said.

Please leave a comment, react and share. Participation is key guys

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 48 (not edited)

5 months later

Siza

The way I am so hurt, last night I wanted to sleep over at Razors place but he refused and told me he

had somewhere to be first thing in the morning, he has never



had a problem with me staying over even when he is not there, he even gave me my own key to the house and activation card for the office, now this is just so frustrating, he has been acting so strange for the past week and it hurts, I think he doesn't want me anymore, maybe he found someone else, or he has realized that he does so much for me while the only thing I do for him is cook and give him sex, I mean he has a chef and the man can have any woman he wants, I don't want to lose Mo, I think this week I realized that my biggest fear is losing this man, if he left me I couldn't survive it I swear, call it whatever you want but I love him beyond anything.

Today is my birthday and he hasn't said a word to me and that really hurts more, I mean it is already

1pm. My mother's called early in the morning to wish me a happy birthday; everyone else is saying

nothing at all. This has to be the worst birthday ever; Olivia went out yesterday and only came back in

the am's. Since it's a Saturday I decided to open a bottle of wine and have a pity party, her bedroom

door opened and she got out in her underwear and oversized t-shirt. Her hair was a mess, she came rushing to me and jumped on me screaming

Her "happy birthday my love" she hugged and I smiles at least one person in this city remembered, if she had forgotten I would have been more devastated.

Me "thank you my love" she kissed me on the lips, we are used to doing this, just a peck, like best friends do.

Her "here is your present" she handed me a big gift bag and inside there was a box of Gucci, I opened it and found a pair of black sandals high heels and inside the was a sheath spaghetti straps appliqué tea length cocktail dress black in color, then there was a cute tiara inside

Me "oh baby, these are cute thank you" she smiles

Her "if you like them that much go shower and put on that cute outfit, we are leaving in an hour to celebrate" she is just the best, reminded me that my own man hasn't said happy birthday to me. I just

cried

Her "what's wrong Siza"

Me "Mo hasn't called me today Liv, he even refused me sleep over last night"

Her "I am sure that he has a good reason, but if he wants to be a jerk let him be, today is about you, I

am taking you out and when he decides to call we will tell him where we are" I sigh

Me "yeah I should probably go out and have fun"

Her "yes love, now go get a shower and look sexy" I wipe my tears and get up and go shower. Once

done she follows suit and with an hour we are done, I check my phone and there is still nothing from

Mo, I hold back my tears mxm I should just get drunk tonight and forget him.

Her "you look so beautiful friend, that tiara is on the right head"

Me "thank you babe"

Her "I am going to blindfold you okay, I don't want you to see where we are going then text Razor and

tell him where we are so he can come take you from me, we will send his our location after we've had

our fun” she is right he made me wait he doesn’t deserve to know where I am

Me “you are right let’s get out of here right now” we walked to her car and she blind folded me and

drove out, the drive wasn’t long, we got to our destination in no time, I couldn’t take Molemo off my

mind. She parked and I heard her open her door and then she came to open mine and I get out of the car, she helped direct my steps. I heard her open a door and it is dead silent, I thought we are going to

groove mos

Me “kodwa Olivia, how do you expect me to not think of Mo when you taking me to such a silent place,

it’s like we are at the cemetery, where is the alcohol, I need to drink so I can call your father and tell him

a piece of my mind how dare he mxm” she laughed

Her “trust me you going to forget baby, we are going to have so much fun” I roll my eyes.

Me “just get me a drink I am depressed” she chuckled again

Her “okay I am removing it now” she removed my blindfold and in front of me was my very handsome

man with his dimples and the biggest smile on earth; I heard people shout surprise; I wanted to cry oh my God. I smack Olivia on the arm and she moved from me laughing

Me "you sly Fox Olivia"

Mo "so you gonna give me a piece of your mind huh" I look down embarrassed and

Me "I thought you forgot my birthday" he smiles and I just cup his face and kiss him so passionately

Mo "I would forget a lot of things but not where you are concerned my love" I blush, we were so lost in out bubble we even forgot we have guests.

Me "thank you for this"

Mo "anything for you my Queen, you look breath taking" he hugs me and I get a chance to scan the

room, I see Mercy and Vusi, next to them is Mandla and his girlfriend, I also spot Steve and a group of

guys I don't know. There is also Gadafi and Olivia and a group of her other friends. The décor is so nice

and simple, he knows I love red roses and he filled them in his

living room, there is a red carpet walk way  
and rose petals fill the floor except from the walk way, there is a  
open bar with a bar tender and a 3  
waitresses, the words 'happy birthday Soft' are hanging from  
the ceiling. The dining table is set and it  
looks elegant, my cake is so beautiful, my chair is replaced with  
a Royal chair and besides it is a table  
with gifts. I just smile sweetly at my love, he is just everything  
guys. We walk around hand in hand and  
people give me a hug and wish me a happy birthday. We are  
finally seat down on the dining table and  
Liv is the first to speak.

Her "my best friend in the whole world, Sizakele you are the  
best thing to ever walk in my life, I don't  
even know how to say what is in my heart, baby you know I  
have hurt you and I will forever be sorry. I  
want to thank you so much for walking into my life and making  
me so happy and most of all for making  
my daddy so happy, many might not understand your  
relationship but they haven't seen what I saw. You

are more than a best friend to me you are my sister and a step mom” we laugh “I pray you don’t lose

that perfect heart of yours, I love you and happy birthday” I stand and we share a hug and we squeeze, I

love her so much, she is the biggest part of me, we sit down and my boo is the next to speak

Him “you know from the first day Olivia brought you to lunch at that restaurant baby I knew I had to

have you, I knew you were a part of my deepest being, you completed me from the first sight and from

that moment I knew my life was nothing without in it, I question myself, wondering how I survived all

these years without you. in the short space on our relationship I have let go of everything I thought

made me the man I needed to be, but your innocence, beauty and determination threw that all out of

the window and you become the center of my world, I love you more than words can ever express and I

sleep at night knowing that you love me too and no matter the opinions of people and the shame

directed to us you still hold my hand and do this life thing with

me, I know for sure that your heart is my  
home Sizakele I love you a million times and I do so fearlessly” I  
couldn't hold my tears in, he just laid his  
heart to me and these people. I got up and he hugged me so  
tight and kissed me like tomorrow will  
never come

Liv “oh there are kids here, find a room”

Him “this is our house, the party is over get up and leave bye”  
the people laughed and I just hide in his  
chest. He answers his phone and smiles

Him “okay everyone I have a gift for my person outside can we  
all go look at it with her” I narrowed my

eyes and he took my hand and we walked out, he is so excited  
God, we got out with everyone and the

was a white Bentley in a red ribbon and the number plates were  
personalized SOFT GP, my hands

voluntarily went to my mouth and I looked at him and he is  
holding out a key to me, I can't believe this

man, this is why he has been forcing me to drive around in his  
car coz he wanted me get used to it. I

took the key's and walk towards the car, the interior is red and



it smells so nice God, I must say I looks

good on me" I got out and practically ran to him and he picked me up and spun me around, I giggle and

he puts me down and we kiss again

Me "thank you baby, this is the best birthday ever" he pecks my lips

Him "anything for you love, now one last present" I smile

Me "I won't say no" they all laughed looking at us in admiration except for Mercy and her hubby.

Mandla's expression is unreadable. He took out a black card from his jean pocket and hands it to me,

this is too much, I scan it and it has my name on it, what

Him "you gonna need patrol for that baby" I just stared at him and he laughed

Me "I don't know what to say baby thank you"

Him "everyone while my woman tries to find words to thank me, we can go back inside and have lunch,

I am sure everyone wants to get drunk now" they all laugh and head back inside.

1 week later

Vusi

I finally gathered the strength and bought my own house without Mercy knowing, I have to be a man

now and think about my future and that of my children, I managed to buy it cash and I finally got the key

2 days ago. So right now I am taking Uriel to do and see it, I just picked her up from her flat, I didn't tell

her about my plans and she is moody coz she doesn't know where we are going, I keep stealing glances

at her and she is pouting looking so cool, I am driving with one hand and the other is holding hers.

Brushing her knuckles. We finally get to the house and she gives me a look

Her "who are we visiting" I laugh

Me "you will find out soon my baby" she rolled her eyes, I park inside and get out and go open her door,

she gets out and we walk to the door, I retrieve a key from my pocket and open

Her "baby you can't be opening peoples houses" I smile at her and we walk in to an empty space

Me "it is not peoples house my baby, it is mine" her eyes pop

Her "you bought a house, Vee I thought you already have a house"

Me "I know but this one is mine and I want you to stay in it"

Her "what why? What about your wife"

Me "Uriel baby this is about me and you leave Mercy out of it please. I bought this house but I can't stay

in it and Mercy shouldn't know of it, I want you to move in here"

Her "I don't understand baby"

Me "beautiful I want you to take this card and furnisher this place and move in, I will come visit you like

I always do baby, but please stay here, let me take care of you" she just cries

Her "Vee why are you doing this, why are you making me fall in love with you when you have a wife"

Me "I never want to hurt you, and I promise I will make this all up to you baby I promise"

Her "how Vee how"

Me "just know that I am falling for you too and we are going to be okay" I hug her so tight

Her "I am scared Vee" my heart breaks, I can't do to her what I did to Siza, I won't do it

Me "I will make right by you, baby I promise okay" she nods crying in my chest

Me "now look at daddy" she looks at me and I wipe her tears then peck her lips

Me "take the card and make this house a home" she giggles and kisses me.

Razor

My love is so happy and the car really suit her, she is complete now, I never have to worry about her

taking an Uber or waiting for Olivia to pick her up, she loved her birthday lunch and the glow that was

on her face was priceless, I am glad I made her first birthday with me so memorable. My daughter asked

to have lunch with her and I agreed it has been a while since we

spent time together, I am glad she is the  
one who reached out to me, it is actually a good sign that we  
might start over again, I was already  
waiting for her at the restaurant in Melrose arch and yes she  
was an hour late, my phone beeps I bet s  
it's her telling me that she is cancelling I power the screen and  
the name Soft with a heart emoji next to  
it appears, I blush and open the text

\*just letting you know, that I am about to drive to the mall in  
my new car and put my black card to use, I  
will be wearing sunglasses with the window rolled down  
listening to some Frank Ocean" I laugh at her  
text; she is feeling sassy I like it.

\* Oh yes my love, please spend some money it is longing for you  
to blow it. I can just imagine the sight  
of you in that car looking like a billionaire" I text back

\*LOL oh yeah. Listen baby I am about to drive, see you later?"

\*please, I miss you. Should I tell them to cook or you will" I  
respond

\*today I will be taking care of all my mans hunger, you just decide which one you want to start with” I

got an erection already, God this woman

\*slow down Soft, I am in a public place, but I can't wait to see you I swear”

\*boy bye!” I laugh out so loud people actually look at me like a madman, but I don't mind them. My

daughter walks in with so many shopping bags, I roll my eyes

Her “sorry I am late daddy”

Me “its okay baby I am not in a hurry” she smiles and seats, we place our orders

Her “daddy how have you been?” I smile

Me “I am happy Mercy, what about you”

Her “very hectic daddy my wedding preparations nje, actually that's why I asked to meet you” oh here I

thought she missed me

Her “so I am going to need an injection on my budget” I laugh

Me “how much are we talking?”

Her “my wedding planner is doing the math and I will get back

to you”

Me “send it to me when you have it” she smiles

Her “another thing daddy” oh boy

Me “I am listening” she sips on her champagne.

Her “I need an upgrade” I give her a questioning look

Her “a car daddy duh!” I laugh

Me “your car is still fairly new Mercy”

Her “but everyone now has a G-class” I laugh

Me “is it because I got Siza a car”

Her “of course not daddy I was going to ask either way” deep down I know that is the real reason

Me “oh well baby, I can’t, I don’t have cash laying around now, I used it all on Siza for her birthday”

Her “really daddy that is your excuse” she said with an attitude, I took out my wallet and took out a

couple of R200 notes

Me “use this to pay for the bill, I just lost my appetite” she was shocked

Her “daddy where are you going”

Me "my house, I will see you around" I walk out feeling defeated,  
she is so ungrateful, I don't know  
where I went wrong with her really. I tried but I am done.

Please leave a comment, react and share. Participation is key.

See you monday movies

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 49 (not edited)

Razor

I honestly don't know why my daughter is like this, nothing is  
ever enough for her, I have done so much

to make her live a comfortable life and I think I am the course of  
her being like this, I blame myself, I

should have been more firm with her, I should have been the  
parent, I have never felt so defeated like I

do now, I just wonder how I am going to fix all this, she needs to  
know that I will not be around forever

to ensure that she has everything she needs, she must learn to



be independent. I left the restaurant  
because I didn't want to end saying something I might regret  
later, I drove and drove till I found myself  
at Gaddafi's house, the guard let me in and I just got out of the  
car and opened without knocking, that's  
what he always does at my house so I will return the favor. I  
walk to the lounge and I find him having sex  
on the couch, Jeez.

Me "holly shit G" He quickly got off the girl and I turned around  
Him "what the fuck brother, why didn't you knock, or better yet  
call before you show up"

Me "as if you do that I respond" he chuckles and I hear him  
address the girl

Him "go upstairs, I will be up soon" the girl didn't respond.

Him "you can turn now she is gone"

Me "you now bring them to your house I see"

Him "I had to man I was craving some pussy, my tail is hot, my  
boys tell me someone has been following  
me so I need to slay low for a while till I find out who it is" I

laugh

Me "I don't miss this life not a bit, but I will use my resources to help you out"

Him "thank you brother, much appreciated, so tell me what brings you here" I sigh

Me "I need a drink first man" he chuckles and goes to fetch it with two glasses

Him "trouble in paradise with the madam" I laugh

Me "not a chance man, we are happy. It is just Mercy man, she is something else"

Him "oh boy what did that one do" I sigh and seat down

Me "can you believe she wants a new car G"

Him "why coz her car is fairly new" I take a gulp of my drink

Me "that's what I said man" he shakes his head

Him "is it because you got the madam that Bentley"

Me "I think so too, but she said it isn't about that"

Him "I am going to be straight with you man, you have a hand in the way your girl turned out, you have

always given her everything and didn't draw the boundary, she should know that you are the parent and

elder, and she must respect that, she is a grown woman, she is married even she can't be living off you

for everything, she has to stand on her own two feet and grow the fuck up. What Mercy needs is tough

love and that is exactly what you are going to give her" he was making so much sense damn

Me "I agree with you 100% "

Him "so firstly you going to tell her that her allowance will be cut off by 50% and she must find

something to make money out of or even go back to school and get a qualification. If she doesn't do

either, make it clear to her that you will cut her off financially" I nod in agreement

Me "definitely man thanks"

Him "sure brother, don't back down even if she cries a river and call you daddy with that snobbish

accent, stand by your decision" I laugh

Me "I will man"

Him "I am going upstairs to finish what you interrupted. You can stick around a while I won't be down

anytime soon" he said leaving the room, and I relaxed on the

couch enjoying the drink

Mercy

I can't believe my father, he actually walked out of me, what nonsense is that, he has never done that before and he definitely has never refused to give me exactly what I want, see why I don't like this girl of his, she is changing my father, she wants' to control him, and by the look of things she is succeeding, I had my lunch and asked them to make his order a takeaway, I paid and left driving to Braamfontein to see my sister, I need to vent. I get there and she is there luckily coz I see her car parked. I take the food to give to her, that one is a foodie she wouldn't say no to food and luckily she doesn't gain weight, I am so jealous. I enter without knocking and she is sitting by the kitchen counter with books and a calculator in front of her.

Me "just close those books and come chill with your favorite sister in the world" she laughed

Her "no can do darling, I have a test tomorrow" I roll my eyes

Me "oh come on Olivia, you need a break I'm sure. I brought you food"

Her "actually I am full, I ate not too long ago"

Me "come on please"

Her "really sis, Siza cooked me a heavy meal before she left" I felt my blood boil so much but I kept my

cool, I don't want her to pull what dad did earlier on, I need by my side.

Me "oh I see" I made a sad face and that got her to come seat next to me, victory.

Her "fine fine, what's up, why are you here" I laugh

Me "can't I just miss my baby sister"

Her "you can but I know you" I laugh

Me "okay fine, I was having lunch with dad and he walked out on me" she laughs

Her "okay that's a first, what did you do to piss daddy off"

Me "I asked him to upgrade me" she narrowed her eyes

Her "upgrade you to what now?"

Me "a car of course"

Her "bathong Mercy, there is nothing wrong with your car"

Me "I have been driving that thing for a while now Liv, everyone has one these days" she laughs

Her "you are so unbelievable"

Me "why do you say that" I ask really feeling hurt

Her "the man bought you a fucking house worth a few millions, he is going to sponsor your damn

wedding, your honeymoon and all, now that he throws a woman he loves a party and buys her a car you

suddenly want a new car" I am shocked

Me "of course that's not the reason" she chuckles

Her "oh sister no need to pretend, we both know that is the real reason, Mercy not everything is about

you and it is in your nature to hate it when someone else is in the spotlight, you are a grown up for

havens sake, stop this bull and grow the fuck up, your mates are working and owning businesses and

you are here competing with your fathers completion, stop it and focus on your husband, and for once

ask him for that upgrade" tears were now streaming down my face

Me "Liv why are you saying this to me" she stands up

Her "you know what some of us have some studying to do, so please excuse me"

Me "you throwing me out of your apartment"

Her "I need to study Mercy, go shop or something" she was hurting me with her words. I stood up and took my things and left.

Thandiwe

I am due soon, in 6 weeks to be exact, I just want to pop this baby out already, shame I can't anymore,

this all too much, sharing your body with someone is not nice at all shame, right now she is sitting on my

bladder, I have to pee one hundred times a day, I find it difficult to find a great sleeping position and

don't get me started on my swollen feet. Even so I can't be locked up in this damn house so I decided to

go shopping for baby stuff and maybe spoil myself to a dress or too. as tired as I am I am making my

way in this mall pushing this already full trolley, I pass by Luis Vuitton and spot this beautiful bag, oh

God there is no way I am letting that one pass me, I get in and the lady is already at my assistance , she

doesn't disturb me coz she knows I am a regular. I look around and I accidentally bump into some

Me "oh I am so sorry, I wasn't looking at where I am going" she giggled and bend down to pick up her

staff, she looked up with a smile and it disappeared soon as she landed on my face, and so did i

Me "oh so it's you"

Her "in the flesh"

Me "what do you want here, looking for another job?" she laughs

Her "actually no, I am here to shop" I laugh and brush my belly

Me "as if you can afford anything in here"

Her "because I am poor old Siza that fell pregnant at 16 and embarrassed baba righ" I smile

Me "exactly baby girl" she laughs

Her "see that is where you are mistaken, this is not the village and I am definitely not that little girl you



can bully around, sisi. So please respect yourself” I scan her from head to toe and I can bet you she is

wearing designer, my eyes land on her hand and she has Bentley car keys, a iPhone and black card, I

almost faint but quickly compose myself.

Me “you are now prostituting yourself, a typical slay queen” she smiles

Her “oh Thandiwe mtakwethu, you are so sad shame, I pity you”

Me “oh please don’t”

Her “no allow me please, even after this time, you are still very much interested in my life, I mean look

at you trying to make me feel small, i could swear that you look up to me, you want to be me” I frown

but deep down I know there is some truth to what she is saying. I lick my tongue in defence and she smiles

Me “why am I even waisting my time” she shakes her head and leaves me standing there and goes to

the till and pay for so many clothes, I am left shocked. She walks out of the store swaying her beautiful

body and I am left in there starring and her disappearing into the mall out of sight.

Vicky

Sizwe is totally playing hard to get it is so difficult to get to him, I have pulled every stunt and the book

and he won't barge, it is all so frustrating yeses, I have never had a problem seducing him before but

now he is telling me bullshit about wanting to be faithful to his wife, I mean really. I need to befriend her

and use it as leverage to get him back, he won't be able to refuse giving into my demands, since he want

to prioritize her I am sure he will also avoid her possibly finding out that it was me who had an affair

with him and not Siza, honestly speaking, I have nothing to lose but Sizwe has everything to lose, his

wife, kids, reputation and all. He wants' the world to think he is a brilliant business man and family guy

but shame, if only they knew what a monster he really is. My bedroom door opens and Thato comes in

and throws herself on the bed.

Me "long day?"

Her "yes babe, the club can be so hectic hey"

Me "tell me about it babe" she sighs

Her "I just want to eat and sleep" I laugh

Me "did Sizwe come today"

Her "yeah he came through looking like an entire snack babe" I frown

Me "don't you dare Thato" she laughs

Her "oh come on babe"

Me "I am serious right now, he is off limits just like the way you never wanted Razor near me"

Her "don't mention that one" I frown

Me "what did he do now"

Her "can you believe he bought that girl a Bentley for her birthday"

Me "no fucking way babe"

Her "time he only used to give me R5000 imagine hle" I laugh

Me "man are trash, where did you hear this?"

Her "I follow his daughter Olivia on instagram, she posted the

bitch standing next to the car, my car”

Me “show me” she took out my phone and handed it to me, fuck that car is life, but honestly speaking,

this girl is sexy man, but don’t tell anyone I said that okay, especially Thato.

Her “I think I should gain weight”

Me “why would you do that”

Her “to look like this Siza girl, maybe he will look at me again”

Me “no need to do that just try befriend her that is what I am planning to do with Sizwe’s wife”

Her “explain to me” she said sitting up straight”

I am damn tired shame, and the next few days won’t be any easy, bear with me guys. Please participate,

reactions, comments and shares.

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 50 (not edited)

Siza

My excitement is people, I finished my 1st year smoothly and I am pleased that Mo pulled his strings to get me into a private hospital to go and shadow the Dr's there as a student Dr, I will be doing this for the entire festive season, but the chief of surgery agreed to give me breaks when I need to relax and go home to see my family and I appreciated that. I am starting the shift today and I honestly can't wait, this is the most amazing experience thus far, I am pretty sure that Siphophelo is smiling down at me. I miss her so much, I wish I had left the Khumalo residence in time before Dali could harm her, maybe she would be here with me, going to the best school, maybe Mo would have loved her, but I can't take back the hands of time. I just got out of the shower and put on my summer dress and sandals, I bought a backpack that I will use to back my comfortable sneakers and my scrubs and lunch box, I am receiving my scrubs today, that's gets me more excited I can see myself wearing them already thixo, that has to

be one of the most exciting things about medicine those nice scrubs. I snapped out of my thoughts with the biggest smile on my face. I make my way down stairs and find my man's seating on the barstool in the kitchen having his breakfast.

Him "I was thinking of sending a search party to look for you" I laugh

Me "oh come on, I didn't take long"

Him "check the time Sizakele, you don't want to be late on your first day now do you" I check my time and

I see I wasted the time I should be eating breakfast

Me "oh God I wasn't aware"

Him "I already packed your lunch babe; There is an apple, banana and yoghurt in your bag. You need to leave now, traffic will be a nightmare" I blush

Me "you are just the best my love" I take the bag with my staff

Him "come give me a kiss and go" I walk to him and kiss him so passionately

Me "goodbye boo" I blow him a kiss and walk out. My drive is not so bad, traffic is at a minimal and I

send glory to God, I park at the employee section where the security pointed me as my Reserved spot, I

laugh coz this has Razor written all over it, but how does he influence a whole private hospital. I walk

out and luckily I am on time, I get inside and the receptionist walks me to the Chief. She knocks and a

deep male voice shouts come in, we walk in and a white man is seating behind the desk

Her " Sir, the student Dr is here" he smiles

Him "thank you" she smiles and walks out

Me "good morning sir" he smiles

Him "Dr Dlamini welcome" he says it in a funny accent, I suppress my laugh

Me "thank you sir"

Him "come let me go show you to the lockers. And introduce you to the staff" I smile and follow him gladly.

Him "these are the lockers and you can go in and change so long, I will give you 2minutes and walk

down this corridor, you will see a conference room, I called the stuff to introduce you" I smile and walk

in the Dr's room, it is empty so I find my locker and it has my name and key, I open and find my light

blue scrubs and quickly change, I put my bag inside and take the tag with my name on it "Sizakele

Dlamini student Doctor" I smile and realize that this is really happening God. I pack away my bag, lock

and rush out to the conference room and I walk in to a room full of Drs and nurses.

Him "oh she is here, everyone this is our student Dr she will be with us for most of the holidays, she just

completed her 1st year and I must say she has pretty good marks, I didn't even obtain that I am jealous" everyone laughs and I just smile

Him "she will be shadowing each and every one of you, I am going to draw up a roster on who she

shadows on a particular day, and everyone please, if it has nothing to do with medicine don't make her

do it, she is here to learn can we kindly allow her the opportunity. I hope we will all welcome her with

open arms, Sizakele this is the staff you will get to know them, I hope you will learn from them they are



very much comfortable”

Me “thank you everyone” the smile at me.

Him “okay everyone please go back to work and save lives” they walk out

Him “oh nurse Uriel” a pretty petite lady who looks hella fine in her neat uniform.

Her “yes Dr Wallace”

Him “please go show Sizakele Dr Mkhize’s office he didn’t come to the introduction”

Her “definitely sir, Sizakele please follow me”

Me “thank you Sir”

Him “you will be with him this entire week, he is a OB/ GYN” I nod and I follow Uriel out.

Sizwe

Ever since I lost Siza I had to find another woman to replace her, not as a hostess though just as a

waitress, it will take me a long time before I find a classy lady like Siza, my wife really messed things up

for the business, I know she didn't want to continue working, but she could have been able to help out

when I have these monthly Gentleman's evenings. Vicky recommended that I hire her friend Thato, I

was skeptical at first but not anymore, she gets the job done and also takes care of my other needs, that

girl is a beast in the sack I tell you, me and her started a while back I don't know how but it just

happened. She lets me do everything I want to her and that is everything to me, she didn't even seem to

care that I used to fuck her friend. This time I am not taking chances, I am using a condom all the way.

We are in the hotel where we always book, she just done to me things I have never seen before, jeses. I

am looking at her walking back to me naked, she hands me my glass of champagne and sips of on hers.

Her "nation"

Me "mmhhh"

Her "I need to ask something" she say's doubtful

Me "there is nothing sexy with a woman who doesn't have

confidence, what do you want just say it

Thato" she sips again and take a deep breath

Her "okay then, there is an event I am going to, one of the girls I know is having a part, I need money for

my outfit and drinks" I laugh

Me "is that all?"

Her "yes" I shake my head

Me "you are funny. You were sounding as if you were going to ask me to leave my wife for you" she

laughs

Her "absolutely not, I know my place" I smile

Me "that is good to know. I will send you R20000 will it be enough?"

Her "I will let you know if it's not enough, thank you" she kisses me

Me "you please me Thato and I must do the same. What time is your shift?"

Her "I am off today babe" I smile

Her "oh that is good to hear, meaning our fun doesn't have to end as yet" she giggles and places her

glass down and gets on top of me, oh this is my nice escape from crazy Vicky and annoying Thandiwe.

Razor

I decided to have a chat with my daughter and give her the low down on things, I thought long and hard

about this and I know exactly what to do. Gadaffi was right, Mercy is the way she is because of me and I

must fix that before she deteriorates further. I called her yesterday and she agreed to meet up with me,

I am driving to her house, I hope that boy is at work, I need to talk to her all alone. I didn't tell Siza about

this, knowing her she would have begged me to find another way to deal with this but there is no time

for that now. She needs tough love and she needs it as in yesterday. I get to that fortress I bought and

parked; I walk to the house and take a deep breath. I press the door bells, she opens and half smiles, I just keep a straight face.

Her "daddy, come in" I walk in and wait for her to lead me further in" she walks to the lounge and we

seat down, I place my phone and car keys on the coffee table.

Me "I came here to talk, and whatever I am about to say will stick, I won't change my mind, I firstly want

to apologize, I failed you as a father and I let you get away with so much, I let you do as you please, I

haven't been a father I have been a friend and that stops now, I am taking back my parenthood from

you, from now I am the parent and you are the child, a child that has grown to be an adult, you are

married now and you belong with your husband, you are no longer my responsibility Mercy, I will

definitely right the mistakes of the past. I am going to cut your allowance by 50% , you are going to

decide on whether you going to start a lucrative business which I will fund provided that you submit a

detailed business plan, then option two, you go and pursue a higher education qualification, go to

university. If you don't decide on any of the two in a month I am cutting you off completely" she was

looking at me shocked, she couldn't believe her ears. I kept a straight face

Her "you are kidding me right daddy"

Me "unfortunately I am not feeling like Trevor Noah today  
Mercy"

Her "why would you want to do this to me daddy, how will I  
survive"

Me "I pay that boy very well, and half your allowance is not even  
a salary of a person with a

qualification" she lets her tears fall but I am not shaken

Her "daddy please, I wouldn't survive. I can't be going back to  
school, I don't even have anything I am

interested in studying, to even think of a business idea"

Me "how would you know if you don't try" she cry's harder and I  
clear my throat.

Her "daddy please don't do this please" I retrieve my wallet  
from my wallet from my back pocket and

take out a bank card and hand it to her.

Her "what is this?"

Me "that is your new bank card; I canceled the black card you  
were using" her eyes popped

Her "you are really serious" she said wiping her tears.

Me "yes I am"

Her "is it that girlfriend of yours making you do this to me?"

Me "this has nothing to do with Sizakele, leave her out of this. this is about you, I want you to grow up

and be able to stand on your own, I will not live forever" she chuckles

Her "wow Razor wow" I tighten my jaws

Me "I need an answer in a month Mercy" I say and take my phone and car keys and walk out without giving her a chance to say something.

Thandiwe

I decided to go to the spa today, I need some good pampering, it is times like these I wish I had friends,

but my husband doesn't want me to have any, for reasons known to him, reasons he doesn't want to

share with me, he refuses me to work too. that house can be big and lonely most times, I need to have

people to talk to, the only time we have guest is when we are hosting his business partners and their

wives, and those ladies own their own businesses and some

even work. I get to the hotel, my favorite, it has everything. I walk in and decide to eat first. I walk to their restaurant, I was about to be taken to my table when I saw Vicky from the club. She has a glass of champagne in front of her. she is looking like she is here with someone, but she is alone on the table

Me "sorry how long has that lady been here"

Her "it has been a while now, she has been nursing that glass" I laugh

Me "so she is alone?"

Her "yes she is, I bet she is here to fish for blesser, trying to look rich so they can approach her mxm"

Me "I see, I will be joining her" she nods

Her "I will get you the menu so long"

Me "thank you" I walked to that table

Me "Vicky hello" she smiles

Her "oh boss lady what a nice surprise" I smile

Me "mind if I join you?"



Her "not at all, but I was just finishing off this gad and living, I had an appointment but the person stood me up" I mentally roll my eyes

Me "oh don't leave join me let's have lunch"

Her "oh no I wouldn't disturb your peace" I know that is because she doesn't have money to pay for food.

Me "oh no please, on me please" she smiles

Her "okay if you insist boss lady"

Me "okay you gonna have to stop calling me that now, just Thandiwe" she smiles

Her "okay then" the waitress came and she ordered food and a glass of juice but I told her to cancel the

juice and get her a bottle of champagne, her eyes lit up as I mentioned that

Me "so how is everything at the club"

Her "everything is going pretty well, we managed to replace Siza" oh

Me "with who?"

Her "a friend of mine Thato" I nod

Me "oh okay"

Her "how about you, how is the baby"

Me "oh I am ready to pop this one out shame" she laughs

Her "by the look of things you are soon" I nod. Our food arrives and we dig in, she is showing this bottle

of champagne no mercy. Our conversation is flowing and I must admit it is nice having someone my age

to talk to.

Her "thank you for this"

Me "not a problem, we should do this again, before I give birth"

Her "I would love that" I wouldn't mind being the one who spends financially so long as I have someone

as close to a friend, and she seems to be the only one available for me right now, the rest of the day we

spend it laughing as she tells me her shenanigans.

Please react, comment and share. Participation is key akere.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 51 (not edited)

Mercy

I couldn't believe my ears guys, I don't know how I got into my father it has been two days since he

said what he said to me and to make matters worse my husband was not available to comfort me and

the pain I am going through, I tried calling him to explain what is going on but his phone kept on taking

me straight to voicemail, he called that night and told me the business he once mentioned came

through and he needed to go to Cape Town ASAP. I don't remember him mentioning it to me but it's no

biggy at least he will make money and help me out while I try get back into my father's good books, I

have never worked a day in my life and the last time I studied was when I was doing my matric and I had

no interest in going to university, my father has more money than you can ever think, and going to

university was for people who wanted work, to earn a salary, I don't need a salary my daddy can

definitely afford to take care of me even in his death, so I don't

know why he is doing this to me I mean  
he has never had a problem with it, then why is he acting like  
this, I bet you it is that Sizakele girl, she is  
poisoning him against me, I bet you she still holding a grudge  
against me about what happened to her  
daughter. I need to fix this, he has to change his mind hence I  
saw it fit to go talk to uncle G. I called and  
he told me he is at his house. I was already there thinking about  
how to go about this whole thing. His  
maid told me that he is in the shower and will be down in a  
minute. I was drinking my orange juice when  
he came through

Him "hey baby girl" I stood up and we shared a hug

Me "uncle G" I responded as low as possible so he can pity me  
and stand with me on this

Him "how are you baby?"

Me "not so good hey" he frowned

Him "want to talk about it?"

Me "that's why I came to see you" I take a deep breath

Him "I am all ears"

Me "it's daddy uncle G, he has cut my allowance and told me I have a month to decide whether I am

going back to school or starting a business and if I don't decide on any he will cut me off completely can

you imagine that" he kept a straight face

Him "what is wrong with what he has done nana" my eyes pop is this listening to me

Me "uncle G I am telling you daddy wants me to suffer"

Him "that is not what he wants to do Mercy, Razor won't live forever, he wants you to be independent,

to be able to provide like yourself, yes he has money, but anything can happen nana, you need

something to fall back on, life is unpredictable, we don't want you to find that out the harshest of ways"

Me "are you guys kidding me, it's not like his money will disappear someday without a trace uncle G" he

shakes his head

Him "Mercy you are narrow minded baby girl. Olivia is your younger sister, you too were raised by the

same rich man but she knew what could happen hence she went

to study as security for her own future,

why can't you see this too" I laugh

Me "oh so now I am being compared to my sister"

Him "this is why I am saying you are narrow minded, you shouldn't be seen the bigger picture with what

I just said but you only seeing me comparing you to Liv" I laugh

Me "I think I made a mistake by coming here, I was hoping you would talk to daddy for me"

Him "I will not be doing that Mercy. I understand where my brother is coming from, me and him has

seen this cruel world and we know how things can get. Everything can change within a blink of an eye"

Me "thanks for nothing then" I take my bag and walk out mad as hell, how dare he

Thato

Know I understand why Vicky is so obsessed with Nation, I mean man is fine honey, he is loaded and dick

game is on steroids, you please him and he will please you too,

he did send me that money I asked for

and this morning he send an extra R10 000, and called to tell me that it is my bonus for being a good girl.

You see I gathered information from Vicky, he told me that Sizwe likes to dominate most time in bed

and that he wants a woman who knows her place when it came to his wife and family, she mentioned

that he hated the fact that she would question him at work that's why it ended up being known at work

that they were sleeping together, I figured that is why he lost interest in her. to my own benefit, I let him

do anything to me in bed, I never mention his wife not even when he brings her up, I just listen and not

respond, I would just nod or shake my head, at work I don't give him looks, it is sir or boss, and that

scored me a bonus. If only Vicky knew how easy it is to please this man, all she had to do was keep her

mouth shut; now she gave me a manual to her man. Razor can go to hell with that fat thing of his, with

his R5000 allowances time he is richer than Nation. I am starting with saving, I took the 20k and stashed

it away for rainy days, I will blow this 10k. that is what I will be doing, when he gives me cash, I save

50% , life in Jozi is hard, it's either you hustle or be hustled ngwaneso. I got back from the mall with

groceries and I bought myself clothes, not designer though. I also bought us a bottle of Vodka and 24

savanna and take away. I found her on the couch watching TV as I walk in with the Uber driver helping

me get the things inside the house; she stood up as she saw me.

Her "haibo girl making it rain on a Wednesday while people are so broke"

Me "life is just good my friend" she laughs and opens a savanna and drink while helping me unpack the groceries

Her "where did you take the cash Thato" I smile

Me "let's just say I worked my magic and a man went crazy and he deposited 10K" she screamed

Her "you bitch, I didn't know you had a new fish"

Me "he doesn't want people to know about him babe, he is a well know person, very private" she nods



Her "I know that kind babe, as long as he is paying good money'

Me "exactly wena babe" I smile

Her "you are a bad bitch man" she laughs and we put the alcohol in the fridge and I take a dumpie and

the food, she comes with my clothes

Me "oh yeah give me that, I brought you something" she got excited

Her "oh babe thank you, she hugs me" it is just a black glittery dress with black high heels

Me "that is for the party we are going to this Saturday, I got myself a glittery short jumpsuit with the same shoes" she screamed in excitement

Her "you are the best Tee, I was stressing about an outfit for that party, you know how petty those

bitches are but you came through, we are going to look hot sweetheart"

Me "I know right"

Her "hey you won't believe happened Monday"

Me "I am all ears"

Her "I bumped into Thandiwe Sizwe's wife at the hotel; I was

the scouting but not even one fish that  
came out to play. She came to me and asked me to stay with  
her, moGhel bought me food, and about 3  
bottles of champagne and took me to the spa. I didn't have to  
work to make her my friend she just fell  
on my lap" I high five her and we laugh  
Me "if only she knew" but that also applies to you, I say in my  
head.

Her "you can say that again wena my friend, Sizwe won't have a  
choice but give me what I want" I laugh  
and we click our bottles

Me "just be careful"

Her "I will babe" we continue eating and she explains her plan  
with me and I just keep on laughing.

Mandla

I decided to spend the two days with the Queen, I have been  
spoilt like hell, I come home to a clean  
house, and soon as I enter the aroma of home cooked meals fill

my nostrils, God Uriel can cook, the first thing I get when I get home is a kiss and she ushers me to go change into more comfortable clothes once I finish showering, immediately when I get to the living room, I find a drink waiting for and the channel on Blitz, she knows I love it. I relax and get served with a plate of hot delicious meals prepared by my woman, as if that is not enough, she takes me to bed and have her way with me, I swear this woman was given special training on how to take care of her man, the thought of being back to the mansion is killing me, I am going to miss being with her. I am parking outside wondering if I should go in or what. I finally gather my strength and walk inside, I find her in the bedroom curled up and crying, I seat next to her and she immediately held on to me

Her "oh thank God you are back" I miss Uriel already, even when she wants to vent she makes sure I am taken care of and then tell what is bothering, then tell me why wouldn't I do everything for her"

Me "yeah I just landed not so long ago" she smiles

Her "I am happy to see, I missed you" I fake a smile

Me "me too, so tell me what is wrong?"

Her "its Razor baby you won't believe him"

Me "what did he do Mercy" she started crying again and it scared me

Me "talk to me please, what happened?"

Her "he cut my allowance by 50% baby"

Me "why did he do that?"

Her "he said I am a grown woman now and I should learn to fend for myself, gave me an ultimatum,

either I go to university and study or start a business if I don't he will cut me off completely" she cries

harder, VIVA Razor VIVA.

Me "but why are you crying, he is right, and it's not like he is not giving you options" she untangles

herself from me and gives me a deadly look

Her "not you too Khumalo"

Me "think about it Mercy, it is for your own benefit. He is actually doing you a favor, you will realize it

someday" she laughs

Her "are you fucken kidding me right now, I don't want to do any of those things Vusi"

Me "what the hell do you want to do with your life Mercy?"

Her "I just want my life to be there way it used to be"

Me "so you have absolutely zero ambitions and dreams"

Her "I do have dreams, I want to travel the world, meet the world's richest and famous, be free and carefree"

Me "wow just wow" I laugh

Her "you should have just stayed in Cape Town, you are useless" I chuckles

Me "if that is the case, I will go book myself at the hotel" I stand up and walk to the closet, grab my bag

and throw in a few outfits in there, she comes in

Her "baby I am sorry I didn't mean to say that"

Me "just leave me alone Mercy please"

Her "Khumalo please love, I am sorry please"

Me "let this useless man go and leave you in peace while you figure out how you will meet the worlds

richest and famous” I say laughing

Her “baby please” I take my bag and walk out, a part of me pissed another one happy as fuck to be going back to the lady in my house.

Siza

This has to be the proudest time in my life, the hospital is amazing and the staff is so nice, everything

one is friendly and all, or maybe it is just the first week, people will show me their true colors soon

enough. I haven't made friends yet, I spend my lunch in the cafeteria and eat the lunch box Mo makes

for me while I talk to him on the phone, he has been trying to clear his schedule around my lunch time

so we can talk and I tell him about my morning, he is just so sweet, my gentle bear. Today though he

had a court appearance so we couldn't talk, I am sad but then again I can't expect him to be on the

phone. He is the owner of a law firm after all. I had a good morning though, we deliver two babies and

they look so adorable, reminded me of the day I gave birth to

Phephe, it was so painful but just a beautiful experience. I feel like being a Dr is my calling my heart is at peace, I know it has only been 3 days but I am enjoying it fully. My thoughts are disturbed by the lovely nurse Uriel she is so calm and collected, she is indeed her name, the angle Uriel. she smiles at me and I return it.

Me "hello"

Her "hi Dr can I join you?"

Me "please just call me Siza. And yes join me please" her smile widens and she seats down

Her "thank you, how are you settling in?"

Me "very well thank you, I am enjoying and learning a lot from this opportunity"

Her "Dr Mkhize speaks highly of you to the others" I smile

Me "I always feel like he doesn't like me, he is always so cold" she laughs

Her "that is his nature, plus he is strict with his students, he is a perfectionist, he wants you to just do

good" I smile and nod

Me "thank you for letting me know" she looks at my backpack

Her "oh this is cute, must have cost you a fortune"

Me "it did but I couldn't hold myself" she laughs

Her "I wish I could just walk into Luis Vuitton eyes closed and pick out everything without looking at the

price tag, pay and walk out, go straight home, and only look at the purchase slip and die in peace coz I

would be so damn broke" I laugh so loud.

Me "eish babe, tell me about, it is much better to buy them with someone else's money" she smiles

Her "true that, these man must just pay for everything" we laugh, oh I like her shame, she is cool people

Me "I think my lunch is over I need to go back to work now"

Her "okay dear, see you tomorrow at lunch again?"

Me "I would love that"

Her "enjoy the rest of your day" she say's smiling

Me "thanks, you too" I return a genuine smile and walk away. I could befriend her really.



Please react, leave a comment and share. Let's all participate guys. I love you lots.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 52(Not edited)

Olivia

The festive has began, drinking everyday is allowed now, I wish Siza was here but she needs to work, I

am super proud of her really, and yours truly also passed all her modules and Razor was so happy he

told me to write him a list of everything I want as a reward for my hard work and dedication, i have a list

with me and I am pretty sure this is the one I am going to submit to him, do you guys want me to share

with you what I wrote down? Even if you say no I am doing to tell you anyway, so the first thing I asked

for was an apartment upgrade, preferably in the North, I also asked for an all expenses paid trip to 5

different countries at once in January as a way of relaxing before school resumes, this next one might be

me pushing my luck far but why the hell not, anything is possible with my dad, so I asked for a private

jet, I know guys I am too much, lastly I asked him to sponsor at least 2 first year students who do not

have funding to study next year. I hope he grants me at least two things here. To feel the spirit I have

already started on my corona, felt like beer today, and nothing beats corona with lemon, the music is

bursting through the speakers, my door bell rings and I roll my eyes must be the neighbor coming to

complain, don't these people know it's December, all of this is allowed, mxm times like these I wish I

was staying in the township, I lowered the volume and go open, to my surprise it's just my dad. I smile and he shakes his head

Him "isn't it too early to be making so much noise"

Me "ke December boss" I say dancing

Him "I am pretty sure it doesn't necessarily means you should kill your ear drums like that" I laugh and

he spots the beer on my coffee table and he narrows his eyes and looks at me

Me "what daddy"

Him "Olivia, do you have a boy over" I laugh

Me "what if I did?" I tease

Him "I swear Olivia I will break his neck" he say's moving to my bedroom and after to the rest of the

other rooms I burst out laughing and throw myself on the couch and take my beer, he comes back

Me "did you find him?" he laughs

Him "you would have heard him scream like a girl if I had laid my hands on him" I smile

Me "how do you expect me to find a man to marry me"

Him "Olivia don't sour my mood"

Me "okay sorry, but this beer is mine"

Him "champagne not good enough for you anymore"

Me "variety is the spice of life" he laughs and shakes his head

Him "mxm, I came to get my list Olivia" I jump from the couch and go fetch it, I hand it to him and he

opens it and then he laughs

Me "what?" I frown

Him "number 3 wow" I laugh

Me "oh come on"

Him "I am just saying Liv" he shakes his head and laughs

Me "make it happen Razor"

Him "yes madam, I will see what I can do, now get off that couch I am taking you out for brunch and

maybe a little shopping" I didn't wait for him to say it twice.

Me "you the best man you the best" I say running to the bathroom.

Thato

I have been with Nation since last night, the man doesn't want me to leave and for a man who has a

wife, he is so relaxed, I didn't even bother asking him why, it is not my business after all, if he doesn't

care about his own wife why should I give a fuck, when I am with him, it's about us and no one else. I am

not complaining that he has kept me here coz it means I am

pleasing him, and he is definitely going to reward me heavily plus the is this handbag I saw with matching shoes, I need to collect as much as I can before Vicky finally connects the dots coz I will be doomed. I got out of the bathroom and he is on the bed naked with a glass of scotch, he bits his lower lip and I smile to myself

Him "do you have any idea how sexy you are woman?" I smile

Me "oh really papi?"

Him "isn't this proof enough?" he say's pointing at his erection

Me "I will need to take care of that" he laughs

Him "as much as I would love that Tee I need a minute babe, you overworked me"

Me "okay I will order room service then" he laughs

Him "please I am famished" I call them and place our

Me "so what are we doing to do today"

Him "I just want to be closed in with you listening to your crazy stories, and fuck the day lights out of

you, is that plan enough?"

Me "I take it we are sleeping again tonight"

Him "I don't see why not babe" I smile and kiss him full on the lips

Me "okay then Boss, whatever you want I will gladly do"

Him "before I forget, let me deposit something for you, I want you to buy yourself some clothes, you deserve a holiday" I scream in excitement

Me "are you for real?" he laughs

Him "of course I am Tee, you please me, so why shouldn't I" I smile

Me "so where am I going?"

Him "Maldives?" yes yes and yes, Vicky is going to be so jealous, I kiss him

Me "thank you dzaddy" he takes his phone and press for a few minutes

Him "R50K deposited into your account, go buy yourself clothes, I will arrange for the trip and let you know when you are going okay?"

Me "okay thank you" his phone rang and he rolls his eyes

Him "yes" he says annoyed, he listens and jumps out of bed in a

hurry, he throws the phone on the bed

and get dressed so fast, he then took out his wallet and took out a few R200 notes

Him "use that for taxi, you can spend the night again if you want, I will tell them to make you

comfortable, I will call you later but for now I have to rush there is an emergency" he says and walks

out. I take my phone to check the notification and indeed the R50K is in my account. I go crazy like

maniac. There is a knock on the door

Voice "room service" I go take the robe and go open

Me "thank you, you can leave it there" she smiles

• Her "Mr Dlomo told us to avail anything you want and let you stay for as long as you want, if you need

anything we are a call away" I smile

Me "oh did he now, oh well thank you" I smile at her and she exits. Hai man I can get used to this life

man, go monate, monna motho o monate guys (another woman's man is nice).

Thandiwe

My husband is a useless piece of shit, he didn't come back last night, and when I call he doesn't answer,

I am worried sick about him and he has no regard for me, I bet you he is with some whore in some hotel,

I haven't been feeling okay since last night. i am too tired and numb, time I was alone in this house, I

even think I should drive myself to the hospital just in case I am about to give birth coz really , if I wait

for night and he doesn't come back again, I will be in trouble. I stand up from the couch and make my

way to the kitchen to get some water, as soon as I open the fridge I feel a sharp pain in my abdomen,

and fluid run down my legs, fuck my water just broke, Oh God, I try move to get my car keys but they get

serve, Oh no. I scream in pain holding my waist, I try to walk to get my phone but it is just so painful this

time, I scream again and the door opens, I hear footsteps approach, at least this man whore is back, just

in time for his damn baby



Me "Sizwe, I am in here" a second later the garden man walks in

Him "madam is everything okay"

Me "I thought you left?"

Him "I had to finish by the pool" I nod and the pain came again,  
I couldn't help but scream

Him "Mrs. Dlomo?"

Me "get my phone from the lounge" he hurries out and comes  
back with it, I dial my husband and finally

he answers

Sizwe "yes" he answers annoyed

Me "fuck you yezwa, get your ass to the hospital this minute" I  
hang up

Me "Do you have a drivers license?"

Him "yes I do"

Me "okay please take the car keys over there by the microwave  
and drive me to the hospital" he nods

and hurries; he helps me to the car and speeds off after I tell  
him which hospital to take me to. We get

there and he runs inside, he comes back with two nurses and a

wheelchair, they quickly pushed me

inside

Nurse "page Dr Mkhize now, she is burning up. They took me to the room and connected me to the

machines. A minute later an elderly Dr walked in, I checked the monitor, the pain was excruciating and

by now I was feeling weak

Dr "this is bad, take her to the operating room, we are performing an Emergency caesarian section, find

me my the surgical nurse Uriel and my student Dr, I want her to come and observe" they pushed me to

the OR and minutes later laying there not feeling anything

Dr "okay Mrs. Dlomo, we are now going to safely deliver the baby okay"

Me "okay Dr" I smile. His face diapered and I didn't feel a thing, a few minutes later, a piercing cry filled

the room. They brought the baby to me to show mw

Nurse "you have a beautiful baby girl" I smile and let out a tear

Me "she is so perfect God" she smiles

Nurse "okay I am going to bath her, you will see her soon okay"

I nod. I lay there for a few more minutes, I guess they are closing me up. Once they are done I am moved to my private room, with a baby cot next to my bed. I find Sizwe already in there. The porters make sure I am placed correctly and the nurses do what they need to do then they walk out.

Me "we have a girl"

Him "I was hoping for one, where is she?"

Me "they are bathing her amongst other things" he smiles and I keep a straight face

Him "I am sorry I should have been there, I just had an emergency to take care of, sorry mamakhe"

Me "don't lie to me Sizwe, we both know you were somewhere having fun with one of your whore"

Him "I promised I would never do that to you and I meant it" he sounded genuine though

Siza

I got pulled into an emergency cesarean section, I haven't seen

one since I got here, we have just been delivering the natural way and why my pager went off I was so excited to find myself in the Operating room, this is my dream to be a Dr to be a Surgeon, walking in there made it seem all so real. I got so excited I say my future in there, me saving lives and all, saving lives with a scalpel. When I got in there Dr Mkhize had already started, I scrubbed in after I sanitized. I didn't even see the patient but the high blood was crazy. I hope they both make it. Everything went smoothly, we closed her up and scrubbed out, the nurses will clean her up. Funny thing I felt so drawn to that baby girl, maybe it's because she is so cute but it was deeper than that, I even found myself in the maternity ward looking at her in the cot, Dr Mkhize appeared

Him "oh here you are" I panic

Me "oh sorry sir I just uhm I" he smiles

Him "calm down, I also tend to come see how my handy work is"  
I return the smile

Him "we need to go check on the mothers scar and clean it it

has been a few hours now, I love doing

that myself too, I don't want to be known for leaving my patients with infections"

Me "of course Sir" he laughs

Him "I also heard that it's time for the baby to be fed, how about you pick her up and we go to her

mommy" thank God I wanted to hold her so bad

Me "okay Dr" I pick up baby Dlomo and she is such a cutie, we walk to the mothers private room, my

senior walks in first and I follow my eyes not moving from this little one.

Voice "what the hell are you doing with my daughter Sizakele" I look up and see my sister and Sizwe

Dr "calm down, this is my colleague, she is under me, she is our student doctor for the holidays" her

eyes widen; I walk to her bed and hand her the child without saying anything.

Me "a Student Doctor" she says reading my name tag

Dr "yes ma'am. She is still studying with Wits med school, so we are giving her practical exposure to the

field, don't worry she is a good one" I kept her eyes on her the

whole time

Her "I see" she say's looking at me with so much embarrassment

Dr "Dr Dlamini, I am going to get the things we are going to need okay, I will be a minute"

Me "I can go get them Sir"

Dr "I know you can Siza, but it is a lot you will struggle memorizing them, I will be quick stay here" he

went out and there was awkward silence, but she decided to break it first

Her "so you are studying medicine"

Me "that is correct"

Her "so your reach boyfriend faked matric results for you to get access I see, you have never been smart

little sister we both know that"

Me "I am pretty sure the Gauteng department of education and Wits will argue with you on that" her

eyes fell

Me "you will be here for a few day Thandiwe I suggest you keep your thoughts to yourself, you are the

patient I am there Dr, here we are not siblings, definitely not the girl you used to bully, understood”

Her “student doctor you mean” I laugh

Me “Dr none the less MRS DLOMO” I made sure to say that loud enough, she must just understand the difference in our titles.

Sizwe “uhm Siza, congratulations”

Me “thank you Sizwe, and I want my money from the last job before I was violated” he laughs

Sizwe “totally forgot about that, I will deposit soon”

Me “you better” I say laughing, if lemon was a person it would be Thandiwe, she is sour man

Dr “I am back, Dr Dlamini you will be leading this one” she frowns and I smile.

PLEASE LEAVE A COMMENT, REACT AND SHARE

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 53 (not edited)

Siza

I love my job but it is patients like Thandiwe who make us dread going to work, I mean she wants to make everything so personal, she even complained to Dr Mkhize that I am not gentle with her when I clean the wound, can you believe her, to my defense Dr Mkhize told her that I am doing it the way I am suppose to, she is just uncomfortable coz the wound is still fresh. I just can't wait for her to be discharged shame, we are keeping her coz of her high blood pressure, and at least today my shift is from 2pm. So my darling boyfriend decided to take me out for lunch and I will drive to work from here, we are just in Melrose arch, I have been silent this whole drive, we are using my car and he is the one driving. We get there and he parks and doesn't open the door, he is looking at me and I sigh

Me "I am sorry baby" he sighs

Him "what is eating you up babe talk to me" I take a deep breath



Me "my sister love"

Him "did she give you trouble again"

Me "yeah she is, she is a patient at the hospital, she is doing everything in her power to make me look

bad to my senior, if that man didn't see how good my work is, I am sure he would have believed her"

Him "why didn't you tell me soon, I would have called the chief to pull you out of The OB/GYN" I smile

Me "no love, I can't always run to you for such, I don't want the other Dr's to think I can't stand my

ground, I will take all the hell thrown at me, I am good at what I do, I won't let my sister take that away

from me just because she expected me to be a failure all my life" he smiles at me

Him "I am so proud of you my love" he kisses my hand

Me "thank you baby"

Him "okay we are going to get out of the car and go eat, don't think about work okay just us"

Me "okay Mr Motaung"

Him "I love you okay" he smiles

Me "I know and I love you too babe" we share a brief kiss and she gets out of the car and comes around

to open my door. We walk hand in hand to the restaurant, people are looking at us

Me "I hate it when people stare, it is so rude Gosh"

Him "how can they not, no one can pretend to not see the perfection that is you" I blush

Me "oh yeah right"

Him "I wish you could see yourself through my eyes and most people's eyes then maybe just maybe you

will understand" I blush some more, thank you God for my dark complexion. We get to the place we are

eating at; it is African cuisine type of vibe. I am craving so many things, so the best way is to order what I

want and make Mo order something that I want too, simple. I order steamed bread and tripe. For

starter I order chicken feet. I convince Mo to order chicken gizzards and hearts for starter then, main I

order (he ordered) samp with stew and spinach. The waitress leaves after being entertained by our back

and forth.

Him "so now you are going to eat everything you wanted" I laugh

Me "baby we are going to share hau. What is yours is mine" he chuckles

Him "what about what is yours is also mine" I laugh and shake my head

Me "we will see about that" he smiles amused

Him "you are an abusive beautiful creature that I love so much" I blush

Me "you don't have a choice baby, you can't leave without me" he blushes and those dimples come out

Him "the truth in that statement" I smile

Me "but feeling is very much mutual, I don't want to live without you either" we hold hands and smile

Thato

I checked out and went straight to the mall, there is no way I am going to spend all this money on

designer clothes, it's not like he is going to send me to the Maldives without any money, I still have nice

clothes, I will just buy swim wear, and maybe two pairs of push ins, channel and Gucci just to make my insta more expensive. I buy a couple of summer dresses at Small Street and I make my way to Dragon city to go buy new inches. Once I am done I decide to buy that friend of mine some drinks, I buy 24 savanna again, I take an Uber back to our place and order pizza online. I get home and she is not there I place my things on the couch and put 6 pack in the fridge, the other 18 wouldn't fit in there, I have been buying groceries like crazy, I can afford so why not. the security at the gate comes to let me know that the scooter is at the gate, I go with him and pay then go back to our flat, I decide to start drinking, she will join when she gets here. About an hour later she arrives looking tired as hell.

Me "you my darling look like you have been through war" she laughs

Her "yoh I am fucken tired, you'd swear it was a night shift, it was so packed, I hate December"

Me "aah askies my chommie, let me get you a savanna"

Her "oh please, I also came with a bottle of vodka, thought you were not coming back again" I smile and

walk to the kitchen take out two dumpies and a cranberry juice and glasses and go back to the lounge

Me "guess what?" I say excitedly

Her "he gave you R1million" I laugh

Me "I wish, but he is sponsoring my trip to Maldives, gave me money to buy clothes for the trip, I am

just waiting to be told when I am leaving" her eyes widened

Her "no way, this guy is not playing mos, babe ai shame whatever you have been doing to this man, just

continue doing it but bona excel more" I laugh and we dique our bottles

Me "I plan to babe, I want to collect enough that when he decides to dump me I have saved as much as possible"

Her "that is good idea, don't lose focus like me, look Sizwe left me without taking me to simple Durban, I

didn't even save anything from the R15K's he used to give me" I just keep a straight face

Me "that one is nje is like Razor, rich but stingy" she laughs

Her "tell me about it hle love"

Me "want to see what I bought" she nods vigorously; I get the things and give to her.

Her "yeeses these are so nice, your insta is going to be fire I kid you not, that inch Thato yoh hle" I smile

Me "I wanted that hair for the longest time and when he deposited R50k I just had to shame"

Her "he what? R50k damn Thato"

Me "I was as shocked, I almost fainted when he told me I deserve a holiday"

Her "you didn't ask for the holiday, he just offered" I nod

Me "I think it is fucking time I forget about Sizwe, if there are men out there like your blesser, why the

hell I am trying to get back in the bed of a stingy man"

Me "yes wena babe, you deserve so much better than that nxa"

Her "imagine hle, not even Durban but he used to fuck me in all directions, what the hell" I laugh

Me "forget him, let him focus on his family" she takes a sip of her savanna

Her "Thato mix the vodka tuu, this thing is making me angry, not that I am not happy for you, it just made me realize that I have been wasting my time" I mix for the both of us and hand it to her

Me "I will ask my bae if he doesn't have a friend looking for someone to please him ne?"

Her "I would really appreciate that friend, I also wanna travel the world" I laugh

Me "ska wara wena I will ask him"

Thandiwe

My daughter is so perfect God, I just fell in love the minute I saw her, Sizwe named her Kayise, I bet you she is going to be a daddy's princess, her name say's it all really. Sizwe has been here ever since, you should see him when he is holding his daughter love radiates from his eyes, they already have this bond, I guess the love of a man and his daughter is everything. I just pray Kayise is the solution to my marital problems I hope she makes Sizwe realize that he has to be a

good man for all of us. He needs to start acting right. I am wondering where he is, he hasn't called today, he only comes during visiting hours which is any minute from now. My mind shifts to the fact that Sizakele is now a medical student, I can't believe this, and the fact that she is one of my Dr's make my blood boil, she was meant to be a nothing for the rest of her life, she disgraced baba and for that she has to suffer, why is the universe giving her a break, I am the one who is suppose to benefit from all good the world has to offer, I did all baba ever wanted. The door opens and Sizwe walks in with my parents, oh my word, I smile and let a tear out.

Me "oh nkosiyam, what are you guys doing here"

Baba "haibo Thandi ka baba, is that how you greet in the city"

Me "I am sorry baba, just that I wasn't expecting to see you guys here"

Ma "your husband called to inform us that you have given birth and when he mentioned you being

operated on, you father just wanted to come see you" I smile at



my father

Me "it is a nice surprise, I have missed you thanks for coming"

Baba "I wouldn't stay back knowing my only child is in the hospital, how are you feeling"

Me "I am getting there"

Ma "I will stay behind a bit to take care of you yezwa"

Me "I will really appreciate that ma, thank you"

Sizwe "where is Kayise"

Me "she went to take her bath" he smiles

Baba "hai they must bring her back we want to see our granddaughter, I love the name Dlomo"

Sizwe "ngiyabonga baba" the door opens and Dr Mkhize and Siza walk in, she is holding my baby and

smiling at her, I hate that. They come to the other side; Siza hasn't seen our parents and they also

haven't recognized her. She hands me my child my parents look at Kayise without paying attention to

her.

Ma "oh she is so cute bakithi, looks so much like her big brother

Dr "sorry to disturb this family moment but we came to give my

patient pain meds and check on her  
incision scar”

Baba “it is no bother munzane (sir) you can continue with your  
job” his eyes landed on Siza and his jaw

immediately clenched, I smile

Baba “ufunani wena la, Thandiwe didn’t I tell you that you will  
not be associated with this girl” my

mother finally saw Siza

Ma “oh sthandwa sami, oh my baby, wenzani lana” she goes to  
hug her, my mom has always preferred

her over me, I mean the attention has to be on Kayise but  
Sizakele just had to steal my baby’s shine

Her “hello mama, when did you get here”

Me “we just arrived baby” she kisses her lips

Baba “Sizakele get out of here, you are not a part of this family”  
she looks at baba with a straight face

Her “I know that very well Mr Dlamini, I have known that for the  
past 8 years so trust me I know”

Baba “then why are you still in here”

Ma “baba please, if Thandiwe wants her here we should respect

that”

Me “oh no mama, I don’t want her here trust”

Baba “then what the hell is this girl doing in here”

Dr “I am sorry to disturb, but I don’t quiet follow what is happening here. This is my student Dr, she is

here with me, she is an employee of this hospital for the holidays, she is a medical student with the

prestige Wits med school, and she was top of her class the past year. I might know what exactly is going

on here but we are not going to bring personal matters, she is good at what she does and if you don’t

trust her at least trust me, I am here to supervise her and ensure she is practicing safe medicine

procedures, and so far she has being excellent. So are you going to let us both do our job” I look at my

father who was as shocked as me to find out she is a medicine student. He swallowed hard

Baba “apologies Dr, you can continue with your duties” he looked so embarrassed and that angered me,

I wanted him to breathe fire. I look at my mother and she is looking at Siza with tears in her eyes, you

could see how proud she is of her, they emotions were in her eyes, she has never looked at me like.

Baba "please excuse me, I am feeling dizzy, I will go out for fresh air"

Dr "no please sit, let me look at you" the Dr went to him and examined him

Dr "your heart is beating very fast" wait here I will go get something to normalize it, in the mean time Dr

Dlamini you can start with cleaning the patients wound" she nods and puts on gloves and pulls up my

pyjama top and lowers my trousers and starts, I hate that she is touching me.

Ma "oh baby, look at you, oh thank you God. You look nice in those scrubs, remind me to take pictures

of you, I need to go show MaNtuli and the other nurses at work" she laughs

Her "I will mama"

Ma "when you said you got a chance to shadow Dr's for the holiday's I didn't think you will be working

at such a big private hospital"

Her "God has been faithful, when it is time to show off with you

it's mind blowing I was left shocked

myself" mama cries

Ma "that is so true Siza" she finishes and the Dr also finish helping my father and he comes to check on

me

Her "it is healing pretty well, it is no longer swollen, and rigid"

Dr "I can see, you did well here, if you were up to me, they should already give you your qualification"

they all laugh except my father and I

Ma "hau Dr is she that good?"

Dr "for someone who only has 1st year of university she is a sharp one, she is going places no lie"

Ma "I am happy to hear that, I am her mother and I am a nurse back in our village" she say's with the

widest smile

Dr "oh is it, it is nice to meet you Mrs. Dlamini, maybe you should come work here side by side with

your daughter"

Ma "I will think about it" they laugh again"

Dr "okay we are done here, you can go back to admiring the

beautiful baby” I am so pissed at this

moment, this was supposed to be about me and my daughter  
but she once again stole the lime light,  
stole my moments, I just loath Sizakele.

Ma “baby how will we meet, I want to sleep with you tonight” I  
roll my eyes

Me “I am getting of work at 9pm, I will pick you up, were you  
will around that time”

Ma “you now drive Siza”

Me “I will explain later okay, I need to go back to work” mama  
nods and she walks out

Ma “where is that beautiful princess”

Me “oh now you are done with your precious Dr Daughter you  
suddenly remember that my child exists”

Sizwe “I will not have you talk to your mother in that manner”

Ma “I haven’t seen your sister I a while Thandiwe, what was I  
suppose to do ignore that she is here”

Me “you came to this city not her” my mother sighs, I look at  
my father who is still sitting on the same

spot staring at the blank wall. What the hell is wrong with baba  
today

Ma "yazi I don't know why you are so bitter when it comes to your sister" I roll my eyes.

Razor

I haven't heard from Mercy and honestly I won't even worry myself about her, I won't even feel guilty about it, I gave her option and if she doesn't choose than I am done with her. she need to grow up and if she doesn't realize that herself I will make sure she does, it is already, I am waiting for Siza to get home she is knocking off at 9pm. Work has been keeping us apart, I miss her so much, at least she doesn't work weekends, so tomorrow I am planning on spoiling her rotten and making love to her like it is our last time, I am just glad that she has been sleeping here ever since she started at the hospital. My phone vibrates and it's her, I blush

Me "soft"

Her "my love, how are you"

Me "I am fine baby, how about you"

Her "I am okay, just tired, uhm baby"

Me "what's wrong soft" I stand from my seat

Her "nothing love, just that my mom is here in the city, I met with her at the hospital with my father,

they came to see my sister, she asked to spend the night with me, so I won't be able to come back to the

house, I will pick her up and go to the apartment" I won't lie I felt sad, I miss her

Me "oh okay my love I understand "

Her "I am sorry baby" she says sincerely

Me "don't be Soft; you haven't seen her in a while. Go get her and spoil her, bond with her, I will be

here waiting for you"

Her "okay thank you. I love you okay"

Me "I know Soft and I love you more"

Her "laters baby" I blush

Me "call me when you get to Braam"

Her "will do" she hangs up and I seat there not knowing what to do with myself. I decide to look at

Olivia's list again. Okay I can do number 1, will get the estate



agent on it ASAP, number 2, 5 countries,

nope I am cutting it to 3, she needs to come back to register on time. I look at number 3 and laugh, her

humor is not lost at all. She is not getting any private from me. I laugh again and shake my head, Olivia. I

look at number 4 and smile, my baby is so selfless Jesus, this was supposed to be about her, but she

managed to make it out to be about others, I raised an amazing young lady. I am so proud of her; I think

I will increase the number from 2 to 5. I will go see her tomorrow so she can start look for those 5

recipients. I will have to go talk to my lawyers and bank to make the funds available on time. I think we

can actually turn this into a bursary foundation, sponsor 5 kids every year. I should talk to my legal

associates about this, and talk to G to ask him to convince his underworld associates to contribute too,

let them positively contribute to society too. I sigh and go pour a drink; I think I will research about this till I go to bed.

Please leave a comment, react and share with others. Have a

great weekend see you guys Monday.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 54 (not edited)

Siza

Since my father brought back painful memories, things I didn't want to remember, things I wish I could

forget about, I am just grateful that he met a new and improved vision of myself, I have amounted to

more than he ever expected, hell I even exceeded, he always thought I would be a no body, that I will

suffer for the rest of my life because I had a child, just one mistake my father hated me with every fiber

of his being, I have accepted that he will never love me again, if he even did. I am happy now I am

making something of my life and I am proud, gone are those days where I wished he would come and

tell that he loves me and that he forgives me, to tell it is okay I can come home. I am my own person; I

will love those who love me that's it. After my shift I didn't even go change, I am just so tired. I walk to my car and take out my phone, Sizwe has already sent me his location, I drive there and it is a beautiful house, the guard opens for me and i drive in, I park and notice my father and Sizwe sitting outside in the garden, they are both looking at my car, I sigh and walk out to them.

Me "hey Sizwe" he smiles

Him "Siza, I hope you didn't encounter a problem getting here" I laugh

Me "not at all hey, you know with technology" I say flashing my phone

Him "oh yes, nice beast by the way" he say's referring to my Bentley

Me "oh thank you, she is extraordinary" I smile and he nods, my father is sitting there eating nails, this one and his daughter are sour. I hear my mother approaching us singing

Her "oh finally you are here my baby" she hugs me

Me "hey mama, are you ready to leave"

Her "yes baby my bag is by the door, let's go"

Me "okay then, bye Sizwe"

Him "bye Soft" I frown

Me "only one person is allowed to call me that" he chuckles and raise his hands

Her "Dlamini, Siza and I are leaving, goodnight"

Baba "you better be on time so we can go see our daughter at the hospital"

Her "Sizakele will drop me off there tomorrow at visiting hours" he didn't say anything, my mother took

my hand and we left. Our drive was short, we get to the apartment and Liv is in the lounge watching TV,

she stands up as she sees us

Me "honey I am home, and I bring with me a guest"

Liv "hey babe, dumela ma"

Her "yebo sisi how are you?"

Liv "I am very well thanks, yourself"

Her "I am well too sisi ngiyabonga"

Me "so mama, this is Olivia, Liv, this is my mother" they get so excited and start hugging, they have spoken a few times on the phone, they instantly get along.

Me "I am just going to take a shower, mama let me show you my bedroom"

Her "go and bath, you will show me when you are done, I am still talking to uLiv"

Me "oh okay, Liv please order some food, too tired to cook"

Liv "yes ma'am I am on it" I go shower and by the time I finish the food has already arrived, we sit and

eat, while my mother keeps on asking about school and work, she touched on the car subject and Liv

choked on her drink, I told her I will tell her everything tomorrow. I am planning a nice mommy and

daughter session, we stayed up till 3 am, talking, crying and laughing, I realize how I have longed to be with my mother like this.

The next day we woke up and took our bath and we were out of the door, I invited Olivia but she said

she wants to give mama and me a chance to bond, I took her to

the hotel first and we got ourselves a massage.

Her "I have always wanted to do this, it is very nice, these girls have magical hands, I feel brand new"

Me "I know right, I come here at least once a month"

Her "haibo Siza, you can afford this place every month"

Me "it is not expensive mama" I answer as my defense

Her "don't lie to me Siza, you drive that big car, even a fool can tell that it is so expensive, baby look at

yourself, you are clearly wearing expensive clothes, Sizakele you even have that card only rich people

have, who is this man" I look at her, what if she doesn't approve of Molemo

Me "mama, I uhm he" I sigh

Her "talk to me sthandwa sami"

Me "okay, mama I am with someone, we are very much in love with each other, he loves me he treats

me like a queen and I always feel like I am the only girl in the world, he does everything for me, he pays

for my studies, he is even the one who got me entry at medical

school, he bought me that car as a  
birthday present and the card also”

Her “sounds like he is a rich young man”

Me “he is rich mama, but that is not why I am with him, I love  
him, and mama”

Her “yes my baby”

Me “please don’t be disappointed in me, I am still the same  
person, we just fell in love”

Her “oh baby please don’t tell me he is married nana”

Me “oh no he isn’t mama, it is not that”

Her “Sizakele talk to me I am your mother, I wouldn’t judge you”  
I sigh, I am so scared of telling her

Me “mama Molemo, is way older than me” she laughs

Her “that is what you are worried about nana, Sizakele we are  
from the village, we are married to men

older than us, look at your father and I for example, he married  
me when I was 18 and he was 35 at that

time, 17 years older than me, so don’t feel bad baby, just please  
tell me he is not an old grey man with a

walking stick” I burst out laughing

Me "oh my God mama, he is not, he is still fresh that I can guarantee you"

Her "okay sweetheart, so how old is this Molemo wakho?" I sigh

Me "he is 25 years older than me" she counts with her fingers

Her "that makes him 48 years of age, he is only 4 years older than me, Sizakele you took my boyfriend

phela lana" I laugh and become relieved, I thought she was going to be so disappointed in me

Me "not a chance, that one is mine and mine alone. I need to tell you one last thing" she narrowed her

eyes

Her "don't tell me your pregnant please baby, you need to finish school first" I laugh

Me "I am not ready for another child mama relax about that, Molemo is Olivia's father, and Olivia is

Mercy's sister, Mercy is Vusi's wife" she gulped down her glass of wine

Her "you don't say Sizakele, indaba engaka. So does your friend know about you and her father"

Me "she does, everyone knows, she supports us fully, she didn't understand at first but she gave us a



chance”

Her “that is better, I want to meet this man” I look at her shocked

Me “why mama”

Her “Sizakele, I want to meet that man of yours, you are going to take me to him after I go see your

sister, and don’t warn him, I want to see the real him not the act” so soon kodwa mama, oh Christ. We

have brunch at the hotel too then I take her to Sandton city and buy her a few dresses and shoes, I

bought her a Luis Vuitton bag and she went crazy, she even changed bags in the shop, she wanted to go back to the village immediately to brag to her colleagues, we had ice cream and I drove her to the

hospital. We were already 15 minutes late.

Thandiwe

According to my dad, my mother slept at Sizakele’s place. She is even late, I thought she came for me

and Kayise, but now she has turned this trip to being about her

precious daughter, my father is sitting beside me with my daughter in his arms, she was sleeping so peacefully.

Him "Thandi ka baba"

Me "yebo Dlamini"

Him "tell me, where does that girl get that car from, according to your husband it costs a fortune"

Me "she is dating this old rich man"

Him "she has no shame, parading here like she is a queen, while sleeping with men to get all these

things, she doesn't learn, that man will get her pregnant and leave her too"

Me "exactly baba, and you won't believe that the man is Vusi's father in law"

Him "Vusi, the same one who fathered her late daughter?"

Me "the very same one baba cabanga"

Him "yoh that girl is a harlot" I laugh and my mother walks in with a LV bag in her hand, where did she get that one from.

Her "for someone you hate so much, you are interested in her life"

Him "you are late and you come here and start talking rubbish, you should be apologizing"

Her "the two of you are so evil shame, the hate you have for my daughter is too much, she is succeeding

in life and that haunts you both because you thought you were God, you will never decide on how her

life will be, she has been through hell and she made it out, you as a father should be proud to have a

daughter like her but you are sitting on your ass with you equally evil daughter speaking evil of Sizakele,

she is your blood Dlamini. Why do you despise her so much why, she made one mistake and that was

not enough to make you hate her, so tell me what is it that you want from her, you want her dead is

that when you will be happy?" baba was quiet looking down

Me "you have always loved her more than me" I felt a hot slap on my cheek

Her "say that nonsense one more time, you are evil Thandiwe, you should have been your sisters

keeper, she has been through what could have killed you. I am ashamed to call you my child, I wonder

who had cursed my womb for you to have been so bitter and evil”

Me “mama you hit me”

Her “you and your father deserve each other” with that said she walks out

Me “baba” he remained silent.

Razor

I haven't heard from Soft the whole day, I am pretty sure she is having a good time bonding with her

mother, I want to call her so bad but I don't want to disturb their moment, I miss her, we never go for so

many hours without talking, this is torture man. I tried looking at some case files trying to get some work

done but it wasn't much of a distraction. I decided to hit my gym to blow off some steam, plus I woke up

with a strong urge of making love to her, so the gym will help me calm down a bit. I hope she can sneak

out at night just to come give me a round, I hear someone shouting I stop and listen, it's her shouting my name, I smile instantly, mood is now on a 100.

Me "I am in the gym baby" I shout back and the footsteps approach, i stop and drink water while

admiring her face on my chest from the mirror view. The door opens and our eyes meet, I just blush, she walks in and a older vision of herself walks in after her, I guess that is her mother, why didn't she warn

me I couldn't have been decent. I mean I am just in my short and no top on.

Me "hey Soft, why didn't you warn me" she smiles

Her "hey baby, I wanted to surprise you"

Me "it is a lovely surprise in deed" her eyes lit up and I know it's because my dimples are visible, her mother clears he throat

Her "oh where are my manners, mama this is Molemo Motaung, Mo this is my beautiful mother" they shake hands

Him "it is really nice finally meet you Mrs. Dlamini, my apologies for not preparing, I would have been

decent if I knew you were coming" she smiles

Mrs. D "it is no bother really, you are in the comfort of your own home, which is very beautiful by the way"

Me "thank you so much, Soft baby please get your mother something to drink"

Mrs. D "is that Sizakale's face on your chest?" I blush

Me "yes it is her" she looks at her daughter

Mrs. D "weee Sizakele what did you give to this man that he draws you on his body" Soft giggles and I smile and turn to take a towel.

Mrs. D "nkosiyam even her name, hai I give up, this love is driving the both of you crazy" we laugh

Me "may I please be excused I want to go shower quickly"

Mrs. D "not a problem, I will ask Siza to give me a tour of this beautiful place"

Me "okay, please feel at home. Soft make your mother comfortable"

Mrs. D "what brought on the nickname Soft" I smile, I can't explain that coz it started as a sexual thing

Her "I will explain it to you mama, let Mo go and shower" I wink at her

Mrs. D "okay then"

Me "can I take you two out for dinner"

Her "I would love to, mama will you be able to?"

Mrs. D "of course, I want to see as much of this city as possible"

Me "great then" i blow soft a kiss and walk out.

Please react, leave a comment and share with others. Thank you so much for your support.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 55(Not edited)

Siza

Let's just say that my mom being here is the most amazing thing ever and she approves of my

relationship with Molemo, she says she has never seen me this happy before, and honestly I don't

remember ever being this happy and content, life has truly been a roller coaster I have seen it all, but I

am still standing and fighting to make it in life, the blessings in my life are just flowing, I kid you not,

when mercy finally locates you it breaks all protocol and honey I am a living testimony to that. I will

never stop giving all the glory to God. So today it is work as usual, my mom went back to Thandiwe's

house coz she was discharged, so she will helping her for a while before she goes back to the village. I

am done shadowing Dr Mkhize and today I was told to learn how to do some charting, luckily they

assigned Uriel to help me with that, she is such a beautiful soul, she is making it look very easy.

Me "you are so good at this God"

Her "I have done it for a long time babe"

Me "I can tell, but thank you I now understand it better"

Her "that is cool, we should go have our lunch now"

Me "please I am famished"

Her "okay let us go to the cafeteria, i just hope they have something edible" I laugh

Me "I pray they do, I wish I was still at my boyfriends place, he used to pack great lunch for me"



Her "you are lucky hey, my man can't even butter bread" we burst out laughing

Me "let me guess he is Zulu right"

Her "girl how do you know" she asks laughing

Me "I know my zulu brothers, they think the woman are the only ones who must be in the kitchen"

Her "but I honestly don't mind hey babe, I love spoiling like that"

Me "he should just marry you already" her face falls, like what I just said made her sad.

Me "I am sorry did I say something?"

Her "not at all it is just complicated, I love him he loves me but it is way too complicated" I sigh

Me "I am sorry hun, everything will work out for the best" she smiles

Her "I pray it does hey"

Me "have faith babe, love conquers everything trust me"

Her "I pray that it's true"

Me "on the lighter note, have any idea who I am shadowing from tomorrow"

Her "oh yes I heard you will be going to the general surgeon"

Me "who is the Dr"

Her "a Dr Ntuli" I narrow my eyes

Me "like Dr Mandela Ntuli?"

Her "yes that one"

Me "I didn't know he worked here"

Her "this hospital is too big, plus he is working at the east wing of this hospital" I nod

Me "oh it makes sense"

Her "yeah, you know him?"

Me "yes we are from the same village, I used to stay with his mother" she nods

Her "he is a fine sight that man. He is good for one to wash her eyes" I laugh

Me "Uriel I didn't think you had it in you" she smiles

Her "oh trust me I do, my alter ego is wilder than me" I laugh again

Me "we should hang sometimes and have drinks or lunch" she smiles sweetly at me

Her "I would definitely like that Siza, thank you"

Thandiwe

I got discharged and I am healing very well at home, very grateful to my mother she has been a great help around the house, she helps with the cooking and cleaning, and she is so good with Kayise, that one can cry for days but my mom is like the baby whisperer, soon as she picks her up she stops immediately, I just hope by the time mama goes back to the village she won't be crying like this. on the other hand my mother is not speaking to me and my father and it making things to be awkward, I just want to okay, I need her to be like how she is with Sizakele. I need to reach out to her, I make my way downstairs and she is in the kitchen, looks like she just finished with making Lunch. She doesn't even look at me and I am sure that she is aware of my presence. I sigh and decide to be the one to break the ice.

Me "mama wami" I say as humbly as possible

Her "Thandiwe" I sigh

Me "can we talk"

Her "talk I am listening" she says coolly

Me "mama please, I don't like the tension in the house"

Her "oh really, that is funny coz you and your father create all this drama"

Me "kodwa mama" she didn't allow me finish my sentence

Her "Tell me Thandiwe, why do you hate your sister this much, what did she do to you that you feel

pleasure when she is suffering, I don't understand this at all, make me understand" tears formed in my eyes

Me "I don't hate her mama"

Her "don't lie, you know very well that you hate her so much, you loathe your sister, I don't understand

why though, I see the way you look at her, if given the chance to kill her, you won't even think twice"

Me "that is not true"

Her "of course it is, Thandiwe you have children, how would you feel if one hated the other one and you

don't even know what caused it? As a mother it cuts deep, all I

ever wanted was for you to be your  
sister's keeper; I needed you to be her friend when she went  
through all that pain, it hurt Thandiwe, do  
you understand that I failed her, she made one mistake, not big  
enough to disown her, I was supposed  
to be there for her, to fight for her, instead I let your father  
bully me into not being a mother to your  
sister when she needed me the most. You and your father kept  
on pushing and pushing it is just too  
much" she was now crying I could hear the hurt in her voice  
Me "I am sorry mama" she wiped her tears  
Her "kodwa Thandiwe why, what did your sister do to you to  
deserve all this hate and ill treatment?" I  
thought about it for a while, and honestly she has never done  
anything to me, it is just me and my  
insecurities, I have always seen her as the most perfect and she  
was everything that I was not and  
wanted so bad to be, she had the man I wanted with all my  
heart, Vusi saw me first and wanted me, but  
soon as he set his eyes on my sister he forgot about me, like I  
never even existed, that broke my heart

Me "I don't hate her mama, I was just following baba's orders"

Her "only you and your God know the truth" I sigh

Me "what was supposed to do, he told us to never ever make contact with her"

Her "I don't have time for your lies, dish up for yourself and your father, I need to go check on Kayise"

Me "but we are still talking"

Her "the conversation is pointless coz you don't want to tell the truth"

Me "but mama" she raised her hand to stop me from talking any further

Her "Stop it Thandiwe, the day you want to be honest with me, then we will talk" she removed the

apron and walked away leaving me with so much to think about

Mr. Dlamini

It all started when I suddenly started seeing my own daughter as a woman, I started being controlling, I

didn't want to see her around boys, I didn't even want her to

wear short revealing things. Sizakele had a matured body from a young age, when she started seeing that Khumalo boy I became so angry, I didn't approve I wanted to hide her from the world, she had to remain as pure for me only, being around that boy meant that he might deflower her, and knowing that she wouldn't be pure made me so furious, I tried all I could to keep her from that boy, but they always found a way to meet without my knowledge.

I don't know why I had to desire my own flesh and blood, I hated myself for that, I would at times go away from my house so I don't see her and have those sexual thoughts about her, I couldn't keep her out of my mind, it was difficult indeed, she was all I wanted to see, the harder I tried the more desire I had for her, my wife would go to work night shifts at the hospital and I would make night studies for the grade 12's so that Thandiwe could go and I would be left alone with her, that night I went to their bedroom and she was sleeping naked with only her underwear, I got in and saw her body, beautiful and

my thoughts escalated, I wanted to have her there, I wanted to give into my desire, she was temptation

laying on that mattress. I remember I went down knowing very well that she is a deep sleeper, she

sleeps so deep that you have to literally shake her so she can wake up, I knew I was safe, I started

rubbing her soft smooth thighs. I rubbed her gently and it felt really good, the minute she turned

changing sides, fear creped in and I stopped and walked out, but I was already in too deep, the feel of

her skin drove me to wanting her more, I became more obsessed with keeping her away from those

boys in the village. The day she told me she was pregnant, I was furious, I was so mad; I wanted to kill

that boy for touching her and taking away her purity which was meant for me. Sizakele had betrayed me

so much by giving herself to that boy; I hated her for doing that to me. I hated that child she was

carrying. I disowned her because I didn't want to see the results of her betrayal, instructed my family

that no one is to talk to her because I needed to make her



suffer, for giving away the purity I wanted and  
desired with all my heart. seeing her at that hospital made me  
feel fire, she is grown now and she is  
more of a woman, I looked at her shocked to see what she has  
made of her life, that alone was enough  
to bring that craving that desire, I suddenly didn't hate her, I  
looked at her and I wanted to have her  
again, those thoughts from the past came back rushing, the  
intoxicating feeling of touching her soft skin  
returned, I was burning, I wanted her again, if I could I would  
have pinned her to the door right there.  
My heart was beating so fast, my manhood longing to feel the  
deepest part of her intimate area. I  
disowned her meaning she is not my child anymore, she is just a  
woman, a woman I have wanted for a  
very long time and this time I will get what I desire.

Thato

Sizwe called after disappearing for that long, I was mad at him,  
he wasn't calling and he wasn't even

answering my calls now Vicky thinks I lied about the trip and she is laughing at me, telling me that my

Mr. anonymous is a rich wanna be fraudster, he asked me to meet him at our usual spot, immediately

when I got there, he ripped my clothes apart and fucked the living shit out of me. Now here we are with

him breathing so heavily. I was just frowning and he was looking at me intensely, he finally broke the ice

when he got his breathing under control.

Him "I am sorry Tee"

Me "for what?" I ask with a bit of an attitude

Him "going MIA on you like that, just that my wife gave birth the day I rushed out of here"

Me "oh that is nice, congratulations"

Him "thanks, it's a girl, I named her Kayise, she is perfect" I fake a smile

Me "such a lovely name" she smiles and takes out his phone and shows me a picture

Her "she is so adorable but wow she can cry" is this guy for real right now, I don't care about his stupid

child, I just want my money and my trip

Me "oh my God look at those chubby cheeks, she is perfect" he was now admiring his daughter I roll my eyes

Him "okay enough about Kayise" he got up from the bed and went to his jacket on the sofa and came

back with something and handed it to me, I took and it was my plane ticket to Maldives, it was 1st class, I

looked at him and screamed

Me "oh baby thank, you kept your promise"

Him "I am a man of my word Thato. You are leaving on this Friday, it is only for a week" I am so excited

right now

Me "you are the best" I kiss her

Him "I will send you some money later, you pleased me yet again, such a good girl" I blush

Me "okay and call Sizwe" he laughs

Him "I will do worry, but for now I need to leave Thandiwe is probably wondering where I am, I told her

I will be back in an hour, and it has been more that that coz you

my darling took you sweet time getting

here coz you were pissed at me" I smile

Me "can I stay longer?"

Him "anything you want Thato, I will tell them upfront to give you want ever you want"

Me "okay then, kiss wifey for me" he laughs

Him "will do, I will call later then okay" I nod and he walks out.

Room service champagne and sea food

platter please. I will say this again guys, monna wa motho o monate.

Mercy

I feel like my life is falling apart, I haven't seen my husband for days now, I last saw his the day we

fought and he said he will be checking into a hotel, I tried calling his but he doesn't pick my calls or

bother getting back to me, it has been long now he should just come back home. I decided to go to my

father's law firm and talk to him there, I get there and

Receptionist smiles at me when I get to her front desk

Her "Ms Motaung, how are you?"

Me "it is Mrs Khumalo now, and I fine thanks"

Her "oh apologies ma'am, what can I do for you today?"

Me "is my husband in"

Her "yes he just got back from court" I nod and walk to his office, he is talking on the phone with his

feet crossed on top of his desk and he has the biggest smile plastered on his face. He frowns soon as he

sees me

Him "uhm, can I call you back I a few minutes, I have someone in my office" he listen a while then smiles

and hangs up, I am raising an eyebrow

Him "what can I do for you Mercy" I sigh and calm down, I am here to try fix things not start another

fight with him, so I will not ask who he was talking to.

Me "hey baby, I just came to apologize and beg you to please come back home, I miss you, we are

husband and wife, we shouldn't be staying apart like this" he

laughs

Him "are you not tired of this"

Me "baby please come back home"

Him "Mercy I know this is your fathers firm but I this is my work place, you can't come here to disturb

me, I don't bring my personal problems to work, now please"

Me "I am sorry, just that you don't pick up my calls baby, and we need to talk"

Him "I am working her Mercy" I sigh

Me "okay I will leave but please come home tonight" he sighs

Him "fine I will come"

Me "thank you, let me leave you to work, I will see you later then. I love you"

Him "sure" I stare at him shocked

Me "I love you Vusi"

Him "yeah me too" he said and took out a file and went through it without even looking at me, I am so

hurt right now, could he be cheating on me, why is he so cold towards me. I take my bag and walk to the

door, I look at him

Me "bye" he just nods and I walk out feeling defeated

Fiona

Her "are you sure you are ready to face him again?"

Me "I have never been so sure about anything in my life"

Her "I still say that this is dangerous, it could backfire"

Me "he hurt me, he must pay, if you didn't find me at that mortuary, they could have burned me alive"

Her "exactly, life gave you another chance, stop this revenge bullshit"

Me "I can't do that, he almost killed me, and according to him I am dead, so he won't see this one coming"

Her "this is dangerous, you have a new life now, focus on it"

Me "oh my God you are not listening to me, I would rather die this time, knowing that I destroyed his

life, yes I made a mistake but he should have just divorced me gave me my share and went on with his

life, but no he had to try to kill me to feel like a man"

Her "I can't talk to you when you are like this"

Me "you are just being dramatic man"

Her "you know what let me just go and cook, but always know that I disapprove with this plan of yours"

Me "you have made that very clear"

Her "yes I did Fiona and I will ask you again to stop planning on how you are going to attack that man"

Me "just go and cook Keke"

Her "mosadi o wa lekhowa ha mamele man (this white woman doesn't listen)"

Me "I know you saying shit when you speak your own language" she laughs and walks out. I look at my plan again and smile. Please work, you have to work.

Please leave a comment, react and share with others. Much Love guys.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 56 (not edited)

Mercy



It was now half past 9 at night and my husband was still not home, I tried his cell but it didn't go through, I don't what to do anymore, I know I messed up but I didn't mean to, I was just angry with my father and I was hoping that he will be on my side you know. Now I am starting to think that maybe I made a mistake, I shouldn't have let my emotions get the better of me. my relationship with my sister and father is not good at the moment, I haven't spoken to Olivia since that day she threw me out of her apartment, I can't afford to lose Vusi, I have worked on this relationship for too long hell this is even the longest relationship I have ever had, all my boyfriends used to complain that I am s spoilt brat with no respect, I told myself that I will get it right with Vusi but it seems as if I have managed to push away another man. I went to the restaurant and bought his favorite meal since I can no longer afford to pay for a chef, I set up a romantic scene as a way of saying I am sorry, this was all pointless, I decide to switch off the candles and go to bed coz I am waiting on

nothing really.

Vusi

I drove to the house and parked outside for an entire hour, fighting with myself, a part of me wanted to go in but another wouldn't allow me to do that at all, I knew we were going to end up fighting and I didn't feel like that tonight, Mercy and I have hit rock bottom and I honestly don't think I can be with her anymore, the only reason I am still with her is because I fear what her father might do to me should she go crying to him. That man will destroy me completely. I couldn't go in coz it was clear what will happen if I did, I love peace and warmth and I know where I get, so I decided to go back to my Uriel, we are cuddling on the couch watching her favorite series, I sigh

Me "baby wami"

Her "lover"

Me "I love you okay"

Her "I love you too Vee" I smile

Me "uhm so Mercy came to the office today, she wants me to come back home"

Her "and what did you say"

Me "I drove there but I couldn't go in, I just wanted to come home to your and the warmth you bring in

this house, I only want to be where you are" she sighs and gets out of my hold and she sits up straight

Her "you know baby as much as it hurts to say this but she is your wife Vee and I am just your mistress"

Me "you are the one I love Uriel, only you babe"

Her "and I love you too, you know this. I need you to break up with her and be with me, I am tired of

hiding Vusi I want to be able to walk everywhere with you and holding your hand"

Me "I want that too my love, but her father will make my life a living hell for hurting his daughter"

Her "he can't force you to stay in a loveless marriage"

Me "of course he would baby, I know this man, he wants his daughters to be happy and whoever

threatens that I will be hell on that person”

Her “so in other words I will be your side chick forever right?” I sigh and brush my forehead, I look at her

and she has tears in her eyes, I hate seeing her like this, I never want to hurt her

Me “baby please I will fix everything” she gets up and wipes her tears

Her “I suggest you go back to your wife tomorrow then, before she runs to daddy” she walks away and

get so frustrated, I can't lose this girl I just can't, I need to sort this out once and for all

Razor

I couldn't sleep so I decide to go to my study and work on some cases, I left Soft sleeping in our bed, she

is definitely out, she came very tired from work and I wore her out more coz I just made love to her

since she got in. She has been happier with her mother in town, those two are very much alike hey, I like

Mrs. Dlamini she is an easy going person and the thought of

being introduced to her mother proves that she is all about me too and that she sees a future with me, and that made me really happy, I love Siza and I am going all the way with her. I pour myself a drink and took a file and started working, after like an hour my door opens and she walks in wearing one of my t-shirts, she looks damn sexy right now.

Me "hey baby why are you up"

Her "I couldn't feel you next to me, the bed was too cold without you" I smile at her

Me "I am sorry my love, I couldn't sleep so I decided to come get some work done"

Her "oh okay let me leave you to it then"

Me "oh no don't be silly, come tell me how was work" smiles and comes to sit on my lap

Her "well baby I was just learning how to do some charting"

Me "is that part of medicine?" she laughs

Her "in a way yes, that is where we right patients details, the conditions, file their lab results and such"

Me "oh I see" she frowns

Her "and I will be shadowing Mandla from my next shift"

Me "I didn't know he works at the same hospital"

Her "I also didn't know love, apparently he is in the east wing, the hospital is bigger than that, I had realized"

I nod and kiss her

Me "so what else did you get up to?"

Her "nothing much Uriel was giving me the latest gossip of what has been happening in the office, baby

you wouldn't believe the intersexion that is happening between the nurses and Dr, I tell you the on call

rooms are not for Dr working at night they are really just mini motels for hospital staff to engage in sex"

I laugh, I didn't know she can gossip

Me "and where does this Uriel get all this hot gossip" she rolls her eyes and I chuckle again

Her "baby Uriel is a nurse, nurses know everything about anything"

Me "of course" she smiles

Her "it is just so shocking hey, even married man are busy with

young nurses”

Me “let’s just hope that none of them will try anything with you coz I wouldn’t mind breaking their

necks” she laughs

Her “even if they did I wouldn’t even look at them twice baby, I have the hottest most loving man in the

world and I only have eyes for him” I blush

Me “I am glad t hear that Dr”

Her “how was your day”

Me “mine is just boring the only nice things is the thought of you and staring at the picture of you on my

office wall, it mesmerizes me always, helps me relax when I am dealing with difficult clients, I just look at

it and my world is okay” she blushes

Her “Mr. Motaung you are such a charmer” I laugh

Me “only to you my lady coz I love you

Her “I love you too baby, so can you please take me to bed and not sleep” I get an erection immediately

Me “I love how you think Soft” I stand up with her and my arms and walk up to our room

Fiona

The first thing I did after taking a shower was to pack my stuff, it is time I made an appearance now, but

firstly to my children, but the first person I need to win over is Mercy it won't be difficult with her as it

will be with Olivia, that one is a hot head like her father and I know for a fact that she hates me with

every fiber of her being, I hurt her and I feel very bad, I wish I could turn back the hands of time. I wish

she wasn't there to see what happened, I am sure it scared her. I finish packing and make my way to the

kitchen and find Kele cooking some porridge, she notices the bags and narrow her eyes

Her "and then wena ka di bags, where are you going so early"

Me "I am reaching out to my first daughter today" he eyes pop

Her "oh come Fiona I thought we spoke about this"

Me "I know we did but I didn't agree to anything"



Her "what is wrong with you?"

Me "Kele I want to be part of my children's lives again, they need to know that their mother is still alive"

Her "and what happens when they tell your ex that you are back and he hunts you down and kills you"

Me "stop being so negative Kele my goodness this will all go the way I planned and we will get out of

this place, I will take care of you. We will have enough money you won't need to work at that shitty

place anymore"

Her "you know what I give up, do what you will" I love Kele she has done a lot for me and I will forever

be grateful to her but she can be annoying at times

Me "I will be okay I promise" I kiss her on the cheek

Me "I will call you and tell you how it went" she nods and I walk out and take a taxi, I have my daughters

address and the house is too big Christ. I tell the security that I am her mother and they laugh at me, we

spend time having an argument, till he lets me in. he walks with me to the door busy laughing, he

presses the door bell and a minute later she opens

Him "sorry ma'am but there is a crazy white woman here to see you she says she is your mother"

Her "what nonsense who is that person playing sick games, I mother died"

Him "exactly what I told her, but she insisted" I appear so she can see me

Me "Mercy my baby, it's me, its mommy, I didn't die my love" she drops her champagne glass and it

broke its content splashed on the floor

Her "how, uhm how is this possible" she asks crying

Me "It is a long story mookie, but I can explain baby"

Her "no no no my mother died and we cremated her, why are you playing such a sick game"

Me "I am not my sugar. Remember when you were 10 and you wanted a phone I refused and daddy got

it for you and you guys tried hiding it but I found out anyway and I grounded you and took away all your

privileges for a month"

Her "mommy it's really you"

Me "yes mookie it is, I am so sorry" I say making my way to her and she just comes willingly to me, we

share a warm tight hug and I can't help but sob too, I missed my children so much, she breaks the hug

Her "thank you, go back to work, mommy please come in and tell me where you were?"

Me "okay, I missed you so much" she smiles and wipes her tears

Mrs. Dlamini

It was just a calm day and I was changing the sheets in the bedroom my husband and I share, Thandiwe

went to the baby clinic to get Kayise immunized, she has heeled but not entirely, she removed her

stitches but the pain is still there, her husband is with her hence I stayed behind. Things haven't been

better with my daughter and her father, I am still pained but how vile they speak of Sizakele, and I don't

think I can ever be okay with them again, they keep on hating my daughter for nothing and that is not

okay with me, the bedroom door opened and he got in and stood by the door with his hands buried deep in his pockets.

Him "where is my food"

Me "I haven't started with the cooking"

Him "what were you doing this whole time"

Me "Dlamini I have been spring cleaning this house I am sure you noticed"

Him "oh so now the cleaning is better than feeding your husband"

Me "I will start cooking once I am done here" he laughs

Him "I am hungry now"

Me "if you really can't wait for me to come and cook for you, then use your hands and prepare food for

yourself, I am not your maid man Dlamini, I am busy and you can see and I said I will cook manje what

more do you want from me"

Him "two minutes in the city and spending time with that daughter of yours you already think you can

talk to me any how" I felt myself boil with anger

Me "you will leave Sizakele out of that filthy mouth of you, do you understand me" he walks towards

me I stop putting the pillow in the pillow case and stare at him

Him "who do you think you are talking to kahle kahle"

Me "I am definitely talking to you, I am tired of you and your abuse, I have endured this far too long and

stops right here uyangizwa" I felt a hot slap on my face and I lost my mind how dare he. I take the side

lamp and hit him with it, he got madder and he grabbed me by my throat, I started hitting him with my

fists on his chest. But he didn't let go, I was busy scratching him, he was so violent busy pushing me and

things falling and breaking, Sizwe and Thandiwe walked in, he rushed to us and managed to pull Dlamini

from me, I was coughing so bad

Thandiwe "baba what are you doing, do you want to kill umama"

Him "your mother is now disrespectful Thandiwe, she now back chats, it's because of that girl, I knew

she will poison my wife against me and like a fool your mother is letting her"

Me "I told you to never and I mean ever talk about my child not my Sizakele"

Him "see Thandiwe, just hear how she is talking to me, like I am

her mate”

Thandiwe “kodwa baba nawe”

Sizwe “ma come down with me to drink water and we will clean that wound too”

Him “so the both of you are taking her side, you won’t even hear my side of the story”

Me “because of food you almost killed me, you are nothing but a weakling Dlamini, that is what a man

who hits a woman is” I walk out with Thandiwe and her husband leaving mine in there.

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others.

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 57 (not edited)

Mercy

I couldn’t believe my eyes at all, I didn’t even know how to react to her, I couldn’t even say anything,

and all I just did was cry and cry. We have grieved for her, I was

devastated, but she was still alive, how  
do we move passed this, why did she stay away for so long  
making us believe that we will never see us  
again, when my mother I was lost for a while, she was the one  
holding us all together or so I believed. I  
don't know, this is something I never thought would happen.  
We managed to stop crying and she wiped  
my tears first then hers, she was still as beautiful as I remember.

Her "I know you have so many questions to ask me"

Me "I do but I don't know where to start"

Her "I know it is all too much to take in Mookie and I am sorry"

Me "where have you been mommy"

Her "I have been living in Berea" my eyes pop Christ

Me "what happened, we cremated you"

Her "I remember I woke up and I was freezing, I remembered  
that your father tortured me until I passed

out, I think one of his boys told him I died, I started banging and  
screaming for help and someone

opened, she was so scared but she was brave, I explained to her

what had happened coz I didn't want her to call the ambulance to take me to the hospital, I know Razor would come and finish me off, so she took me to her house and started nursing me back to health. When your father said he wanted me cremated it was perfect coz Kele managed to replace me with an unclaimed body that has been with them for a while, those were the strangers ashes, knowing the life we were living I had cash stashed at different places since I was declared dead I had to get a new identity for myself, so I took some of the money and bribed someone who works at home affairs to get me a new ID under a new name, I couldn't risk your father ever finding me, even though he believed I was dead I had to cover all my tracks"

Me "why now, why did you come back aren't you scared that he might kill you"

Her "I couldn't be away from you and your sister anymore, I miss you both so very much, I don't care if

he still wants me dead, it happened years ago I just hope he is over that"



Me "Mommy I missed you" I attack her with a hug and cry

Her "sshhh, it's okay now hush mommy is back, I am not going anywhere"

Me "thank you for coming back" she brushes my back

Her "tell me how is your sister" I broke the hug

Me "she is currently not speaking to me, but she is okay, she is almost done with university"

Her "I am sure she hates me"

Me "she felt betrayed by you, mommy, even when we had a memorial for you she didn't even shed one

tear, I have never even heard her talk about you, I am sorry" she closed her eyes and a tear escaped her

eye.

Her "I regret everything Mookie, I hurt her beyond imagination, I knew she had issues getting attached

to people, and when she finally found someone she could ease up to I took that from her"

Me "she took his death more hard than yours, she was depressed for a while, she went back to being a

loner again and she hated daddy with all her heart that they didn't speak nor see each other for 2 full

years after she got her depression treated, but now she is doing pretty good”

Her “I am such a bad mother, I need to see her and apologize, I need to make it up to her”

Me “I don’t know, what if seeing you sets her back again, dad won’t ever forgive you mommy”

Her “but I need to try Mookie”

Me “I guess so” we hugged again, I can’t believe my mother is here with me, it feels surreal

Siza

I have been working with Mandla and I must admit he has so cold towards me, I don’t know if it is

because of work or what, but he is so mean to me and it seems as if he can’t even stand being in the

same room as me, he is making it hard for me to learn because it feels like I am annoying him even when

I am asking him questions, I no longer look forward to coming to work, when I get here I can’t wait for

the to end and get out of here. I am even scared of telling Mo

about it coz I know he would give him a tough time so I don't have a choice but to suck it up. I check my watch and I have 2 minutes before my lunch is over, Uriel hasn't been coming to work, I hope she is okay, I wish I had her address so I could go and check up on her. I finish my food and quickly stand and rush to where he said we should meet. I find him already waiting and pacing up and down.

Me "I am here, we can get back to work"

Him "you are late Sizakele" I check my time and it is only 3 minutes

Me "I am sorry I ate at the cafeteria and it is a bit far from this wing"

Him "don't make any stupid excuse, if you want to be a great Dr you will need to be punctual"

Me "I am sorry but I didn't think 3 minutes would make you this angry at me" he laughs

Him "are you kidding me right now, that 3 minutes a patient could have died waiting on you their Dr"

Me "I am sorry Mandla"

Him "in here it is Dr Ntuli"

Me "God why are you treating me like this, did I maybe do something to offend you"

Him "why are you even here, just go and spend your old boyfriends money"

Me "is that what all this is about, you are treating me like this coz I am in a relationship with Mo"

Him "because you are in a relationship with a ruthless criminal in a suit"

Me "really you are going to insult my man in my presence, that is a new low even for you"

Him "why Siza, why him"

Me "what the hell is your problem, why are you interested in my relationship, why do you even care that I am with him?"

Him "because I am in love with you dammit" I just stood there shocked as hell, I couldn't even say anything

Him "I am mad at you for not realizing this, I am mad because I went back to Palesa so I can forget about you, I am drowning Sizakele, because every night I fail to fall

asleep because the thought of another man

holding you touching you haunts me, I love you and I wish I didn't but I do so forgive me for not being

able to know what to do with these feelings because I can't pursue anything with you because of your

gangster boyfriend will not hesitate to take me out" I can't believe Mandla is saying all this to me, I

don't see him like that at all. He came to me and cupped my face and started kissing me, i didn't

respond to it because the shock is real, I pull out

Me "what are you doing, why are you saying this to me Mandla, you know I am with Molemo and I love

him, you are also with Palesa respect her too, you might not love her but respect her" he rubs his

forehead

Him "I am so sorry Sizakele, I don't know what has gotten into me"

Me "please don't do that again, I am in a relationship and I am happy, if you won't be able to teach me

it's fine please ship me off to another Dr"

Him "no it's okay; I have been a jerk coz I was trying to fight

these feelings I have for you. Please forgive

me I am ashamed of myself" I sigh

Me "its okay Mandla" he sighs

Him "please take the rest of the day off and I will see you tomorrow, I promise everything will be good"

Me "okay thank you" I turned back and walked to the lockers and took my back pack and walked to my car, trying to figure out what is going on.

Mrs. Dlamini

I have taken all the abuse from my husband but it hasn't been physical in years, I was young back then,

and we were taught that a man has the right to do whatever he desires with his father and with that I

endured everything he threw at me but I grew up and understood that a man is supposed to protect,

love and cherish his wife, not to abuse her in any way, my husband has been a monster from the get go,

I don't know why I endured all this from him. I failed to protect

myself and mostly I failed to protect my children, he disowned Sizakele because of one mistake, then he bullies Thandiwe into doing everything he wants, he forced her to not go to university and marry Sizwe even when she wasn't ready for that. it is high time I stand up for my children and most importantly for myself because if I am weak there is nothing I will be able to do for them. Thandiwe walks in the bedroom I have been using since the incident.

Her "hey mama" she smiles at me

Me "hey baby, where is Kayise"

Her "she left with her father to see her grandmother"

Me "please call him and tell him to come with grandson I miss him" she smiles

Her "I will text him now" she takes out her phone and types for a minute

Me "I hope you pumped enough milk for Kayise"

Her "I did mama, I know that one eats like a village man" I laugh

Me "yes your child can eat for days"

Her "kodwa mama, how are you after you know"

Me "I am fine, that incident made me think about a lot of things"

Her "I like what" I sigh

Me "I am not going back to the village with your father Thandiwe, I am done with the abuse that man

gives me, I can no longer take any of it" he eyes widens

Her "you are leaving baba ma?"

Me "yes Thandiwe I am, I should have done did a long time ago, but I will not stay this time, he almost

killed me food so imagine what he could do if I did something bigger which he doesn't approve of"

Her "I totally get you but baba will suffer without you mama" I sigh

Me "so would you rather wait for a call to let you know that he has finally killed me, Thandiwe I saw that

mans eyes, he is the monster he was when your sister got pregnant, he is the man we were all scared of

back then, whatever that triggers that ruthless man, it is back and I won't be staying with him and

become his punching bag and sex slave" she started crying



Her "I am sorry mama for all he put you through, I understand that very well" I narrow my eyes

Me "what do you mean Thandiwe, is you husband abusing you too?"

Her "he has stopped but he used to"

Me "he will never stop baby he will hit you again I know this, why didn't you tell me"

Her "mama it would be useless, baba will never agree to me leaving Sizwe, he will disown me for

bringing shame to him, he made it clear the day I got married that I will take everything my husband

throws at me, he told me to never come home with my luggage saying my marriage has failed"

Her "you are too young to be living like this mntanami, do you want to be another woman that leaves in

a body bag, you still have time to make something of your life, you can go back to school and find your

independence, raise your children while you are genuinely happy, all these riches are not worth it"

Her "it is not as easy as you say it mama, Sizwe and her mother will make my life a living hell, they will

take my children away from me” she sounds so scared.

Me “then we will find the best lawyer to help you sthandwa sam,  
let us leave these men who think we  
are worthless baby please” she just cries, I wish she could listen  
to me.

Olivia

I have been feeling down today, I woke up missing Jabu, he is a  
part of my past that I wish I didn't

remember, a dark part of my past, I wish I could erase from my  
memory, I never thought I will never get

over it but I did though it took everything in me to get through  
it. The door opens and Siza walks in

looking defeated, I give her a questioning look and she just  
shrugs her shoulders and throws herself on

the couch, I narrow my eyes and stand up and to go get some  
tequila, we will solve our problems like

matured grownups but today it will just use alcohol, I take the  
first gulp straight from the bottle and

hand it to her, she drinks in like water it gets me worried coz

she isn't a fan of hard liquor so I know that  
whatever happened is not sitting well with her.

Me "talk to me baby"

Her "Mandla kissed me and told me that he is in love with me" I  
laugh

Me "don't tell me you were shocked by that" she frowns

Her "what do you mean now Liv" I roll my eyes

Me "haven't you seen the way that man looks at you Siza, he is  
crazy about you, I think I saw that the  
first time I was with you two in the same room"

Her "I don't see him like that though, he has been treating me  
like trash these past few days"

Me "the poor guy was just trying to fight off his feelings for  
you"

Her "he was wrong in kissing me though, he knows I am with  
Mo"

Me "oh shit speaking of that one, I hope you are not planning  
on telling him"

Her "why not, we don't keep secrets"

Me "Siza I am dead serious don't tell my dad about this, if you care about him you won't tell Razor

about this, coz he will rain fire on that guy" she sighs

Her "okay fine I will keep this to myself"

Me "thank you" I know how much my father loves Siza, if he finds out what Mandla did, he will wish he didn't even know Sizakele.

Her "you look drained what's wrong" I haven't shared my pain with anyone else but my psychologist

Me "I am okay" I fake a smile

Her "really Olivia, you gonna give me that bullshit" I sigh

Me "has my father told you how my mother died?" she shakes her head no

Her "we never talk about your mom babe"

Me "let's just my mother's death was horrific, It made me not talk to my father for over 2 years, I disconnected from reality a while and the rest is history"

Her "I am sure you miss her" I laugh

Me "a part of me does but a part of me hates my mother Siza, I have not always been this bubbly person

that can make friends with everyone, I had problems when I was young, I couldn't trust easily, I failed

talking about my feelings and making friends or loving others was major for me but I met someone I

managed to love, trust and talk to and my mother ruined that for me, she hurt me and set me back to

the darkness I was in before I met him" she looks at me confused because what I just said was unclear

and yes I made sure that it is encrypted, I didn't want to talk about the depth of my pain

Her "I didn't know I am sorry babe" she says coming to seat next to me and hugging me, I can never cry,

I failed to cry for my mother at her memorial and I will not start now, she knew what her betrayal would

do to me but she went on with it anyway, she didn't care about me so I don't understand why I should

shed a tear for a person like that. Let's just say after a years of therapy to get me to be better and

understand why I was the way I was it took Jabu's death and me going back into depression to finally be

okay, I channeled my energy into school and avoided romantic

relationships. I hope one day I can completely heal from all this pain.

Please react, leave a comment and share with others.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 58 (not edited)

Mandla

I am so ashamed of what I did to Sizakele, I have been treating her like trash and she didn't deserve any of that, it's just that when I was told I will be shadowed by a medical student I wasn't expecting the student to be her coz I mean I have been avoiding her since she got with Razor and also because I was hoping that these feelings will disappear but honestly they are still here and they seem to be strong, I really don't know what to do. Work has been so awkward, we don't talk like we used to do it is just hard really. I was told that she will be shadowing me until next Friday,

this is too much for me, pretending as  
if I don't love this woman when she is all I could think about, I  
just TGIF, I called Steve, I need to share  
this with someone, I need to offload to someone and right now  
he is the only one who can listen and  
give me the most honest unbiased opinion. I get to the club and  
he is already there with a bottle of  
cognac and mixers and a woman on his lap, I laugh and walk to  
him

Me "hey buddy what's up"

Him "hey man, you kept me waiting"

Me "it's not like you were bored, you had this beauty to keep  
you company"

Him "true true, by mami needs to go back to work, thank you  
for the service beautiful"

Her "don't forget to give me that call then" she winks at him  
then walks away

Me "ii only she knew, poor thing" he bursts out laughing

Him "what the fuck is that supposed to mean"

Me "she is asking for a heart break"

Him "I am actually looking to settle down" I take the alcohol and mix for myself

Me "yeah right, seeing is believing" he shakes his head

Him "so what's up with you" I sigh and gulp my drink

Me "one word, SIZAKELE" he narrowed his eyes

Him "what about her" I look at him for a minute and wonder if I should tell him, arg fuck it

Me "I am in love with her, I have been for a long time"

Him "that is no surprise buddy, but you do know she is Razors woman now right"

Me "I know Steve and it is killing me that she is with another man"

Him "I blame you though, you are such a fucken dick" I laugh confused

Me "what the hell"

Him "you took your time making a move, it was clear from the village that you loved that girl, but no you were as slow as a tortoise in telling her how you feel"

Me "I thought I was giving her time to grieve and all, plus I was



still in denial about it, plus the bro code”

Him “fuck the bro code man, Vusi treated that girl like she was a worthless piece of shit, she even told

you once that you can have her, and I remember that day correctly coz we were at this very place”

Me “I remember but he could have been joking, I regret never telling her how I feel” he laughs

Him “that’s what you deserve for been a fucking pussy, if you had told her sooner, who knows maybe

the both of you would have been married by now and maybe pregnant with your first child and in

medical school, leaving in some expensive house having a nice life, you know that couple with 3

children, who are mad about each other, go to church on Sundays and attend school plays together

going on family vacations, you could have been that guy who leaves the club at 9 coz you would rather

be with your wife, but fuck no you thought about a damn bro code and shit”

I knew he would give it to me straight

Me “maybe one day we can have a chance”

Him "I don't see Razor dying anytime soon" he laughs and I shake my head, mxm this full.

Vusi

I haven't seen my baby in days and she is not fine at all, she told me to come back to Mercy and I did

with a heavy heart, I feel like I am going to lose if I don't make things right, I need to make an honest

woman out of here, she is right I can't expect her to be my secret forever after all we are in love. When I

went to check on her yesterday she was on in bed and everything else in the house was the same, I

could tell that she hasn't been going work. The sight of her curled in our bed hurt me, she didn't want to

talk to me, I just cleaned the house and made something for her to eat then told her I love her and left

she wouldn't even tell me she loves me too, I am so down that I decided to just stay at home today, I

didn't even go to work, I was in bed the whole day thinking about her and trying to call her but she

didn't answer, I resorted to sending her texts pouring out my heart to her. Mercy has been acting strange since I came back but I couldn't care less what she is up to at all. She walks in our bedroom wearing lingerie, she comes to me and gets on top of me kissing me all over, I just couldn't do it, I wanted her to stop.

Me "Mercy" she moans

Her "oh yes baby, I have missed you"

Me "please stop"

Her "but I need you love, it has been a while since we made love, I am sure you also need some"

Me "I am not in the mood please stop" she continued kissing me

Her "just relax I will do everything"

Me "dammit Mercy stop this minute, I said I am not in the mood" I removed her on top of me

Her "I am sorry I just, I thought. What's wrong baby, you have been sad the whole day"

Me "I just need a minute to myself"

Her "you had a lot of that when you were at the hotel my love,

we need to talk about us and fix things”

Me “but today my emotions are all over the place, I miss my daughter” she swallowed

Her “oh I am really sorry, I didn’t mean to love”

Me “it is okay”

Her “I will go get us something to eat, want anything specific”  
home cooked mean but pssh

Me “anything you get will be fine thanks” she smiles

Her “okay no problem, I will be right back. Just need to change”

Me “okay cool”

Her “I love you okay” I fake a smile

Me “me too” she frowns but doesn’t say anything then leave to the closet. I breathe and close my eyes,

my phone beeps alerting me of a text, i take it from the pedestal and power my screen on its Uriel, my

heart skips a bit

\*make things right Vusi, I miss you” my heart melts and I smile, she hasn’t given up on me

\*I promise I will my love, I miss you even more. I love you so, please tell me you still love me\* I respond

\*just coz things are not okay with us at the moment doesn't mean I stop loving you. I love you and sometimes I wish I didn't coz I wouldn't be hurting so much\* she texts back and I smile, my mood improves immediately.

\*I am coming to be with you tomorrow my love okay\* 5 minutes pass and she doesn't respond but I am happy she reached out to me. I get off the bed and go downstairs to get something to drink and maybe watch some soccer.

Thandiwe

I thought about what my mother said, but honestly things with my husband have really been better, I

don't see the need for me to leave him, and mostly I can't risk losing my children and my father

disowning me, baba made it very clear that I am never to leave Sizwe for any reason and I tend to listen

to him, my father is a man you don't want to cross. The thought of disobeying him brings back memories

to me, I wish I can tell someone about it but then again I know better. I wish mama could just stop with this divorce talk, she has no idea of what is really happening. Everything is not black and white.

Him "Thandiwe can't you hear that my daughter is crying" he say's shouting bringing me back from my thoughts, I hear Kayise crying I quickly run to her crib and pick her up

Me "shhhh sorry baby, mommy is here now" I try to make her stop crying

Him "what the hell were you thinking about that you couldn't hear her cry like that" I seat on the bed and feed her

Me "I don't know I just zoned out"

Himr "zoned out Thandiwe, what kind of mother zones out while she is with her daughter in same room"

Me "oh please Sizwe, I am only human too"

Him "don't give me that shit"

Me "I am tired, I take care of your children, I am the one who wakes up at night when Kayise screams at night, while you just sleep peacefully"

Him "that is your job as a wife and mother Thandiwe, you know this very well"

Me "you are unbelievable"

Him "put Kayise to sleep and run me a bath, I have to go to the club"

Mrs. Dlamini

I was on my way to check on the crying Kayise, I thought she was with her mother, but her piercing cry

tells me otherwise I reached Thandiwe and Sizwe's bedroom and I can hear the conversation with her

husband, I close my eyes coz it pains me to hear how he is talking to her and she is not standing up for

herself, I know how it feels coz I have been there myself, verbal and emotional abuse exist, it might not

leave physical scars for everyone to see but I kid you not the scars are left too and they cut deep, Sizwe

is just like her father in law, they are both patriarchal and they are abusive, I wish Thandiwe can realize that it will never change but it will just escalate and she will be in too deep, I think I played a role in her staying in an unhappy marriage because she witnessed me staying with her father after he put me through hell, I might have given her the idea that it is okay to hold on to the abuse and no love. I wish I had taken charge of my life earlier, maybe things would have been different, but there is no need for the what ifs coz we cannot change the past, I just have to try harder to make her realize that she deserves better. I go back to the bedroom I am currently using, I need to pray about this, I need to ask God for guidance.

Siza

I decided to call Uriel to check up on her and she was sounding down so I asked her to send me her location and I promised come see her, it is Saturday so I will spend the afternoon with her and then go



back to Molemo's place. Olivia taught me that when a person is down you have to bring alcohol and food to cheer them up, so I stopped by the complex and bought a bottle of vodka and two bottles of wine with cranberry juice, I pay she has ice coz this bottle store doesn't have them, I punch the address in my GPS and I get there in no time, I call her when I am at her gate and she opens for me, this house is beautiful, I park in the drive way and she is already waiting for me by the door, she is in nothing but an oversized t-shirt and she is bare foot. I walk out of the car and close it, she smiles at me and I get to her we share a hug.

Me "hey baby"

Her "hey, wow your car girl, dammit" I look at it and smile

Me "thank you babe"

Her "Soft huh" I blush

Me "my boyfriend calls me that"

Her "your man got you that beast" I nod

Her "wow you are lucky hey, and please can I have that bag" she

gives me her puppy eyes; it is my Luis

Vuitton small backpack.

Me "you want this one or should I buy you another design or size?"

Her "girl you know what just come in" I laugh and we walk in, her house is beautiful hey, we seat down

Her "what can I offer you babe"

Me "I brought a these" I give her the plastic of the alcohol and she smiles

Her "just what I needed hun, I will go get the glasses" she went to the kitchen and came back with 2

long glasses and an ice bucket, she mixers our drinks and hands me a glass

Me "oh thank you, I hope I won't be too drunk to drive"

Her "I will keep an eye on you" we laugh and toast

Me "so what's been going on with you, why haven't you been coming to work" she sighs

Her "eish babe, man problems"

Me "let's go burn his car" she bursts out laughing

Her "you are crazy hey" I laugh

Me "talk me hun"

Her "my man is caught between me and his wife, he wants out but he is afraid of his father in law"

Me "oh my God that is bad, but he shouldn't stay in a loveless marriage babe, but honestly are you sure

he is not playing you?" she sighs

Her "I have thought about that really but why would he buy this house for us?" my eyes widen

Me "what, the guy bought you a house" she nods and I breathe deeply

Me "look babe I am not judging or discouraging you, but normally when a husband says he will leave his

wife for you it never happens, I can tell that you love this guy, and I for one know that love is such a

beautiful thing, I just need you to leave room for disappointment and make plans of your own so when it

doesn't work out you have somewhere to fall back on, I for one know how bad it is to put your trust in a

man and they disappoint and hurt you beyond, it takes everything in you to pick yourself after that and

it is difficult I won't lie" she smiles

Her “thank you so much babe, I needed to hear that”

Me “just make sure that he decides on who he wants and he must do it soon, if he loves you he will

choose you and you guys will fight all the challenges together, that is love” she raises here glass

Her “I will drink to that, thank you for coming I needed this babe” I blow her a kiss

Please react, leave a comment and share with others. Enjoy your weekend and see you on Monday

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 59 (not edited)

Siza

I haven’t seen my mother in a while and when she called earlier today to meet I couldn’t hold my

excitement, though she sounded like something was bothering her. She invited me for lunch, I offered to

pick her up but she said she will ask Sizwe to drop her off, that

night Molemo took us out to dinner she had a great time and she liked their food hence I said we should meet there again. I was running a bit late, you know traffic in Jozi can be crazy, I get there and find her already waiting with a glass of water, her mind seems to be far away and I start to worry, I get to the table and only then she notices me.

Ma "oh hello my baby"

Me "hey mama" she stands and we hug

Ma "ai Sizakele you are forever dressed like you are going to an event my baby, always so beautiful" I

smile and kiss her.

Me "aow sthandwa sami thank you, you look nice too" she laughs

Ma "all thanks to you baby, you bought this for me" I smile and we sit down, and she sighs

Me "let's order" she nods and we call a waitress and place our order. Her body is fully here with me but

her mind is a thousand kilometers away

Me "mama what's wrong, you seen besides yourself" she fakes a smile

Ma "mpilo Sizakele"

Me "talk to me please"

Ma "I have a request to make my love and I hate that I have to include you" I narrow my eyes

Me "I would do anything for you mawami" she smiles a genuine smile and my heart eases

Ma "I am divorcing your father baby, I am tired of that man" oh my God, i am shocked not knowing

what to say. She smiles and wipes her tear

Ma "I need you to ask Motaung to help me with the process" I gasp for air she is really serious

Me "mama what happened that you decided on such a huge step"

Ma "let's just say I am tired of being a door mat"

Me "I hear you my love" I hold her hands and kiss them

Ma "so will you help me ask him" I sigh

Me "I will talk to him soon as I get home mama"

Ma "thank you so much my love" I smile

Me "are you sure? Are you certain about the decision you are taking?" she smile

Ma "I have never been so sure about anything nana" I smile

Me "then consider it done, just give Mo a day or two he will definitely have the papers, what is the plan?"

Ma "I want him to agree to a clean divorce, we got married in community of property, whatever that we saved together we will share and he can keep the house and its furnisher. I am going to ask for a transfer this side and if I don't get a job soon I will just have to take my pension money and buy a small house and just enjoy my retirement in the city near my children" she has a plan it means she has been thinking about for a while.

Me "I am sorry It had to come to this" she smiles

Ma "I am sorry I was never mother enough to fight for you my baby, I am deeply sorry Sizakele" I let a tear fall and look at her deep in the eyes

Me "you did the best you could for me given the situation mama, you did more for me than you can

ever imagine, you are the best Mamami” she wipes of her tears quickly

Ma “I am so proud of you Sizakele, you fought when the odds were against you, you have shown courage, resilience and strength, I look up to you and I love you” her words melted my heart

Mercy

Having to hide my mother from my husband is proving difficult every day, as much as this house is huge

and all, I get scared that he will see her and recognize her from the pictures, then he might go tell my

father about her ‘resurrection’, I know my father would flip and automatically see me as an enemy, as

much as I am not happy with him right now I don’t want to be seen as his enemy, I know better than

being on Razors bad side. Vusi hasn’t left the house today and he is basically everywhere time my

mother hasn’t eaten anything since last night; I don’t know how I am going to sneak this food in the



bedroom without him noticing me. I just popped the lasagna in the microwave and I am standing here with it trying to figure out a way, my husband makes his way in. when you want him to disappear he is everywhere but need him wena I tell you he is nowhere to be seen.

Him "you eat a lot these, if I didn't know better I would swear you are pregnant" I fake a laugh

Me "you know my periods make me eat a lot" he nods

Him "but you have never had such an extreme appetite"

Me "you know how hormones are babe"

Him "I guess so"

Me "are you going out?"

Him "yes I want to go hang with the boys" huuuuu finally God

Me "oh okay, have fun ne and don't rush back" he narrows his eyes

Him "haibo what do you want to do while I am away" I chuckle

Me "don't be silly what can I do"

Him "okay I am going to shower" I nod, good shot. He walks

away and I quickly take a bottle of water

and juice then take a packet of potato chips and walk upstairs, I was about to open the bedroom door

when his voice startled me

Him "why are you sneaking around" I jump and cream a little

Me "baby don't do that, you'll give me a heart attack"

Him "you are sneaky, what are you doing in that room"

Me "I normally close myself in here and sit in the balcony and look at the view"

Him "but our bedroom has the best view" I laugh

Me "I know baby but this one has this serine I fail to explain" he nods

Him "okay then, let me go shower"

Me "sharp babe" he walks away and I wait for him to disappear, then walk into the room and my mom

is not in there, I call out her name and she appears from inside the closet, I laugh

Me "mommy what are you doing in there" she shakes her head

Her "your husband was outside that door I couldn't risk him seeing me and running to tell your dad"

Me "we need to get you to another room mommy coz he is already suspicious"

Her "we have to Mookie, is that my food I am starving"

Me "oh yes sorry" I hand the food to her and she sits and starts eating

Me "you can't hide in this bedroom forever you know"

Her "I know Mercy, I need to see Olivia first before I can go back in the world my nana"

Me "okay, when are you planning on doing that"

Her "soon very soon baby"

Me "okay let me go keep an eye on Vusi so he doesn't try come into this room"

Her "please do I don't want to be exposed yet"

Me "don't worry I got your back"

Her "I love you okay?"

Me "I love you too mommy dearest"

Her "how sweet I missed hearing those words" I smile and walk out

Thandiwe

I was on my knees praying to God to give me the strength to shove back those memories where I had always kept them, I hate this, I wish my mother didn't push this much, I was okay doing fine shutting everything that happened in the past in the past, that is how I dealt with it and now it is back and I hate how it is making me feel, it is like I am that little girl all over again, vulnerable and manipulated. I hate myself for ever allowing myself to believe when he told me it was the right thing, but I grew up and understood what it meant, he violated me and took my innocence and made me believe that it is suppose to be like that, did he maybe brainwash me or? I remember it all started when mama was doing night shifts and Sizakele was just 6 and I was just 9, she has always been a deep sleeper that one. Baba came into our room and woke me up, I wondered why he would wake me up that late but I wasn't scared he was my dad I mean what harm could possibly come my way, this man was my protector so I

thought, he told me to go with him, I stood up and did as he said, we got to their bedroom and he was looking at my tiny body and he ordered me to seat on top of him, which I did willingly coz he always carried my sister and I. He started brushing my thighs and immediately felt something poke me, I got scared but he told me that he would never hurt me. my own father laid me down on his matrimonial bed and told me that a daughters first job and to make her father happy and obey everything he say ' he kept on saying that while removing my underwear I couldn't understand what that all meant I didn't even understand why he was removing my clothes so I started crying. He told me I should stop because if I didn't do as he said I will be punished for being a disobedient child and my days on earth would be cut short, what scared me the most was when he said that if I didn't do this with him when he wanted to my mother and sister will be taken away and killed and I will be left alone. I couldn't imagine life without mama so I let him have his way with me, I can still remember

the pain when he shoved his manhood in  
me I couldn't contain my tears, to make sure that no one hears  
my screams of agony he shoved my  
panty in my mouth to gag me. I became his favorite daughter I  
got everything I wanted and more, I felt  
like what I was doing was right since he had stopped beating  
mama and peace rained in the house again,  
that happened until I was 17 in grade 11, he didn't come to call  
me when mama was at work anymore  
and I wondered if I was doing anything wrong but I noticed that  
he started giving Siza the look he gave  
me all those years, he started doing all the nice things for her all  
he used to do for me but he never  
came to take her to his room and it hurt so bad, I started  
resenting my own sister because I wondered  
why she didn't have to experience the pain I did but gets all the  
attention, I hated Siza more when I took  
a liking into Vusi and he also liked me but the minute he laid his  
eyes on her he forgot I existed, she and  
Vusi started having a thing and my father found out, he got so  
mad at her and tried all he could to

separate them but nothing, he became that angry man that will hit mama black and blue, and I hated

my sister more, I let baba hurt me coz I wanted to protect her and mama and to keep the peace in the

house but she didn't do the same, when she got pregnant and he disowned her I rejoiced coz finally she

will feel the pain, it might not be the same but she will feel the pain nonetheless. My father broke me

and in the mist of that he made me to worship the ground he walked on, when I saw him I saw a King

and I knew his word is law it is final, even though I grew up I still had the fear that he will hurt mama. I

feel trap in that pain I want to break free but I am scared to unleash the monster baba really is. I feel like

screaming and sometimes death is what I wish upon myself, I will not feel when I am dead so the pain will not be there.

Razor

Weekends with my lady are now not ours, since her mother is this side and she doesn't spend as much

time with Olivia coz of work she tries by all means to distribute her time for everyone she loves, I am

grateful for the weekdays she spends with me though but you know how nice it is to be with your lady

just lazing around and making love everywhere in the house, the minute she texted to alert me that she

will coming here after her lunch with her mother I decided to make something nice for her, so I went to

buy her flowers and chocolates and some goodies and set up picnic in the garden, the weather is nice

and I managed to get some soft music to play to scenery. I went upstairs and wore my torn denim, she

loves that pair even turns her on especially when I don't have a top on and I am barefoot. I check the

time and it is around 6:00 in the evening, but the weather is still beautiful, you know summer, I dropped

rose petals from the main door to lead her to the garden. I am sitting down on the grass on top of the

flees having a glass of champagne when she appeared on the door leading to the garden, she is wearing

a red summer floaty Minnie dress with her white Alexander



McQueen's she is holding her white small  
bag to match her shoes and she has her braids down, she finally  
plaited her hair. She looks breath  
taking; I stand up and approach her blushing self

Her "but baby" I smile and she giggles hiding her face, I know  
it's the dimples making her go crazy

Me "you look amazing my love"

Her "thank you and you look like a snack no in fact you are the  
entire meal" she bites her lip

Me "all this is your snack or meal to feast on" she giggles again  
and I just cup her face and kiss her

slowly and sensually. She moans and I let go, I want to torture  
her, each time I delay giving it to her

when she becomes a freak in the sack

Her "baby don't stop" I laugh

Me "you gonna have me in every way you desire me, but for now  
please enjoy this picnic with me and

tell me how your mom is" she sighs like she just remembered  
something

Her "let's seat first" she sits and I remove her sneakers and secret socks and pour her a glass of champagne and she starts eating the biltong.

Me "what's wrong love" she takes a deep breath

Her "mama wants to divorce" okay that was unexpected

Me "that is a good or bad thing?"

Her "definitely good my love, I am happy for her that man doesn't deserve my mother at all"

Me "I understand my baby"

Her "she asked me to kindly ask that you assist her with filling"

Me "tell her to consider it done" she laughs a

Me "what baby"

Her "I said the same thing to her" I smile

Me "oh you know your man can make things happen huh"

Her "definitely boo" she says sounding so seductively I bite my lower lip, I know she is doing that on

purpose, but this is on my terms

Me "I will push it with my contact soon as I talk to her about what she wants the outcome to be"

Her "should I give you her number"

Me "yes please, I will keep them and call her when you are abusing me" she laughs so beautifully

Her "Oh Mo I love you so much" fuck it never gets tired.

Me "and thank you for choosing me baby you are amazing Soft" she blushes

Please react, leave a comment and share with others.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 60 (Not edited)

Mrs. Dlamini

I finally received the divorce papers, Siza was right Motaung makes things happen, I signed them soon as

he handed them to me I didn't want to waste anytime I wanted out of this marriage as in like yesterday

there was nothing to think about I made my decision and I am sticking to it. I have mourned the death of

my marriage and I am done, I will not shed tear for Dlamini

anymore, my decision to be a mother to my children starts now, I will not rest until I make Thandiwe realize that she is worth much more than an abusive marriage she has to understand that this is life after a failed marriage, and getting out alive is what matters, she has two little children she must think about them. Sizakele just dropped me off at the gate and drove off; I must admit it is nice seeing my baby that happy; this class looks good on her. I get into the house and find Dlamini in the lounge with Sizwe and Thandiwe, my daughter looks besides herself it is worrisome. I greet and they acknowledge, except the monster I married.

Him "where are you coming from at this time, who do you expect to cook when you are gallivanting the city like a prostitute in heat" I chuckle and Thandiwe gasp for air

Me "where I am or what I am doing is none of your concern, and if you want food you know where the kitchen plus you have two hands" I say looking at straight in the

eyes, I see them turn red not believing

what I just said to him, he stands up clenching his jaws

Him "what the hell did you just say to me"

Me "you are not deaf Madado you heard me loud and clear" he attempted to slap him but I managed to

hold his hand in time.

Me "try that shit one more time and you will find yourself sleeping in the police cells" his eyes pop

Him "what has gotten into you nkosikazi" I roll my eyes

Me "listen hear if you think I am still that gullible weak woman you used to take advantage of and beat

mercilessly back in that village you are in for a surprise because I Lungile Mthethwa will not stand for

your shit anymore" I let go of his hand

Him "Thandiwe are you listening to your mother"

Me "leave my child out of this"

Him "what is wrong with you this night did you smoke drugs" I laugh

Me "not at all I am just not blind anymore" I take my bag from the couch and retrieve divorce papers

and hand them to him, he takes the envelope and gives me a questioning look

Him "what is this?" he said giving me an attitude

Me "those are the divorce papers, I am done with this marriage, I am done with you, Madoda you are

nothing but a coward and I am done staying married to a man like you" he looks at me shocked and

Sizwe and Thandiwe are standing up ready to stop him if he tries to fight me, surprisingly enough he just

laughs

Him "oh Lungile my darling, nice try but when I said till death do us apart I meant it, the only way you

are leaving this marriage is in a coffin do you understand me"

Me "oh well we will see about that" I tried walking away but he grabbed me and slapped me across my

face, and held me by my throat

Thandiwe "baba stop it man, just stop, you will not do that to my mother in my house" Sizwe manages

to move him from him, I try and normalize my breathing, I look at him straight in the eyes

Me "pathetic little boy trapped in a man's body what a shame" I

take my bag and walk away

Him "you can continue dreaming of divorcing me" I laugh

Me "just sign the damn papers Madoda, but to tell you the truth whether you sign or not I am still

leaving you so that paper is just a formality" I disappear in the corridor heading to the bedroom

Siza

I dropped off my mother and I drove to Uriel's place, it is around 7pm, I called her and she said she is at

her place bored, I was also going to be bored since my mom left, Mo went to some event with Gadafi

and he will get home later on the other hand Olivia said she is at her booty calls place, her and that guy

just take care of each other's sexual needs once in a while, the poor guy likes her but she wants that has

to do with being someone's girlfriend. I get to my destination and I call to tell her I am outside, the door

opens and I drive in. I park and walk to the door and just walk in I find her already drinking at twerking I just laugh

Her "hey girlfriend you are here" she gives me a hug

Me "hey girlfriend yourself, seems like this party started way before I got an invite" she giggles

Her "not really this is my 2nd bottle of wine baby" I nod and go get myself a glass

Me "is there anything to eat or should we order"

Her "I didn't cook friend, just order something"

Me "okay what do you feel like having?"

Her "anything spicy" I nod and order pizza and some wings. I pour myself a glass and gulp it then pour

another one; I shouldn't get drunk I am driving

Her "where is your boo thang"

Me "he went out with his brother, some event, it is for charity but only guys allowed, they will be

playing poker and all of that"

Her "he is doing all these rich man things" I laugh

Me "you can say that I guess"

Her "and girl you definitely fill the rich man woman part well, your clothes mama always looking



amazing and I love that you don't try too hard and you are so humble Siza thank you for being my friend" I smile at her

Me "thank you babe, you are just as amazing friend" the food arrives and we eat while talking and

laughing, sis keeps on taking tequila shots and now she is sloshed but she knows how to handle her

alcohol I just laugh and we having a good time, I check my watch and it's 21:30 okay the night is still

young. we sitting down now listening to music on low volume, we hear the door open and I look at her

she is unbothered

Her "don't stress it can only be my boyfriend" I nod and it was really him coz he shouted from the

kitchen, his voice is for familiar

Him "baby so much alcohol are you having a party or something" he says care free you can hear the

love in his voice from that mere statement, I just wish he wasn't playing my friend like this, I look at the

blushing Uriel on the couch she is head over heels with this guy

Her "love come meet my friend"

Him "coming just taking a beer and taking a slice of your pizza I hope you don't mind" we giggle this voice though, maybe I am just drunk.

A second later he appears and our eyes meet, I stand quickly and Uriel hurries to him and they kiss but

he is so embarrassed and shocked to see me

Her "hey baby, I missed you so much"

Him "I miss you too my angel"

Her "oh love meet my friend Siza and babe please meet my love Vusi" she says with a wide smile and

we just stay there tongue tied, but I finally decide to speak

Me "what you are doing to Uriel is not right Vusi, is this what you are going to do all your life huh, use

and hurt every woman you come across wasn't I enough you just had to hurt more and more"

Him "Siza I am so sorry, it's just that things are complicated" I laugh

Me "you are the complicated one Vusi, just grow the fuck up"

Her "okay guys what is going on here, do you two know each other?" I sigh oh why did she have to be

his girlfriend, she doesn't deserve this not one bit

Me "I am sorry babe but I need to leave"

Her "at least tell me what is going on friend" I look at her and kiss her cheek

Me "if he loves you he will come clean, all I know is you deserve better" I took my bag and phone

Him "Siza please don't tell Razor, I am going to fix all of this"

Me "she loves you and you are playing her for a fool, you never learn, tell her the truth Vusi" I look at

Uriel one last time and she has tears in her eyes

Me "remember babe, you deserve better I swear" she blinked her tears and I walked out. Vusi will never

change, now I am stuck between a rock and a hard place, Uriel is my friend and I care about her but Vusi

is married to my mans daughter, they are both woman and it not nice knowing what he is doing to

them, I personally know the pain coz he did it to me too and now he is doing to Mercy what he did to

me. I don't know how I got to my mans place coz I was lost in my thoughts the entire drive. The security

opens for me and I drive in and park, I walk into the house and

go straight to bed.

Uriel

Last night I just went straight to bed I felt so hurt from the bits and pieces of their conversation so the

thought of hearing the whole truth scared me so much I decided to sleep and deal with it in the

morning, I have been up for a few minutes and he is holding on to me so tight, I finally decide to

untangle myself from him and he holds on to me and I sigh

Him "baby please can we talk please" I remain silent I don't know what to say really, I want to know the

truth but I am afraid. He let go of me and turns me around to look at his

Him "baby please say something"

Me "I wish I didn't love you Vusi" he closes his eyes and opens them and a tear falls

Him "please don't say that please sthandwa sam please"

Me "I know I was okay with you being married and all but I feel there is more that you are hiding from

me" I let my tears fall, I fell in love with a married man and it hurts.

Him "I beg you Uriel please, I love you with all my heart baby please, allow me to tell you everything and

then I beg for a month to end things with Mercy and it will only be just you and me I promise" I wish I

could say no and that he should leave but I want everything he just said, I deserve better yes but the

heart wants what it wants and that is him

Me "how do you know Siza" he sigh

Him "oh my love please don't hate me please" he looked at me tears streaming down his face

Him "Uriel Siza was my first love, she was everything, I got her pregnant when she was 16 and her father

disowned her because of that, I moved to the city to study and that is when I changed and started

neglecting her while she was suffering in the village in the hands of my mother, I graduated and found a

job and I started feeling superior to her she was no longer my

type, I loved her yes but things were different, I met Mercy and we started a relationship I kept my daughter and Siza from her but after 2 or so years Siza finally came to the city to look for me babe, and that is when I treated her like trash I threw her out of my house and denied being with her, I only acknowledged that we had a child together, If it wasn't for Mandla my friend who helped her the night I threw her out I don't know what would have happened, I regret my actions" I couldn't believe my ears my God how could he be that heartless

Me "and where is your daughter, Siza has never mentioned her" he cried so hard at the mention of his daughter I couldn't just avoid his heart breaking sobs I went and gave him a hug.

Him "she died baby Siphephelo died baby because of my mother because of Mercy but mostly because of me, I failed my child and I broke Sizakele in the worst possible way, I am really sorry for that"

Me "shhh it's okay baby it's okay" I am crying too, I love this man but he doesnt want to make things

with us and that hurts more.

Him "baby I am sorry for all I did, I know it might seem as if I am I am repeating what I did to Siza, but

Uriel I love you with Mercy it was about the money and power but I know better now I swear"

Me "I love you too but love is not enough Vusi, I want to be the only one" he closes his eyes

Him "and you will soon I promise, I just need a month I swear"

Me "until then Vusi, please stop coming to me or calling me, until you fix your issues stay away please, I

have let this thing go on for long enough"

Him "Angel please don't do this please"

Me "I will wait for a month and if you don't keep to you promise then I will move for good"

Him "love don't give up on us I beg you"

Me "I need to start packing now, I will call Siza to help me move to my mothers in Katlehong"

Him "no no you don't have to leave, this is our place baby I would rather be the one to leave"

Me "no Vusi, I will go, make things right first, I am done being your mistress" I get out of bed and go

start packing some of my clothes I will get the rest when he is not here.

Mr. Dlamini

What will the villagers say when I go back to the village without my wife, I am respectable man and the

minute they find out that Lungile left me they will start being nosey and I cannot afford for my family

affairs to be aired out to the public for everyone to know, I am a respectable man in that small place

people worship the ground I walk on, I work closely with the King, not having a wife will taint all of that, I

will not allow her to leave me, the only way I am going to be without a wife is when she dies not

because of a divorce. If I can't convince her myself my daughter will do it for me then. Her mother and

husband left to where I don't know, I walk in her bedroom and she is sitting on top of the bed painting her nails

Me "Thandi ka baba" she jumps a bit



Her "yebo baba" she says sounding scared and I narrow my eyes

Me "how are you my baby"

Her "I am great thanks just tired" she stands up and she is in her shorts she tries by all mean to hide her

thighs

Me "your mother wants to leave her" she blinks a few times

Her "I am aware baba" I nod

Me "and you are going to convince her to stop this nonsense"

Her "kodwa baba she has already made up her mind I mean she signed the documents already"

Me "do I look like I care about that Thandiwe" I say firmly and approach her

Her "no baba" she says with a shaking voice, I stand in front of her, so close and place my hand on her

thigh and brush it, she tenses at my touch obviously scared and that is what I want to instill fear in her

so she can do as I say

Me "you will convince your mother to forget about this whole thing and we go back to the village, if you

don't make her hear you baby girl you will be the one going back

with me and fulfill all her wifely duties

and by all I mean all and I know you know exactly what I mean,  
and when the villagers ask me where my

wife is I will tell them that he caught you sleeping with another  
man in his house and threw you out then

I had to bring your shame with me back home and I will tell  
them that your mother was also in the same

bed with you and that man, I will act like the broken man and  
you know I can. Imagine how they will

look at you and gossip about you while they pity me” she was  
now crying, I kiss her cheek and walk out.

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 61 (not edited)

Thandiwe

I am even afraid to stay in my own house when I am only left

with my father, what he wants me to do is impossible and my mother has already made up her mind I have never seen her so determined before, she has changed but for the better, she has become this strong woman who knows how to stand up for herself, I should be inspired by her newly found strength and courage but I am scared of what baba might do to the both of us. My mother and husband are out and so was my father but I know he never leaves for long, I decided to go take enough food for myself and Kayise's nappies and food and locked myself in our bedroom, my baby girl decided to be a sweet angel coz she has been sleeping for a while, I decide to watch something on my laptop and I stumble upon the movie for colored girls, funny how long I have had this movie but never watched it before, I decided to give it a try. I watched it until the end and by the time the movie finished I was crying, because I felt myself relate to their pain, I knew how it feels to be abused and violated buy the person your love and trust it hurts because I decided to let Sizwe

hurt me because my father did it first to me it was all I know so  
I didn't care I let it go on, something

deep inside of me knew it is time to talk to my mother about  
what happened in the past, I need to come

clean, I have to break the chain of my father's mental slavery, I  
am done being a victim I am taking my

life back I don't want to end up being a bitter mother to my  
children because of what my father did to

me. I spend the day crying and crying, I have let this pain eat  
through me long enough I am done

protecting this monster it is clear that my father is pedophile  
what if I remain quiet and my daughter

becomes his next victim, I have to think of Kayise and other  
little girls out there suffering the same fate.

The is a knock on my door and I freeze

Ma "Thandiwe baby are you in there?" I sigh relieved

Me "Yes mama, I am coming" I went to open the door she looks  
at me and frown

Ma "have you been crying, what's wrong why are you locking  
yourself in your room" I felt tears coming

Me "I am tired mama, it is all too much now, I am even scared in my own house" she takes my hand and walks in and closes the door and we go sit on the bed, she looks at me worried

Ma "khuluma no mawakho baby (talk to your mother)"

Me "it hurts mama, he threatened to take me back to the village if I don't convince you to stop with this divorce"

Ma "Thandiwe I am your mother and through your eyes I can see there is more to what you are letting on" I cry some more my heart breaking further I am about to disclose something I have kept to myself

for most of my life, what if she doesn't believe me

Me "mama please don't hate me please don't judge me I was young"

Ma "I could never hate you, you are my child I love and whatever it is just talk to me please"

Me "mama, he uhm he raped me, I was only 9 and he started abusing me sexually and it hurt I would cry

and beg him to stop but he never did, I cried and cried till I couldn't cry no more till I got used to it" her

tears fell and I could see the pain in my mother's eyes

Ma "your father?" I nod she pulls me in for a tight hug

Me "yebo mama, he would do it everytime you went to work  
nightshifts, he said he will kill you and Siza

if I don't go as he says, I am sorry mama" she tightened the hug  
and lets go and wipes my tears

Ma "never apologize it was never your fault you did nothing  
wrong do you hear me, he is the monster

here not you baby, I am the one who should be apologizing to  
you I failed as a mother, I failed to see

what was happening in my own house with my own child, what  
kind of mother does that, I don't

deserve you and your sister, I let this man hurt the both of you  
while I let him, I am so sorry Thandiwe I

am sorry for letting him violate you like that, I shouldn't have  
been working I should have been a mother

to you and your sister first please from the deepest parts of my  
heart I sincerely apologize" the hurt in

my mother's voice is heart breaking

Me "never blame yourself mama, it was all him, you were and  
still are the best mother in the world, i

am just glad you believe me” she hugs me and keeps on telling me how sorry she is and that she is here for me all step of the way.

Ma “I love you baby and thank you for telling me the truth” I smile

Me “I feel lighter, the pain is there I don’t think it will ever go away but talking about helped a bit and

honestly the fact that you don’t hate nor judge me makes me feel so much better”

Ma “I am here okay, I am your mother and for you and Sizakele I will do everything”

Me “so what is going to happen now”

Ma “I want to kill that man with my own bare hands, he is a monster but this situation is delicate, we need to handle it with care, he deserves to rot in jail, would you want to press charges?”

Me “we can do that? Won’t they tell us the is no physical evidence?”

Ma “we will have to seek legal advice on how to go on about this”

Me “I am scared to ask Sizwe for his lawyers contacts mama,

how will he look at me after finding out”

Ma “if he loves you he will support you baby, but if he feels otherwise then he is not the man God made

for you, but I know a lawyer I can talk to him, he is the one who helped with the divorce papers”

Me “who is this lawyer?”

Ma “promise me you won’t reject the help because of your personal issues, your father needs to be

dealt with he deserves to go to prison and he is a good lawyer he can get justice for you please”

Me “I get you mama, just tell me the name of the lawyer”

Ma “Motaung, the man your sister is with”

Me “you mean Razor” I don’t know how I feel with Sizakele knowing my pain while I was rejoicing on

hers, it will be so awkward

Ma “yes he has a law firm he won’t mind helping us”

Me “with everything that I have done to Siza I don’t think she will allow her husband to help me”

Ma “your sister is not a vindictive person, I will talk to them” I just nod and decide to put my pride aside



there is nothing wrong with asking for help.

Ma "I know it will be difficult but just try act normal until we have a solid plan, it is taking everything in

me to be so calm I want to kill him soon as he walks through that door" I give her a hug

Me "thank you so much mama" our moment is disturbed by a crying Kayise, oh she is finally awake

must be hungry, I pick her up and give her my breast and she sucks on it for dear life.

Vusi

It feels like my life is perpetual night, the sun has never risen since Uriel left me, it has been 2 days of

hell, I don't even know where her mother's place I just know that it is in Katlehong, I know she asked

that I don't contact her until I am ready to be fully with her, which I promise to do and soon, I just need

to secure other ways of making money incase Razor decides to kill my law career because I hurt his

daughter, I have a lot of money saved up let's just say I never

did anything with the money I made, if I  
wanted a car Mercy would make it happen, I bought the house  
cash and made sure it is in Uriel's name,  
though she doesn't know this, I am planning on buying a block  
of flats for student accommodation and  
maybe invest in other businesses just in case Razor wipes my  
ass dry, I will know that financially my  
woman and I will be okay, her leaving me gave me a wakeup call,  
she loves me yes but she doesn't need  
me and if I don't fix this soon she will meet someone who will  
appreciate her and make her an honest  
woman and I don't think I can ever live with the pain of losing  
her. I need time to transfer everything I  
have to her name so that when I leave Mercy I can be able to  
survive with my woman. I need to beg  
Sizakele to not say a word to Razor until I decide to talk to him,  
I have been parked at the hospital  
hoping to catch her when she goes to her car, it is already  
knockoff time, about 15 minutes later she  
appears and walks to her car I wait for her to get in then I  
quickly go to and get into her passenger side

Her "what the fuck Vusi"

Me "I am sorry but I desperately need to talk to you" she laughs

Her "let me guess you are here to ask me to not tell my man that you are cheating on his daughter"

Me "please Siza, I need to handle some things first before I can end things, I need to ensure that I will be

able to take care of Uriel financially, Razor will make me pay for hurting his daughter, he is going to

cripple my career and make sure no other law firm touches me so please Siza"

Her "I will only keep quiet because I care about Uriel and because she has ended things with you till you make up your mind"

Me "and thank you for that, I am going to fix things, Siza I am sorry for all I ever did to you, but I swear it

is not the same with Uriel I genuinely love that woman, I can't imagine my life without her"

Her "if you love her then you will be fast in doing whatever that needs to be done and tell Mercy you

can't be with her anymore, and when you finally have her back

and you dare play this game with her  
with another woman I swear to you Razor will be the least of  
your problems” why do I fear that  
statement.

Me “I will never hurt her again I swear, I love her Siza I love Uriel  
so much”

Her “you are such a fucked up man, I can’t believe I ever loved  
you, the only good thing that came out of  
you was Siphophelo”

Me “I miss her every day, I wish things worked out differently  
with her, I am sure she would have loved  
Uriel” she sighs

Her “that was the only woman you would have been with that I  
would allow my child near” I laugh

Me “I am sorry for having a hand in her passing I know I broke  
you”

Her “yes you did but I am okay now. God works in mysterious  
ways” there was silence for a minute

Me “she asked me to not make contact with her till I have fixed  
everything, I miss her so much, I just  
need to know is she okay? Is she coping?”

Her "of course she isn't you idiot, that woman loves you Vusi, she is hurting and she wishes you can

walk to her and tell her it is all done that you guys don't have to hide anymore, that she can finally post

a picture of you two as her status and claim you without the fear of being called a mistress and home

wrecker" I sigh not knowing how to answer to that

Me "I know this might be a lot to ask but next time you talk to her please tell her that I love her and I

working on making it right, please"

Her "just get out of my car I have a man waiting for me at home"

Me "oh yeah apologies" she rolls her eyes and I laugh. I get out of her car and she drives off. I never

thought she will be okay with me, we might not be the best of friends but at least we are civil, she is

happy with Razor and I am glad she deserves all the happiness in the world, and I am glad she is my

woman's friend it might sound crazy but it's true. I need to go get my affairs and get my woman back, I

go back to my car and drive to Braam I have an appointment

with the real estate agent, there are few well established student accommodations available there, I wonder why someone would one to sell such an investment.

Uriel

I miss him and I wish I didn't, my mother welcomed me back home with open arms, she has always begged me to come leave with her but I wanted to live out there, my mom can be so strict when it comes to me but I guess that is because I am the only child, my dad always tells her to leave me so I can explore and see what the world has in store for me, mama has always wanted to shield me from the world, she never wants to see hurt and that is impossible, when Siza dropped brought me home she saw that I wasn't okay and she started fussing over me, I haven't explained why I came home looking like a mess, how do I explain this situation to my mother she wouldn't understand. She came in my room holding a tray of food, and my father followed after her. I sigh

coz I know they are here to find out what is going on.

Ma "my baby" I give her a weak smile

Dad "we brought you food baby, you haven't eaten since morning and that is not right"

Me "thank you but I am not hungry"

Dad "nonsense do you want to die of hunger, love give her that food" my mother placed the tray in

front of me and I started eating slowly, they watched me till I finished everything.

Ma "thank you nana" she takes the tray and walks out, but my dad remains

Dad "okay Uriel what is going on" I sigh

Me "nothing daddy I just came home coz I miss you guys"

Dad "you are my only child I know you more than you know yourself, you have always been able to talk

to me about everything don't stop now" that is true, he has been the easiest one to talk to between the

two of them

Me "it is just boy problems"

Dad "you must really love this one coz he left you a mess and made you move back home" I laugh

Me "I love him so much"

Dad "then what is the problem?"

Me "if I tell you promise not to judge me and when he finally makes things right be okay with him"

Dad "I promise not to judge you but the other one will see" I sigh

Me "just know that he is young still in his late twenties, he is married and he promised to end things

with his wife but he has been dragging his feet, I ended things with him and told him to contact me

when he has fixed his issues, he loves me as much as I love him daddy but I couldn't remain his

mistress" he sighs and comes sit next to me

Dad "they promise to leave their wives the entire time baby but they never do, but that is not the case

every time. I am a man and I am not perfect, I know this because I hurt your mother the same way this

boy is doing to you, she left me too and she was already pregnant with you, I loved your mother but my



wife back then didn't want to let go but there was no love there anymore, I fought and fought to find my way back to your mother and I did, when I finally located her she was almost due to give birth to you.

She refused to take me back till you were about 8 months, love knows no boundaries, and I never

thought you would suffer the same fate. I am sorry my love for what you are going through" I didn't

know this about my parents I am shocked

Me "daddy tell me what to do"

Dad "I wish I could nana but follow your heart, choose your happiness and if that boy is your happiness

let him fight for you, let him want to be with you as much as you want to be with him, I could tell you to

leave him alone but destiny always wins if he is yours to have fate will bring you together no matter how

many people fight against your relationship"

Me "I love him papa"

Dad "that's okay my baby we don't choose who will love I for one know your situation first hand"Thank you God for my father

Please react, leave a comment and share.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 62 (not edited)

Mrs. Dlamini

I am hurting deeply by what my daughter disclosed to me yesterday, it hurt to know that I have failed

my child in worst possible way, I feel like I am the worst mother in the world, I mean how did I miss the

signs, I am a nurse we deal with little girls who are raped and I know the signs but I failed to see them in

my own child, she went through the pain alone for years I cannot begin to imagine how broken and hurt

she has been not being able to tell anyone about it. I need to fight now more than ever, I have never

been so determined to do something like I am now, I feel like jail will not be enough for Dlamini he

needs to feel the pain Thandiwe felt he needs to know how

powerless she was. I got ready in the  
afternoon and went to see Motaung at his office, I have become  
used to this City it is scary, upon getting  
there the reception girl gives me a tough time until I mention  
that he should tell him that Sizakale's  
mothers requests to see him, you should have seen her jump off  
her seat walking me to his office humble as hell.

Her "this is his office you can knock, it was nice seeing you" she  
says leaving me confused she was giving  
me attitude not so long ago

Me "thank you" she smiles and walks away, I knock and he  
shouts come in, I get inside and he is busy on  
his laptop, he stops and stands up when he sees it's me

Him "Mrs. Dlamini what a nice surprise"

Me "please call me Lungile" he chuckles and nods I have already  
told him thim

Him "apologies, how are you?"

Me "not so good, I need your help"

Him "okay, please have a seat" I take a seat and he follows suit

Me "I don't mean to take advantage of your kindness but I legal advice"

Him "is is about the divorce is he refusing to sign"

Me "he is refusing to sign but that's not why I am here, see yesterday my Thandiwe disclosed something

painful to me, my husband has started raping her at age 9 till she was 17 years, he told her to get me to

leave the divorce issue or he will take her to the village and make her do my wifely duties" he closed his

eyes and clenched his jaws, you could see him boiling with range.

Him "that bastard, how could he do that to his own child"

Me "i ask myself the same thing, how do you give birth to a child and turn around to want her as a

woman to sleep with, he is twisted, Thandiwe is even afraid of being left alone in the house with him"

Him "man like him make my blood boil, they make me want to put them through the same thing so they

can feel the same pain they have inflicted on woman, jail is too easy for them"

Me "I share the same sentiments, if I could I would make sure that he suffers the same fate he put my

child through” he looked at me straight in the eyes maybe thinking that I am a crazy woman

Him “is that what you really want Lungile?”

Me “more than anything, but I guess that it’s one thing I cannot have to make Thandiwe feel better” he

looked at me for the longest time and I started feeling uncomfortable

Him “what if I said I could make that happen, I still hate your husband for what he put Siza through but

what he did to Thandiwe makes me loathe him even more” my eyes pop but my heart rejoices

Me “how will you do that Motaung” I genuinely want him to suffer like he did Thandiwe

Him “I know people who know people, I can make his suffer” I didn’t even have to think about it

Me “then do it”

Him “take a day or two to think about it, run it by Thandiwe, let’s find out what kind of justice she wants

for herself” I nod in total agreement I pray she agrees to this, that bastard must suffer

Mandla

I got an unexpected call from Vusi my home boy, he sounded worried over the phone, it has been a

minute since we had time to catch up and so when he asked that I meet with for drinks after work I

didn't hesitate to gather my things and make my way to him, he said we will meet at Club Nations, the

sell food so we will kill two birds with one stone, I arrive there and he is not the yet, I find a table and

order a platter of buffalo wings, pork chops bore worse and 4 salads, then I just order 12 corona's it's a

week day so no heavy staff. The food arrives at the same time he gets here. He comes to the table and we feast bump

Me "sure ntwana"

Him "sharp fede bafo"

Me "ku sharp ntwana no complains"

Him "you are a life saver I am famished, had the longest day ever"

Me "no problem, I have been craving meat for a while, Palesa has me on a green diet imagine" he

laughs and I shake my head

Him "eish these women"

Me "time wena you have 2, you are one strong mother fucker" he doesn't laugh but sighs deeply

Him "actually Uriel left me, she said I should get my shit together, refuses to be the other woman"

Me "eish ku rough mos, so what are you doing to do manje"

Him "I love that woman ntwana, hence I am getting my ducks in a row, I didn't tell you this but I bought

a house in her name kodwa she doesn't know, it is for us to stay in when I finally tell Mercy that I can't

keep stringing her along" I whistle

Me "this is deep mos, you really leaving your wife for her, you Razor id going to rough you up right"

Him "I don't care, I can't live without Uriel anymore, I am suffocating with his daughter"

Me "just don't play with that girl please"

Him "I promised even Sizakele that I wouldn't and I tend to keep my promise I am growing up"

Me "Sizakele?" what does this have to do with Siza

Him "oh sorry I turns out my ex my current are very close friends, don't ask anymore questions" I laugh

this one is in deep shit he is tangled in some serious stuff

Me "I will ask no questions and be told no lies" he laughs

Him "I called you here because I just bought a two student accommodations, I need you sign fake

papers that will say they belong to you so I can get Razor off my trail when he tries to bankrupt me"

Me "way to go ntwana, I am happy for you bafo, now you are working like a man, I love this Uriel girl

she is making you grow up yazi" I laugh

Him "yeah she makes me want to be a better man, so will you sign?"

Me "yeah I will help definitely"

Him "thank you poi, it means a lot to me"

Me "I am just happy you are acquiring your own things"

Him "funny it took me falling in love with another woman and her leaving me" we both laugh

Me "now that is true love"



Him "yeah I guess"

Me "when are you planning to end things with your wife"

Him "soon as I get my money to an offshore account" I nod he has all this figured out must really love

Uriel for real, he has never cared about anyone like this

Me "just say thank you God that you two only got hitched traditionally it won't be too messy"

Him "yoh mfethu tell me about it"

Me "thank you ancestors wena" he nods and we continue eating and drinking

Thandiwe

My mother went to see Razor at his office I didn't go with her because our last encounter wasn't

pleasant I had touched his most love treasure, so I made an excuse so mama could go alone, I just can't

wait for to come back and tell me what he advice us to do, my father has to pay for what he did to me,

for Kayise's sake I will see this through I will not be intimidated

and silenced anymore, a knock on my door came through

Ma "baby it's me open" I rush to the door and open

Me "what did he say, do we have a chance in court" she remained silent and sat on my bed

Ma "baby sit down please" I feel tears threatening

Me "he spoke of physical evidence right, he won't pay for what he did to me right" I started crying and

she took me for a hug

Ma "shhh baby that is not what he said don't cry" I stop and she wipes my tears

Me "and then what did he say we can do" she sighs

Ma "baby I want you to be honest with me, what justice do you want for yourself?" I was confused

Me "I just want him to pay for what he did"

Ma "so would you rather have him be locked up or would you rather he feels the same pain he caused

you" my eyes widened,

Me "I have always dreamt of beating him and telling him how much he hurt me, I want to hear him beg

me for forgiveness, I need him to suffer mama” she nodded

Ma “I want that too and there is someone who is willing to make that happen”

Me “Razor?” she nods

Ma “yes he gave us 2 days to think about it” I shook my head no

Me “there is nothing to think about mama, please tell him to go ahead with whatever he has planned

and I want to be there through everything”

Ma “are you sure”

Me “I need this mama” she nods

Ma “let me call him then” I just attacked my mother with a hug

Me “thank you kakhulu mama thank you” I cry silently

Razor

I was with Gadafi, we were discussing something about the underworld, he needed some advice on how

to take care of a certain problem, and I don’t mind for as long as I don’t get my hands dirty, my phone

beeps and I look at it my woman's mother.

\* she wants the same justice as us, please arrange with the people you know" I smile

Him "and then why are you smiling like that"

Me "it is a text from my mother in law"

Him "Something Siza should be worried about" I burst out laughing

Me "fuck you man" he chuckles

Him "so what does she want"

Me "that fucker Dlamini, didn't just disown my baby for falling pregnant and leaving her to suffer, he

also raped his eldest daughter from she was 9 to when she was 17"

Him "that son of a bitch"

Me "we need to teach him a lesson he will never forget in a hurry"

Him "are you saying what I think you saying" he asks smiling

Me "yes I am plan everything, I want it to happen in 3 days"

Him "consider it done brother" he stands up and gulps his drink and walks out whistling, Gadafi has a serious problem with Rapists, he witnessed his sister being raped by one of our enemies, they restrained him so he couldn't do anything, but they all lived to regret it

Sizakele

I got home tired as hell the hospital was busy today, surgeries left right and center, we operated, okay I just watched, when the neurosurgeon removed nails from a man's head, he fell from the room and hit this head on the nail gun and the worst happened, they were redecorating for Christmas, we managed to remove the nails from his brain but they affected his optic nerve, he is blind now, I was so emotional but I quickly composed myself. I pack and walk in and meet with Gadafi leaving he is whistling

Him "oh my brothers first lady"

Me "hey my man's brother" he laughs

Him "hello and goodbye" he exits and I laugh, I walk straight to Mo's study and find him looking on

some file, I stand by the door and fold my arms admiring this fine specie in front of me, he notices me

after like a minute and he smiles exposing those dimples, I just blush

Him "get your sexy ass over here" I giggle and go to him

Me "hey lover I missed you" I say sitting on his lap and kiss him

Him "I missed you too, couldn't get hold of you on the phone"

Me "I am sorry baby I was in surgery it was the longest" he nods

Him "its okay love I understand. You are here now" he hugs me so tight and I feel safe he is home

Me "I love you" he lets go and looks at me with those sparkling black eyes

Him "and I love you more than life itself" I kiss him

Him "I have something to tell you" I gets serious and worry runs through me

Me "what's wrong"

Him "your mother came to see me"

Me "why is she okay, is it my father" he sighs and tell me the most shocking thing ever by the time he stops I am in tears with my hand on my mouth

Him "I am so sorry baby"

Me "I can't even begin to think how Thandiwe felt all this time, leaving with that monster oh my father will rot in hell for all he has done" he hugs me

Him "they ask me to do something for them, it is not legal" I let go quickly

Me "you are not killing him his blood will not be on your hands baby please" she sighs

Him "I won't do that, Gadafi will plan something to teach him a lesson to put him through what he put your sister through" I sigh in relief and nod

Me "go ahead with it baby, he deserves it he is a monster and he must feel every ounce of pain he has put Thandiwe through" he kisses me

Him "I will torture him for all he ever did to you and please don't stop me" I kiss him

Me "I won't"

Him "I love you Soft"

Me "I know my love" we share a kiss

Him "let's go take a shower, I am cooking for you tonight" I smile

Me "mmhh sounds good"

Him "what do you feel like having?"

Me "surprise me Mr. Motaung"

Him "yes ma'am" we stand up and walk upstairs hand in hand

Please react, leave a comment and share, participation is everything

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 63 (not edited)

Narrated

On the 3rd day Gadafi send his man to be on Madoda Dlamini's trail, today was the day he will pay for his

sins and he didn't have any idea of what was about to happen to



him, to him it was just another normal day where he was king of his castle the man on top of the world who feared no one, little did he know he was about to meet his match, the devil more evil than himself, today he will regret ever looking at little girls and seeing woman fit enough to grace his men. It was a Friday afternoon and he decided to take a walk around the neighborhood and just breath and think, he was deep in his thoughts while strolling when a Toyota quantum with no registration stopped in front of him and two men quickly got off and went straight to him, he saw what was about to happen as he tried to run but he was too slow because the man grabbed him and injected him with a sedative that will knock him out for a few hours and when he wakes up he will be in hell waiting to feel the fire specially prepared for him. The taxi drove off and made its way to Gadaffi's warehouse in the middle of nowhere, this is a secret location where he deals his illegal businesses. The quantum arrived and parked inside and the man took out Madoda and

Gadafi told them to restrain him on the chair while they wait for him to wake up, everyone was already

there, Thandiwe was holding hands with her mother while Siza was held tightly in Molemo's arms,

Gadafi was standing with the group of men. They were all looking at him anxious for his to wake and just

on time he stated trying to open his eyes which were heavy from sleep.

Madoda Dlamini

I tried opening my eyes but they were heavy all I wanted to do was sleep but I quickly remembered that

I had been kidnapped by those boys, they don't know who they are messing with, my son in law will deal

with them and I will tell him to show no mercy on them, how dare they, I look around and my vision is

blurry I try to move my arms but they are restrained on my back from the chair. I finally get a clear vision

and I see a group of men standing before me, they are really scary tattoos all over even on their faces. I

get scared but decide not show it to them. One of them speaks  
he looks like the boss

Him "and finally sleeping beauty is awake"

Me "if I were you I would be careful, do you know who I am who  
my son in law is?" they all laugh

Him "Sizwe Dlomo is your son in law beauty and unfortunately  
we are not scared of him not one bit" I

start to really panic now

Me "what is it that you want from me you evil men"

Him "oh look at the pot painting the kettle black" he laughs

Me "who are you"

Him "I am your worst nightmare, I am about to unleash great  
evil upon you oh I hope you are ready"

Me "what do you want from me, I don't know you"

Him "oh but we know Dlamini, we know you" my heart is  
beating so fast I am scared so scared

Me "please Sir what did I do, I am sure whatever it is we can  
work it out please I beg you"

Him "you bed so early Jesus you are such a fucking coward

Dlamini, not even going to try and fight”

Me “please at least tell me what is wrong”

Him “okay then without further wasting time let the court be in session, presiding officer Gadafi will be

listen in on this matter and collecting every piece of evidence though you are already found guilty” I feel

tears threatening, who is this man, I have never seen him in my life ever before so what wrong could I have possibly done to him

Him “Razor blade” he called for someone and a second later Sizakele and that men walk in holding

hands, the man is in an expensive suit but the look on his face is enough to make me scared

Me “Sizakele so you are the one behind this, you called this men to hold me down like a dog, why are

you doing this” the man he is with narrowed his eyes and walked to me

Razor “don’t you dare talk to her, don’t even look in her direction coz I will snap your neck like a twig”

this has to be the old rich man Thandiwe said she was sleeping with, I felt my blood boil seeing the men

who is having what belongs to me, I spit on his shoes and he

laughs

Me "you are doing this because of that hoe, she is not as innocent as she looks, she was a village hoe

who seduced me and when I turned her down she went to get herself pregnant to spite me and I

disowned her as she threatened to tell my wife that the child she was carrying was mine, she is the devil

herself, she will destroy her be careful" I said trying to save myself, I felt a punch on my face followed by

a couple more till she decided to stop

Siza "baby please stop, he is a low life who will say anything to save his own ass, you are pathetic

Dlamini and you deserve to rot in hell for all the evil you have ever committed" she say's wiping her

tears

Me "you are a liar and it is a matter of time till this gentlemen sees you for what you really are"

Razor "if you think I am buying this bullshit you are trying to sell me then you are not only a fucken

pedophile you are also a fool" they all laughed and he took Sizakele and held her in his arms while she

cries. The one that started all of this spoke again

Him "okay I guess we should call the person who this meeting is seeking justice" what does he mean I

thought this was about Siza, my wife and daughter appeared and they were giving me an evil look

Me "Thandi ka baba what is going on here ntombi yami" her tears fell, oh shit oh no no no I hope she

didn't tell on me oh nkosi yam

Thandiwe "don't you dare talk to me you filthy old man" oh she did tell her mother

Me "nkosikazi, what is all of this, why are you people doing this to me"

Razor "Thandiwe you don't have to answer that"

Me "stay out of this, it is between me and my daughter" I shouted

Me "ntombi yami don't let them poison you against me, you know I love you and they are jealous

because you are my favorite, they couldn't take care of me the way you did and that is killing them

hence they want to take you away from me" she let go of her mother's hand and came to me

Thandiwe "kodwa why baba, why did you rape me, I was a child, your own flesh and blood, you were

suppose to take care of me protect me and love me, not violate me the way you did"

Me "it was how it was suppose to be remember all that I told you" she laughed while crying

Thandiwe "you are more sicker than I thought" she stepped away and went to take the cricket bet from

one of the guys

Thandiwe "you are a sick man, you deserve all the pain you are about to feel today and I will be rejoicing

hearing you beg and trust me you will beg, like I did when I was 9 years old and you gagged me with my

own underwear" she got in front of me and started hitting my knees with the cricket bet

Thandiwe "this is for all those time I begged you to stop and you kept on moaning telling me how nice I

feel" I scream in pain, she kept oh hitting me and hitting me while crying she didn't hit me anywhere

else just on my knees and the pain was nothing I have ever felt before she continued until I couldn't take

it anymore the pain was intense, I couldn't hold my tears in anymore

Me "Thandiwe please stop, I am sorry I am really sorry for all I ever did to you" as if she was waiting to

hear me apologise, she dropped down and cried so loud and her mother hurried to her side and helped

her up then they went to seat on the couch by the wall, I was in so much pain, I couldn't even hold my

tears in.

Gadafi "now that she has gotten it out of her system it is time to have some fun, you will regret ever

looking at your children and seeing woman, you will regret not hearing her when she screamed and

begged you to stop, you will take it like she took and you will take it like a big boy that you are" he

looked at the group of men about 15 of them of them

Him "you see most of these men I just broke them out of prison for a couple of hours, they haven't had

sex in a very long time and the fact that you are a virgin in the ass drives them crazy" what no no all of

these men are going to rape me, I let out a cry of agony



Me "Thandiwe my baby please my baby don't let them do this to me I am begging you please ntombi

yami" she just ignored and nodded at the leader

Him "okay boy's, Madoda Dlamini has been found guilty and sentenced to being fucked by 16 men till

he passes out and we will discuss what other punishments are suitable for his disgusting self, boy's you

may now feast on your meal" I cried begging and begging and begging them to stop but they didn't hear

me, they pinned me down while they take turns with me, my anus was burning and the pain I was

feeling was nothing close to what I know, it was unbearable, by the time the 8th man was raping me I

was tired so tired I couldn't even beg them anymore, I was in so much excruciating pain all I could do

was cry silently, I was hoping to pass out but I couldn't I kept praying silently to God to kill me dead this

instance, I couldn't take this any longer, I was looking at Thandiwe and my wife and they were not even

flinching at what these men were doing to me, my cries didn't affect them at all, my eyes searched for

Sizakele and the man was holding her head to his chest hiding the scene from her but he was looking

and not feeling a thing. Some of these men forced me to suck their penises and to also swallow their

sperm, it was all too much, I have never been so humiliated in my life I felt disgusted and degraded.

Hours went by and they finally finish and I was laying on the mattress crying silently my body failing me,

I was more than tired but my body didn't grant me the gift of shutting down. The main was eating

through me.

Him "oh well thank you boys for your services, job well done, please go to the office and get your

incentives, the guards will escort you back to prison and I will make sure that you live like kings in there"

they all thank him and go. I am left with Thandiwe, Siza, my wife and these men.

Razor "baby they are done now you can look" she shook her head no

Him "Thandiwe, are you okay is there something more you want us to do to him"

Thandiwe "no thank you very much; you did more than you can imagine. I am grateful" I sigh in relieve

Lungile "I do, I want something more to be done to him" I look at her and she is so cold

Razor "anything we will make it happen"

Him "yes just name it and consider it done"

Lungile "kill him he doesn't deserve to live" my heart breaks and I look at her with pleading eyes

Him "your wish is my command" he pulled out a gun and pointed it at me

Razor "brother wait, it is too soon, he hasn't felt the pain, let it eat through him affect him

psychologically, right now he is in so much pain death is what he is wishing for and we are not here to

grant him anything his heart desires, we will keep him here and starve him like he didn't care when my

baby was starving all alone with her daughter, we will torture him like he didn't care when that old

woman abused them and when he is broken you can kill him I won't stop, I want him hanged from the

ceiling with his legs beat him at every hour and electrify him if

that doesn't kill him then put a bullet in his head"

Him "I hear you brother and I will carry out your duties, Lungile is that okay with you and Thandiwe?"

they both nod and I just cry defeated why don't they just kill me now.

Razor "very well then brother, I am driving Thandiwe and Lungile to their place, then take my baby home, she is not okay"

Him "sharp I will call you later" they walk out and the guys that kidnapped me hanged me from the ceiling with my legs and thank God I finally pass out.

Please react, leave a comment and share with others, can I ask for a day off tomorrow I am tired

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 64 (not edited)

Razor

I feel so bad for exposing my woman to what we planned on Dlamini, ever after that night she hasn't been herself, she has nightmares and she wakes up crying every time, it hurts me to my soul that I had to expose her to that horror, i don't regret what we did to that piece of shit I am just sorry for making her witness it, I should have known better, even though she hated him Sizakele has the most beautiful heart ever and no matter how much you wrong she doesn't want you to hurt and she will feel bad either way, she never regards anyone as her enemy, this whole thing has affected her greatly that I called the hospital and asked the chief to give her a few days. She has been sleeping coz she didn't have a great night at all, I made her food and kept it in the microwave, If all this money could buy me the opportunity to turn back the hands of time so I can refuse her going to warehouse, it has been two days and my bubbly baby is gone replaced by this scared woman I can't recognize, even so I will help her go back to being herself. I love Soft more than words can ever explain, she

is the center of my universe and my  
world begins and ends with her, so seeing her like this is really  
not nice. She walks in the kitchen, with  
nothing but my t-shirt, she looks besides herself and I sigh and  
approach her, as if she was waiting on me  
she hurried to me and I just held her in my arms tight and let  
her cry

Me "I am so sorry my love, I really am, forgive me please I  
shouldn't have let you go there rato laka"

Her "baby each time I am alone all I hear is his cries and  
screams it is all too much"

Me "I know my love I know and I am sorry"

Her "it is not your fault love, I knew what I was getting myself  
into, I wanted to see him suffer for all he  
has done to me, my mother and mostly my sister"

Me "I totally understand, but I should have explained what you  
should expect at least prepare you  
mentally, you could have known what you are walking into"

Her "I don't know why I am crying for that man, he was a  
monster and he didn't care about anyone but

himself, I hate that I am shedding a tear for him”

Me “you have a beautiful heart baby, the name Soft might have started sexually but it entirely so, I call

you that because of your soft heart, ka Sesotho rere pelo yahao e bonolo ya jeha (your heart is so soft

one could eat it) which means you have such a beautiful heart and no matter the person or

circumstances you always empathize even with those that don’t deserve it. It is actually one of the

things I love about you baby. Please don’t change who you are but don’t hurt more than you need to for

that monster, I am sure God will also understand” she smiles

Her “you are right baby, I have cried enough for that man and it stops now, he has no hold over my life

anymore” I kiss her forehead

Me “can I make a request please” she nods

Her “okay my love what is it”

Me “please go and see the therapist please”

Her “I was actually going to give her a call today and ask her to squeeze me in” I sigh in relieve

Me "oh thank you baby, let me feed you please, you haven't been eating Soft please" she smiles and

nods I attempt to walk away but she holds my arm

Her "Mo baby" I look at her

Me "yes my love"

Her "thank you for what you did for my sister and I love you so much okay" I blush

Me "I love you Soft and I would do everything for you and your family"

Her "and for that I will forever be grateful to you sthandwa sami"

Me "yes my Zulu Queen" she smiles and I go get her food while she calls the psychologist.

Lungile Mthethwa

I have never in my life been at such a happy place, I feel free and happy, and to my surprise I have been

sleeping like a baby since all of that happened, I don't even feel bad for asking them to kill that animal, I



haven't heard anything from Sizakele, I have been trying to call her but she doesn't answer she just texts

me back and say she will see me soon, when we parted ways she wasn't okay I hope this doesn't scar my

baby, she has always had a beautiful heart and she doesn't want to hurt people no matter how badly

they treat her she is just a beautiful soul. I am in the kitchen sterilizing Kayise's bottles, and she walked in with her mother.

Her "hey mother" he says with a smile

Me "someone is in a good mood I see" she laughs

Her "life is good mom, I have a lot to be thankful for" I give her a look and she laughs

Me "are you really okay Thandiwe" she sighs

Her "to tell you the truth ma, I am happy to have finally spoke out, I am grateful to Razor and Gadafi for

helping us, baba got exactly what he deserved and I don't pity him not even a little bit"

Me "I know I've asked you this a million times but how are you sleeping at night, any nightmares"

Her "before Friday I used to have nightmares but now I

honestly speaking mama I sleep like a baby, I

swear my soul is at peace, I feel no guilt for baba at all at all" I nod understanding what she is saying

Me "what did you say to your husband"

Her "I just told him that he decided to go to the village for a few days"

Me "you did good baby" we are disturbed by the door bell, Thandiwe goes to open and comes back

with Motaung, but he is alone I feel a little disappointed

Him "Lungile how are you"

Me "I am very fine thanks how are you?"

Him "I am well thanks, how have you ladies been"

Her "we are perfect, I want to thank you once again Razor, you don't understand the freedom you have

given me from what you did to him"

Me "yes Motaung thank you very much" he smiles

Him "don't worry about it, I was also doing this for my baby" I smile this man loves my daughter

Me "speaking of which, how is she, why didn't she come with you"

Him "she hasn't been coping at all, but this morning she decided to go and see her psychologist, she will

be okay, she has survived much worse, my baby is strong" I smile

Me "please look out for her" he smiles

Him "that is one of my life's mission Lungile. Listen I just came to check up on you I need to go back and

pick her up, I didn't want her driving"

Me "okay tell her I love her okay" he nods

Her "and please update us on when you planning to implement the final part of the plan"

Him "I will ask Gadafi and get back to you" we say our goodbyes and he leaves

Me "oh he really loves Sizakele"

Her "it is evident in the way his eyes sparkle at the mention of her name"

Me "you should see them in the same room, you can feel their love" she nods and I sigh it is time to

address the elephant in the room

Me "do you think you will ever mend your relationship with Sizakele" she rubs here forehead

Her "mama I don't think she will ever find it in her heart to put all I did past her, I mean I used to rejoice

when she was struggling, I hated her for something that was never her fault, I needed someone to

blame and she was the easiest target to channel my anger at" I take her hand

Me "just talk to her baby, she is such a lovely and understanding soul" she nods, I hope they fix things

Madoda Dlamini

I have never felt so much pain in my life, I get whipped every hour and electrified and then give an

injection of adrenaline so I don't pass out, these people are heartless, how can they possibly do this to

another human being, I just wish they can just have Mercy on my soul, I was left with the leader who

they all refer to as G, that man has no soul, he doesn't even waste a minute to come and torture me. he

walks in again but I know it hasn't an hour yet, he can't be here to punish me again, I just cry

Me "please please don't do this, I have learned my lesson I swear"

Him "you are such a pussy man"

Me "please let me go, I will give you all my life's savings I swear"  
he laughs

Him "how much are we talking about here" I feel a pinch of relief

Me "about R250 000" he laughs so hard I feel like a fool

Him "mother fucker that is the price of a pair of shoes" what  
how could a quarter of a million be a price  
of shoes

Me "okay okay, I will apply for my pension fund, it is well over a  
million rands" he shakes his head

Him "I have so much money I don't even know who to leave it to  
when I die so nah I will pass on the  
peanuts you are offering me, Lungile will make use of it to bury  
you" I sigh in defeat

Me "sir please have mercy on me I beg you please" he just  
drinks from his glass by the smell of the  
content it is cognac

Him "prepare the boys will back in about 25minutes" he leaves

and I just cry, Lord I repent have mercy  
on me I am your child please grant me death please

Fiona

It is time I make an appearance to my youngest daughter Olivia;  
I need to make amends, I need her to  
forgive me before I can strike their father, that man has to pay  
for ever trying to pay God with my life, I  
want everything he owns and I will get and have my children as  
well while he suffers broke, that man is  
a cold hearted bastard and I will make sure that he suffers for  
everything bad he has ever done. My  
daughter gets inside and I know her husband has left the house

Me "hey baby, has he left yet?"

Her "yes he drove out" I nod

Me "I think it is time I go see your sister, please take me to her  
tomorrow" she sighs

Her "are you sure mama, this might backfire" I mentally roll my

eyes

Me "I have this figured out Mookie don't stress yourself please"

Her "if you say so then, I will take you"

Me "thank you my baby"

Her "I just hope we don't get on daddy's bad side mommy, let this be civil please" if you knew my plans

my baby, but it will benefit us all

Me "don't worry my love everything will work out fine, your father will see that I am not a threat"

Her "I hope so I just want us to be a family again"

Me "I want that too, and I believe we can get that again"

Her "just like old times, I have missed being in a warm loving home"

Me "I will work tirelessly to give you and your sister that again I promise"

Her "just promise me that the first thing you will do is convince daddy to forget this thing of me going

back to school or starting a business"

Me "consider it done" she smiles and hugs me

Her "thank you mommy, come let's go downstairs and have a

drink” I take her hand and we walk out

Please comment, react and share. I tried guys and I am tired yoh. You didn't approve of my leave so Monday I am giving myself a break plus i am writing. Have a lovely weekend. I will see you Tuesday. Love Y'all

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 65 (not edited)

Mercy

I am really scared of what might happen today with Olivia and my mother, my sister has been through a lot and it has taken her everything to be okay, even though she smiles and all I know that she still has her dark days but she manages to fight through and live another day, so it is worrying coz she might be drawn back to the darkness she was in back then and I would hate to see her like that, I am really



questioning myself and the decision to help my mother go and see her, I just hope she will be able to deal with this head on, my mother appears from the upstairs, she smiles at me but I don't return it so she narrows her eyes and hurries to me.

Her "Mookie what is wrong my baby"

Me "I am really worried mom" she sighs

Her "talk to me"

Me "mommy I know you can still remember how difficult it was for Olivia to connect to people and how she was depressed and we didn't even know what could have caused it. She found solace in Jabu and you took that away from her, what do you think will happen if she sees you"

Her "I don't know Mercy, and I am really sorry for what I put Olivia through, I want to make amends and start living my life with the both of you, I will live each day trying to make right by her"

Me "I don't mom" she sighs

Her "Mercy what would you rather I do, go back to where I crawled out from and we pretend that I am still alive?"

Me "of course not ma, it's just that I am worried about my sister"

Her "I know that but I need to reach out to her make things right again and be a mother to you both"

Me "I understand that"

Her "you know what I think I should go pack my bags and leave it is clear that you don't want to help me rebuild my life"

Me "no no no mommy I am sorry that it seems so but it isn't, my only worry is how she is going to take this whole thing"

Her "I understand hence I will leave and never come back"

Me "please don't leave, I will help you"

Her "are you sure"

Me "I can't lose you again please"

Her "thank you Mookie mommy will forever be grateful to you"

Me "just as long as you will stick around"

Her "I promise I will" she kisses my forehead

Me "I love you Fiona"

Her "and I love you too my princess"

Me "okay let's get going then"

Her "okay grab your bag then" I quickly got my bag from the lounge and we went to my car and drove

to Braamfontein, I don't want to lie I am really not sure about all of this, Olivia might even hate me and

that is the scariest part, I pray deep down that they would be able to sit down and talk and work

something so we can work on getting daddy back and we can be a family again. The drive is silent, my

mother is looking outside lost in her thoughts, I let her be maybe she is replaying the memories of the past.

Thandiwe

I think something is wrong with me, after I experienced my father went through with that group of men

at the warehouse wasn't I expected to have nightmares and

have guilt eat through me? I should be in  
need of therapy but with me that is not the case, I sleep better  
at night and I am a bit more happy  
knowing that finally my father paid for all he did to us, he is a  
monster and for that I don't even feel an  
ounce of guilt, and God knows I just want to get a call from  
Gadafi telling me that fucker is dead and he  
will never breathe another air of fresh air. I personally believe  
that what happened to him is what should  
happen to every other rapist; these men must know how it feels  
to be powerless while you beg for them  
to stop but never do. I was with my children, they were both  
taking their afternoon nap, and they  
needed it honestly they have been troubling me since morning,  
my mother went to look at affordable  
houses around Joburg, after we bury that old man she is  
moving here permanently, I am honestly happy  
with the decision she took. My husband walks in holding some  
files

Me "hey baby" he looks up and sees our kids sleeping

Him "hey, what happened for them to sleep at the same time" I smile

Me "they had a hectic morning, they are just a handful really" he laughs

Him "Kayise is becoming naughty"

Me "tell me about it hun"

Him "I was meaning to ask, when did you last speak to your dad"

Me "I think it was 2 days ago, why?" I answer trying to act as normal as possible so I don't give anything away

Him "I tried to call him but his phone takes me straight to voicemail since yesterday"

Me "I swear I heard him talk to my mother yesterday I will ask her when she returns"

Him "where is she?"

Me "she went to see Sizakele" I lie about my mother's whereabouts

Him "oh okay, I should go I have a meeting in an hour" I nod

Me "okay then I will try call him and tell him to get back to you soon"

Him "please love there is a problem at the plantation I needed him to go check it out, but if he doesn't

switch on his phone I will have to go down to the village myself"  
oh no this is not happening no

Me "don't worry love I will call the neighbors or the palace to find him" he kisses me on the lips

Him "you are a star, want me to get you anything on my way home"

Me "I don't feel like cooking so please pass by the club and get us those ribs, buffalo wings and chips"

Him "yes ma'am, I will be back around 7 okay"

Me "okay babe, go before you are late" he smiles

Him "kiss my kids for me when they wake up and tell them daddy love them, and I love you maTha"

Me "I will and I love you too babe" he walks out and I quickly take my phone and stand by the window

to see him drive off. When the car leaves I dial Gadafi who answers at 3rd ring

Him "Thandiwe" he says

Me "hi, I just wanted to tell you that we are going to have to finish that old man soon coz my husband is

asking a lot of questions he even wants to go to the village then” he cuts me off

Him “I get the picture, we will plan on how to kill him and make it look like an accident or something”

Me “okay you will get back to me and my mother”

Him “definitely, in the mean time just act normal okay”

Me “I am trying”

Him “okay cool then”

Me “Gadafi wait”

Him “yes what’s wrong”

Me “thank you very much for doing this for us” I say then hang up before he can answer me

Razor

I decided to go see Gadafi at the warehouse, plus I want to see that filthy old man and how he has been

taking all the torture, I want to deal with him myself on behalf of Soft but I promised to literally keep my

hands free of his blood. I had to go to my house to drop my car

off and get one of my boys to wait for me with an unsub car at the mall then I Uber to the mall, our person cars can't be seen at that place in case we are being followed, and I changed into my black sweat pants and black hoody then my black Balenciaga sneakers. I look like a fucken criminal right now. I get to the mall and go to the underground parking and my boy is waiting. I get in the car and greet him, and then he drives us to the warehouse. He gets in and we go inside, I find Gadafi eating the plate from the rank, It is just pap ka nama ya hlooho. I join him

Him "ai fotsek man Razor, you didn't even wash your hands and you were playing with your dick" I burst out laughing and shake my head

Me "you are the one who does the playing with the piplet" he laughs

Him "my dick? Piplet?" we laugh

Me "yes yours brother"

Him "you once walked in on me fucking and you heard how that girl was screaming"



Me "don't be stupid, don't you know she was just feeding your ego so you can give her more money"

Him "mxm, show me your dick and I will show you mine then we will see who has a piplet" I laugh

Me "wa hlanya (you are crazy) I am not doing that shit with you, my dick is for Siza's eyes only"

Him "you chickened out meaning you are the one with a piplet" he shows me his picky finger I laugh

Me "mxm. How is that old man" he sighs and drinks water then wipes his hands

Him "Thandiwe called, her husband wants to go to the village and he will see that old man isn't there,

we are going to have to take him out soon"

Me "then we have to get him to the village and make sure that his closest neighbors see him then at

night burn the house with him inside and make it look like an accident, like he left a candle and got

drunk" he nods

Him "okay that could work, I will get him there tomorrow and I will call Lungile and Thandiwe"

Me "I will need to talk to Soft about it too, just to make her

aware of what we are planning”

Him “eish I hope this won’t affect her progress she didn’t take the torture well, his death will be too

much” I sigh coz I know he is right

Me “I know brother but she needs to be prepared and I hope therapy will assist her”

Him “I hope so too” he stands up and gets us a drink

Me “please perfect the plan so it doesn’t lead back to us okay”

Him “I am already doing that in my head”

Me “thank you brother for helping me out with my woman’s family problem”

Him “she is your family and you are mine that makes her my family too and I will help her and protect

her and everyone she holds dear” I smile

Me “I need to go back to my place, she said she needs to go see Olivia then she will come see me”

Him “just stay an hour man you know they won’t be quick she will probably be at your house after 8pm

and it’s still early come on I miss you” I laugh

Me “you sound like a pussy right now”

Him "whatever I don't care just stay"

Me "get me the alcohol then, I have someone driving me"

Him "now you are talking" I spend the rest of the day with this fool with him telling me about the

members of the cartel and the newest thing he wants to venture into. I also ask him about the syndicate

we were trying to bring down before I stepped down, they were trafficking young girls to be sex slaves in

Europe to rich man with sick fantasies and others to be prostitutes, I hated it coz I have girls

Olivia

My bestie called me and told me she will be coming over after her therapy session, I wonder what made

her go back, I mean she was doing so well, but not to worry we will talk about it when she gets home, I

managed to cook us lunch, and went out to get her favorite wine, I was now taking my shower, and when I got out she was already here.

Her "hey baby" she said hugging me

Me "hey beautiful, how are you"

Her "I am okay, just this heat is too much"

Me "you look nice baby" she smiles

Her "I got you this" she hands me a paper bag from diesel, I look inside and it's this nice navy and orange sneakers

Me "oh love thanks I love them very much"

Her "I got myself a pair too babe"

Me "I am even rocking them now" she laughs

Me "let me go and lotion I will be out in a sec, I got chardonnay its cold in the fridge pour us some"

Her "and you are the best babe, I see you even cooked" I stick out my tongue and disappear to my

room. I quickly lotion and wear my denim dress and wear my new sneakers, Siza opened the door and

peeped through with my head.

Her "babe, your sister is here for you with another woman" what the hell does she want God.

Me "okay Hun thank you" she gets out and I spray my braids and brush them and then make my way

outside. And I see my sister on the single couch and the white woman had her back to me facing the TV.

Mercy notices me and gets up

Her "hey sis, you look good" she says sounding scared

Me "hey thanks, you don't look bad yourself, who is this?" she takes a deep breath and I see fear in her

eyes I start to wonder what is going on. The woman stands and faces me, I swear my heart rate spikes It

can't be, she died I saw her lifeless body, she has tears on her face and I wasn't moved

Fiona "hey baby girl" I couldn't hold my tears in, I felt all the pain of the past coming back to me. I look

at Mercy

Me "how could you bring this woman here" she looks down

Her "sis please I know she hurt you but believe me she is very sorry she wants to fix things, that's all she

has been talking about this past few weeks" what she has been keeping this woman in her house

Me "so you have been keeping her hidden in your house after all she did Mercy how could you"

Her "Liv I am sorry believe me but she is still our mother" I

laugh

Me "she is not my mother Mercy, yours maybe but not mine"

Fiona "Livy baby please don't blame your sister blame me, I asked her for help and I shouldn't have"

Me "what do you want here Fiona, you were supposed to be dead and buried" she sighs and comes

near me and I move back

Fiona "baby please, I never died, I was just unconscious"

Me "well I wish you died Fiona" she put her hand on her mouth and cried some more then sank down

to her knees looking at me

Fiona "I know I hurt you with what happened with Jabu baby and" I cut her off before she could say

anything more

Me "don't you dare mention his name Fiona, don't you dare. I don't know what you thought was going

to happen when you showed your face here, did you really believe that I will welcome you with warm

arms after what you did to me, you knew Fiona, you knew how much he meant to me, you knew he was

the only one I managed to open up to and the only who helped me out of the dark place I was in, but

you were selfish and you decided to delay my progress and make me go back to being depressed”

Fiona “I know and I hate myself so much because of that trust me my love” I laugh

Me “why did you come back, couldn’t you stay away and leave us be”

Fiona “I tried baby but I couldn’t, I missed you and your sister so much, I need you girls”

Me “well I don’t need you, and I sure as hell don’t want to see you again, to me you are dead and I want

it to remain like that” she cried harder and I looked at Mercy

Me “you should have thought about what this woman’s reappearance would do to me but as always

you thought about yourself. The first thing you should have done is to come and tell me and dad about it

not hide her in the house bought by Razor, you are nothing but a traitor Mercy”

Her “Liv please, I was caught between a rock and a hard place, I didn’t want to hurt you trust me, I was

just” I just hold out my hand

Me “shut up just shut the hell up and take this evil woman out of here and never come back, I hate you

do you understand me Fiona I hate you” she stands up and looks at me

Fiona “I know baby and I am sorry Olivia. Please find it in your heart to forgive me baby I beg you”

Me “when it comes to you Fiona Wallace I don’t have a heart, now take your daughter and get the hell out of my apartment”

Her “sis please I beg you please she is still our mother” I look at the both of them and disappear to the

kitchen and come back with a butcher knife, they see it and quickly take their begs and rush out,

immediately as they close the I sink down and cry my heart out, Siza quickly rushes to me and holds me

in her arms so tight comforting me.

Her “I am so sorry my love, shhhh” she kept on brushing my back, all the pain came, why did she come

back, I have worked so hard to move past all of that. I sit there with my best friend for close to an hour,



I didn't say anything just cried silently

Her "baby please let's move from here, we will catch the cold"  
she stands and helps me up; I let her be

as I feel myself drift into the lonely dark place in my mind. She  
helps me to my bedroom and places me

on the bed. I hate the state of mind that I will find myself in, I  
never wanted to return here but seeing

her I couldn't run away from who I am what I suffer from,  
Fiona's return just sent me back to a place I

prayed and worked hard to leave, why would Mercy do this to  
me. Siza was looking at me scared coz I

wasn't saying anything, tears were just streaming down my face.

Her "Liv please talk to me please, you are scaring me please" I  
hear her but I don't really. Her voice is

laced with sadness and worry, I want to snap out of it but I am  
failing dismally. She sits with me for

another hour trying to get me to talk but I can't I want to but I  
can't. She stands up and walks out then

comes back with her phone. She dials and puts in on her ear

Her "Molemo please come to the apartment, I don't know what  
is going on with Olivia and I am worried

please baby she is scaring me love please I have never seen her like this baby” she listens and “okay

please hurry” she hangs up and comes to me and take me into her arms

Her “I don’t know what is going on but you are scaring me Liv please, talk to me I am here for you, baby

please talk to me, whatever it is we will go through it together, I am here for you just believe me please

sweetheart, I love you please” I hold on to her tight and I feel her tear on my forehead. I want to pull

out of this dark place but it is hard I am trapped. My voice is gone I want to scream but I can’t.

Please react, leave a comment and share.

Siza’s tribulations

Chapter 66 (not edited)

Razor

Soon as I hung up the call from Soft I practically ran out of the

screaming my driver's name, he appeared from the other rooms and I told him to get me to the apartment Olivia shares with Soft, I didn't even wait to explain to Gadafi and he tried running after me but I was just scared, I heard the panic and worry in Soft's voice and I knew what she is looking at, but what I don't understand is what might have happened to her, I mean she has been going really great so this is just so confusing. Luckily all my boys know the meaning of urgent, he drove like a damn maniac, and fortunately for us, the car's number plates are fake so we are free from tickets. He gets to Braam in what seems like forever but in all honestly he got here as fast as he could. I didn't even wait for him to register the car with the security, I just got out and they opened the pedestrian gate and I sprint to the apartment, I find them in Olivia's bedroom, Soft is holding Olivia, and my daughter is holding on to her for dear life, she is staring at one spot with tears just falling from her beautiful face. Soon as she feels my presence she looks at me with

pleading eyes, she is begging for me to take her. my heart breaks, it shatters, I know this and she is not

okay, she has returned to being the prisoner of her mind. I hold my tears, she can't see me cry, and she

has to see her father strong and ready to pull her out of the darkest place in her life.

Me "soft baby, may I please hold her" she nods and stands up I rush to her and like she has been

waiting on me she clings to me for dear life and I can't contain my tears anymore, I just blink them and

quickly wipe them, my woman looks at me with questioning eyes and I sigh and brush Liv's head.

Me "daddy is here baby, it will all be okay, I will get you help nana we will beat I promise" I rock her

back and forth, and she keeps of tightening the hold on me now and again. I can't believe my baby is

going through this once again, I can't lose her once again to her mind; it is too much for one person she

is suffering alone and I have to know what is going on with her. She finally falls asleep and I place her in

comfortably. I kiss her forehead and go to a crying Siza she quickly comes to me and I fold her in my arms

Me "she will be alright my love, I will make it all alright" she sniffs

Her "baby I have never seen her like this, she seems lost like she is in her own world, seeing her like this

breaks my heart she is always this bubbly, lively person who lives life to the fullest"

Me "I guess all depressed people are my love, but baby explain to me what happened before she got into this state" she sighs and breaks the hug and I wipe her tears before kissing her lips"

Her "I got here and she got out of the shower, and went to her room a knock came and Mercy was at

the door with another woman, they wanted to see Liv, so I went to call her, she came out a few minutes

later then I excused myself, I couldn't hear the conversation but I could hear her coz she was shouting"

Me "who was the woman Mercy was with"

Her "she is white and Olivia kept shouting Fiona I think that is

her name" I felt my heart beat so fast I

swear it will pop out of my chest. I look at my woman gently after a minute of trying to calm down

Me "are you sure" she nods vigorously

Her "I am very sure baby, the only thing is couldn't hear was the entire conversation" I felt anger

Me "how that is impossible, this is not possible, she died and they took her to the mortuary and we

cremated her body so how is this possible" she was looking at me like I am crazy

Her "okay Molemo, I am confused, who is this woman, why is she causing all this chaos"

Me "I will explain later my love, I just pray you don't hate me" she closes her eyes

Her "what is your connection to her Molemo I just need to know that before I go crazy"

Me "well baby, Fiona is my wife, was my wife, she is Mercy and Olivia's mother, I will explain everything

later please, just park her staff, she is going to the house with us" she sighs and does as I asked

Fiona

I knew she wouldn't really welcome me with open arms but I honestly thought we could sit down and talk about this whole thing, explain myself and maybe she could grant me a chance to right my wrongs, but I was too naïve I guess I really underestimated the damage I did to my child, I could see and feel her hate towards me and who could blame her, one thing that hurts is that she wishes I was dead. I wish I had approached this matter differently, and then all this would have been avoided. I can't begin to imagine how she is feeling right now. Oh my God this is bed, at least that friend of hers didn't sit it on our conversation coz she could have heard it and explained it to Razor, I am grateful for her manners, I look at Mercy who is cry, and we have been parked at the side of the road for what seems like forever. She can't stop crying and she refuses me touching her, this plan went horribly wrong, this is not how I had imagined it really.

Me "baby I am so sorry"

Her "just don't talk to me Fiona"

Me "I am sorry Mookie please I know this went horribly wrong"

Her "it was more than horrible, I shouldn't have let you convince you to take you to her"

Me "please baba don't speak like this"

Her "don't you dare, if I had listened to my gut feeling I wouldn't be in this mess do you understand me"

Me "I know and I wish I didn't drag you into my mess" she chuckles

Her "did you hear what my sister said to me huh, she hates me mom she will never forgive me for this,

and if this leads her to another episode I will never forgive myself too"

Me "I am deeply sorry Mercy believe me"

Her "why didn't you stay where you were, couldn't you love us from far, you came back and messed up

our lives once again" her words hits deep

Me "I wish I could but I just needed another chance to be a better mother"



Her "is that really all you came here for?" my heart beats faster

Me "of course it is Mercy, I only came here for you and your sister"

Her "I curse the day I allowed you back in my life" her words are killing me

Me "Mercy please, I know you are angry and hurt and that you will say anything to and I will accept it all

because I messed up big time"

Her "now I realize that we were really okay without you, daddy was the best parent, Olivia was doing

really great, she was happy and dealing with her demons head strong"

Me "and I just came back to ruin all that I understand and I was never my intention to do that to her and

to even taint your relationship"

Her "I want you to pack your shit from my house and get the hell out do you understand"

Me "please Mercy I can't lose you too not again, it will all work out please don't give up on me" I plead

crying coz it really hurts

Her "I just pray Razor doesn't find out about you, coz this time

he will really kill you and watch when they cremate you, and I can't even think of what he will do to me when he finds out that I am the one that helped you hide" she say's starting the engine and drives away really fast, I quickly put on my seatbelt. I need to re-work on my plan.

Siza

I have never seen Olivia like this, I have know her for some time now and she has never been like this, something big happened to her and I need to know what it is so I can be able to pray about and help her. I quickly pack her bag and toiletries, once I am done, I close all the curtains in the house and unplugged everything except the fridge. I go out and find Molemo pacing up and down in the lounge, he stops and looks at me, I ask him to take the luggage to the car, and he does it and comes back very quickly. I take my bag and phone and other things I might need, I don't want to leave Olivia once we get to the house.

Him "you have everything?"

Me "yes my love, we can leave" he pulls me to him and kiss my forehead

Him "thank you so much baby" he lets go and walks to Olivia's bedroom and comes back holding her

bridal style. He walks out and I lock and we walk to a car I don't recognize, there is a driver in there and

he gets in the back with Liv and asks me to get in the front passenger seat. The drive to the house is

quick, we get there and we get out, the driver brings the luggage inside then exits after Razor nods at

him. I guess that is a thank you coz he bows a little.

Him "Soft I am going to put her down in her room, I will be done after I call the Psychiatrist, please fix

me a drink" I nod and he disappears in up the stairs. I quickly go to our bedroom and place my things

and change to a short summer dress and walk barefoot. I go down to his study and he is already in there

talking on the phone, though he was gonna call upstairs but that is not a train smash. I pour two glasses

of scotch and go sit on his lap, he is still on the phone, I hand him his drink and he gulps it down, I try to do the same and it burns like hell, shit this thing is bitter but it hits the spot. He smiles a little coz he finds it funny. He finally ends the call and he looks at me deep in the eyes. Then snakes his arms around me and places his head on my chest, I brush his head I kiss it constantly

Me "you can let it all out baby, you don't have to be strong when you are with me, my job is to see you at your worst too and help you through it, you have been with me through a lot and it is time I do the same, I am your solace my love, believe in me" I hear him bob and wetness on my breasts, I can't help but cry myself. I brush his back and comfort him

Me "this time you don't have to do it alone I swear please. I am here for you Mo allow me in please" he heard my please coz he started talking Him "she has never had it easy Soft, we tried everything, Psychologists, psychiatrists, sangomas,

prophets everything you name them but nothing, she never spoke a single word, up until she was about to finish matric, It would hurt seeing her like that. I worked hard and took out all my frustrations on my enemies; I would go into her room each night to read her a story and put her to sleep, I think when she was about 6 she started finding solace in drawing but her drawings were not happy, they were sad she was drawing sad pictures, we immediately took her to the Dr and he analyzed them, he realized that she mostly drew her mother, with mercy and her afar, he then thought she felt abandoned and that she didn't feel wanted also because I was never there, so the only present parent gave Mercy all the attention, that is true, coz Fiona only wanted one child so when she gave birth to Olivia she hired nannies and all to take care of her, when she was 3 her nanny that she loved the most died and it was when she became worse she would just cry and refuse every other helper. So when she started drawing at 6 years it was a break through. They recommended that we

spend more time with her and we take her to her nannies grave and explain carefully to her that she had died and in a happy place but assure her that she still loved her to a lot. She became a lot better but she still didn't talk, she just ate with us on the dining table and after she disappears to her room that was her happy place, so long she had paper and coloring pens she was okay, we tried but that was the only progress. Long story short, when she had to start high school we wanted to home school her but the Dr's suggested that we let her go to a normal school and said that it might help, she started and nothing changed, in fact it became worse, you know how teenagers are, we suspected bullying but the principal assured us that it was not the case and the psychiatrist said that it was the adolescent stage.

Midyear of her matric year, we got a visit from Jabu, he was Olivia's nanny's son, he came because he had found a picture and a letter addressed to Olivia, and I don't know how but that was her breakthrough, she

read the letter and for the first time we  
saw her smile, she stared at the picture and we were shocked at  
how come she remembered someone  
who she last saw when she was only 3, it was a miracle, she  
liked Jabu a lot and he would come visit her  
on weekends, the least I could do was ask Jabu to come live  
with us because he was the only one she  
spoke to, and they only spoke when they were alone, I  
remember when I went to her room to ask to talk  
to Jabu, I heard her voice and laughter, and tears just came to  
my ears I was happy, she had someone  
she was free around, I went in and she was embarrassed to see  
me. I asked Jabu there and there to  
move in and that I will pay for his university, coz he was  
suffering in Soweto with his step mother, he  
was overjoyed and he agreed, that was the first time she ran to  
me and hugged me so tight I remember  
her words "thank you daddy" I was ecstatic.

I treated Jabu like my own son, he had saved my daughter  
and he deserved to live like a King for that, I got his everything,

a car allowance everything he has ever desired, a few months they started dating but the hid it well but I could see, I wouldn't stop it, they were both happy. They started sneaking in each other's rooms and that was something I couldn't have, knowing they were having sex in my house was too much, so I sat them down and explained that I know about them, Jabu almost shit himself he apologized I couldn't take away Olivia's happiness, so for my sanity I got Jabu an apartment and their relationship was no longer a secret, my child was finally okay, until one day she complained to me that Jabu is no longer the same, he was a good boy so I wondered what changed him, I know how money can be so I put my boy's on his trail, and they reported back that there is a woman who goes to his apartment on Wednesdays for a few hours, one Wednesday the boy never called to report that the woman was there, I was willing to let it go for Olivia's sake and I planned to go talk to him and ask him not to hurt Olivia like that, but I postponed coz I wanted to spend some



quality time with my wife, I got to the bedroom it was evening she was looking so nice and she told me she was going to some event with her friend and they will be sleeping at the hotel. I just agreed coz she didn't do this frequently so why not. She left and I decided to spend some time with the girls, we were having a good evening when my boys called me and told me that the woman was there again, I got so angry I just decided that I need to catch them and deal with this. I gave the girls a story about an emergency but little did I know that Olivia was listening in on the conversation. I left and she was following me behind.

I got there and walked to the apartment, the boys helped me open and I walked in, the first thing I stepped on was a dress my wife left wearing, I picked it up and smelled and it definitely smelled of her, it was no coincidence, my fury, I was boiling, at that moment I become more evil than the devil himself I swear he wasn't a challenge he

would have refused to battle with me. I stormed to that bedroom and my wife was screaming underneath that boy. I just launched to them and pushed her off throwing her on to the wall, I held Jabu by his throat he struggled to breathe how could he, after what I did to him, if he was cheating with a girl from varsity or something I would have warned him but he was sleeping with my wife Soft my fucken wife. I hear commotion and a second later Olivia walked in and saw the situation in the room and she put two and two together and I saw tears stream down her face, she asked Jabu why he did this but he couldn't answer, Fiona begged and begged but I saw the hurt and disappointment in my daughters eyes, I thought of what it could do to her and it set me off completely, Soft to spare you trauma just know that I tortured them and Fiona passed out from the trauma her body was under her pulse was not detected hence we thought he died, the boys got a hold of the mortuary contact and I gave orders to cremate her, I hated her from the moment I saw her

dress on that floor and I hate her more even now, she took Olivia's sanity once again, she knew what her betrayal would do to her but she didn't care. Well Jabu tried to run and I just took out my gun and shot him dead, Olivia begged me to get him to the hospital because he was still breathing, I saw the desperation in her eyes so I agreed the boy's tried rushing to the hospital but he died on the way, and the betrayal and that boys death broke her, she went into depression and she went mute again, at her mother's memorial she didn't shed a tear Soft not a single one but we understood why, but she would cry in her room looking at that boys photo, she was depressed for a while until one morning when she woke up and told me that she hated me with every fiber of her being, she packed her things and wanted to Live she didn't know anyone, I begged her to allow me help her get an apartment and support her until she gets on her feet, she refused but Luckily she listened to Mercy and that is when she went to live in Braam and, she hated me so much but I understood, at least she allowed me to help her

financially, but she made it clear that after she graduates and gets a Job she wants nothing to do with me, she attended Therapy and it helped her, she fought and got herself out of that dark place that consumed her, she didn't speak nor see me in two years, but I watched and protected her from afar, until the year you got here, apparently there day we finally had dinner was the same day she saved you from those nyaope boys, baby I" he stopped talking. I was so scared, Olivia has been through so much and yet she has been smiling everyday like nothing happened, I was heartbroken for her, now I understand why she went into that state. I was trying so hard to put the fact that he murdered someone to the back of my head but it kept popping, this is not the time to be judging him or anything, he needs me and I will be here for him and Liv. He tried talking again but I stopped him

Me "shhhh it's okay baby, I get it, you don't have to say anything more" years were streaming

uncontrollably on his face.

Him "Soft please don't hate me please I beg you"

Me "I could never hate you baby, I love you so much" I say but deep down I am scared but I ignore the feeling.

Him "I love you so much Soft" I kiss him and wipe his tears, a second later the guy who was driving us appeared with an old white man. I assume he is the Psychiatrist. He greeted us and Molemo introduced us, he took her to Olivia's room and came back, I was lost in my thoughts, she is going through a lot, Mo squats in front of me. I am pulled me back from my thoughts.

Me "is she up"

Him "yes she is love, listen I need to go somewhere okay, I will be back soon" he kisses my forehead

then my lips and he attempts to walk away, I hold his hand

Me "I know you are going to Mercy's house, but baby please don't harm them, let God deal with them, I

don't want blood on your hands" he looks at me for a while and sighs

Me "I won't baby, the Dr will be in there for awhile and I will be back by then" I nod and let go of his

hand, and he leaves. It has been a while since I prayed I think I need to go back to prayer.

Please react, leave comment and share with the others. Guy's tonsils are killing me, time my body is so

sore; my mother is screaming that I am sick but I am typing, I have been typing this chapter since

morning. Any homemade remedies for tonsils?

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 67 (not edited)

Razor

I can't begin to imagine what my baby girl is going through right now, she must be so scared, I hoped

and prayed that we will never have to go through this again, she doesn't deserve this, why can't she

catch a break live everyone else. driving to Mercy's house, I have

mixed emotions, I am mad as hell but  
another part of me is pities her, how could one person be so  
selfish, she must have known what it would  
go to Olivia, did she even care. As soon as I got to that house, I  
felt myself boil, I park and immediately  
rush in the house, I find them arguing and soon as they saw me  
they stopped and took cover behind the  
couches. I gave Fiona a death stare and moved my eyes to  
Mercy

Me "out of everything you have ever done Mercy this one takes  
the cup, I will never forgive you for  
what you did to your sister"

Her "daddy please, I was just trying to help"

Me "help Mercy? Didn't you know what this woman did to your  
sister, how she betrayed her own  
daughter and threw her back into the depression"

Her "I just thought that they will be able to sit down and talk, I  
just wanted us to be a family again"

Me "exactly, like always you thought about what you wanted,  
didn't even give a shit of how this could

affect other people”

Her “I am so sorry daddy please” I look at her for a while

Me “Mercy the first thing you should have done when this snake came to you was to tell me, I could

have found a way to tell your sister that she is not dead”

Her “I wish I did that believe”

Me “do you think Fiona cares about you, your mother is a survivor Mercy, she will do anything to get

what she wants, if she wanted to be a mother to you she would have resurfaced a long time ago, but

she didn’t coz she was calculating her moves, you are a means to an end Mercy and she will leave you

high and dry, she didn’t care about hurting her emotionally unstable daughter what makes you think she

cares about you”

Fiona “I do care about them Razor, they are my babies and I came here to make things right” I look at

her and clench my jaw

Me “you will stand there and shut the fuck up do you understand me, the only reason I haven’t



attempted to kill you is because I made a promise to Siza but trust me I will find a way to make you pay

Fiona for hurting my child like this” she looks down and fondle with her fingers. I look at Mercy again

Me “you betrayed me Mercy, you hurt your sister beyond, she is back to being the prisoner of her own

mind, Mercy you took away your sisters sanity by taking that devil to her apartment, you took away

what she worked hard to get back and” she interrupts

Her “oh my God what have I done to my sister” she cries and I shed a tear too but I wipe it

Me “I will never forgive you for this Mercy I will never forgive you”

Her “daddy please don’t talk like this, I am sorry please”

Me “you have your beloved mother now enjoy your reunion”

Her “I beg you please”

Me “stay away from Olivia, do you understand” she cries harder, I look at Fiona

Me “just pray to your God that my baby pulls through coz if she doesn’t not even Sizakele will tame me,

trust me if she fails no one will make me stop once I have

started" I go to Mercy

Me "stay away from Olivia I hope I made myself clear" I walk out and go to my car and drive back to my house, it took everything in me not to hurt those two, each time I wanted to I just thought of Soft and I calmed down.

Siza

After Mo left, I went to the kitchen and prepared some pap and chicken livers, I was craving for them so

I bought them yesterday, I hope this man will enjoy it. I prepared some soup for Olivia coz I doubt she

will want to eat solid food, by the time I was done, Mo was not back and the Dr was still up with Liv, I

just pray he will be able to help her, I need my best friend to be okay, I honestly cannot imagine life

without the bubbly, lively Olivia, she has to be okay, we still have a lot to do together, she is not only a

friend to me she is my sister, she is the first person in this city to love and take care of me. Thinking of

her and the state she is right now made me tear up, I couldn't

help myself I just cry out so painful, I feel

someone hug me from behind, and from the smell of the cologne I know it's Mo.

Him "shhhhh, it will all be okay love, she will pull through"

Me "it just hurts Mo, she doesn't deserve this at all, she is a selfless person, she deserves the best"

Him "I know Soft but she will be okay I promise" he held on to me tight

Me "you didn't hurt them right"

Him "I will never break a promise I make to you baby" I sigh in relief

Me "thank you baby"

Him "I love you okay" I smile and turn to face him

Me "I love you too" we hug so tight and we hear someone clear their throat, we let go and it is the

psychiatrist

Dr "sorry for disturbing"

Him "not a problem please have a seat" he sits down on the high chair and take out something from his

medical bag

Dr "she is depressed, she refuses to talk, she just cries, I am prescribing these antidepressants, I will be coming every two days to check on her"

Him "okay Dr thank you"

Dr "we will work on her like we did before, we will pull her back okay"

Him "I trust you"

Dr "I will take my leave now, my phone is on 24/7" they shake hands and he leaves

Me "I will dish up for her"

Him "what did you make for her"

Me "just soup baby, I thought she might not be able to handle solids food" he smiles at me

Him "Olivia and I are so blessed to have you, my son will be lucky to call you mom" I blush

Me "son huh" I ask laughing and take out a bowl and pour soup and take out bottled water from the fridge and take the pills

Him "yes Soft son" I laugh and shake my head

Me "okay sir, let's go try and feed her" he kisses my forehead and we get up stairs, she is sitting on her

bed with her knees to her chest holding her knees and rocking herself back and forth. My heart breaks. I

seat on her bed and Mo takes the chair. I decide to brush her hair and her eyes move to me, they are

glossy from tears, I smile at her

Her "hey baby, you didn't eat anything, can I please feed you" she just looks at me and say's nothing

Him "feed her baby she will eat" I smile and start feeding her and she opens her mouth even though she

doesn't open wide but at least she is eating. I am happy she ate everything, I give her the pill and she

sips the water. Without our help she opens the covers again and she gets in bed, and face away from us,

I look at Mo and he sighs then stand, he offers his hand and I take it then we exit her bedroom.

Me "I cooked pap and chicken livers with cream spinach I hope you eat them" I say trying to lighten the

mood and he laughs

Him "of course I do baby, just haven't had it in a while, but I

know I will enjoy" I smile and kiss his hand

We get to the kitchen and I dish up for us, he eats with his hand,  
Molemo never ceases to amaze me

shame, he finishes first and asks for some more, I gladly dish up  
for him again and he eats and licks his

fingers

Him "damn woman you can cook yeses" I smile

Me "oh I know but thanks" he rolls his eyes

Him "arrogance Soft" we both laugh and I fish my food long  
after he finish his second plate, I stand and

take his plate with mine

Him "no love I will do the dishes, just sit down" I smile and he  
takes the plates and washes them while I

look at him with admiration.

Me "you look good doing that" he laughs

Him "don't get used to it" he finishes and comes to seat next to  
me and takes my hands into his

Him "thank you for being here with me and helping me" I kiss  
his hands

Me "through it all my love" he smiles and it fades in a few

seconds like he is remembering something

Him "love I need to tell you something" I start panicking

Me "what's wrong love" he sighs

Him "look love, Gadafi is taking your father to the village tomorrow and" he stops

Me "he is killing him tomorrow?" I ask and he nods

Him "Thandiwe called him and said her husband is asking about him, so we need to finish this before it back fires"

Me "I understand baby"

Him "I am so sorry" he says and I smile

Me "its okay love"

Him "we had a long day, let's go to bed" I nod and we walk hand in hand upstairs, so Dlamini is dying in a few hours.

Madoda Dlamini

Him "coz I would rather know if it was my last day I will give you that honor too, so you can pray or

whatever it is you would love to do”

Me “what do you mean?” I ask with so much fear in my voice

Him “you will be burned to ashes tomorrow Dlamini, first thing in the morning we are going to your

village” tears stream down my face

Me “please don’t do this, I promise to change I promise”

Him “any last request, something you want to eat maybe” he is not joking

Me “please sir please have Mercy on my soul I beg you please”

Him “I am not Jesus. So anything?” I wipe my tears there is no point crying I am going to die

Me “can I just please see my wife and children”

Him “I don’t think they want to see you”

Me “I just want to apologize please” he gulps his drink

Him “nope they are not going to agree, but I will try you know fulfill a dying man’s wish”

Me “thank you sir” the fear I was feeling, I couldn’t imagine dying by fire

Him “so what is your favorite meal, I know I would wanna die after I ate my favorite”



Me "can you please inject me with something to put me to deep sleep before you burn me" he laughs

Him "where is the fun in that, you are a rapist you must feel the pain man. Don't worry I will ensure to

get you the best meal and an expensive bottle of whiskey" he laughs and walks away leaving me full of

regrets, I wish I had done things differently, I should have went to seek help and be the best husband

and father, I guess I am paying for my evil deeds, God forgive me and accept my soul.

Uriel

I got an sms from Vusi, he asked that I please meet up with him, a part of me was longing to him, I miss

him so much and another part of me doesn't want to see him until he has fixed his issues, his sms said

we can meet at Vilakazi street at one of the restaurants there, I couldn't fight my emotions so I just

borrowed my father's car and drove there, I parked next to his car and looked at him sitting alone on the

table drinking his beer, he keeps looking at his watch, he is panicking and I laugh, I sit in the car for about 30 minutes until an sms from him comes through

\*baby please\* I smile and decide I have tortured him enough so I walk out of the car and locked in then walk in, he sees me and smiles then stands up, I stand in front of me

Me "hey" he looks at me deep in the eyes

Him "my love, how are you"

Me "I have been better, how are you"

Him "Uriel I am miserable, I miss you" I sigh

Me "I told you Vusi, get your act right" I sit down and he follows

Him "and I have baby, by Friday I will be out of Mercy's house and we can be free" I sigh

Me "I am not sure anymore Vusi" his eyes pop and he quickly takes my hands

Him "baby no no please don't do this to us please, I am done, I am all yours and yours alone please"

Me "Vusi" he cuts me before I could say anything

Him "please tell me that you still love me at least"

Me "I love you more than you can imagine"

Him "then don't give up on us, we deserve to be happy together, baby please" the joy in my heart, I just

wanted him to sweat a little

Me "once you move out, we will start on a clean slate"

Him "okay start packing your things then" I laugh

Me "no baby, we are going to start by dating and then I will introduce you to my parents and after that

we will start talking about moving in together" he smiles

Him "okay I can live with that"

Me "good then. It's late I should go back home" he nods

Him "yes my love, I am sorry for asking to meet this late I had court all day"

Me "its okay babe" I take the keys and my phone and stand up and he does too and we walk to the cars

Him "drive safely I will see you on Friday right?"

Me "yes Friday" he pulled me to him and gave me the most passionate kiss I moaned I missed this

Me "I hope you haven't been giving her my food" he laughs

Him "I haven't baby I swear" I smile and he opens the door and I get in and roll the window

Me "I love you" he smiles

Him "I love you too beautiful, will call you when I get to the house okay"

Me "okay I will be waiting

Him "I will see you Friday now drive baby it's late. I smile and start the engine.

Please leave a comment, react and share. I tried everything you suggested guys but nothing worked, but

thank you a lot. I will go get antibiotics at campus clinic before I go and write.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 68 (not edited)

Siza

I wake up and check my phone and it is 7am, I get out of bed

and carefully not to wake Molemo, he was tossing and turning all night, he is not taking this whole thing okay, so I want him to rest, I go to the bathroom and wash my face then brush my teeth and I make my way downstairs to the kitchen, I start making soft porridge for Olivia, I dish up and take her pills and a bottle of water and make my way to her bedroom, I find her sitting on the carpet drawing, seeing her in this state cuts deep. She looks up and I smile sweetly at her and join her.

Me "morning baby, I hope you slept well, I made you porridge" she continues drawing and I look at it, I couldn't clearly see what she was drawing.

Me "can I please feed you so you can take your meds" she looks at me then places the book and pencil down faces me, I take a spoonful and she opens her mouth and takes it all in, we sit in silence till she finishes everything and I help her drink her pills, and she gulps down the entire bottle of water I guess she was thirsty I should bring her water each hour. She looks at

me with tears in her eyes and I couldn't

help but fold her into a warm hug

Me "it's going to be okay, I promise I will be here till you make it out Liv, I miss you so much baby, I

know it is hard but I need you to fight baby try baby come back to us please" I feel her snake her arms

around me and squeeze

Me "I love you Olivia and I still need you, we still need, we have a lot to do please, help me help you,

fight baby help me please" she tightens some more and I just cry. I leave her on the carpet to continue

with her drawing and I take the bowl downstairs and wash it then go and find clean sheets and pillow

cases for her bed and head back, she is in the same position, I change the bedding and open the window,

she stands and comes to bed and I join her and it is not long till she falls asleep, I guess she woke up

really early to sleep at this time, I take her drawing and it's a picture of a woman in a cage and it is

covered in darkness, I see fire, I close my eyes and sigh this is the saddest and painful drawing picture I

have ever seen, I take another one and it is my name covered in hearts and I just tear up, Mo walks in

and comes to me he takes the picture from my hand and scans it

Him "she drew this?" I nod

Me "yes baby she did" I say looking at him

Him "thank you God"

Me "why is that baby" I ask confused

Him "she still feels love, she loves you and because of you she will beat this thing once again, oh Soft"

he gives me a warm embrace

Me "are you sure that's the case"

Him "I believe so my love, I will take this picture and send it to the psychiatrist I am sure he will confirm"

Me "if that is the case I will have to move in this bedroom with her"

Him "I don't know what pinch of good I have ever done to have been blessed with a woman like you,

Sizakele you are so selfless it melts my heart each time, thank you so much baby I love you more than

words could ever describe” I smile at him

Me “I love you too” he kisses my forehead

Him “because of you I believe there is a God, nothing as pure as you can be made by anything but him” I

don’t know what to say to this, I just melt and blush

Me “it’s too early to be making me blush like this baby, let’s get out before we wake her up, I need to

cook you some breakfast” I lead the way and he spansks and I yelp

Him “I want the soft porridge you made for Olivia” I nod.

Vusi

I finally have my ducks in a row, I have gathered the strength to confront Razor and tell him, Mercy went

out and she said she will be back in a couple of hours, so I used that chance to park all my clothes and

took them to my house then went back to take things that hold sentimental value to me. I know Razor is

going to make me pay for hurting her daughter and I will



forever be sorry for doing this, but I am  
suffocating, things between Mercy and I will never work out and  
I just regret that I took things this far  
but I know what I want now and I am no longer confused. I drive  
to Razors house and the security opens  
for me hassle free, I get to the door and ring the door bell and a  
minute later, Siza opens

Her "oh hey" I smile

Me "MaDlamini, how are you"

Her "I am very well thank you, yourself?"

Me "I feel like I am about to shit my pants, is Razor in" I laugh

Her "yes he is in come on in" I get in and she ushers me to her  
man. We get to his study and he is on the

phone but it takes him a minute to hang up.

Me "good afternoon sir" he looks at me

Him "khumalo, I hope Mercy did not send you to beg me on her  
behalf" I narrow my eyes confused

Me "uhm no Sir, she doesn't even know I am here" he frowns

Him "oh, so what brings you here" I sigh deeply and sits down

and shows me where to sit

Her "okay then let me leave you to it then I will go cook lunch"

Me "no Siza please join in" I say because she might just save me when her man wants to kill me

Him "uhm Soft baby, can you please pour us a drink" she does as he ask and hands us our glasses and I

gulp it down and my heart starts to beat so fast

Him "oh come on Vusi, I don't have the whole day" here goes nothing, if I die I die

Me "firstly I want to apologize and please I was never my intention for this to happen, I know how much

she means to you and I am sorry for doing this to her, Mr. Motaung I thought what was going on

between your daughter and I was love but to tell you the truth, it is not. we are two completely different

people, we don't even have 1 thing in common, and that is not how I want to live the rest of my life,

living with a total stranger, I am sorry sir but I cannot continue being with Mercy, I can't be married to

her and I sincerely apologize for this" he gives me a stern look, if looks could kill, I would be dead right

now. There is silence for about 5 minutes

Him "have you told her" I sigh

Me "I wanted to talk to you first Sir" he laughs and I narrow my eyes okay

Him "so you are breaking up with Mercy through me"

Me "no not that, I just wanted to inform you first" he looks at Siza and back at me

Him "Vusi was I there when you are Mercy met?" I shake my head no

Me "no you were not present"

Him "exactly, I have a lot on my plate right now, and you break up with Mercy doesn't interest me one

bit, if you don't want to be with her anymore, be a man about it and tell her, I don't see where this

involves me"

Me "but Sir, you once said that you would kill me if I ever hurt her" I sigh

Him "apologies for that, I shouldn't have. Like I said go talk to my daughter about your issues"

Me "so you not angry with me, you won't kill me or teach me a lesson fire me from my job"

Him "why the hell would I do that, Vusi get out of my house I have a sick daughter a have to figure out

how to help, go do what you need to do" I stand up with the biggest smile and I go hug him, I didn't plan

on it but it just happen

Him "don't be a pussy now, I will mess you up, get out of here" I leave dialing Uriel, we are free

Razor

Imagine this idiot breaking up with Mercy through me, he just humored me though, I guess the poor boy

couldn't handle my daughters heat, I often wondered how he handled her, I thought marriage might

help her become a better person but I guess not even that worked. She will heal and move, I can't force

that boy to stay in a loveless marriage, and I would have loved them to work out but hey its life. My

priority right now is Olivia; I need to help my baby out before she sinks deeper and deeper. Soft is

cooking in the kitchen so I decide to go check up on her

Me "what are you making"

Her "I put the brisket and wors in the oven and I cooked pap and made chakalaka and a salad"

Me "for Olivia"

Her "just mashed potatoes with herbs" I smile she has this figured out she will not solid foods in this

state so soft thing that does not require her to chew

Me "thank you my love"

Her "I have a confession" my heart starts to beat fast what could it be

Me "what is it baby" I say, and she wipes her hands and looks down embarrassed by what I don't know

Her "I am sorry for keeping it away from you, but I felt it was not my place to say, plus he had promised

to tell you and Mercy"

Me "okay Soft you not making sense baby" she sighs

Her "I knew that Vusi was going to leave Mercy, coz he had already fallen in love with a friend of mine, I

was shocked when I found out too I should have told you baby

and for not doing it I am really sorry”

that pinches a bit, so he is leaving her for another woman

Me “oh I see” that’s all I manage to say

Her “please don’t be mad at me please” I sigh and go to her

Me “from now please let’s not keep things from each other”

Her “yes baby no more” I kiss her

Me “thank you”

Her “tell me did you let him go scot free coz you are not in the right space with your daughter”

Me “that and the fact that I need to focus on Olivia. Soft she hurt Olivia so much I don’t want anything

to do with Mercy” she shakes her head

Her “take that back right now, yes she hurt Olivia and for that I hurt her, she has cost me my daughter

and now my best friends sanity, but you are her father please don’t disown her, I know how it feels to

have nobody and I wouldn’t even wish it on my worst enemy baby please”

Me “Sizakele what you are asking of me is something else” she nods

Her "I know baby I know, but for now just keep her at a distance till Olivia is okay then see how you feel

about her then, don't cut her out completely please" I hate the fact that I can't say no to this woman

Me "Soft Soft Soft" I sigh

Her "please baby, keep her at an arm's length but don't disown her, she is a special case" I laugh

Me "now that is true, I swear something is wrong with that daughter of mine" my phone rings and it's

Gadafi I sigh and answer he speaks and I listen and we say our goodbyes I will fill him in on Liv soon, I

look at Soft and feel guilty

Me "baby that was G, your father is no more" she closes her eyes

Her "oh I see" she says in a low voice

Me "I am so sorry my love" she shakes her head

Her "don't be my love he deserved everything. I need to check up on Olivia, I will be right back" she says

walking away and I just know she wants to cry where I will not see, yes he was a monster but he was still

her father and with a heart like Soft's she sympathizes with

everyone who is human. My poor baby

Lungile Mthethwa

I feel like the most evil person in the world, I just received a call from Gadafi telling me that Madoda burned to death, and I couldn't even shed a single tear, even the deepest parts of my heart were not moved, not even a bit, why must I mourn a monster like him, he doesn't deserve our tears not even a drop. I go to Sizwe's study and pour myself a glass of his hot staff. I go back to the lounge and Thandiwe walks in with her children, my grandson greets me and rushes to his playroom, and Thandiwe sits down next to me

Her "haibo mama, you drinking whisky"

Me "I am celebrating" she laughs

Her "share the good news phela"

Me "I feel evil for this Thandiwe, but your father burned to death last night Gadafi called, I am just



waiting to receive a call from the palace to inform me”

Her “wow, uhm so he is no more” she looks at me a while

Me “you are also not going to cry Thandiwe” she laugh

Her “haibo ma, cry for what manje”

Me “yazi Thandiwe we have become evil” she laugh

Her “I am not crying for that men, he hurt me real bad and to me his death is my healing, I am going to

get some champagne” she disappears and comes back without Kayise

Me “we need to practice crying for when we get to the village”

Her “we will just think of all the pain he brought to us then we will cry, simple”

Me “I fear this ngempela”

Her “give yourself a break mawami, the world is better off without that men” I sigh

Me “you are right my baby” she sips on her champagne

Her “I know my love. We need to go shopping for funeral clothes”

Me “hai mana Thandiwe that is a bit dramatic”

Her “exactly we are just going there to act” I shake my head,

this child

Me "let me go start with the pots"

Her "mama sit down and let's drink, we will order online" she pours her champagne in my empty whisky

glass. Okay let's mourn Dlamini this way I don't mind. Good riddance to bad rubbish

Please react, leave a comment and share with others. Sorry for posting late, got home late, see you on

my Monday guys, have a great weekend babies.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 69 (not edited)

Mercy

I got home and Vusi's car was still here, this is a first, him staying at home the whole day, that man can

never spend the whole afternoon in the house one would swear that something is haunting him that he

needs to always be away to find peace from it. I retrieve

groceries from the boot and walk in, music is  
blasting through my sound system, he is smoking a Cuban and  
drinking the expensive bottle he once got  
from my father, I wonder what he is celebrating coz he once  
said he will only drink a glass from that  
bottle when he has something to celebrate, maybe the Cape  
Town business has finally come through for  
him. I get excited a bit and go sit down; soon as he sees me he  
lowers the volume

Me "you seem happy baby" he sighs

Him "I am trust me" I nod and smile

Me "care to share with me" he gulps down his drink

Him "I am afraid it won't make you happy as it makes me, and I  
want you to know that I am really sorry,

things were never suppose to get this far, I am truly sorry  
Mercy" fear creeps through me

Me "you are scaring me baby, what's going on"

Him "I just want us to both be happy and" I cut him off

Me "and we are baby, or at least we are working towards it

love” he brushes his head and looks at me

Him “Mercy I won’t beat around the bush I will just be honest with you, I am sorry just know I am, but I

will not be able to continue with this relationship or marriage whatever it is, I am not happy with you

and I am tired of pretending really it is all too much, me and you, we are water and oil, we don’t mix at

all and that a recipe for disaster, I am sorry but me and you we are done, I wish you nothing but the

best, you will find a man that will love you and you will be truly happy, I am sorry” I just look at him with

tears running down my face, I couldn’t believe what he is telling me right now, I finally gather my

strength and speak

Me “please tell me you are joking please baby” he shakes his head no

Him “I am afraid I am not Mercy, I am sorry” he is really serious, Vusi is breaking us with me

Me “but why what did I do”

Him “we are just not compatible, it will never workout” I cry some more, he can’t do this to me; he can’t

leave me what will people say oh my God. I know one thing that will make him reconsider his decision

Me "you can't dump me Vusi, we said we are in this for the long haul, my father will never let you hurt me like this" he smiles

Him "see Mercy whatever you did to piss out your father this time worked in my favor coz I went to him

to tell him I am done with this and he couldn't care less, so please don't try and use the daddy card to

try and keep me, coz that man is done with" my heart breaks further, so my dad doesn't care that Vusi is doing this to me

Me "baby please don't do this to me please I love and we can work through it all" I say kneeling in front of him and hold on to his legs

Him "please don't make this harder than it already is please"

Me "after everything we went through Vusi you are doing me like this why"

Him "this is long overdue and you know it. I am sorry but we are done, keep well. I have already taken

everything that belongs to me, you will be okay, I will see you

around” he says removing my hands from his legs and walks out, I scream I agony but that doesn’t move him not even one bit. Why is this happening, now I have no one, my father is mad at me, my sister is a prisoner of her own mind and my husband just left me, what have I done to deserve all this, it hurts so bad more because I have no one to run to, I have no shoulder to cry on, I am all alone and that hurts so bad.

Vusi

I drove straight to Soweto to meet with my woman, I called her to meet me at Sakhumzi and she agreed, my heart is at peace, I am happy that I finally did right for both these woman, if I had stayed with Mercy I would have always cheated if Uriel had finally dumped me for not making right by her, I just want to thank whatever forces that were at work, I couldn’t have chosen the right time to approach Razor, and it actually worked out in my favor, I am truly grateful. I get there

and before I could get out of the car she gets in and tell me that we can drive to our place, she misses cooking for me, I blushed like crazy when she said that. We started at the mall and bought groceries and some wine and beer for me, we got to the house and she started with the pots and once she was done she went to fix the mess I made in the bedroom, she folded my clothes and placed them accordingly then hanged the ones needed to be hanged, then she changed the bedding, I tried helping out but I was told to go sit down and watch soccer or something, man this is going to be so fulfilling my God. She passed me by and made her way to the kitchen and came back a few minutes later with my plate and hers, we ate while watching soccer and when we are done she takes them back to the kitchen and comes back with a bottle of wine and few beers in an ice bucket

Me "thank you for the food baby, I didn't realize how much I missed it"

Her "I honestly missed taking care of you" I smile and kiss her,

then pour her a glass of wine

Me "here you are my angel" she takes it and sips

Her "thanks baby, so how did they take it"

Me "well her father didn't care, told me to take it up with his daughter, I was shocked coz I was

expecting him to show me hell, well Mercy on the other hand didn't it very well but I am sure she will

get over it soon, she is a strong person" she nods

Her "I pray so baby, but in all honestly thank you"

Me "for what now beautiful"

Her "for making things right, I was scared of losing you really" I kiss her hand

Me "thank you for standing your ground, I would still be comfortable and between two woman"

Her "I now know what to do if I want you to get something done" he laughs

Me "no no please angel don't do that again, if you ever leave me again Uriel I won't cope" she blushes

Her "I am sorry but if I didn't we wouldn't be here together not hiding"



Me "that is true really, from now it is just you and I boo"

Her "I am happy to hear this"

Me "can you please spend the weekend with me baby"

Her "I would love to love"

Me "please call your dad while it is early, I don't want to be in his bad books" she laughs

Her "dad is an understanding man Vee, he won't give you too much of a tough time, hence I spoke with

him about our situation instead of my mother, that one is not easily persuaded, she would have hated

you waya waya"

Me "if that is the case, thank you" she laughs and takes her phones and dials her father, she speaks for a

while then hangs up

Her "done he agreed, just said we shouldn't get used it"

Me "when I drive you back home, tell him I said I will soon do the right thing okay"

Her "we are dating first remember, baby steps" I frowns

Me "as you wish my love"

Her "thank you baby" she smiles and I lean in and kiss her

One week later

Lungile Mthethwa

We laid Madoda to his final resting place. Thandiwe and I really put on a good show, everyone in the

village was heartbroken speaking of a great man, and how I wish they knew the kind of monster he is.

Sizwe gave him an expensive burial fit for royalty and I couldn't have cared less, for as long as he will be

rotting and eaten by worms, if it were up to me I would cement plaster his grave so even his soul

doesn't even escape. I have had to pretend to be hurt to my soul for the past week and yoh that is the

hardest thing when all you want to do is cuss out the evil man. I was told that the cleansing ceremony

will happen after a month, I will have to stay in this village until then. The policies have paid out and his

money from working will also clear soon, I took money from the policies and paid for a house I looked at

in Alberton, it was really nice and spacious, I will enjoy living there and having my own life. I am in

Thandiwe's room, she is packing her clothes, and they are going back to the city this afternoon

Me "I wish I was also leaving this place"

Her "sorry mama, staying here in this village mourning that bastard has to be the hardest thing, I could

never, this is the last time I am even setting my foot here"

Me "I don't even know how I will survive staying in this palace"

Her "you will survive, just keep your distance from the King and before you know it, a month will have

passed and you will be ready to move into your new house"

Me "that will be my new beginnings, I have already started applying for work in the hospitals around

that side"

Her "that is Good mama, this is your big break" I smile

Me "definitely my baby"

Her "mama, I want to say thank you" I narrow my eyes

Me "for what now Thandiwe"

Her "for being there for me and helping me deal with the past"

Me "I am your mother baby and it is my job to have been there and first time I failed you baby and for that I will always be sorry"

Her "I don't blame you mama and you could have never thought that he would do that to me, we all

loved and believed in him, we hoped that he would be there to protect us always"

Me "he is gone now, he will never hurt you again"

Her "and that is a relief mama, I don't want to lie" I smile at her

Me "finish packing baby, plus these walls have ears, we will talk when we I back to the city" I whisper

and she laughs

Her "yes ma'am" she continues packing while I feed Kayise

Siza

Some days she is better but the others she is at her worst.

Today she is at her lowest that we had to call

in the psychiatrist in the morning, she hasn't been sleeping

enough too, so the Dr gave her some more  
meds and told us they have a sedative effect so we should  
ensure that she eats before giving them to  
her, so Molemo went to feed and gave her pills a few minutes  
after he went to check up on her and she  
was sleeping peacefully. He came down and we just sit down on  
the couch in each other's, in total  
comfortable silence. Olivia's situation is taking its toll on the  
both of us but it doesn't matter, we will  
help her till she is okay. He constantly kisses my forehead. The  
door bell rings and luckily one of the  
helpers is back. A second later she comes back with Mercy, and I  
feel Molemo tense up and untangle me from him then stands up

Him "what in God's name do you want here Mercy"

Her "daddy please just hear me out" he laughs

Him "you have nothing to say that I want to hear"

Her "I beg you please, I just want"

Him "exactly you, it always about you Mercy no one but you" I  
see her eyes tear up

Her "daddy please, I know I messed up and I want to fix things with you guys, you are the only family I

have please" she cried and I had my hand on my mouth

Him "you have your mother go to her, you chose her over your sisters sanity so go to her"

Her "I am sorry please. Can I please see Olivia and apologies" he charged towards her angry as hell and I

quickly stand between them.

Me "baby please calm down" he ignores me

Him "stay the fuck away from my house, stay the fuck away from Olivia Mercy, you really don't want to

see me be a monster to you" she cried harder

Her "daddy please"

Him "get the hell out before I throw you out myself" he shouts and we both jump, she takes her bag

and quickly walks out. He dicks his tongue and goes to pour himself a drink and gulps in down in one go.

Me "I know that she wronged you but baby that was a bit harsh, I thought we agreed that"

Him "Soft please not now please"

Me "I know it is difficult but" he cut me off

Him "damn Sizakele I said not now, can you just let this go just for today, do you think you can do that

for me" he shouts and I feel tears threatening, he has never raised his voice at me. He takes his car keys

and wallet from the coffee table and attempts to leave

Me "where are you going baby" he sighs and looks back

Him "I am going out, I will be back later don't wait up" I sigh

Me "I am sorry for pushing" he exhales

Him "Soft I need some fresh air okay" he say's and walks out. I feel so bad for pushing him to be okay

with Mercy, he is not taking this whole thing well and is blaming himself in a way, I shouldn't be another

problem by him forcing him to disregard his feelings. he has never shouted at me nor walk out before

we fix things I guess he didn't take this one well. I wish I could have just supported him on this till he was

okay emotionally. I decide to go to bed and ask the helper to help feed Olivia if I am not yet awake.

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 70 (not edited)

Razor

I just went out and drove around, I feel really bad for raising my voice at her and walking out, I know she

means well and I really appreciate that and I love her for it, but I wish she could see this from my point.

It is really too much, I can't look at Mercy nor accept her after what she did to her sister. I want to go

home back to Soft so bad but I am ashamed to face her after I busted out like that, she didn't deserve

that not one bit, she has been nothing but a great support to me and Olivia, I should be worshipping the

ground she walks on not this shit I just did. I find myself outside Gadaffi's house, his guards open up for

me and I get inside, he is not insight, I bump into his maid and she tells me he is sitting outside by the



pool, so I make my way that side and find him smoking weed and drinking beer, he sees me

Him "and he decides to show his face after blowing me off for an entire week" I sigh

Me "I am sorry man, a lot has been going on you won't believe it"

Him "I am all ears what's up" he says handing me the joint and I take a puff, then explain everything

Him "what the fuck, Fiona is the devil, but how could Mercy do this, she knew very well what that could have done to Liv"

Me "I don't know how naïve she could be but to let Fiona manipulate her like this is sickening really"

Him "how is Olivia brother" I sigh

Me "some days are better than the others, but yesterday she was something else, it was too much hey"

Him "my poor baby, I never wanted to ever see her back in that state"

Me "you and I both brother" I sigh and he narrows his eyes

Him "from the look on your face something is bothering you

more" I take a puff and sigh

Me "I shouted at Soft then walked out on her, something I have never done before" he whistles

Him "that's a problem, but why did you do it" I explained

Me "and it all came from a good place just that I wish she could understand that it is going to take me a

long time to forgive Mercy, if I even forgive her at all"

Him "I totally understand, but probably the whole thing is reminding her of when her father disowned

her you know" I nod and bury my head in my hands

Me "she once explained it in that manner, and I understand but eish I just need time to get Olivia back

to us then I will decide on a way forward with Mercy" I say and he nods

Him "you need to go home and face this"

Me "I am ashamed brother, she didn't deserve the shit I did"

Him "she probably understands where you were coming from, just go home and apologize sincerely,

this whole situation is hard on the both of you, as individuals and it will get some cracks in your

relationship, like the incident you just explained, you two love each other, just try and remember that

and you will make it through no matter what” she is right I need to go home, I have been gone for hour

now, she must be worried sick

Me “I need to go face my woman now, I need to apologize, thank you”

Him “sure and Olivia will be okay, she beat this once she will do it again, I promise you”

Me “long as I have that woman by my side I believe we will help her pull through once again”

Him “I will come visit her tomorrow afternoon when I get back from Cape Town”

Me “sure we will be waiting” I fist bump him and make my way out after downing all of his drink

Thandiwe

The drive from the village to this city is a bloody drag yeses, on the other I had to take a few stops to

feed Kayise and her brother, and that just added to the time

added in getting here. I am so tired and  
thank God I am almost at my house, I drive through chicken  
licken to get something to eat and then  
head to the house, I arrive and my husband's car isn't in the  
drive way, I get our bags in the house first  
and then wake up my son and carry Kayise inside, I go put her  
down in her cot and her brother just  
stayed in the lounge watching cartoons, I decided to make him  
something to eat, he is a drumstick fan  
so a peace and a slice of buttered bread with coke normally  
does the trick with him. We sit and eat while  
watching his cartoons, I think we as parents should be  
protected from the abuse these children put us  
through with these cartoon channels. By the time I am done he  
is sleeping and I am thankful even  
though I wanted to bathe him first. I carry him to his room and  
tuck him in then make my way to our  
bathroom and take a shower, I finish and go out, while busy  
applying my lotion Sizwe walks in and  
stands by the door with his hands buried deep in his pockets

Me "oh hey there" I say smiling

Him "hey babes, when did you guys get back"

Me "almost 2 hours now love"

Him "had a good drive kodwa?" I sigh

Me "it was a long one, travelling with little kids is a not pap and vleis"

Him "I can only imagine, speaking of kids where are they"

Me "Kayise slept when we got into the city and she has been out since, well your son tried to act tough

and we watched cartoons first and he fell asleep" he laughs

Him "I miss them so much hey" I smile

Me "you know they miss their daddy too baby" he comes to me and holds my waist

Him "and how is mommy holding up, I know you and your father were very close, this has to be so

hard" I sniff, and pull a sad face, he needs to buy that I am heart broken

Me "what hurts is the way he died baby, I can only imagine the pain he was in when that fire was eating

through him" I started crying but not for that man

Him "shhh it's okay my love, he is in a better place, I know he died too soon but I promise he will want you to go on with your life and be okay"

Me "you think so baby"

Him "I know so my love your father loved you very much, he wanted you to be very happy" I nod like I

am buying the bull he is saying about that man

Me "thank you baby I guess I needed to hear that really"

Him "great, this too shall pass, I promise" he kisses my lips and hugs me again, I just sniff sniff for that

dramatic effect.

Him "have you had anything to eat"

Me "I bought chicken licken love, what about you"

Him "I haven't eaten love"

Me "come I will make a plate for you just now"

Him "thank you baby" we get out of the bedroom and Kayise decides to cry

Me "you go get her and I will go fix your food"

Him "okay I will be down just now"

Me "sharp babe" he walks to Kayise's nursery and I head down to the kitchen. I need to call my mother to let her know I arrived safely coz if I don't call she will be dead with worry by morning.

Siza

I woke up hours ago and the helper had already fed Olivia and when it was time for bed she gave her

pills, I went to check up on her and she was peacefully sleeping she was holding on to a picture, I took it

and it was a picture of her and some guy so I assume it's Jabu, she must miss him, I put the picture back

and kiss her forehead then switch off her light and walk out, these sleeping pills knock her till morning. I

check the time and it's after 9 and Molemo is not yet back, he must really be mad at me. I go make

myself some rooibos with a dash of lemon juice and decide to go wait for him in the cinema. I decide to

check Netflix, and I see an old movie I have been meaning to watch. Okay it's a great one hey. I keep on

watching and I hear a voice speak behind me

Him "so you are hiding in here, I was scared that you left" I look back and he comes towards me and settles next to me

Me "I slept for most of the afternoon, so now I don't have any sleep" he gives me a faint smile

Him "oh okay, how is Olivia"

Me "she is okay, she was awake when I was asleep I had asked the helper to feed her then give her pills when it's time"

Him "I am sorry for leaving you here with her alone"

Me "it's okay babe, I don't mind" he nods and looks down on his hands and inhales

Him "Soft baby, I want to apologize for shouting at you like that baby, I didn't mean to I would say it's

because seeing Mercy put me off, but I wouldn't want to justify my actions, I am really sorry rato laka

please forgive me babe" he takes my hands

Me "I am not saying what you did was right, it hurt me baby but I shouldn't have pushed like that, we

don't deal with things the same way and I need to understand that. I am sorry too, but please next time



don't walk out when we are not okay, rather go to another room to cool off and come back a second later so w fix things"

Him "I hear you my love and thank you for understanding"

Me "it's okay my love, we will have misunderstandings now and again it is only natural, just know that I love you" he smiles

Him "and I love you too my baby"

Me "have you had anything to eat"

Him "no baby nothing, did you cook?"

Me "nope woke up really late, but I can whip something for you real quick"

Him "if it's not too much trouble love"

Me "for you it could never be, stir fry will take me about 30minutes if you help" he smiles

Him "what do you need me to do"

Me "just cut the chicken breast into strips, I will cook the noodles and fry the stir fry real quick then

mix everything and spice up everything" he smiles

Him "okay thank you my love"

Me "cool then let's go to the kitchen and cook you some food" he gets up and takes my hand and we go to the kitchen

Me "by the way where did you go, your eyes are so red baby"

Him "I went to see Gadafi and we smoked weed love" he says

Me "oh I see, that's why you are so hungry" he laughs

Him "eish baby munchies are killing me, please make sure that the food is more than enough" I laugh at him and nod

Me "okay then"

Vicky

Whoever this guy Thato is dating is loading, this guy is not afraid to spend on her, and she gets what she

wants. After her Bali tip sis has been flourishing, this guy gives her money left right and centre, but I

wonder why she just won't tell me this guys' name is. it is becoming suspicious now, if I dare touch her

phone she freaks and all hell breaks loose, whoever this guy is it is someone she isn't suppose to be seen

with. It is after 9 at night and I am pretty sure she is not coming back; she can afford to sleep at

expensive hotels. Surprisingly enough the door opens and she

walk in holding a paper bag from Gucci

and plastics from YDE. On her other hand she has a paper bag from Nandos

Me "hey babe" she smiles

Her "hey girl" she says and places her staff down and goes to the fridge and comes back with a bottle of

champagne and some potato chips from woolies, sis is living guys I am telling you

Me "I thought you were not coming back" she sighs

Her "oh babe got a call from his security the wife came back earlier than expected"

Me "oh what a bam my friend"

Her "arg no worries love, me and him spend too much time together I don't mind him giving his wife

attention, that is how it's supposed to be"

Me "if I had my claws on Sizwe I wouldn't even let go of him" she laughs

Her "trust me you would get bored fast. It won't be as thrilling as before" she sips on her drink

Me "babe can I ask for a huge favor"

Her "shoot hun" she crosses her legs and her designer shoes get in my face

Me "I never wanted to do this but I was hoping you could loan me about R5000 things have been so dry

hey and I have a lot to pay"

Her "shit baby, the money I had on me I send some home so they pay for the building material and I

send some to my savings account and I can't access that one without notice, but S" she coughs and I

give her a look, she almost gave away the name of her man, at least I know it starts with and S it will be

easy to investigate, after the fake cough she continued

Her "yes baby my man will send money to me tomorrow afternoon coz he couldn't today then I will

send you that change ne" whoa R5000 is now change to her

Me "I would really appreciate it babe" I fake a smile

Her "I am going to fit these, want to come see"

Me "why not, we stand and go to her room, she is even gaining some ass mmhhh

Bonus nyana for my loyal people. I love you all hlong your support means everything.

Siza's tribulation

Chapter 71 (not edited)

Siza

It is almost Christmas and my best friend is still not herself, I feel defeated really, I don't know what to do anymore, I just wish I had something to do so I can help her, I feel useless, I honestly believe that there is something more I could do for Olivia, all she does these days is stare at Jabu's photos and cry until she falls asleep. The situation in the house is very tense, I have never seen my man so helpless, the psychiatrist doesn't know what to do anymore, everyone has done what they hoped would help her but nothing is working in attempting to bring her back to us. I never thought these would be the most

emotional festive season. Molemo went out to meet with his associates about funds for some charity house so they can have the best Christmas. I was left alone with Olivia, my body is tired, my emotions unstable, I am just a wrack really. An idea pops in my head but it might be a dangerous one, but I have always heard that to fully deal with something and be able to move passed it, you need to face it head on and I know I might make her worse or even risk Molemo hating me but I need to do this, he will hate me and I will take it but I would have at least tried everything to help her, I love her too much to sit back and watch her sink deeper and deeper into depression. I stand up and head to her room and she is doing the same thing, starrng at his photo, I go to her and take the picture and she looks at me shocked but I don't say anything. I go to her closet and pull out a maxi dress and flip flops. I go back to her and help her stand and undress her the night shirt and put on the dress, she puts on the shoes and I brush her braids and I take her and we walk downstairs, she is silent but I

can see that she is wondering. I take my  
phone and car keys and we walk to my car I open the passenger  
door and she gets in, I got to my side  
and start the engine, I drove there a couple of days to locate the  
grave. i drive so fast, my heart is  
beating so fast, I am scared, I might be causing her more  
damage but it is worth the try. We get to the  
cemetery and she looks at me with tears in her eyes and I can  
tell that she knows why we are here. I go  
open her door and she sits still, I help her out and surprisingly  
she doesn't refuse, we walk in deeper  
until we stand in front of his grave. Tears were now streaming  
uncontrollably on her ash face.

Me "it is enough now Olivia, you have been through enough  
babe, it is time you let all this go, take back  
your life from all this pain please, you are grown up now and  
even though your mother loved Mercy  
more than you, you still made it through, now you have me and  
your father and we love you so much,  
take back your life please, he hurt you and caused you to go

back to this dark place and he doesn't  
deserve your tears, your love, he is not worth you mourning, he  
is not worth you losing yourself like  
this, yes you love him but I beg you please choose yourself baby,  
help me pull you out of there, take  
your power from Jabu and Fiona, they are traitors and I beg you  
don't allow them to claim your sanity  
too" she was crying and just staring at his grave, she went silent  
for about 5 minutes, I don't see a  
change, I guess this didn't work too. I give up, let me just take  
her back home, I walk towards her side  
and she sinks down and screams so bad, like screaming from  
the top of her lungs, I quickly go down and  
hold her. this is the first time I hear her voice in weeks. She  
continues crying for what seems like forever.  
Her "it hurts so bad Siza, it hurts to my soul, I trusted him, he  
knew I needed him, but he just took my  
heart and walked all over it, out of all the women in the world he  
had to choose my own mother, was I  
never enough for him" oh my God she is speaking she is finally  
talking again. I let my tears fall, I didn't



make it worse it worked, my plan worked thank you God.

Me "I know baby, and it is not on you, it is on Fiona and Jabu. You will be okay, just take your power

back take your life, enough is enough now, we can't always go back here each time you see Fiona. Tell

Jabu to leave you alone right now, tell him that he no longer has power over you, tell him to rest in

peace and that you forgive him not for him but for your peace. It is enough now, you are Olivia and you

are tired of always been here coz you entrusted your life into someone, it stops now do you hear me?

You will never again put your life and sanity on a person but God. Take back your life right now" she

nods and wipes her tears.

Her "Jabulani Jali, I forgive you for what you did to me, I am doing this for myself, I am tired now, I will

not say much to you but just know that I will never be a prisoner of my mind because your betrayal hurt

me to my soul. Rest in peace and know that this is the last day I ever shed a tear for you or what you did

with my mother" she said and wiped her entire face with her

dress and looks at me

Me "are you okay"

Her "how can I ever repay you Siza, I didn't realize that I had to let go of him, I was the one allowing

myself to be trapped, thank you so much for not giving up on me"

Me "you can repay me by promising that no matter what you will not need anyone to be okay, even

me" she smiles and comes to me and fold her arms around me

Her "I promise with my heart" I hug her back and we squeeze

Me "I have missed you so much my friend"

Her "I have missed you more than you can imagine, it feels good being back to real life" I smile

Me "let me get you home, you deserve a long hot shower"

Her "and a decent meal, please cook me my favorite"

Me "consider it done babe, come let me get you home now" we hold hands and walk to the Bentley.

Thank you God for bringing her back to us, Razor will be so thrilled to see her baby girl.

Lungile Mthethwa

King "sorry to disturb you, can we please have a word" I narrow my eyes

Me "Yebo Nkosi yami" he sits down next to me

King "how are you holding up, I hope they are treating you well"

Me "I am getting there one day at a time and they are treating me very well thank you"

King "I am glad to hear that. I have been meaning to ask, what your plans are now that Madoda is no more" I sigh

Me "well I will have to move to the City to my children, since the house burned down and my husband is gone, there is nothing left for me here"

King "that is not entirely true Lungile, you know Madoda and I grew up together and I had eyes for you

but he beat me to it, you should have been my Queen" I cough and look at him shocked

Me "oh I see" he laughs

King "it is not too late you know" I narrow my eyes

Me "excuse me?" he sighs and turns to look at me

King "I have a big Kingdom, I am one of the wealthiest Kings in this region, I can afford to take care of

you, just agree to be my Queen Lungile and I will lay everything down at your feet" I am shocked beyond

explanation, is this man serious

Me "not to sound rude but you already have 5 wives "

King "I can have as many wives as I want, I am King after all" I just laugh

Me "you have no shame, I am in mourning if you are not aware Mthetho" he smiles

King "just hear how perfect you say my name, we will be good together just say yes" I stand up

Me "you are a sick man, I am not one of these blind village woman you smooth talk to get into their

pants, I have self respect, and after her I will not be able to stay here any longer, I am moving the

cleansing to this weekend" he stands

King "that is not how we do things in this village Lungile and you know that"

Me "I don't care Mthetho" I walk away from him the nerve of

that man how dare her nxa.

Razor

I got home and Soft was nowhere in sight, I tried calling her but she didn't answer. I went to check on

my daughter was also not in her room, where could they be, I am starting to panic, where could they

possibly be right now, I mean they can't even go out in public coz Olivia is not herself. I take my phone

about to call one of my boys to tack Siza's phone but I hear the door open and I quickly go and see who

it is, Siza walks in followed by Olivia with a cup of ice cream in her hand, I frown. She sees me and places

the cup down on the flower table and runs to me

Her "oh daddy I have missed you" she says attacking me with a hug and I am shocked

Me "Olivia baby you are talking, are you okay?" she let's go and looks at me straight in the eye

Her "it's me daddy, I am better now" I didn't even want to know how at this moment, I just hold her tight in my arms and kiss the top of her head

Me "oh nana I am so happy to see you back with us, I felt so defeated seeing you like that again"

Her "I know and I am sorry but I promise that I will never allow myself back in that situation again"

Me "I am so happy to hear that ngwanake"

Her "we have Sizakele to thank, she really helped me papa and made me realize so much and I will forever be indebted to her" I smile and look at Soft by the door.

Me "oh what has my super woman done this time to save the day" Olivia smiles and turns to look at her

Her "she took me to Jabu's grave and I managed to let it all go, I needed that and I wasn't even aware"

she says and I let go of her and walk to my woman and kneel in front of her

Me "I don't know what I did to deserve you Sizakele, you have saved me from myself and now you have somehow managed to save my daughter too. I bless the day you were born, I bless the day you walked

into my life. Thank you so much from the bottom of my heart”  
she lets out a tear and I hold her waist

and place my head on her stomach and she hold my head

Siza “it is only my pleasure baby” she kisses my bald head and  
helps me stand up

Me “are you really okay baby” I ask Olivia

Her “not entirely papa but I will take it a day at a time” I smile

Me “I am glad to hear this. We will be here to ensure that you  
are okay”

Her “you guys have done enough for me, it is all up to me now  
papa, I need to stand up and claim my  
life back”

Me “I am so proud of you baby girl”

Her “thanks daddy, I need to go take a bath, babe I can still  
count on you for that plate right”

Siza “definitely Hun, I am heading to the kitchen” the both  
laugh and my heart is okay. Olivia heads up

the stairs and I am left with Soft

Me “you are just the best, I don’t know how I can ever thank  
you”

Siza "I will think of something better but for now please help me cook her favorite meal"

Me "I will be happy to help baby"

Siza "well in that case let's go my co-chef" I laugh and pull her into my arms

Me "I don't know but I will always thank you for what you did for Olivia baby, you are God sent"

Siza "I would do anything possible to help you and Olivia, you guys are my family" I smile and kiss her

Me "I am going to marry you, and you will bare me a son Soft, and he will be the only Motaung heir

blessed to call you mommy" she giggles and hides her face in my chest.

Siza "I love the sound of that baby"

Me "I am glad you do baby, now let's go cook" I let go of her and we go to the kitchen

Siza "we are making lasagna and sticky wings"

Me "nice one, have been craving that myself" she laughs and goes to the pantry to find ingredients

Mercy



I have lost everything and everyone in a blink of an eye, I can't believe that I am all alone with no one in my corner, it hurts so badly. I have been a shadow of myself for a few days now. I just want to be okay, I have been failing to locate Vusi and he isn't picking my calls in fact it takes me straight to voicemail and he doesn't even bother calling me back, it is so frustrating. I haven't been taking a bath and I have just been pumping myself with alcohol to fall asleep and to help me cope with this pain. I get out of bed and take a quick shower and then wear my grey sweatpants and a white crop top with my white air force, I hold my weave in a messy bun and I head out, I am hungry plus the hangover is too much, I should just go eat at Club Nation, they have this made platter, wors, steak, pork chops and chicken wings with chips and salad perfect to cure for this babi. I take my purse and phone and walk downstairs my car keys are on the kitchen counter, I take them and head out. I get to the club and go sit outside and look at the

busy streets, it is the perfect distraction. I order and it comes after a while, I eat in peace and I am really enjoying it. I am disturbed by laughter, a voice I know very well, I look behind me and it's Vusi with some girl, they are having lunch and laughing, you can see how comfortable they are with each other, I keep my eyes on them and the girl feeds him and my heart breaks he was never like this with me, he stands and plants a kiss on her lips and that sends me off the edge, I just stand up and move to them furious as hell, I just want to grab that bitch and teach her a lesson

Me "I know you didn't break up with me because of another woman Vusi" he sighs

Him "Mercy please just walk away" I laugh

Me "walk away, you made me a fool, spend my father's money like it was yours, you used me Vusi and now you tossing me to the side" I scream

Him "you are attracting unnecessary attention Mercy please"

Me "do I look like I fucken care if they are looking at me right now, you played me you mother fucker"

Him "I said I am sorry for hurting you Mercy, I don't know what more you want me to do, tell me what do you want me to do"

Me "I want you to get up and go home with me right now"

Him "I can't do that I am sorry for hurting you but I can't be with you again"

Me "because of this hoe right here, this basic bitch really Vusi, this is what you replaced me with"

Him "she is not your replacement" I laugh

Me "and what is she huh"

Him "her name is Uriel and she is my girlfriend" hearing him say that set me I just took the bottle of

wine on the table and hit that girl with it on her head, she screamed, Vusi quickly pushed me and I fell

and he rushed to her, I stand up and she bleeding from the cut on her forehead

Him "you will learn to leave other peoples husbands girly" I say pointing at her, they ignored

Him "baby look at me are you okay"

Her "I am not sure baby, I am a bit dizzy"

Him "I am taking you to the hospital okay hold on" he stands up and takes out a few R200 notes and

places them on the table and packs her bag and then carries her bridal style they walk out, I follow them

cussing

Me "you will never see the last of me Vusi, I will be your worst nightmare, you will regret the day you

ever crossed paths with me" he bluntly ignores me and gets her in the car then goes around his side and

gets in. I start throwing stones at his car and he drives away leaving me with dust, people are already

outside watching the movie

Me "what the fuck are you all looking at" I dick my tongue

Please react, leave a comment and share with the others.

Siza's tribulations

Chapter 72 (not edited)

Olivia

It feels really good being back to life, I was back in a very dark place in my life, a place I thought I will never find myself in ever again, but I guess I was too quick to say that, I never thought that my sister would do me like this, she knew my situation but she still decided to take Fiona's side but she is an adult I would have understood that she wants her mother, she should have just left me out of it, she could have had the decency to let me or dad know that Fiona is back maybe I could have found a way to accept it, another part of me is glad that I went through this again, as painful as it was, Siza made me realize that I must never entrust my sanity into people's lives coz once they disappoint me I am left broken, I have learned that I can love people but I do not have to make them the center of my universe coz I end up getting hurt. I have decided that I will forgive and let go of it, for my peace, I don't want to hold on to this anymore, what I went through will always be a reminder of how strong I am, a reminder that I am a conqueror. I am blessed to have my father and

Sizakele in my corner; I honestly don't know what I could have done without the both of them, they were there for me and never left, as much as I am doing this for myself I will do this to honor their sacrifices. My life belongs to me now and no one will force me to that darkness again. I finished taking a shower and went downstairs and found them cuddling in the cinema watching some series, I know its Siza because it's a medical series.

Me "hey love birds" they stay in the same position

Dad "hey baby girl"

Siza "hey babe"

Me "I think I need to go back to the apartment, I am tired of being a spare wheel" they laugh

Dad "please, we are tired of hosting too, we can't be free in our own house"

Siza "please tell her baby, we can't even walk around naked"

Me "oh my God, Siza not you, I can take it from him" they laugh

Dad "we just kidding nana" I smile

Me "I know you are daddy" Siza let's go of him and sits straight

Siza "you guys what are we going for Christmas"

Me "I just got back so I haven't really thought of anything hey babe" I look at dad

Dad "anything you want to do Soft as long as I am with you and Olivia" we smile at him

Siza "I was hoping that we could spend our Christmas on deck in Cape Town, we could buy enough

drinks, all the ingredients and I will cook Christmas lunch and then we can watch Christmas movies

which we stuff our faces with junk and all the alcohol, eish but"

Dad "eish what baby, it is a nice idea I like it"

Me "I am all for it, it is different something we have never done before" my father nods

Siza "I don't know of a boat that has a cinema"

Dad "just plan everything baby I will get us a yacht with everything, a Jacuzzi, and the cinema you want

oh oh and a big kitchen so we can all prepare that lunch" she blushes

Me "daddy please get that one that is owned by that Middle Eastern associate of yours, I have always

wanted to see myself in that baby” he laughs

Dad “I was thinking of the same one nana” I punch the air as a sign of victory

Siza “that would be great baby thanks”

Dad “let me go make that phone call now”

Me “aren’t you the best daddy in the world”

Dad “what’s that one thing you say again about the way I am to Soft as her boyfriend” I laugh

Me “you are doing this boyfriending thing too well daddy Mo” he laughs and kisses Siza then exits.

Vusi

I never thought Mercy would do this should we meet with her in public, it is clear that I was totally

wrong, she is mad and she is dangerous, I am just mad at myself for not being able to stop her from

hurting Uriel, I don’t know why I put it passed her to do such I mean she used to be physical with me so

what would stop her from attacking Uriel, I understand that I



hurt her and I am sincerely sorry for all I  
did to her, but even so I am not sorry for choosing Angel, I am  
happy and I pray that she will also meet  
someone who will love her like she deserves to. I am looking at  
her sleeping peacefully on the hospital  
bed, Mandla is the Dr who is attending to her, they did some  
scans and the is not trauma to the brain  
nor any internal bleeding, I was relieved for that. He just  
cleaned her wound and gave her stitches. They  
are keeping her here over night, private hospitals and  
unnecessary stays so that they can claim money  
from the medical aid, even running useless tests mxm. Mandla  
walks in and we fist bump

Me "she is going to be okay right" he smiles

Him "she is okay bafo, everything seem clear and I am happy"

Me "thank goodness" I sigh and kiss her hand

Him "so what happened vele"

Me "who else if not Mercy" he laughs

Him "yoh yoh that one is psycho what did she do this time" he

asks folding her arms

Me "so my queen and I are sitting there at cub nation having lunch when she appeared and started her

drama, next thing I know she hit Angel with a bottle of wine we were drinking" he whistles

Him "all I can say is look after your girl man coz we both know that this was only the beginning" I was

about to answer when my baby spoke

Her "can I please have water baby" I look at her and smile and go pour water in a glass and help her drink

Me "how are you feeling now"

Her "I am better baby the headache has died down"

Him "look who's a patient now" Mandla says to her and we all laugh

Her "it feels so weird I must say"

Him "I totally understand what you are saying, I swear if I was to be admitted, I would want to Dr

myself" we laugh

Me "I don't doubt that one bit, stubborn Zulu man"

Him "you know me, guys let me leave you two, I have patients I

need to check on, be okay we need you

back, I will give you an entire week off” he says looking at Angel

Her “thank you Dr Ntuli” he nods and walks out

Me “baby I am so sorry for this” she smiles at me and takes my hand

Her “no need to apologize my baby, this isn’t your fault at all love”

Me “I will understand if you want to press charges” she shakes her head no

Her “no baby its okay, let’s leave her be, she was just angry and hurt”

Me “are you sure Uriel?”

Her “100% baby, I understand what made her do it, seeing us made her lose it, she is still hurting”

Me “you are the best you know that” she blushes

Her “I have been told hey so yeah I know” we both laugh

Me “someone is feeling herself right now” she laughs and smacks my hand

Her “just please show me this scar baby, it is not bad right”

Me “it is so big and I am so sorry” tears form in her eyes

Her "oh no please this is not happening, my face is ruined" she cries

Me "I am just kidding baby please don't cry please"

Her "don't joke with sensitive issues like this baby" I hold in my laugh and nod then kiss the scar

Mandla

After my rounds I went straight home, I had a day from hell, nothing hurts like working during the

festive season, at least I took leave from the 25th to the 1st. I will be back at the hospital when we are

busy, people will be going back home from the holidays and that means roads will be busy and

accidents will be happening left right and center so I need this rest ngempela. I get to my house and the

smell of home cooked food hits my nostril, Palesa and I have been doing really great, she has really

upped her game, she went straight back to being the girl I fell in love with all those years ago. I think I

am slowly learning to trust her again and seeing the possibility

of a future with her but one step at a time. I get inside and she is watching something. I kiss her cheek and she smiles

Me "hey honey I am home"

Her "welcome home baby, how was work"

Me "hectic baby, I just want to bath eat and sleep"

Her "well in that case, I should go run you a bath" she attempts to stand

Me "no love don't worry I will do it, just get my pate ready, I will take a quick shower"

Her "okay love, your plate will be waiting for you once you done" I smile at her and move to the

bedroom and place my things and strip naked and go to the bathroom, my eyes land on something

shocking, it's two boxes of unused pregnancy tests" I am shocked, could she? No oh no I am not ready

to have children I am only learning to start trusting in Palesa again.

Me "babe please come here quickly" a second later she appears

Her "what's wrong love" her eyes move to my hands

Me "what are you doing with pregnancy tests"

Her "oh shit I forgot to remove those"

Me "what are you doing with them in the first place baby"

Her "well I haven't had my period in almost two months" oh  
Jesus Christ no

Me "oh this can't be happening" her eyes pop

Her "what do you mean you don't want my children?"

Me "it's not that baby, I am not ready yet. I want to do things  
right" she sighs in relief

Her "if you say so"

Her "please take the tests now baby please" she nods and I  
hand them to her and walk out to give her

privacy. She closes the door and I pace up and down waiting for  
her to finish. 15 minutes pass and she

walks out disappointed and my heart falls, she hands me the  
tests and it's only 1 line, it's negative thank

you Jesus.

Me "it's not that I don't want your kids, I am just not ready yet"

Her "I totally understand Power"

Me "I will work hard and make right by you and then we will talk of having kids ne" she smiles

Her "I would love that very much baby"

Me "okay let me shower then, I will be quick"

Her "no problem, let me go fix your plate"

Me "thank you love, and I am sorry again"

Her "its okay I understand really"

Me "you are the best Pali"

Her "yeah and don't you forget that" I laugh and she goes to the kitchen while I get into the shower

Fiona

After Mercy threw me out of the house, I had to come back to Keke's place and she welcomed me back with open us, we have become like sisters and I know that I have her in my life even when no one wants me. I tried going back to the apartment to check on Olivia and the security told me that she left with her father the same day I was there and she never came back, he said she didn't look good like she was sick coz her father was carrying her and I knew there and then what my return has

done to her, I really feel bad for what I've done, I just wanted to fix things so we can be a family again. Well with Mercy I have been keeping a close eye on her and I heard that her husband left her and I have been following that boy and I know that he is seeing some other girl. I think this will be my way back into her life, I don't know how yet but I hope it all works out for me and she accepts me back, my plan for Razor can only work if she is on my side. I am in my bedroom and busy trying to work on a new plan when I hear Keke shouting my name.

Her "Fiona, where the fuck is your white ass" I roll my eyes

Me "I am in here" I shout back, the opens and she walks in

Her "I go to work and leave you in bed and I come back and find you in the same position"

Me "I need to work on this plan"

Her "you are something else hey, the least you could have done was to cook Fiona"

Me "come on Keke I just told you I am busy"

Her "you are so inconsiderate, I go out there to work and pay rent, I buy food and I have to come back

tired to come and cook while you are busy plotting the down fall of your husband who we both know



will squash you like a cockroach without thinking twice, you don't have a chance against him, just accept

that you fucked up" I look at her shocked

Me "why are you saying this to me Keke I thought I had your support"

Her "i saved your life, I feed you, I clothe you, I put a roof over your hear, what support do you want

from me, no in fact what support do you give me Fiona" I let out a tear

Me "this plan will work and we will be set for life" she sighs

Her "I love you Fiona I do, but with the rate you are going if you don't pull up your socks I am going to

have to ask you to move out, it is too much on me now"

Me "keke please I just need a little more time"

Her "I have given you enough" she says and walks out. I am left in here shocked and hurt as hell I never

thought Keke will be tired of me.

Please leave a comment, react and remember sharing is caring.

Siza's tribulations

## Chapter 73 (not edited)

### Razor

Now that Olivia is better it is time I start looking into Fiona and where she could have been hiding all

these years, that woman is a snake and I know she didn't just resurface, she is back to try and avenge

herself, she can be dangerous that, she was my wife after all, but if she thinks she can outsmart me she

has another thing coming, I might have left the game but that doesn't mean that I have become weak,

people shouldn't poke a snake in its hole and that is exactly what Fiona has done, and those who play

with fire must be prepared to be burned. The first person I need to confront is her brother; hence I am

driving to the hospital to talk to him, I get here and park at Soft's reserved parking space. I walk in and

go straight to his office and hit my knuckles on his door and he shouts come on, I get in and he stands soon as he sees me

Him "Motaung" he says in an English accent

Me "Wallace, how do you do" we shake hands

Him "I am very well thanks yourself"

Me "I am well thank you"

Him "please sit, can I get you anything to drink"

Me "no I am fine thanks" he nods

Him "to what do I owe the pleasure or you just came to check on your investment" I laugh

Me "I trust you and I know my hospital is in good hands so relax"

Him "came to talk about your girlfriend, I told you she can come back when she has sorted whatever she

is dealing with, she is good Razor even though nepotism played its part" I roll my eyes

Me "oh you are one to talk about nepotism, such hypocrisy Nathan" he laughs

Him "guilty, so will you tell me what this is about" I changes modes and I see him squirm a little

Me "you know I don't deal well with betrayal and lies right"

Him "I am well aware of that"

Me "good to hear that so I am going to ask once" he nods

Him "and you expect an honest answer"

Me "correct, so Nathan tell me, did you know that Fiona your sister is still alive" his eyes pop from shock

Him "what? Hell no, Fiona died Razor you killed her so what are you saying to me"

Me "well that's what I thought too until she showed up at Olivia's place days ago"

Him "oh my God, where has she been hiding"

Me "I thought you will tell me, but if you say you didn't know I means she hasn't been hiding at your

place. Just know that your sister came back and manipulated Mercy in to being on her side and went to

show her face to my baby girl and she had another episode"

Him "oh God Fiona, how could she, she is still as selfish as she was, I guess something's will never

change. How is Olivia"

Me "she is okay now thanks to my woman" he nods

Him "that is good to know"

Me "I just want to know where your loyalties lie Nathan"

Him "with you of course, I would never betray you Motaung, you helped me revive my career, bought

this place so I can work coz the others wouldn't touch me, my children went to the best schools because

of you why would I betray you" I nod and stand up

Me "that is good to know, well in that case, I will take my leave, send my regards to Tammy and the kids alright"

Him "I will, thou she will love to see you personally" I nod and promise to show up then leave.

Siza

It's good to have Liv back to her old self, she is not 100% but she will get there eventually. With her

being okay it means I can go back to enjoying my festive season.

Last night I got a text from Uriel my

friend, she asked that we go out and have some drinks and catch up at club Nations. Molemo went out,

he said he is going to find out where Fiona has been hiding ever since and then find out why she is only

resurfacing now. I want to know too coz a part of me feels like

she is back to get revenge and hurt my  
man because of what he did to her and that scares me so bad.  
Arg let me not think of the depressing  
stuff and get ready, I finish and I look just simple. I drive there  
and I park the same time as Vusi's car and  
I just laugh, how the hell did I take a liking into Vusi's girlfriend  
again, I take my handbag and get out of the car and lock it and  
they also get out and she is smiling so sweetly at me

Me "hey shorty" she laughs and we hug

Her "hey sexy, you look amazing Siza yet so cool o phodile man,  
now I feel over dressed" she is in a

dress and heels and I am just wearing my shorts and an  
oversized white T-shirt with glittery push in the

whole outfit is from Mr Price, the only thing expensive is my  
Luis Vuitton backpack and the 32 inch

weave, yes I finally bought one please don't look at me like that.

Me "don't be silly you look amazing, and the reason why I  
dressed like this is because I couldn't find

anything in my closet" she laughs

Him "okay I see I don't exist, I should get going"

Her "oh sorry my love, just happy to see this one it has been a minute hey babe" I smile

Me "it has really, hello Vusi" I say to him

Him "hey, please don't drink too much you two, Siza you driving don't forget that"

Me "I can always Uber and fetch this baby in the morning"

Him "right, babe I should get going, I will see you later, call me to pick you up"

Me "no need I will drop her off" he nods

Him "thank you" he says to me and then kiss Uriel, I just look at my phone and text Mo to let him know I

have arrived here, a text comes through and it's his response and it cracks me up

\*Soft why are you doing this to me, I just checked the security footage and you are wearing shorts I

mean my food is on display. You are so abusive\* I burst out laughing

\*I look great just admit it, I love you too, see you later, I am about to get lit" I send

\*oh boy, drunk and driving is an offence, I love you be safe\*

\*lucky for me my boyfriend is a hell of a lawyer\* I respond

\*Girl you sure know how to choose hey” his text says and I blush and just send him a heart emoji

Her “are you done blushing like a crazy woman” I look up and Vusi is no longer here

Me “I am sorry I was just texting with bae, when did yours leave”

Her “a minute ago, you were so lost in your own world couldn’t even hear him say bye” I laugh

Me “eish I am sorry babe”

Her “it’s okay friend, let’s go inside, I have a lot to tell you yoh”

Me “can we please start with the scar on your forehead” she laughs

Her “that one nje I almost died babe, you are going to be shocked” we walk in and find a comfortable

place to sit and we order shots and 3 bottles of champagne with water then we get to the catching up

Lungile Mthethwa

I have been sure to avoid that sorry excuse of a King, how dare he, I mean Dlamini has not yet decayed



and he already wants to bed me, I mean weren't they best friends, I am starting to think that he is no different to Madoda, they might have even discussed it and laughed about it together. I hope Madoda is burning wherever he is. Thinking about him even infuriates me. if I could kill his memory from this lifetime I would, the only good thing that came out of that man are my daughters besides that he is nothing. A knock comes through to my door and I go open, one of the servants assigned to me walk in, I like these girls I hope that sick man hasn't had his way with them.

Her "good afternoon Ma" I smile '

Me "hello baby, unjani (how are you)"

Her "I am fine thank you, ma the King requests for your presence" I roll my eyes

Me "did he say why"

Her "I don't know for sure, but I overheard his speaking to the elders about your cleansing" why am I even surprised mxm

Me "thank you nana, I will be right there"

Her "do you need anything?"

Me "just stay in here please and pack my things and don't tell anyone" she nods and I walk out, I find

Mthetho and the elders gathered waiting for me, I bow

Me "greeting to you Nkosi yami (my King) and you my elders" I say and they respond and I am told to

sit, so I make my way to the grass mat and sit

King "I am sure you are wondering what this is about"

Me "yes I am"

Elder 1 "well Lungile, we will not beat around the bush, you are aware that your husband was practically

raised along side with the King, they were more like brothers since Madoda's parents and siblings died"

Me "I am well aware baba"

Elder 2 "good then, that will mean that you understand that as our custom, when a brother dies, the

wife and children automatically belong to the brother" I should have known, I just laugh

Me "you got to be shitting me right now, you want me and

Mthetho to get married”

Elder 1 “hei wena Lungile this is a sacred place, you can’t just cuss like that, you will respect this place

and the King, you hear me” I just remain silent, fuming like hell inside

King “I will forgive her once Mkhethwa, Lungile watch your tongue you don’t want to anger me trust

me. Khoza you can continue”

Elder 2 “thank you my King, as I was saying, since Madoda is no more, and Mthetho is the closest thing

to a brother, you will become his wife once we have done that cleansing ceremony” I just remain silent

King “your silence means you understand and that you do not dispute this Lungile, not that you have a

choice though” they all laugh. Like hell I am accepting to be your wife, from one psycho to the next it

can never be me.

Me “yebo Nkosi yam”

King “good then, you are excused, I will let you know of the arrangements” I nod and my way back to

the hut I am using and luckily the girl is finished parking, I am

getting the hell out of here this night, I

know a man who has a car, I will offer him so much money he won't be able to refuse so he can drive me

to the city.

Me "I am going to be honest with you, I will be leaving this night, please act like you never knew" she

starts crying.

Her "mam Lungi please take me with, the King, he is not a good ma please. I can be a maid for your

daughter " I sigh coz I understand what she is saying; I bet you he has been abusing this little girl.

Mercy

Since he gave me that bitches name, I searched for her on instagram until I found her, she goes by the IG

handle 'Angel\_Uriel' mxm angel my left foot. He parents raised nothing but a cheap hoe that can't get

her own man, so she goes and takes married man, Vusi and I might not have been married legally but

the man did pay for my lobala so yes he was my husband and she took that away from me. The bitch is a

nurse and the hospital she works at is run by my uncles, Fiona's big brother. My father bought it to help him make end meet. I go back to her profile and she just uploaded a video, I play it, she is at some club drinking champagne, and laughing and talking to someone I guess her friend, my chock when she turned the camera and Siza's face appears, what she is friends with my father's girlfriend, this is why my father let Vusi go scot free, because the bitch he cheated with is his hoes friend, is this her way of her getting revenge on me for taking Vusi away from her, she took my father why isn't that enough. I manage to calm myself down before I throw my phone on the wall. Oh they will all regret ever crossing, I am my father's daughter after all.

Thato

Vicky thinks she is smart but she doesn't know what I made of, sis has been following me I bet you she wants to see who is this blesser I am with, so I don't straight to

the hotel anymore, I normally go to the mall with an Uber and tell the driver to go wait for me at the other entrance while I lose her in the stores. I explained to Sizwe and he hired an actor to look rich and always wait for me at the hotel and we will act as if we are all lovey dovey and he will escort me to Sizwe in another room. Then disappear to another room till we are all done so he can escorts me home like he is indeed my blesser, I have been working extra hard with Sizwe, the more I please him the more money he gives me. I have even started watching professional porn and taking notes and I must say it is all working babes. My phone rings and it is my mother.

Me "hello mama"

Her "oh thato ngwanake, God bless you tlhe, kore you removed the shame from my eyes, you changed my house and turned it into a big house that everyone talks about, kare even my enemies and the ones who were laughing at us when your father left us hungry and broke are starting to smile at me, the job

you have my baby God will bless with promotions baby and please come home to see that your hard work has paid off" I smile and cry

Me "I take it the furnisher arrived"

Her "yes my baby, and it is so beautiful and elegant, thank you Thato"

Me "listen I am going to send you money month end when I get paid, you will go back to get di Avanza

tsago from that mashonisa (loan sharks) and you get back to the scholar transportation business, she

ululates.

Her "that will remove the burden off you I will be able to take care of your siblings" I cry and I can't hold

myself anymore, all the pain of struggling comes back

Me "mama listen I have a meeting I will call you later" I hang up and cry so painfully. I have been in this

city for long my mother struggled to put me through school and I played with that opportunity, I told her

I didn't attend graduation coz I didn't want to put pressure on her with the clothes and all and she

bought it, according to her I graduated 3 years ago and it is only

next year when I am doing my last year in Law. Sizwe has already fixed me a form where I will do my articles and all. I am doing all this so I can make life easy for my mother and siblings and once I am a lawyer I am done with this lifestyle. I am glad that I am done with the house, I have saved enough to keep me going for 2years and by then I am will be ok, so long as they have those taxis she will be able to buy groceries and pay for other expenses.

## SIZA'S TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 74 (not edited)

Lungile Mthethwa

I told the girl to stay in my room, she wanted to go pack the little she had but I told her not to, we couldn't risk her being seen by the others and start asking questions, some of these servants are very loyal to Mthetho so they wouldn't hesitate going to him and telling him that we plan to run. She is



scared I can see it in her eyes, but she has no reason to, she will be safe with me, I can't save them all, but the one I can save will make me feel better, I checked my watch and the time 22:30pm and I know that the king and everyone else is sleeping, just the guards at the gate, but she told me that there is an opening at the back so we will use that one. I go out and scan the outside and I see most lights are off, except for the Kings quarters maybe he is with one of his wives.

Me "Ntombi it is time to go, switch off that light" she nods and takes one of my bags and I take the other then she switches off the light and we go out careful not to make any sounds and alert the guards, we manage to get to the back of the compound and we get out through the opening, and once we got outside we ran into the dark, running towards Jola's house, we get there and luckily the lights were still on, Jola is a single man so the fact that I was here won't be known by someone else but him, we knock and knock until we hear him approach the door and asks who it

is, I answer telling him that it's me. he

opens and we get inside

Him "hao Lungile, you walking around in the night like a thief" I laugh

Me "hello to you too Jola"

Him "what brings you here so late, you know you are in mourning"

Me "I know that but I need help"

Him "and the King couldn't help you kanjani?"

Me "it is a long story I don't have time to explain"

Him "I am listening" I sigh

Me "I need you to drive me to the city this night, It is an emergency, I will pay you"

Him "I know that the King would have transported you, I guess you are running from him, I don't want

to have a problem with him so I can't help you"

Me "R5000" money is the only thing that can win him over

Him "ini just to take you to the city R5000 are you serious Lungile"

Me "as a heart attack please Mthetho"

Him "hai that offer is very good, I can do a lot with the money, when do you want to leave"

Me "right now" he quickly disappears to his bedroom and comes back with his keys, I laugh, money can buy you everything

Him "we can go"

Me "thank you, we will stop at an ATM when we approach town so I can withdraw the cash"

Him "I trust you"

Me "thank you very much" we get out and he closes his door, he puts my bags in the boot and we get

inside and we drive off, the minute I see this car exit this village I will be relived, I look back at Ntombi

and she is looking outside the window lost in her thoughts, I wonder what kind of damage the King has done to this child.

Thato

I think my virgina will explode from all the sex Sizwe and I are having, he called me early in the morning

asking me to meet him at the usual hotel, when I got here, the man was just hungry as hell, I wonder if

his wife is not sleeping with him, today I even agreed to give him anal coz I have a huge request to make

and I am hoping he will grant me my wish, I have already done my research and if I can acquire that I will

be set for a very long time. He comes back from the bathroom with a wet towel and wipes me, then

drops it on the couch and joins me in bed

Him "thank you for coming babe"

Me "at your service dzaddy" he laughs

Him "you are magical woman"

Me "but you called too early, I was still enjoying my beauty sleep"

Him "sorry beautiful, I just had a dream about you doing things to me and it left me horny as hell Thato I

had to have you and to be honest reality is better than the dream" I smile coz I know that will come with

a huge reward

Me "oh well we aim to please"

Him "and pleased I am baby, you are a goddess" I smile

Me "great then, can we order breakfast I am famished"

Him "you are such a foodie, but before you do that, I want to reward you for pleasing me the way you

did, you never cease to amaze me woman, so name anything you want and I will get it for you"

Me "anything?" I say sitting up straight

Him "anything baby, no limits" my goodness I never thought it will be so easy

Me "well I would say an A45 AMG, but I need something lucrative, there is a beauty bar for sale babe, it

is so profitable baby, the nicest thing is that it has a restaurant too, you know me I love beauty and food

mos" he laughs

Him "where is this place baby" he asks business mode

Me "in Sandton baby" he nods

Him "you think you will be able to run a business"

Me "I know I can Nation"

Him "consider it yours then. Just write down the details of that

place so I can get my lawyer to purchase

it for you, I am going to need your documents so it can be in your name, the last thing I need is a beauty

bar and restaurant in my name, Thandiwe will be suspicious" I nod

Me "oh thank you so much Dzaddy. You are just the best really" I kiss him

Him "you deserve it Thato trust me" I am doing the vosho in my head, I am really securing the bag here

Me "what would you like to eat baby"

Him "anything you want. Today it is all about what Thato want"

Me "oh in that case, champagne breakfast it is, and I wouldn't mind R10K nyana" he laughs

Him "oh boy what did I do" he says taking his phone and he is busy on it for a few minutes and a second

later my phone beeps and I take it, it's a notification, R15k in, Sebenza Thato sebenza, I already know

Me "you are awesome babe" I say and he winks at me

Him "order me some woman, I need to get my energy up" I can never say no to giving him sex this men

is making things happen for me.

Me "yes sir" I say taking the phone and calling for room service.

Siza

Hangover is killing me, Uriel and I went in too deep yeses, we ended up taking an Uber coz shame I was

too lit to drive, all I know is Mo is mad at me for drinking like that and end up taking an Uber, he hates

that thing and I understand why, it was the safest thing to do though, but my man prefers that I had

called him to come and get us, but I didn't want to wake him up, even though I got home and he was

still up. I need to thank Kat, the manager at club nation for requesting it for us shame; I just hope my

Bentley is safe. I take my phone and there are missed calls from last night, 10 from Molemo, shit. And a text also from him, I open it

\*Sizakele, I know you are having fun and I don't mind that but does that mean you don't answer your

phone? I am mad at you right now so mad\* I close my eyes, oh

my God. I quickly get out of bed after I

see the time, it is after 11 am. I wear his shorts and vest and head down after brushing my teeth. I find Olivia in the kitchen

Her "and she finally wakes up" I sigh and sit on the high chair facing her

Me "you are making so much noise Olivia geez" she laugh

Her "oh no honey, it's the hangover" I roll my eyes

Me "I need greasy food right now yoh"

Her "lucky for you I knew you will wake feeling like hell after the state you were in last night, so I took it

upon myself and made you something" she walks to the microwave and heats up something and comes

back and hands it to me, oh exactly what I need, it is chips with, worse and braai meat she hands me hor

sources

Me "oh my God you are a total life saver babe thanks" she smiles and goes to the fridge come back with

a dumpie of savanna

Her "and the last ingredient"



Me "oh no I am not drinking again"

Her "honey moleko ontshiwa ka moleko (you need evil to get rid of evil)"

Me "I don't think that is right but okay" I say with a mouthful

Her "you will feel better trust me"

Me "thanks babe, where is Mo" she laughs

Her "oh boy, he is in a sour mood, he has been in his study since he woke up"

Me "he is so mad I know, he even denied me sez last night, time my bean, my cake was pulsating, horny

as hell" she laughs

Her "girl with all those asserts you couldn't make him weak" I stand and take my plate with the savanna

Me "let me go try and put out the fire"

Her "remove the short, so you look sexy man, if that doesn't disarm him just cry that normally does the

trick hey" I laugh

Me "you are right" I place the plate and bottle down and remove the shorts, I am left in my thong and

his vest, I throe the shorts to Olivia, who is laughing at me

Her "good luck"

Me "I am going to need it" I sigh and walk towards his study, I open the door and he is laying on the couch and looking at the ceiling with a glass of scotch in his hands while listen to jazz

Razor

My study door open and she walks in and stops on her tracks, I look at her intense and she is so fucking

sexy right now, I just want to go to her and tear that vast up and remove that thong and just bury myself

inside her, but I am mad at her and I definitely know that she came in here like that so she can

neutralize me, but as much as she is my weakness I refuse to be calmed by her sexiness and innocence,

she didn't answer my calls yesterday and she never does that, she was out and in a space full of vultures,

I was worried about her, then she comes home with a fucking Uber, she knows I fucking hate those

thing, that is why I got her a car, I understand she had 1 too

many to drink but she should have just called me to pick her up. She walks towards me and places her plate on the table; she is even drinking that savanna, this has Olivia written all over it.

Her "hey my love"

Me "Sizakele" I say not looking at her

Her "no Mo it's Soft to you" I want to blush but I hold it in.

Me "what do you want Siza" I look at her and she is looking at me with a sad face.

Her "I am really sorry my love"

Me "for what exactly Sizakele"

Her "for not picking up your calls and taking an Uber home"

Me "I see" he sighs and comes to sit next to me

Me "Sizakele I am mad at you keep your distance" she ignores me

Her "but baby I didn't do that on purpose please sthandwa sam"

Me "I need to go get your car, the one you left at the club" I say standing up and walking to the door.

She starts crying, I look back at her and she is crying like seriously

Her "this is all your fault Mo" I am beyond shocked guys

Me "excuse me?" I say walking back to her

Her "it's your fault baby, how do you sit at home when I am not answering my phone, you were suppose

to drive to the club to check if I was fine" she say's crying harder, I am defeated

Me "bathong Soft are you for real right now"

Her "yes I am, what if something happened to me while you were sitting at home mad at me, what

couldn't have happened then" she say's trying to wipe her tears I don't know when but I find myself

sitting next to her wiping her tears

Me "I am sorry my love" wait why am I apologizing again, I am the one who is mad at her

Her "it's fine I forgive you, but don't ever do that to me again" okay what the hell is going on here, when

did it all change, she is now the one forgiving me, for what exactly

Me "I love you" I am such a pussy right now

Her "I love you too"

Me "okay eat your food I need to go get your car" she starts crying again, Oh Lord help me

Me "what's wrong now Soft"

Her "you want to leave Molemo, last night you refused making love to me and now you want to go, you

are suppose to be the one taking care of my sexual needs, who must sleep with me when you refuse to,

this is not fair baby no" whatever is going on with my woman today is shocking, she is abusive shame. I

don't even know what to say so I just kiss her and she moans instantly, I move my hand to her

underwear and it is already wet Jesus Christ, I get a boner instantly, she quickly removes my t-shirt and

unzips my jeans and pulls them down freeing my erection, she get on top of me and all is gone and forgotten.

Electricity got back at 03:45 and it's gone again. Have a lovely weekend guys, love you all.

SIZA'S TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 75 (not edited)

Lungile Mthethwa

We got to the city in the early hours of the morning, I managed to withdraw Jola's money and he

was happy, he dropped us off at some guesthouse, I decided so because I didn't want him to know

Thandiwe's house address and the directions incase Mthetho finds out that he is the one who gave

Ntombi and I a lift. I couldn't sleep a wink but Ntombi was out of it, it's like this is the first time she

has slept so peacefully, I don't want to think of what that evil man might have done to her, she is so

innocent and beautiful reminds me of my Siza, it has been a while since we spoke, since I am back

here in the city I might as well take time to go see my baby. The time is 10:30 am and I managed to

go get us some breakfast, there is a shopping complex around the corner and they have

MacDonald's so I got us enough food and I also got her a dress and sandals so she can look decent

and some toiletries. She finally wakes up and I look at her smiling

Me "morning baby girl"

Her "morning mam'Lungile"

Me "how did you sleep sisi" she smiles

Her "to tell you the truth ma, I have never had such a peaceful sleep before"

Me "I am glad to hear that, I got you something take that paper bag and go take a shower and come

eat before the food gets cold, you woke up right on time the coffee is still hot" she looks down

Her "what is a shower ma"

Me "come let me show you" she takes the paper bag and we head to the bathroom and I show her

how the shower works and left her to do her business and after a while she comes back looking so

nice, she is a light skinned vision of Sizakele, I smile to myself

Her "mama I want to thank you for saving me from that man, I don't know how I will ever repay you

really”

Me “don’t worry about that nana. Come let’s eat” we sit down and eat our breakfast, even though

her coffee is no longer hot but warm she seems to be enjoying it.

Her “is this where you stay?”

Me “qha sisi, I have a house but I haven’t furnished it as yet, we will be staying with my eldest

daughter for now, maybe a week till I get the furnisher in the new house”

Her “I will be your daughters helper I don’t mind, I will do it for free” I shake my head no

Me “I didn’t save you to come make you a slave, I will find you a paying job and you will take it from there okay?”

Her “okay ma, and my God will bless you for the beautiful heart you have”

Thato



I am laying on my bed on my phone, just looking at instagram, I can't believe that Faith Nketsi has

her own reality show, I mean the girl is South Africa's own vision of Kim Kardashian, she is goals,

securing the bag left, right and centre, she has no time for jokes my darling, my bedroom door burst open and Vicky walks in

Her "babe did you see the news on Faith"

Me "I am looking at it right now"

Her "the girl has caught fire, she is not your typical slay queen who secures champagne and designer

clothes, that girl has direction man, she must just give us tutorials" I laugh

Me "please say that again babe" she laughs and throws herself on my bed, she is looking really nice

Me "where are you coming from looking like a millionaire" she sighs

Her "I was out trying to catch fish but it is so dry out here yoh, please ask your man to hook me up

with one of his rich friends"

Me "I will talk to him" my phone beeps and it's a text from

Sizwe

\*I told you that if you please me I will please you too, go outside your flat right now, I have a deliver

for you\* I smile, I wonder what he has in store for me, I quickly get out of bed

Her "haibo Thato what is h=going on, you get a text and get so excited like this what's up"

Me "it's my mans he says I should go open he has a deliver for me" she stands up and follows me

out, I open the door and a man with a suit is standing outside

Me "hello"

Him "good day ma'am, I am Looking for Miss Thatoyaone Maloka"

Me "this is she" he smiles and hands me a red box

Him "deliver for you" I take it and open and I scream to see what is inside

Her "what did he get you" I run down the stairs to the parking lot and a brand new white A45 AMG

is parked with a red ribbon, I am so excited right now my goodness, I get in and it smells like heaven,

I notice an A4 envelope on the passenger seat addressed to me, I open and find the car's documents

and underneath them it's the change of ownership of the nail bar and restaurant, the previous

owner has signed and it's only my signature needed, oh my God, I fucken own a business now. I have

a bloody Mercedes Benz. I try to call Sizwe but he doesn't answer but sends a text message instead

\*I am in a meeting I can't take calls, I guess you got your gifts, hope you like them, oh by the way you

need to go collect your keys from the nail bar, and to address your staff, be there in an hour, the

previous owner is waiting for you\* I scream and get out of the car and make my way Vicky who is

standing there like a statue with her hand on her mouth, I get there and shake her until she comes back to Life

Her "how the hell did you get that man to buy you a car Thato" I smile

Me "Honey the car is nothing, he bought me the nail bar, the one with a restaurant next door to it in

Sandton" her eyes pop with shock

Her "no way Thato, tell me you are joking please" I laugh and hand her the papers

Her "oh my God you bitch, how did you pull this off"

Me "it was simple really, I just knew my place and made him feel like a man"

Her "I couldn't have been that simple though"

Me "it was really hey babe, I need to go change and go get my keys and address my staff"

Her "can I come with you please" I smile '

Me "why not" I took the quickest shower, and decided to wear my peach suit and a white body suit

with white stripped high heels sandals, I look like the business woman I am about to become honey,

I opt for a short weave and take my hand bag and car keys, man it feels good saying that and then go

to the lounge and find Vicky deep in her thoughts

Me "let's go babe" she doesn't hear me so I shake her a bit and she is back from her thoughts

Her "you look really nice hey" I smile

Me "thank you babe" we walk out and drive to my nail bar we get there and business is booming,

the girls at the nail section are busy, it started as a nail bar but later on became more, they started

doing hair and makeup also selling quality hair, I was a customer here but now I am an owner, I want

to include massages into the portfolio. And definitely expand to other locations man. I get in and go

to the receptionist

Me "hello I am here to see Buhle, please tell her it's Thato"

Her "hi boss, she is expecting you please go through that door over there" I smile and walk there, I

knock and she shouts come in, we get in and we introduce ourselves and she pours us some

champagne and she explains that she sold the business coz she is getting married and her man is

from London and she has to move there immediately. She gave me the contacts of all her suppliers

and she has spoken to them too. She explained how she ran the business and I must say she is a

smart woman yoh. We went to the staff and I had to address them. They were already gathered, I

spoke in front of the customers as well

Me "hello everyone, I am sure you all aware that Buhle has sold this wonderful place and I am

pleased to inform you that I am there new owner, my name is Thato, I used to come here and I loved

everything about it that I had to get it, I want you guys to know that everything will go on as usual,

everyone still has their job and you are still responsible for what Buhle assigned to you, we just

changed ownership not the way things are ran, I hope we will have a great relationship guys, and my

customers thank you and I hope you will still be coming through" the all smile and applaud me, we

moved to the restaurant next door and she introduced me and I told them the very same thing I told

the nail bar/ salon staff. I can't believe this is happening I Thato a whole business owner.

Siza

Things between my baby and I are perfect, he has forgotten how mad he was, I must say crying and

shifting blame works shame, next time I am going out, I am keeping my phone in my hands the

whole time, I can't afford to have him mad at me like that, I almost lost my mind for that little time

he was cold towards me. it is 3 days before Christmas and Olivia and I are at the mall doing some

shopping, mainly for bikinis and cover ups, we will be in Cape Town from the 25th to the 27th his

friend agreed to give him the yacht for that few day and man, am excited or I am excited, he went to

make the proper arrangements with the authorities and whoever. We are now at some Italian restaurant.

Her "so the crying helped huh" I laugh

Me "like magic babe, he started apologising but I could see he was lost as what is happening"

Her "my poor daddy" I laugh

Me "I felt guilty for like a minute but when he gave me that

mind blowing sex”

Her “I don’t know why but I just want to walk in on you too having sex, I want to see how you do it” I

laugh this one is crazy

Me “you are so nasty Olivia, but my mans is a God in that department girl trust me”

Her “I believe you coz I’ve heard you scream and moan and beg him not to stop” I close my eyes

Me “you listen to us” I ask laughing

Her “it was not intentional I was coming to find you and when I got to the door I got the shock”

Me “please knock ne, Mo and I tend to have sex all the time we are alone”

Her “I don’t blame him though, with a body like yours he is probably always horny” I laugh

Me “Olivia, that is your father”

Her “right now he is not, he is your boyfriend and I am discussing boys with my best friend”

Me “okay fair enough” we are disturbed by someone clearing their throat, I look up and it’s Steve,

Mandla and Vusi’s friend



Me "oh hey stranger" I stand up and we hug

Him "long time no see, Siza no man"

Me "I am so sorry just that a lot has been happening" he smiles and nods then looks at Olivia and

their eyes lock for a minute I decide to get into the intense gaze they are giving each other

Me "uhm babe, this is Steve and Steve this is Olivia"

Him "nice to meet you Olivia, you are beautiful"

Her "likewise, and you don't look bad yourself"

Him "would you mind if I joined you guys" I was about to speak when Olivia beat me to it

Her "next time please, we are discussing something right now" I am shocked

Him "oh well in that case let me excuse you ladies"

Her "thank you for understanding"

Him "I will see you around Olivia, and you don't be a stranger okay" I smile

Me "I promise I wont" we hug goodbye and he leaves, I look at Olivia

Me "what was that, why didn't you want him to join us"

Her "the man made my panties wet by just standing there  
Sizakele, what did you think was going to

happen when he was sitting close to me huh" I laugh

Me "you like him?"

Her "did you see that nab, who wouldn't"

Me "any man who is not Molemo Motaung is not a man my eyes  
see" she laughs

Her "that sounds so cheesy" I laugh

Me "oksalayo" I say sipping on my wine and she laughs

Her "so does he have a wife or girlfriend"

Me "last time checked Steve is a man hoe babe"

Her "just how I like them, to avoid him catching feelings and  
shit they are better having a wondering

eye, that will make sure they don't have the time to think of  
how amazing I am and how I will be able

to make cute babies, and I am definitely not about that shit" I  
laugh

Me "you were supposed to be a boy do you know that"

Her "I have had my suspicions for a while now, but to tell you  
the truth I prefer receiving dick than

giving it, plus I love money too much the thought of being a boy  
and having to give girls money nope

thank you”

Me “you need to get your head checked out really” we laugh

Her “let’s not waste money, we would rather buy another bottle  
of wine, plus you are a Dr check

your textbooks and diagnose me” I laugh and people turn to  
look at me

Me “okay I give up on you”

Her “I love you too Soft” I blow her kiss, never a dull moment  
with this girl.

Thandiwe

My mother called and said she is on her way, I thought she had  
to stay in the village till she is

cleansed, now I am wondering how those elders allowed her to  
leave the village for the city in those

clothes really. I hear the open and she walks in with one of the  
maids from the palace, she comes to me and we hug

Me "hi mama" she sighs

Ma "Thandiwe baby, unjani"

Me "I am very well thanks wena"

Ma "I am defeated shame mntanam" I narrow my eyes

Me "let's go sit down"

Ma "oh you remember Ntombi from the palace right" I look at her

Me "yes I do, welcome sisi"

Her "thank you sis'Thandiwe, you have a beautiful house"

Me "thank you"

Ma "where is your helper so she can show Ntombi to my room"

I shout for the helper she comes in

and I ask her to show Ntombi the bedroom so she can place the bags, they both disappear upstairs

and my mother and I move to the lounge

Me "what's going on mama"

Me "the King wants to take over your fathers responsibility"

Me "ukungenela?" she nods

Ma "just imagine, I had to run in the middle of the night and asked Jola to accompany me here"

Me "you did good mama, that man is crazy if he thinks you will be one of his many wives, kodwa

why did you come with that girl"

Ma "I had to save her, Mthetho has been abusing her" I sigh

Me "why am I even surprised, birds of the the same fathers flock together after all"

Ma "I just need you to accommodate us till my house is fully furnished" I sigh

Me "not to sound rude and insensitive mama, but that will have to be soon please"

Ma "why has your husband started complaining" I sigh and shake my head no

Me "no mama, if it was only you I wouldn't have a problem but that girl"

Ma "haiibo Thandiwe, Ntombi is a good girl sisi" I sigh

Me "I don't doubt that mama, but my husband ma, he has a wondering eye, I can't keep temptation

in my house" she looks at me like I am crazy

Ma "so this is the kind of marriage you want to be in"

Me "mama please not this again"

Ma "you don't trust your husband near any woman, do you think this is healthy Thandiwe" yoh I

started another topic here God

Me "you don't understand"

Ma "you are right, I don't understand how a young, beautiful woman like you is subjecting herself to

such a toxic marriage, the person who made you stay in this shame of a marriage is no more

Thandiwe so tell me now, what is your excuse ke" I sigh

Me "I love him mama and he is really trying to be a better father and husband"

Ma "I won't force you to leave your husband, but I pray you open your eyes before it is too late"

Me "please don't talk like this"

Ma "I will take Ntombi now and head to town, to get beds and some necessary appliances for the

time being then tomorrow we will go furnisher shop properly, I don't want to make you

uncomfortable in your house my baby" I felt bad instantly

Me "mama no, stay the week you asked for please"

Ma "no my love it's okay, it's still early we will find beds and get them delivered to Alberton today"

she stands up and goes upstairs and she comes back with Ntombi and their bags

Me "mama please don't go please"

Ma "I will get my other clothes tomorrow, kiss my gran babies for me. I love you my baby" with that

said they walk out. And I am left feeling like a shitty person. Oh Sizwe what have you turned me into.

Felicity Fefe Wekwa Vimbe this one is for you babe. To everyone who love and supports my work

thank you very much guys, it really means a lot to me. I am going to start an assignment for

someone and once I am done I will type a bonus insert for t=you all as a token of my appreciation

SIZA'S TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 76 (not edited)

Thato

I decided to take Vicky out to celebrate this good news, she seemed sour but I wanted to celebrate

any way and she was the only one available, Buhle gave me the password to the businesses

instagram account and the first thing I did was to upload a picture of me and Buhle and told the

public that I am the new owner, and ever since that I have been receiving calls left right and centre,

everyone wants to be my friend now, I don't have time to be entertaining these two faced bitches,

we get to the restaurant and I order two bottles of champagne and order food and all. Vicky's mood

is still not on a 100 so I decide to find out what is eating her.

Me "babe are you okay?" she smiles

Her "I am cool hey, I am just wondering" I frown

Me "about?"

Her "I thought we were friends Thato but you didn't even tell



me that this guy is planning on buying  
you a while business" I sigh

Me "that's because I didn't think he would really buy it, I mean I  
told the man yesterday that I

wanted a car and that business and he made it happen today so  
when did I get the chance to tell

you" her eyes pop out shocked

Her "you mean to tell me that the man got you that place in  
less than 24 hours, what exactly does

this guy do for a living"

Me "he has his hands in a lot of pies hey" she rolls her eyes and  
quickly composes herself

Her "I once asked you to hook me up with one on his friends  
and you never got back to me"

Me "bathong Vicky, today is about me, you are my friend you  
should be celebrating this with me,

happy for me not telling me to hook you up at least not today  
hao" she sighs

Her "I am sorry babe, it's just that it is frustrating, my life has  
been stuck for a while now, not that I

am not happy for you this whole thing just made me realise that

I haven't amounted to anything"

Me "I understand" I say because I know she is dying of jealousy and from this reaction I need to

watch my back from Vicky, in fact I need to find her a person to share the flat with her so I can move

out, maybe buy myself a small house and take it from there

Her "askies chommie, today is about you and I will leave my sorrows for another day"

Me "thank you I guess"

Her "I am sorry man lighten up hle, we came here to celebrate, buy some shooters"

Me "I don't want to drink too much I am driving but we will buy some and go have a part at home"

Siza

I was in the kitchen preparing dinner, Olivia went to the apartment she said she misses her bed, but

that is just a lie to get Molemo to relax, she actually went to see that booty call of hers, she said she

has so much salt she needs to release so she drove to go get some, so tonight it's just me and my man. I am making beef stew and steamed bread, Mo's favourite, I made so much food coz I know he will have it tomorrow for breakfast, lunch and lunch again and still hope to have some for supper again that is how much he loves it. He walks in the kitchen with his phone in his hands, the man is bare foot and shirtless with those sexy ripped jeans, I can never get used to my face on his chest, he comes to my side and kisses me.

Him "it smells great in here" I smile

Me "your favourite" I respond

Him "my excitement love, I hope you made enough to last me till tomorrow" I laugh, what did I say

Me "of course I did" he walks around and sits on the high chair

Him "oh and by the way I was on the phone with Gadafi, he is coming over for dinner, he heard you

were cooking stew and dombolo, I am so mad at myself for telling him eish" I laugh

Me "there is more than enough my love don't worry"

Him "I am happy to hear that Soft, anything to drink baby"

Me "can I have a glass of cold Merlot " he smiles

Him "I was thinking of having one myself" he walks to the fridge and comes back with it and then

take two glasses and pours for us after rinsing them, I take a sip and it is just perfect

Me "thank you love"

Him "so did you get what you wanted for Cape Town"

Me "I did baby, I will show you later and I got a little something for you too" he smiles

Him "I thought you already went shopping for me babe"

Me "I did but I got something for your pleasure" he bites his lower lip

Him "let me guess, it's lacy and sexy" I laugh

Me "how did you know" he smirks

Him "my love I know your facial expressions"

Me "I hate that you know me so well" he smiles

Him "you are mine Soft and every gentleman in love knows their lady better than anything" I blush

Me "I love you so much" the doorbell rings and I bet It's Gadafi  
that is such a foodie

Lungile Mthethwa

I went to every store but they couldn't deliver today and I didn't  
feel like sleeping at these guest

houses, I am well aware of what they are mainly used for. I also  
didn't want to go back to Thandiwe,

she made her concerns known and I am not about to go against  
her wishes, I will pray that God gives

her the wisdom and the strength, to see what this marriage is  
doing to her so she can find the

courage to leave. I went to Sizakele's apartment and they said  
she and Olivia haven't been to their

place a days and I knew exactly where to find her, I just need her  
to borrow us her flat for a week

then we will move to my new house. The taxi drops us off at  
Motaung's house. The security allows

us in coz he could recognize me from before. Ntombi has been  
fascinated by this city the whole day

and it'd nice seeing her at so much ease. I knock and Motaung comes to open after a minute

Him "Lungile what a nice surprise" I smile

Me "how are you"

Him "I am very well thanks what about you"

Me "I am fine great, is my daughter in"

Him "yes she is, where are my manners please come in" he say's and helps with the bags

Me "Thank you" he nods and we follow him to the lounge and Sizakele is siting with Gadafi, they are

laughing, she stands as she sees me and comes to me and give me a warm hug

Me "I missed you too my baby, Gadafi unjani" I say still hugging her

Gadafi "I am well thank you Lungile, how about you"

Me "I am fine thanks"

Siza "mama where are you coming from this late" I didn't want to get into it yet I will explain later

Me "the village baby, I came with Ntombi"

Siza "oh okay, nice to meet you Ntombi, please have a sit I will go prepare something to eat"

Me "no need my baby we have already ate"

Siza "okay Sthandwa sam"

Me "I actually came to ask if you will let us sleep in your bedroom back at the apartment for a week I

need to get furnisher for the new house"

Him "you want to share that small room" Siza rolls her eyes

Siza "babe I told you to stop saying that, is spacious enough Mo" he laughs

Him "I am just kidding my love, Lungile we have plenty of room here we can accommodate you for a few days"

Siza "yes stay with us a week" I smile

Me "thank you Motaung" they smile at me and I look at Gadafi whose eyes are fixed on Ntombi, I

laugh.

Me "Gadafi thank you once again for helping, you too Motaung"

Gadafi "don't mention it. So who is this again" he asks still looking at Ntombi

Me "oh this is Ntombi, she is from the village and she will be

with me, I need to help her find a job”

Gadafi “what kind of job are you looking for Ntombi” I suppress my laugh, he is taken by her, what is

it with these old man with young woman, they don’t want to get old shame

Ntombi “I was a maid at the palace in our village, I do everything, cooking, cleaning, laundry”

Gadafi “is that so, you know I am in need of someone to help me around my house, I stay alone and

you can just tell how unkempt my house is plus I live on takeaways. I will really use your help”

Him “brother what happened to the lady that works for you” I laugh this time, can’t they see.

Gadafi “oh I forgot to tell you she resigned last week, said she is tired, you know old age” Razor

narrowed his eyes and Siza looks at me and we laugh

Him “what is funny Soft”

Siza “oh nothing baby” she says and sips on her drink

Gadafi “so Ntombi are you interested” she looks at me

Me “it is up to you sisi, I trust this man, if you want it take it



Gadafi "I will pay you very well"

Ntombi "Thank you bhuti, I will take the job thank you"

Me "please show us where to sleep we are so tired"

Siza "okay mama, baby please help carry their bags up stairs"

Gadafi "no it's okay I will help you" he says getting off his chair quickly and taking our bags, I have

never seen an old man acting like a fool. He doesn't even look like the man that tortured Madoda, it's

true when they say a man's weakness is a woman, just look at him

Me "Motaung, goodnight and Thank you for accommodating us"

Him "it is my pleasure Lungi and Goodnight" we walk upstairs and my daughter shows me where I

will sleep and then Gadafi gets my bag in, I say goodnight and they go show Ntombi who is

mesmerizing Gadafi without even noticing, I trust Gadafi yes but Ntombi has been through a lot she

needs to heal from all that Mthetho did to her, and once she has found herself, I wouldn't mind her

leaving her life and sharing it with someone. I brought her here

so she is my responsibility.

Uriel

Vusi borrowed me his car to go to work with since I knock off late this week and I am grateful for

that, even though I hate driving. The hours are longer because the emergency room is always filled

up with patients, this is a season where I hate being a nurse really, plus some of these people can be

rude God, but I always remind myself that I love my job. I am driving home and I swear this car is

following me, I bet you it is the same car that has been following me all week especially when I drive

home after my shift, I start to panic but quickly compose myself, I step on the gas and it moves

forward and I see the car speed too, okay now I am scared, I decide to off ramp coz I see that the

oncoming car will cut the car following me, that worked and I drove like a maniac till I get to the

house, I practically run out of the car to the house leaving

everything in there.

Me "baby, Vusi" I shout, he isn't in the lounge but he quickly appears from our bedroom

Him "hey baby, what is going on love" he say's holding me

Me "someone is following me I swear, I stepped on the gas and they did the same, I wasn't aware

until today, but I know it has been following me from the beginning of the week"

Him "shhh baby calm down, you are safe, come sit" we head to the lounge and he disappears and

comes back with a bottle of water, I drink it

Him "did you maybe see who is following you?"

Me "it's a white woman, and maybe that is why I avoided it since it started but today I just had a

feeling love. She is driving a red Toyota tazz"

Him "I will get to the bottom of this baby, I promise. From now on, I will drive you to and from work

until I know who was following you and what they want okay" I nod

Me "okay my love thank you" he hugs me and I feel safe

Me "my things are in the car love"

Him "okay baby. I will go get them stay put I am coming"

Me "let me start on the pots"

Him "nope we will order something on Mr D foods" I smile and he walks out to get my handbag and

other things. Who could this person be, I have no business with a white woman.

Sorry for posting so late, I finished the assignment at around 10 pm, please accept this, see you again

later, love you all I am going to get my beauty sleep now

SIZA'S TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 77 (not edited)

Siza

I woke up really early and went to take a quick shower and head downstairs to make breakfast for

everyone, I am really excited to have my mother here with us, I just want to spoil her, I prepare your

full farm house breakfast and brew some coffee and poured some juice in the jug, I started

preparing the dining table, Molemo and I never use it coz it's always us two, so we normally eat in

the kitchen or the garden. I finish and decide to mop the floor while waiting for the others. I finish and my mother walks in.

Ma "morning baby, I see you made breakfast"

Me "morning my darling, I wanted to make something nice for you and Ntombi" she smiles

Ma "you have always had the purest of hearts, I appreciate this and thank you for having us"

Me "it is just a pleasure mama, so how did they allow you to leave the village while in mourning"

Ma "they didn't, I ran away" I laugh and stop immediately as I see she is serious

Me "haibo mama why would you run away kodwa"

Ma "the King wanted to take over for your father and take me as his wife, I found out that he is as

sick as your father, he has been abusing Ntombi, so I took her and we ran” I couldn’t believe my ears

Me “oh my God mama, so how is Ntombi, is he coping” she smiles

Ma “the minute I took her out of that village she was relieved, she is far from healing completely but

a change of environment will do her good” I smile and she walks

Ntombi “Good morning”

Ma “morning sisi”

Me “hey Ntombi, how did you sleep”

Ntombi “ever since I got to this city I have been sleeping like a baby really” I smile

Me “that is good really, mama please take Ntombi to the dining table and serve yourselves I will go wake up Mo”

Ma “okay baby thank you”

Ntombi “Siza, I just want to say thank you for allowing me to stay in your house” I smile

Ma “you are welcome honey, please feel at home okay” she nods and I head upstairs, he is in the shower so I decide to remove all my clothes and go join him for a quickie since we didn’t have our morning glory.

Gadafi

I tossed and turned the whole night, I couldn't get her off my mind, I needed to see her again, I don't

know what this but I am loving it, I literally checked my phone every nanosecond to see if it is not

morning as yet. I don't know when I dozed off coz I woke up an hour ago, and it was already 8am,

you didn't see me run to the bathroom to take a quick shower so I get head to Razor's place, she said

she accepts the job so I will use this as an excuse to see her again, I will just say I am there to pick her

up so she can see my place. I finish and go get my car keys and then I make my way to my brother's

place. I get there and greet the security guard, park in the drive way and get out and head to the

house, I get in and I can hear chatter in the dining area, I get in there and my eyes land on her, she is

siting with a beautiful wide smile on her face, they are listening to something Lungile is telling them,

she is so simple yet so perfect, by merely looking at her I just want to protect her and stay with her,

just the two of us, away from the world and anything else, I am brought back to my thoughts by Razor calling my name .

Him "G brother, don't just stand come grab a bite" I smile

Me "hey good morning everyone, smells nice in here" I say and they greet back, I grab a chair next

to Ntombi.

Him "what brings you here so early brother"

Me "I actually thought I should come pick up Ntombi so she can see my house"

Lungi "haibo so early, are you sure that it is the only reason" I choke on my juice and cough and she

is Sizakele laugh, I swear they can see right through me

Me "of course it is the only reason come on guys"

Siza "if you say so" I continue eating while stealing glances at the beauty next to me

Him "so baby I was gonna ask if your mom and Ntombi will join us for Christmas"



Lungi "what is going on Christmas day, having a family gathering?"

Siza "we are heading to Cape Town spending Christmas on a yacht mama, it's going to be so much

fun, I will take you guys to the mall later so we can buy all you will need for the trip" sounds interesting

Me "do you think you will have room for one more person"

Him "brother I thought you spending Christmas with your sister and her children"

Me "no brother not anymore"

Siza "for you there is space there is no way you are spending Christmas alone" I smile and become

excited, the thought of being with her for a few days uninterrupted, maybe I will get a chance to get

to know her better, she is someone I wouldn't mind celebrating these stupid holidays for, I would

even go to church if she told me to. Razor is going to have a field day the minute I tell him

Olivia

I honestly can't wait to go spend some time in Cape Town, I haven't been excited about Christmas in my life, and Siza's plans is just too perfect to not get excited, she is such a blessing, introducing us to these things, we would spend Christmas with either Fiona or dad's relatives and I will always be alone in the car, but this time I want to celebrate it so bad. I decided to go to the mall to get everyone Christmas presents, I have from shop to shop wondering what to get these, I mean my father has everything so what do I really get him for Christmas, I pass a shop that frames photos and an idea hits me, I go in and enquire and luckily they can do what I want, we do the necessities and I make a payment and I am told to come back tomorrow to collect, I hope he likes it. I get to Luis Vuitton, I find something for Siza leg, and I suck at buying gifts my God. I decide to grab some lunch. I chose to go eat at Rocomamas, I get there and it's table for one. They give me their exam to write, and I start custom making my burger, it has been a minute since

I had something messy. A voice startles me

Him "I thought that was you" I look up and it is Steve

Me "do you want to give me a heart attack"

Him "forgive me please, I didn't mean to"

Me "its okay just don't do it again" he smiles

Him "can I please join you, say yes this time" this man looks nice,  
I hate light skinned guys but this

one man noooooooooo

Me "it is a free country you know" he sighs

Him "I will feel like a nuisance if I sit without your permission" I  
laugh and roll my eyes

Me "oh please sit down with me Steve, and have lunch with me  
if you have the time, I would love

you company" he laughs at my sarcasm

Him "I love to Olivia thanks" we call the waitress to bring him  
the exam too he starts filling it in and

funny we almost have the same order I smile to myself, at the  
box where you write your name he

writes Olivia's Boo with a smirk on his face I laugh

Me "you are so forward my God"

Him "well Olivia a guy is allowed to dream"

Me "and dream you shall continue" he laughs

Him "what brings you here having lunch alone"

Me "I just came to get Christmas presents for my father and Siza"

Him "oh that is nice, where are you spending it"

Me "we are heading to Cape Town, spending it in the open sea on a yacht"

Him "oh boy take me with, I could really do with that kind of scenery"

Me "nah fam, you just going to cramp our style" he laughs, and our order comes and we eat while

talking trash, he has really nice sense of humour and smart too

Me "I am glad you not just a pretty face hey" he laughs and places his hand over his chest

Him "I am hurt hey, why would you say that" he says with a smirk on his face

Me "you know light skinned guys tend to live up to their complexion"

Him "Olivia you are so mean" I laugh and his phone beeps and he frowns

Him "eish I have to run, I had a great time"

Me "I surprisingly had a good laugh too"

Him "if that's the case, can I please have your number so we can hang when you get back from Cape" I frown and he gives me puppy eyes and immediately wins me over, I take his phone and punch in my number. He saves them and we say our goodbyes and he leaves. I had a great time with this fool really.

Vicky

Me "this is her photo, have you seen her here before" she takes my phone and examines Thato's picture

Her "yes I have, she is here almost every day of the week" I decided to investigate on who Thato is

sleeping with and luckily I found this girl who works at the hotel, she looks naïve, i offered her

money to answer a few questions

Me "who is she with?" she looks around obviously scared to be caught with me around the corners

Her "I will really get in trouble for sharing customers information" I roll my eyes

Me "I am not going to hurt them. Just tell me please, Imagine what you will do with this R2000" she

looks at the money in my hand

Her "I don't know his name but all I can tell you is that he looks rich and the staff and manager here

respect him so much, they always use the presidential suit"

Me "if you get me the name or better a picture of him or them together I will pay you more than

here I promise, just get me the identity of this guy"

Her "I will try but it is going to be hard, I am not allowed anywhere near that suit" I sigh

Me "come on girl, I am sure you can figure out something, you look smart man" I give her the

money and she shoves it inside her bra. I take her phone and put my number

Me "I saved my number there as Vicky call me soon as you have something" she nods and leaves

Vusi

I decided to go to the hospital two hours before she knocks off,  
I want to see if that red Tazz will still

be here today. I gave Uriel the keys and ask her to go to the car  
like she normally does, she has to act

normal, and I will be out scouting for that car with a white  
woman. I just wonder who wants to hurt

Uriel, I mean my baby is the sweetest thing ever, the only  
person who would want to hurt he is

Mercy but she is not white, okay she is mixed but Uriel said  
white. I am standing in the parking lot

but I am not visible to the others, it is 10 minutes before she  
knocks off, I see the red tazz approach

and I take the registration in case it drives away before I  
confront the person, the car parks and I see

my woman walk to the car, I call her once she is in.

Her "baby where are you, there car is back"

Me "I am watching it love, I am here don't worry, I want you to listen"

Her "okay baby" she says sounding scared

Me "I want you to be so quick and block that car in so I can hurry to it and confront that woman"

Her "what if she has a gun my love"

Me "I will handle it please do it now baby" she hangs up and I see the car lights on, she drives

quickly and blocks the tazz in, I run so fast and manage to open the driver door and pull out that

white woman and pin her to the car

Me "who the fuck are you, and why are you following my woman" she laughs

Her "you have balls after all" she laughs again. I bang her on the car

Me "answer me you freak"

Her "you thought you and you little bitch will hurt my daughter and live happily"

Me "who the fuck is your daughter you psycho" I can never be Mercy's mother she died

Her "Mercy is hurting because of you and your hoe here and



you will pay for that boikie” I am  
shocked

Me “liar, Mercy’s mother dies” she laughs and I suddenly see the  
resemblance.

Her “just know that you will pay” I let go of her

Me “stay the fuck away from Uriel or I swear I will kill you and  
that brat of yours” I turn and my baby

is outside watching, at least she heard I won’t have to explain, I  
take her and lead her to the

passenger side help her in and buckle her seatbelt, then go to  
my side. I start the engine but before I  
drive I take her hand and kiss it.

Me “I love you so much, and I will not let anyone hurt you okay”  
she nods and I sigh then drive off. I

need to have a word with Mercy.

SIZA’S TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 78 (not edited)

Mercy

My life is a routine now, every day I wake up, take a bath eat  
drink and stay in the cinema all day  
hosting a pity party for myself with a bottle of either vodka or  
tequila, I am just glad that my father  
hasn't cut me off financially or else I will be suffering so much, I  
live in fear waiting for my card to  
decline coz the month he gave me to choose between school  
and starting a business has past, what  
will become of me, I have no one absolutely no one and I don't  
blame them, I did this all to myself,  
my father and my sister want nothing to do with me, I just wish  
daddy could realise that I am his  
baby and he shouldn't force me to be what he wants but to  
accept me the way I am. My doorbell  
goes off and I drag myself to go and open, to my surprise is  
Vusi, I never expected to see him here. I  
look like a hobo I am even drunk and it is not yet midday. I try  
to fix myself but there is no hope

Me "hey baby what brings you here" he looks at me and I see  
the rage on his face disappear, he is looking at me with pity

Me "don't please don't pity me" he sighs

Him "I know I am to blame, and I am really sorry Mercy"

Me "if you are sorry, come back home, let us start all over again" I say pleading

Him "I can't Mercy, I am sorry for hurting you like this I really am, but I love her" the pain

Me "I just want to know something" I say with tears

Him "anything I will answer truthfully" I wipe my tears

Me "come in please" e shakes his head

Him "I can't really I just need to" I cut him

Me "did you really care for me? Did you even love me?" he closes his eyes

Him "I am so sorry really but I don't think it was ever love for me, maybe the transition and being

introduced to the higher lifestyle. Thank you for that and I am sorry for ever hurting you like this" I

wipe my tears feeling so much pain.

Me "I see, so what brings you here" his face goes back to being serious

Him "I know I hurt you and I am really sorry but what I will not

have is you and your mother plotting,  
tell her to stop following my woman around, if you want  
someone to blame for all of this, blame me  
I am the one who hurt you, I played the both of you against  
each other and that was wrong and  
childish I am sorry but please do me a favour and leave Uriel  
alone” with that said he walked away  
and I closed my door confused, Fiona is following that bitch  
what for, my mother still cares she must  
have heard of what Vusi did to me, did I maybe judge her  
harshly for what happened, as it stands  
she is the only one who cares about me really. I walk upstairs to  
take a shower.

Fiona

My plan finally worked out, I got that stupid boy to confront me  
so I would tell him I am Mercy’s  
mother, I just hope that he has gone to tell Mercy to ask me to  
back off, I pray that it all works out,  
my plan was to get Vusi to see me and run to tell Mercy and she

will in turn realise that I love her

and she will accept me back in her life, and once that happens my plan will be back in motion. She is

the only that can help me destroy Razor, I am tired of living in poverty, eating the same thing week

in week out, I am grateful to Keke for taking care of me but I have had enough I won't lie. She is at

work so I am watching something on SABC 1 we can't even afford a mere DSTV. There is a knock on

the door and I roll my eyes, I just hope that it is not these drug addicts confusing our flat with that of

their dealer. I get off the couch and go open and I am shocked to see her here, I didn't think this plan will work so fast.

Me "Mookie" she lets out a tear

Her "mommy" she say's and I am smiling inside

Me "come in my baby" I say taking her hand leading her to the lounge

Me "How did you find me baby. This place is dangerous"

Her "you once mentioned it to me I just had to navigate my way. Vusi came to see me mama, why

did you do that" I sigh

Me "he hurt you baby and I couldn't just sit back and watch, even when you don't want me in your

life I will fight for you it is my job as a mother Mookie"

Her "I am sorry mommy I shouldn't have treated you like that"

Me "it's okay I totally understand, how is your sister?" she sighs

Her "I don't know dad won't let me anywhere near her, they both don't want anything to do with

me. I have no one mama no one" she say's and I hold her

Me "you have me baby don't worry and they will come around I promise" it will be so easy poisoning

her against Razor I just pray he continues being cold towards her/

Her "thank you mommy, this place doesn't look or feel safe, I am not comfortable leaving you here,

come leave with me, I have a huge house" right now the joy in my heart God.

Me "Are you sure nana, take a few days to think about this"

Her "I am sure, I need you with me" I smile and nod and the door opens and Keke walks in with a

plastic from Usave.

Me "K come meet my daughter Mercy" I say smiling down at her and Keke comes to the lounge

Keke "oh hi Mercy, it is really nice to see you"

Her "likewise, my mother has told me a lot about you it is good to finally meet you really"

Me "Mercy asked me to move in with her and I agreed"

Keke "oh that is, when are you leaving" she asks disapproving

Her " I am taking her now aunty Keke, you are welcome to visit anytime" she gives Mercy a weak

smile

Keke "thank you. Fiona come let me go help you park" I know that is not what she wants to do, we

walk to my room and she shuts the door

Me "what now" I say and sit on the bed

Keke "are you really going to use your own daughter to get to her father Fiona what kind of mother

are you huh" she shout and I quickly stand and place my hand on her mouth

Me "can you keep it down God" she shakes her head

Keke "this will backfire Fiona and you will regret ever trying to cross that man mark my words"

Me "I have the perfect plan and it will work out perfectly, you just wait and see" she laughs and

exits my bedroom I take my large bag and pack everything, it is not much anyway so I am done in a

blink of an eye. I walk back to Mercy

Her "ready to go home?" I smile

Me "yes my baby we can leave" she takes her bag on the table and we exit, Kele is outside smoking I

stop in front of her

Me "thank you for all you have done for me, you will always be welcomed at her house, you will

forever be a sister to me, I love K" I say and hand her the keys and she looks at Mercy

Keke "Mercy take care of yourself and remember that not everything is black and white be vigilant"

I gave her a nasty look

Me "baby let's go, K I will call you later" she doesn't respond and we walk to the car and get in

Her "she doesn't seem happy" I sigh



Me "she is just sad that I am leaving" she nods

Her "she will come around don't worry"

Me "I hope so but I am just glad we are okay now"

Her "me too Mookie" she smiles and drives us to the expensive suburb where I will pick up the pieces of what used to be my life.

Gadafi

I managed to take Ntombi to see the house it will give me a chance really get to know her a little, she

was quite the whole time to my house and I don't want to be too pushy, I guess she is naturally shy,

but once she is mine I will kick out all that shyness out the window. We get to the house and I go

open her door and unbuckle her sit belt, she gets out and looks around, probably admiring the house.

Me "this way" she looks at me and smiles then she follows me, I open and we walk in.

Me "forgive me this place is a mess" I am embarrassed now

Her "it is nothing I cannot fix bhuti" eish okay this bhuti thing is crowding me really. I show her the whole house

Me "so I am going to need you in 5 days a week and some weekends, cleaning cooking and the works, as you can see this place needs a woman's touch" she laughs

Her "I can see that, but if I may ask why are you not married"

Me "I just recently met my future wife and she doesn't know it yet" I say

Her "what about children do you have any?" I sigh

Me "that is the first thing I am giving her after she agrees to be mine, but for now, no wife no kids"

Her "okay bhuti, let me start with the cleaning"

Me "wait, at least tell me a bit about yourself" she shrugs her shoulders

Her "there is really not much to tell really but I am from the same village as mam'Lungile, I worked at the palace after I finished my matric, my aunt got me the job coz she was tired of taking care of me, my parent's died when I was young"

Me "what did you ever dream of becoming when you were growing up" she smiles

Her "I am a very great cook, all I ever wanted was to be a chef and own my own catering company"

Me "is that so, I am glad to hear that, I will stop going to my brothers place for Siza's food"

Her "are you two really brothers?" I smile

Me "not by blood but we have known each other since we were teens"

Her "oh that is nice"

Me "yeah we have been through a lot. Let me leave you to go and work" she nods and leaves, and I

decide to go to my study and I find myself Goodling culinary schools. Oh what is this woman doing to

me, she is not even trying to drive me insane it is just happening involuntarily

Siza

Since Ntombi left with Gadafi my mother decided to go and see Thandiwe, I am left with my mans,

and we decided to cool down in the pool, the heat is too much, I swear this is hell and they forgot to inform us because wow. This man can't believe that I can swim so well, I think he forgot that I am from the village, we learned how to swim in our streams and later progressed to the river, we pro's in this I tell you. He calls me a mermaid because of that. Tomorrow we are flying to Cape, it will be my first time flying and I getting on a boat I am super excited really, Molemo should start traveling man, what excites me is Gadafi I have never seen this side of him, I laugh and that catches Molemo's attention

Him "share the joke Soft" I smile

Me "I am thinking of Gadafi" I say laughing

Him "what about him my love" I get out of the pool and go sit on top of him

Me "don't tell me you haven't noticed babe" he raises an eyebrow and I roll my eyes

Him "come on tell your person hao"

Me "Gadafi seems to be taken by Ntombi, the way he looks at

her he is totally smitten”

Him “are you sure about that Soft” he asks with a smile

Me “I am very sure, even my mother noticed it, you are so slow”  
he laughs

Him “oh this will be a bliss to witness, Grumpy Gadafi falling in  
love, he swore that he will never ever  
fall in love and become Soft”

Me “you out of all people should know that love just creeps in, it  
doesn’t even knock to let you know  
it is about to come it”

Him “that is true my love really true” he kisses my forehead

Me “I just hope she falls for him too he deserves to have  
someone too”

Him “me too baby, life is much better when shared with the one  
you love” I blush

Me “I couldn’t have said it better” I kiss him fully on the lips

Him “but I am still going to rub it in his face, I am so going to  
enjoy seeing him blush and melt” he  
laughs and I smack his shoulder

Me “just help him become a gentlemen you know he is rough

around the edges” he laughs

Him “I will definitely try baby, I want to see him happy too”

Me “good now let’s go and pack” he carries me bridal style to our bedroom so we can prepare for

tomorrow, it is Christmas day we are going to have so much fun.

## SIZA’S TRIBULATIONS

### Chapter 79 (not edited)

#### Razor

The Viano is ready and parked outside but the woman are nowhere near finishing, Olivia has been

packing and unpacking since she woke up, I don’t know why coz they went shopping for this trip she

must just have shoved everything in there. I don’t even want to talk about Soft she has been

changing outfits for an hour now then she gets frustrated and say she doesn’t have clothes, that

time she took most of my closet my clothes are now cramped in one spot because of hers. Luckily

Lungile and Ntombi are done but because we are waiting for the other two snails she decided to

help braid Ntombi's hair so long. Gadafi arrives and I open the garage so he can park his car because we are all using the Viano.

G "brother howzit man"

Me "all G my man, your side"

G "all is well, look at you looking like a responsible family man" I laugh

Me "Soft is the one who is dressing me for this trip man"

G "your woman has taste brother, I need those sneakers"

Me "will get them for you in Cape consider them a Christmas present" we laugh

G "where is Ntombi" I laugh

Me "so it is true" I say punching his shoulder not hard though

G "what is man" he says with a smirk

Me "you are falling for he aren't you" he blushes and I just burst out laughing

G "man she is just so perfect"

Me "what happened to never falling in love" he smiles

G "shit just creped in uninvited man, I couldn't even block it down, hell I don't even want to brother,  
no woman has shaken me like this girl is doing"

Me "love is beautiful you will see"

G "I just pray she reciprocates this feeling man"

Me "make her fall in love with you, make her see you, like I did with Siza"

G "you are going to have to coach me man I don't know anything about being romantic, you know I

just grab and smash then move on to the next"

Me "I got you" the woman appear finally and we load their bags and we lock and leave the house

Siza

After two hours of flying from Joburg to Cape my excitement increased like hell, I just couldn't

contain it and it is good to see everyone else excited to, it is visible on their faces, I could feel the

happiness and contentment in the air too. We got another



Viano waiting for us at the airport and

Molemo drove us to the yacht is, we driving through Cape Town and God this place is perfect, I

wouldn't mind living here with my baby, I look at his and his eyes are fixed on the road, how did I

become so lucky. We get to V&A waterfront basin where the boat is waiting, oh I am just melting.

We wait by the car while Mo and his brother go and talk to whoever then they come back and take

our bags on deck and we follow with light bags.

Liv "oh my God look at that baby" she says looking at the yacht and God it is so beautiful I want to

cry right now, everything is just so perfect. Olivia couldn't even wait she started snapping pictures of

us and everybody else, I know they are going straight to instagram.

Mo "Liv please take a picture of Soft and I" he says handing her the phone and he quickly scoops me

up and I laugh while Oliver takes million random pictures. We get done and we all get on board.

Everything I wrote on the list is here, all the food, the alcohol the board games everything. There are only 3 beds in this yacht so I am not entirely sure of the sleeping arrangements. We decide to go to the mini lounge that has round couch that sits about 10 people. There is a flat screen and a surround system.

Liv "I see there are only three bedrooms here, how are going to sleep"

Ma "Ntombi and I can share, then Olivia and Sizakele can also share then the last one your father

and Gadafi can also share it" Molemo chokes and starts coughing, I know he aint about the not

sharing with me bed, I supress my laugh

G "I am not sharing a bed with this fool" we all laugh

Mo "I am not sleeping with you either, you snore" I roll my eyes and they just continue bickering

Ma "okay Gadafi what do you propose we do" she says smiling

G "you can share with Ntombi, Razor shares with Siza and Liv takes the other room, I will just put my

bags in there and I will crash on the couch, it looks comfortable"

Mo "I totally agree" he says quickly

Me "oh God babe stop it" Gadafi laughs

Mo "sorry babe, brother let's go talk to the captain" Gadafi stands and they walk out

Me "now that all is settled we can start cooking lunch"

Ntombi "can I please help you Siza" she says sounding excited

Me "I will love that very much" she stands up flashing that beautiful smile, we head to the kitchen

and I explain what we will be cooking and she starts helping with the peeling

Olivia

I don't want to lie this right here is the best Christmas ever, I have never felt so alive like I am feeling

right now, I just wish my sister was here with us, but her betrayal hurt me and I am not ready to let

this go. I am going to start living and enjoying my life no matter what, I deserve to always be happy, I

mean I spend most of my life depressed and feeling unwanted,

so now it is my time to live my life

fully and not feel guilty about it. Being here and looking at everyone having is great, we are having

late lunch, Siza managed to decorate it and it definitely feels like Christmas, the first one I have ever enjoyed.

Me "compliments to the chefs man, you girls can cook yoh"

Uncle G "you can say that again baby girl this is delicious"

Siza "I must admit, Ntombi did most of the things"

Dad "where did you learn how to cook" he says biting his stake

Ntombi "well I have always had a love for food and cooking, my aunt worked in the city at a

restaurant and she would come back with food magazines that have recipes, I would always dream

of cooking them but we never had the ingredients, so when I started working at the palace I started

exploring and I just couldn't stop and my love for cooking just escalated"

Siza "you should open your own restaurant really"

Uncle G "she should go and perfect her skill at culinary school

first”

Ntombi “I wanted to attend but those schools are expensive”

Uncle G “things will come together don’t stress”

Me “daddy I think I have the first recipient of that bursary scheme”

Uncle G “I totally agree with you baby girl”

Dad “I am all for it”

Me “Ntombi because I didn’t know you and ma will be joining us I didn’t get you anything so as a

Christmas present please accept our funding and go to culinary school next year” she is shocked

Ntombi “are you serious, please don’t make me cry”

Me “cru honey you are going to be a chef like you have always dreamt of” she started crying and

Siza’s mother goes to comfort her

Ma “don’t cry my baby, this is good new you deserve this really” she wipes her tears

Her “I don’t know what to say really but thank you from the bottom of my heart, I never knew

coming here will be the start of new things for me”

Siza "trust me it is only going to get better there is something good about this place to us village

girls" they smile at each other. We continue eating and having a great banter

Thandiwe

This doesn't really feel like Christmas for a woman with a family, I woke up early and cooked up a

storm for me and my family, I decorated the house nicely and we all exchanged presents earlier, my

husband didn't get me anything, he just wrote me a check of R500 000 and told me to get myself

anything that I wanted, because he wasn't sure what I would have wanted, I mean who doesn't

know what their own wife likes, he couldn't even think of buying me a bottle of perfume or a

handbag, it would have meant more to me than cash. I don't know why he is doing this to me. He

got the kids presents and I guess that I better, I just wish he could have extended the same courtesy

to me. We are having lunch at the table but I can see that he is just here with me physically but his mind is miles away, he keeps on checking his phone and it frustrates me so bad.

Me "you haven't really touched your food baby"

Him "it is good my love just that I had a lot at breakfast, but not to worry I will eat bit by bit, thank you"

Me "oh okay, so did you like your gift"

Him "I really did thank you" he gives me a smile that doesn't reach his ears

Me "I was hoping that after here we could just go by the pool and have drinks and spend time with the kids and maybe later you know have our own adult fun" he tilts his head

Him "that sounds like a plan" he doesn't sound interested though, I sigh and his phone beeps and he checks it but nothing on his facial expression

Him "baby I need to go, it's the club they have a problem that only I can attend to"

Me "come on Sizwe its Christmas, it's a family day please, ask them to fix it"

Him "I am sorry love but I will be back soon" he stands up and comes to kiss me then leaves I just let

my tears falls, why does he love hurting me like this though, I try making this marriage work but he

never reciprocates, I feel like this is a one sided relationship. My son interrupts me

Him "mommy are you crying?"

Me "no baby mommy has something in her eyes, but I will be okay, eat your food" he nods and I

take my phone to call my mother who picks up at 4th ring

Her "Thandiwe baby did you get my message and presents"

Me "yes mama Razors driver brought them, we love them thanks" I hear a lot of noise an laughter in

the background, those people are really having a great Christmas

Her "I am glad you do my baby"

Me "where are you can you come to my house"

Her "I can't my love, I am with Sizakele and the others in Cape Town they invited Ntombi and I to



join, we are on a yacht in the sea as I speak to you” tears build up in my eyes

Me “oh that is nice mama” I hear my voice breaking so I clear my throat

Her “I will come see you as soon as we come back, that is the 27th or 28th”

Me “oh okay have fun, Sizwe is calling for me, bye” I hang up and just cry silently.

Vicky

I should have just went home and spend Christmas with them but with no money my mother would

have made my life miserable, this pace is drive and worse part Thato went out a few hours ago, she

didn't say where she was going, she left me with a bottle of dry gin and 2 bottles of champagne and

some snacks, at least DSTV is playing some decent movies. My phone beeps and it's from the girl at the hotel.

\*I have a picture of them together, meet me at the hotel with

my money in an hour\*

finally, I get off the couch and go change and request an uber, I am taking my last money but I will know who

Thato's blesser is and I will seduce him and he will definitely give in. the uber arrives and I lock and

go to it. It gets to the hotel and I call the girl and she tells me to meet her, I make my way there and she is pacing

Me "all you need to do is act normal, this panic mode of yours is what will make the others

suspicious not the fact that you are talking to me

Her "you are late" I check my watch

Me "it is just 5 minutes God. So let me see the picture"

Her "my money first" I roll my eyes and take it out of my purse and I hand it to her and she hands

the phone to me. I take a look and I swear I almost fainted

Me "this bitch" I say and clench my jaws then scream a bit

Her "hai let me send you that picture before you break my phone" she snatches it from me and

sends it to me, I am so mad right now, how dare they betray me like that, in fact how can Thato do

this, all that she has acquired from him had to mine.

Me "are they still here? Give me the lift code to the presidential suit, I want to teach them a lesson

of their lives"

Her "are you crazy you want me to lose my job" she walks away and leaves me fuming, I will deal

with Thato she will regret ever crossing me, and suddenly an idea comes to my head and leaves me

smiling. I actually don't need to lift a finger that bitch is studying law and she might get me arrested,

I will get my revenge and more. I walk out already making plans for the future. This is the perfect Christmas present ever.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 80 (not edited)

Gadafi

This couch is really comfortable but damn I can't seem to sleep,

I had the best day really, I am not a fan of celebrating all these holidays and shit but I must give credit where it's due, my brother's woman knew how to plan all of this, the environment is just so serene, the company is exceptional don't get me started on the food God. I hear movement from the kitchen so I decide to go check it out, I get in there and she facing away from me, she is the perfect African woman, thighs and ass, if I hadn't seen Thandiwe I would have sworn that girls from that village are all thick.

Me "also couldn't sleep" she jumps a little

Her "oh bhuti, I thought you were asleep, I am sorry if I woke you" somebody kill me this bhuti man

Me "oh no, I couldn't sleep. You did nothing. Why are you up"

Her "I think I am too excited to sleep, I can't believe I have money for school and I didn't even apply"

Me "you deserve this, plus you really can cook, you are God's gift to food lovers like myself"

Her "thank you so much, you also help contribute the money" I

nod

Me "yes it was Olivia's plan Razor and I are just putting in the money" she smiles

Her "you both are great man, my God will bless you really" I smile

Me "so tell me, what are you hoping for in the future"

Her "well just a few weeks ago I didn't have hope for the future but right now with the bursary you

have just given me I see myself owning my own restaurant with my own signature dishes, maybe

married with kids" okay we are open to that topic

Me "oh so what kind of man do you want to marry" she laughs

Her "I don't know bhuti but my heart will tell me, I don't really have a preference I just want a man

that will love me and put me first" I smile

Me "that is good to know Ntombi"

Her "you should also tell that lady you were telling me about how you feel, life is too short"

Me "trust me I would tell her even now, I just don't think she is ready to hear it"

Her "don't waste time bhuti, you don't want her to be snatched away by some other man"

Me "I would kill that man" she laughs and it is so melodic

Her "I just came down to drink a cup of rooibos, I feel relaxed a bit, I will go try and sleep"

Me "oh okay, sleep well then" she smiles and walks past me and our skin touch and I feel hot

A week later

Vicky

I took this entire week to think about what I am going to do about the picture at hand and I must say

that the plan I have will definitely work, it is time I confront these two backstabbers, I have been

trying so hard to not beat the leaving shit out of Thato, so each time she was home I made sure to

not be there coz I would have just lost it really. I asked one of the girls at the club to let me know if

Thato comes over there coz I was off and she did call and told me that she arrived, I took an uber

and I am walking to Sizwe's office, the place is not too packed coz it's still early. I open the door and

they are laughing, not in a compromising position, not that I needed to find them red handed, the picture I have of them is enough

Him "don't you know how to knock"

Me "apologies boss"

Him "I don't need your apology Vicky learn some manners" I mentally roll my eyes

Me "Thato it is good that you are here, I need to talk to you both" they look at each other confused

Her "oh okay, what's up"

Me "so how long did you think you will keep this from me"  
Sizwe stands

Him "what the hell are you talking about"

Me "oh I am talking about the fact that you are busy fucking the hotel every other day and now you

busy buying her cars and businesses"

Him "there is no such thing, you are delusional Vicky" I laugh and he narrows his eyes

Me "I don't think so coz I have evidence, I throw them a printout of the photo I have of them. Thato

looks at it and then looks at Sizwe then stands up.

Her "okay so what do you want us to do cry and beg"

Me "you bitch you have the nerve of taking my man and now you stand before me and give me

attitude, you must be ashamed of yourself" she laughs

Her "girl please, baby I just came to check up on you i need to go check how things are at MY

business" she says looking at Sizwe and tries to walk away but I quickly pull her by her weave and

she trips and she falls, Sizwe comes and stands in front of me and gives me the hottest slap

Him "don't you ever, I mean ever try this nonsense again, you don't come to my office and and

assault my woman in front of me do you understand"

Me "did you just say your woman, are you fucking kidding me right now Sizwe, it was me first but

you treated me like a prostitute couldn't even buy me flowers



now you buying her cars and

businesses, what about me after you used me like that. It was suppose to be me and your wife only”

Him “you didn’t deserve flowers, why would i have wasted my money on a cheap piece of meat like

you Vicky” I can’t believe my ears

Me “what the hell does Thato have that I don’t” he chuckles

Him “do you have the whole day coz it is a damn long list” I try to snatch Thato but she quickly hides

behind him.

Me “you think you have the upper hand here but I do. You are going to give me exactly what I want”

Him “and if I refuse Vicky what will you do huh” I smile

Me “I will send that picture to your wife, I am sure that is not what you want”

Him “you wouldn’t dare you bitch”

Me “I am sure you do know how dangerous a woman scorned is”

Him “what the fuck do you want Vicky” he asks with a serious face and deep down I am fucking

scared right now but I will soldier on.

Me "i thought you will never ask my love. So I want a brand new car exactly like hers and a house

and shares in your plantation, it makes a lot of money and i want a piece of it" he looks at me like he

wants to kill me

Me "let me tell you something, if anything happens to me a friend of mine has this picture and if

anything happens to me she will go tell your wife and give her a copy of the photo and let the police

know that you did something to me coz I wanted to tell your wife you are cheating"

Him "you are a sick bitch" I laugh

Me "oh I know honey, so I will give you a week to get all that I have asked for"

Him "so now you will hear me out, Thandiwe better not find that picture, I will get you your shit and

give you a call once I have it all" he says and feel and see his anger and hate towards me.

Me "well in that case i will leave you and your hoe" i say looking at Thato

Him "oh and madam, you better not be a thorn to Thato in that

flat do you understand me, avoid

her and she will do the same, don't even look at her do you understand me"

Me "whatever"

Him "baby, avoid this piece of shit even if she provokes you but when she lays a hand on you, call

me and I will deal with her" he says pulling her to him and I am shocked this is no longer a blesser

blessee relationship, he is fucking in love with her, he has never looked at me like that and I have

never seen him look at his wife like this. I quickly walk out leaving them in their moment, she didn't

just still his money he stole his heart too, but he will never be hers, he is married and they forever

have to hide and that is okay with me as long as I get what I want.

Razor

After the most amazing Christmas Soft organised, I sure trust her planning capabilities, whatever

trips and family events she will handle it all, she is simply amazing I am blessed. I got a call from my children's uncle and he invited us to his house on New Year's Eve. I have always gotten along with Fiona's brother that is why I entrusted my hospital with him, had to find a way to move money I just needed something very legal to circulate my money through and what a better place than a hospital because it accepts donations, he also needed a job coz other hospital wouldn't touch him, so it was a win win situation. Soft left with her mother to go help them move in the furniture to her new house, she will be sleeping there for tonight but she is coming back tomorrow to go with us to Nathans house. I find Olivia in the cinema surrounded by junk; she is watching some horror movie

Me "why can't you be like other children" she laughs

Her "what did I do now daddy" I seat next to her and take the tub of ice cream and spoon from her

Me "nothing, you are just the best, but you should have called

me for this movie, you know I enjoy

horror” I say and take a spoonful

Her “sorry papa thought you were sulking coz your Soft left me”

Me “I am sulking, can’t you see I am even eating ice cream” she laughs

Her “marry her already will ya” I sigh

Me “I will baby, but I don’t want to put pressure on her, marriage comes with a lot of things and

they normally way heavier of the woman, I don’t want that for her, I want her to finish her

qualification then I will definitely take her to home affairs and make her Mrs Motaung and we will

have a wedding she wants later” she smiles

Her “oaky fair enough”

Me “oh remember we are going to your uncle’s tomorrow”

Her “no stress Siza will be there. Daddy”

Me “mmmhh” I say opening a bag of chips

Her “do you think you will ever forgive Mercy” I sigh

Me “she is still my baby Liv, yes I am mad at her but I still love

her, I just need to come down first

and I will go talk to her” she nods

Her “i didn’t expect anything less from you that is why you are the most amazing father”

Me “thank you baby girl, but what about you, will you forgive her?”

Her “maybe I don’t know daddy”

Me “no pressure baby, I love you Livi” I kiss her forehead

Her “i love you too daddy waka”

LAST BONUS SHAME      OH GUYS I MIGHT NOT POST  
TOMORROW NE

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 81

Narrated

Razor, Siza and Liv finished getting ready and he carried the Tupperware containers to the car, Siza had

prepared 2 salads for the braai that is hosted at Nathan's house, Fiona's brother, the chief of the

hospital Razor owns. They are hosting New Years Eve party with family and close friends. They drove to

his house and cars were already parked outside and music was already playing just not too loud, the

smell of braai vleis was mouth watering. They carried all they brought with them, the drinks and salads.

Liv "this is going to be a long night with that type of music" she says referring to the type of music that was being played

Siza "girl please embrace your culture" Razor laughed

Liv "yei yei, I am a black girl nna, i am pretty and you know what Kabza and Maphorisa said, pretty girls

love amapiano"

Siza "right babe, we will just turn a blind eye to your white genes" she laughs

Razor "tell her babe"

Liv "not you too daddy hao" they all laughed and walked in and Nathan's wife Tammy welcomes them

by the dorr

Tammy "oh my God Razor, it is so good to see you" they hug

Razor "hey Tams it has really been a while" she turned her eyes to Olivia

Tammy "Livy baby girl look at you all grown, it is really nice to see you too" they hug too

Liz "hey aunt T, I am growing up and you seem to be looking younger, I guess you mature like fine wine"

Tammy "oh baby thank you my nana" she smiles at her

Razor "Tams, this right here is my lady Sizakele by you can call her Siza, and babe this is Nathan, Dr

Wallace's wife, Tams she is also studying medicine"

Tammy "my God you look amazing, it is nice to see you I Nathan has mentioned that you found yourself

a good woman, he even speaks highly of you regarding your work" she hugs Siza

Siza "it is nice to meet you too Tammy, I hope you don't mind I made two salads"

Tammy "you are such a darling, we were just saying with Dora that the salads won't be enough, you are a

life saver thank you so much"



Liv "aunt Dora is here?" Tammy laughs

Tammy "yes baby but don't stress her brother told her to behave okay" Olivia nods

They all moved to the pool area where everyone is sitting and having drinks, they greet and everyone is

happy to see Razor after such a long time. The look on Dona's face when she sees Siza is just a bitter

one, but they all manage to ignore her. Razor leaves Olivia with Siza after they kiss and goes to joining

Nathan and the other man by the braai stand, the men were having beer and Razor and another guy

were drinking cognac. Oliver's cousins went to join them and they chilled by enjoying their drinks and

making jokes enjoying their night. the night was very cool and you could really feel the happiness and

contentment in the environment. When everyone was tipsy Olivia went to connect her phone to the

sound system and started playing amapiano, and under the influence everyone started dancing and she

and Siza kept on laughing at the white people who are trying to dance.

Siza

I can't believe I am having so much fun, coming here I thought these people will hate me for showing up

with their sister's ex husband but turns out they didn't like her, apparently she didn't respect people and

she thought she was better coz she was the one who had more money in their family. So people

couldn't really relate to her. We ate and I must admit Dr Wallace oh I mean Nathan as he asked me to

address him when we are not at the hospital, the man can really braai shame, the mean was really nice

and the alcohol galore, the night was still very young but the new year was almost here. the alcohol was

already working my lungs and kidneys over time, so my bladder was taking it all in, I needed to go pee. I try to stand, but Mo holds my hand

Him "where are you going, what do you need I will go get it for you"

Me "I am just going to the bathroom baby" he smiles

Him "okay be quick I miss you already" I laugh

Me "you can be a baby sometimes" I kiss him and leave him grinning like a lunatic, I get to the

bathroom and do my business, I finish then fix myself the door opens

Me "it's still occupied" I say hoping the person will close but nope she walks in and I just roll my eyes

Her "oh I am aware, I have been dying to meet with you alone" I sigh

Me "what do you want Dona" I say

Her "just want to have a chit chat" I ignore her and wash my hands

Her "its okay you can be silent I will do the talking. You are a pretty girl Sizakele; you have a long life

ahead of you, don't let yourself be used byRazor, do you think you are the first young thing he has been

with, you are just flavor of the week, you will bore him doll"

Me "hold it right there, you know nothing about Molemo and I and I don't know what made you think

that your two cents about is needed, I want you to stay the fuck

away from my man and I" she laughs

Her "we feisty aren't we, well listen to me you little cunt" she say's and I without thinking about it I slap

her so hard across her face and push her to the wall, and pin her to it

Me "I am very respectful, I tried avoiding you but awu avoideke sisi, you just want to be a nuisance and

shame you will not take my joy tonight, like I said leave us the fuck alone or I will cut you, you know how

ruthless my man is and I heard gangster is sexually transmitted" I hear the door open and Mo appears

Him "Soft baby what is going on here" he say's looking at Dora

Her "I was in the bathroom when this golddigger walked in and attacked me" she faked a tear

Him "shut the fuck up I wasn't talking to you, Soft baby"

Me "this old thing just wont stay away from me she kept insulting me and I ended up slapping her"

Him "you slept her" he says sounding amazed and proud I just giggle and nod

Him "I don't have your time Dona get the fuck out and stay away from my woman" I let go of her and

she fixes herself and walks out, Molemo comes and folds me in his arms

Me "I didn't mean she just"

Him "you don't have to explain babe, I will understand if your night is ruined, we can go home"

Me "what? we are not leaving because of that old slay queen, I am having so much fun" he smiles

Him "I am glad you are having fun, so you really slapped here huh"

Me "she deserved it" he smiles and kisses me

Him "I don't know why but I am fucken turned on right now" I bite my lip. I am in a dress so I just turn

and pull it up and bend over the basin, I hear him grown and the door locking, his belt unbuckling and

his hands pulling my underwear down and he uses one of his legs to spread mine and a second her

enters me, I moan coz it feels so damn

Him "oh Soft baby, what are you doing to me" he says and starts moving slowly

Me "I just love you that's all my love" soon as I said that he squeezed me and groans so sexy I feel my

spine tickle oh this feels so good I don't want him to stop

Thandiwe

It is New Years Eve and I just wanted to be happy today and I knew that I wouldn't be in my house,

yesterday when he came back from the club he was so angry and deep in thought, like he was trying to

come up with a solution but failing dismally, I just wonder what is going on, but I will not bother myself

with Sizwe today. I just want to get drunk and have fun. i took my kids and drove to my mother's place,

and before we left he was already looking like a million dollars and I was grateful that I had already

made plans of my own, I hurt a bit knowing that he was planning to spend another family out. We went

to my mother and Ntombi, and my kids' mood instantly improved.

Me "I can't get over your furnisher mama" she smiles

Ma "thank you my baby, Siza helped me pick and I was a bit skeptical at first but now I am happy"

Me "oh I see, where is she I thought she would spend the day with you"

Ma "she went to some family gathering with Razor and Olivia"

Me "oh okay but she treats those people more like her family than us"

Ma "don't start Thandiwe, she is the only family she ever had and that loved her unconditionally besides

MaNtuli, we will not make her feel bad for being happy, stop this I will not take it anymore stop, when

are you planning to stop hating your sister" I sigh and realize that what I had just said was wrong

Me "ngiya xolisa ma (I am sorry)"

Ma "Ntombi baby girl please come with a bottle of wine my baby" she stands up and goes to the

kitchen and comes back with it

Me "you should have another glass man Ntombi" she laughs

Her "no I am okay thanks maybe later, the last time I had many glasses of wine because of Olivia I woke

up with a heavy head" mama laughs

Me "don't remind me of that day, you were drinking it like juice nawe so Olivia just kept on refilling"

They both laugh

Her "it was too nice mama I didn't know it had consequences" they laugh again and I feel so lost out

Me "sounds like you had a great time in Cape Town"

Ma "we really did, I was hoping to take you two and Siza to Durban so we can bond and have fun like we

did in Cape Town, we will not be staying in a yacht but it we will be making memories" I smile

Me "I would love that, but I am not sure about me and Siza being in the same space it will be awkward

Ma "I will tell you once your fathers money has reflected in my account" the door bell rings and Ntombi

goes to get it and comes back with Gadafi and I find myself smiling

Me "hey what a lovely surprise" mama laughs

Him "hey everyone, it is nice to see you again"

Ma "hello Gadafi, what brings you to this east rand"

Him "I just brought you fireworks I figured you didn't find the time to buy them you know" ma laughs



Ma "you drove all this way just to bring fire works" she laughs and he looks down smirking

Me "haibo mama why do you keep on laughing at him" I ask confused

Ma "it's nothing baby, Ntombi baby, fix this man a plate, wena Gadafi sit down" he sits and smiles at his

eyes move with Ntombi till she disappears to the lounge

Me "how have you been G" I say smiling at him

Ma "he has been acting strange like a love struck puppy" she laughs again

Me "who is the lucky lady"

Ma "why would he drive all the way to bring fireworks, he is doing this as an excuse to see Ntombi"

Me "oh oh I see" I say feeling a little jelouse why I don't really know

Ma "she has been through so much Gadafi, she won't survive another disappointment"

Him "I don't know why but all I want to do is protect and love her, I promise just allow me" My heart

broke, even Ntombi has found love, how I wish my husband can say such about me too

Vicky

I was looking at this hoe going up and down getting ready, she looks good, expensive even; she is really spending Sizwe's money, living my life while I watch her like she is part of some reality show, the nerve.

This outfit is definitely new I tell you. she walks past me in the lounge clicking her red bottoms and goes to the fridge and takes out a bottle of champagne and takes out a glass she turns and makes sure to

fleck her hair this bitch is doing this on purpose, to piss me off and it is fucking succeeding, I just want to

mop this floor with her ass but Sizwe will have a field day with me, she comes and sits on the single

couch and pours a glass and sips while looking at her phone. She sips again and I get thirsty instantly. It

is New Years Eve and I am at home in my gown drinking wine in a cup so she doesn't see that I bought 5

liter of Fourth Street. Sizwe must just get me my things I am not going to live like a hobo while this bitch

lives like a queen. There is a knock on the door and the person opens and gets in, I peep and it's Sizwe, he

is in a matching outfit as Thato, my heart right now, she sees him and stands and hurries to him and he smiles

Him "hey princess, you look breath taking God" she smiles and hides in his chest I roll my eyes

Her "all thanks to you baby, you have taste hey" he smiles

Him "I wanted to be the only man with a beautiful woman on his arm"

Her "you don't say Mr. Dlomo" he laughs

Him "okay we are already late please go get your purse and change outfits for two days"

Her "where are you taking me sir"

Him "after the party I am taking you to your surprise" she laughs and hurries to her room, Sizwe comes

and sits down where his little skank was and takes her glass and drinks

Me "I wonder why you would be entertaining your side thing and not your family"

Him "just because it is not you, now you are wondering" he

laughs

Me "don't forget you are under my mercy"

Him "oh how would I forget dear Vicky, you are the queen of the castle" he laughs again and Thato

walks in looking so excited

Her "all ready babes" he stands and takes her weekender and they walk to the door and he stops

Him "babe wait go get your car keys one of my boys will go park it at a safe place, you are living with a

snake she mist trash it" I feel myself fume and she walks back to her room and comes back with it and they leave, what an insult nxa.

I am damn tired guys yoh, I did say I won't be posting today but I decide to coz I will be busy tomorrow

all day, so expect nothing, I will see you Monday guys. Have a great weekend, I love you all and thank you so much for the support.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 82 (not edited)

Fiona

3 weeks later

I managed to poison my daughter against her father and made her believe that Razor loves Olivia more than he will ever love her, I quoted a few incidents that coincidentally happened to favor my story and after that she started eating out of my palm, she told me where Razor illegally buried Jabu so that he doesn't get caught and now I will use that to take that man down, he will not know what hit him really, he will beg me to stop once I start, the mighty Razor blade will never know what hit him and I will be the last one laughing.

Me "so baby are you ready to make your father pay"

Her "definitely mama, Razor doesn't love me and he has proved it, what kind of father does this to his own daughter, how could he go for such a long time without

knowing if I am okay or not”

Me “that is good baby, he will be very sorry”

Her “so what do you plan on doing to him mommy” I smile

Me “don’t worry yourself about that my nana, just enjoy living like a queen that you are” she smiles

Her “thank you for coming back my love”

Me “I couldn’t stay away from you Mookie”

Her “so can we please go shopping please” I laugh Mercy spends money like she is making it, we don’t

have an income but she can spend, but then we will afford soon

Me “can we just have a spa date and lunch baby, we will go shopping tomorrow I promise”

Her “you are just the best”

Me “I am a mommy to a princess how could I not” she laughs

Her “I am a lucky girl” I kiss her forehead

Me “so how are you enjoying this new place”

Her “I honestly love it, that house was too big, thanks for making me realize this mommy” I smile, so I

managed to convince her to sell the mansion and buy a three bedroom house at a safe gated

community where Razor won't think of finding us"

Me "I am glad to hear that my love"

Her "thanks again"

Me "go take a shower so we can go the city is waiting for us to paint it red"

Her "yaass mommy" she says and gets from the couch and hurries to the bathroom and I just shake my

head, I didn't think this plan would be so smooth, that house was worth a lot of money, a couple of

million rands, I gave her just 1,5 and my girl was ecstatic. I bought this house and it wasn't that much, so

the pocket is not hurt at all. The money of the house is safe in my account and it will come in handy to

pay people in making sure that the plan goes very smoothly.

Sizwe

I have been having a hard time really, I managed to stall Vicky and told her some lousy story about

Thandiwe watching me like a hawk and been vigilant about our

finances. She bought it but she gave me until today to deliver but now I know what I need to do. I have really fallen in love with Thato, she is the most focused woman ever, she is studying law, running a businesses, and she does it with so much ease, I think I fell in love with her more when my PI told me that she was using the money she was getting from me to build her mother a house and got her fleet of Avanzas back, I was in awe really, I didn't think she was thinking on that level, and boy did she make me fall in love with her, she did everything discreetly, I asked the boys to send me pictures of the house and I must say it is a stunner, you know the only nice house in the street. Thato has really taken my heart, I mean I got in for sex only but her mentality took me and put me in a bottle, I mean I married Thandiwe because I needed a woman the society and my business partners will accept and because I wanted her father to help me with everything concerning the plantation in their village. So I decided and it is final, I explained to my mother



weeks ago and she accepted after putting Thato under surveillance and I remember she said "She is still rough around the edges but nothing that cannot be polished, she reminds me so much of myself, hustling the streets of Joburg class" I smiled because that woman hustled me and got all these things from me and oh God I am head over heels. I am holding Thandiwe's hands trying to find the right words to explain my decision to her.

Me "just know that this was never my intention, and I am sorry for ever hurting you"

Her "baby you are scaring me please" I sigh

Me "you are the mother of my kids and I appreciate you very much, I know I have wronged you before and I am really sorry, I know right now I am about to hurt you so much but know that I never planned it"

Her "Sizwe please" I see tears forming in her eyes

Me "I met someone and I love her so much, I didn't plan to it just happened, it was meant to be just sex,

I know I promised to never cheat on you and I am sorry"

Her "you love her Sizwe" she lets her tears fall and I feel really bad

Me "I do and I am really sorry"

Her "so you are leaving me for her, Sizwe we you are leaving your family for that woman"

Me "no no baby never, I would never leave you to raise our kids alone, I told you will raise our kids

together in one house"

Her "so what about this woman you love Sizwe" I sigh

Me "maTha, I want to take Thato as my second wife because I love her and out of respect for you as

well" I see her eyes pop with shock

Her "you want a second wife Sizwe, why are you doing this to me, why do you hurt me like this"

Me "I never meant to fall in love with her I swear please baby"

Her "Sizwe you want me to consent to you taking another wife"

Me "I am begging you please maTha" she cries and cries

Her "why am I not enough for you?" I sigh

Me "it is not about that baby I promise you" I can't bare to tell her the truth

Her "Sizwe if you ever loved me please tell me truth please" I just hold her and let her cry on my chest

Me "forgive me please maTha, your blessing is all I need, I wanna do this the right way please" she sniffs

Her "if I say no will you let it go and focus on me and the kids" I look down coz I am hoping she doesn't

say no, I want Thato as my wife and for me to be able to be a good father and husband to her I need to

stop sneaking around with Thato and make her Mrs. Dlomo too and I will be faithful to them both

Her "I guess that is my answer, you will never stop, so go ahead Sizwe, go marry your hoe"

Me "I want your blessing but baby don't leave me, think about the kids" she wipes her tears and stands

Her "why do you think I will agree to you marrying another hoe, I am doing this for my children"

Siza

New Year new me? No thank you. I will remain the Sizakele the Sizakele that I am really, just

improvements baby. My mans and I are getting stronger with each passing day, my mother is healthy

and happy with Ntombi and my best friend has reclaimed her life, girl has decided that Olivia is

important and her mental health is her priority and I am proud of her really. I am excited to start my

second year and the girl will is focused, nothing will disturb the girl. So Molemo and I had a chat, call me

Marry mother of Jesus but I don't care, the tension between Mo and his daughter was now too much. I

had to intervene really, so I made so much noise till he finally heard me and boy he did coz he went to

talk to her as we speak. I was preparing a light meal for lunch so we can eat when get back, I am making

chicken breasts stuffed with, 3 kinds of cheeses, bacon and robot peppers. Then I made Greek salad on

the side. The door opens and a second later he appears and he looks livid, I swear he could kill someone.

He doesn't say anything to me but he goes straight to the pantry and comes with a sealed bottle of

Hennessey and he drinks straight from the bottle. Okay he is

mad, he puts it down and I just go to him

and fold him into my arms, and a second later I feel him squeeze me then he kisses my heard

Him "I am sorry my love"

Me "what are you apologizing for"

Him "coming home to you looking and behaving like a wild animal my baby"

Me "I love you and that animalistic side of yours baby" I feel him blush and he squeezes me some more

Him "I love you too Soft waka"

Me "so tell your woman how it went" he sighs and lets go of me then we both seat on the high chairs

holding hands

Him "can you believe that Mercy sold the house and moved baby, and as if that is the worst thing she

sold the property along side with her mother, my daughter is still with that woman" I sigh

Me "I am sorry my baby really am" he kisses my hand

Him "after all you told me I was ready to go and humbly ask for

forgiveness and ask her to allow me

back in her life to father her and not be more of a friend than a father, I don't know why she can't see

that Fiona is using her to get to me, i need to find that bitch and find out what she is up to really"

Me "find her my love before she takes this any further"

Him "I am afraid that whatever mess she is creating, she will leave Mercy with it"

Me "I totally understand my love" I say and stand up and snake my hands on his neck and his on my

waist

Me "you will find Fiona and you will stop her from hurting anyone else especially Mercy because she has

her clause in her already, we should just pray that they are not in too deep baby"

Him "I pray so my baby because that woman is dangerous Soft, she is on her mission and nothing or no

one will make her see otherwise"

Me "you will beat her at her own game" he smiles

Him "with you by my side I definitely will baby" I smile

Me "ride or die"

Him "oh yeah, the Ying to my Yang" I blush

Me "now stop sulking you will age quicker and I will leave you for a younger more hotter vision love" he

bursts out laughing so carefree and I just blush and looking at him

Him "I will kill him so quickly you won't even know how the old man with weak knees and joints did

that" I laugh

Me "grandpa come and see what I am making, hope you enjoy it babe" he gets up

Him "smells divine love, but I would appreciate you on this kitchen counter right now" I look at the oven

and I have 20 more minutes before the oven finishes, so I take off my dress and he smiles

Liv

January is super slow guys yoh, I just want to go back to school, but at least I have this fool to get me

through this long ass month. Steve and I have been hanging out like crazy, since I got back from Cape last year, we do different things, try different restaurants and watch plays and operas and he took me bungee jumping just this past weekend. We spend all this time together but today it is my first time at his place, we haven't labeled this, whatever it is between us and I couldn't be more grateful really, titles complicate things yoh. We are watching soccer, the man is a Liverpool fan so the world has to stop when he is watching them play, I am not even allowed to speak, only got allowed at half time and now I am waiting for this damn game to finish, we have 4 more minutes to go till full time and I can open my mouth, I am sure I now suffer from halitosis, 45 minutes of silence is a long time even with those stolen kisses. To tell you the truth, this is my first time enjoying a man's company like this, I mean even my booty call knew that I can't hang, speaking of which the man has been blowing up my form, I have been avoiding him so much, thing is he has caught feelings and he



knew that the air that I breathe is not love

flavored shame so he shouldn't make his problems my problems.  
My hone vibrates again and it's him, I see Steve giving me a side  
eye.

Him "answer your boyfriend Olivia" he says sounding annoyed I  
roll my eyes

Me "I never said it's my boyfriend though, why are you even  
giving my phone your attention"

Him "because it is vibrating on my dick" I laugh, yes I am sitting  
on top of him

Me "don't lie the phone is on the couch not even near you"

Him "still it is vibrating on my dick Olivia" he says with a smirk

Me "oh my God you are such an ass"

Him "yeah yeah you are my favorite person too babe" I laugh,  
can you believe this fool. I attempt to

stand up from on top of him but his hold tightens, and I feel one  
hand go under my t shirt and stops at

my boob, he cups it and starts rubbing gently

Him "it fits so perfectly in my hand" I blush, I am not wearing  
any bra so the access is 100.

Me "I can see that"

Him "I wonder which part of your body will fit me so perfectly too" I blush and he smiles

Me "get down boy" he giggles

Him "Olivia, you are so sexy" okay he is making my panties more wet can he just at least slip in a finger

in there

Me "you are not bad yourself" he laughs

Him "thank you" I try and part my legs so he can see that I want him, his hand moves to my thigh and he

starts rubbing it and it feels so damn good. I start panting and he smirks

Him "I honestly love how you want me right now, I just wonder how wet are you down there" I look

away embarrassed and he laughs

Him "don't be, look at me, you are a sexy woman and I want you too"

Me "have me I am here and I want to" I see him bite his lower lip

Him "baby please, I am a man who hates condoms and we need to be sure first that we are both clean

and get you on contraceptives”

Me “what? You don’t want to use protection?” I ask shocked

Him “yes babe, but before we do that, we are going to go get tested for everything and then get you on

the pill on injection whichever one you prefer” okay I don’t know how I feel about this

Me “Steve how will I know that you not sleeping with other woman”

Him “I promise you I will never, not when we are still together and active babe” I sigh

Me “can I at least think about it, so long can we use a condom. He laughs and takes my lips into his and

clothes start flying across the room, I move my hand to his boner and I am satisfied with his size, yaas

Vicky

Sizwe is taking me for a poes man, I told him today was the last day and the guy hasn’t even called me, I

try his line and it takes me straight to voicemail, I will deal with him shame, I am giving him this last day

and he must give me my things tomorrow or I will teach him a lesson of his life, I will ensure that he will

have a hard time in his marriage and pray Thandiwe leaves his sorry ass, on the other hand I think they

are having a hard time with Thato coz all she has been doing this week is mope around all moody and

shit. I want to laugh in her face, but what did she think will happen though, did she really think she will

have a healthy relationship with my man, I don't think so bitch. Oh here comes the bitch, she is wearing

a short summer dress and bare foot no weave and make up, she gets out of her bedroom and goes to

the kitchen comes back with a packet of chips and a can of coke and she is about to exit the kitchen

when someone knocks. She rolls her eyes and goes to open and I hear commotion at the door

Her "what the hell are you doing here" she says

Him "baby I am sorry please I had to do some thinking please" he says and I quickly get up and go to the

kitchen

Me "heiwena fucken, I hope you here to deliver my things" he just looks at me and ignores me flat out

Him "Thato baby please listen to me"

Me "she will listen to you once you have ceaser what belongs to ceaser"

Him "bitch stay out of it will you"

Her "what are you doing here Sizwe"

Him "I am even scared to say it Thato because after I say this to you, you will have all this power and for

the first time in my life I will be at your mercy scared that you will hurt me" she sighs

Her "what are you on about"

Me "Shakespeare make it quick I want my car and house kiss with my address now" he sighs and goes to

Thato and takes her hands into his

Him "baby, you know when we first started it was purely physical but now baby I don't know when my

princess but you captured my heart and Thato I am afraid because this is the first time I am falling in

love, I don't know how this will go but I know that I want you in my life forever, trust me this is even my

first time proposing”

Me “what proposing, proposing what, Sizwe don’t make me mad please” I say and they both act like I

am not in the room

Her “propose Nation what are you saying to me baby”

Him “I am asking you to please marry me baby be my wife” I laugh

Me “you are already married you fuck, Thandiwe will never agree to this” I laugh and she cries

Her “she is right Sizwe” he smiles

Him “about one thing yes, I am married, and I spoke to Thandiwe and she has given me permission to

marry you” okay wait

Me “say what, the fuck are you saying Sizwe, you are marrying this bitch Nation you can’t do this to me”

Him “I am marrying her Vicky and not even the pictures you have with you will stop me baby girl so kiss

those dreams of getting a car and house from me goodbye” he says and I don’t know how I am feeling

right now, I see him pull a red box and opens it, a huge diamond ring, I want to diem somebody kill me

now please

Him "baby please marry me Sthandwa sami please princess" she lets out her tears

Her "I will marry you baby I will be your wife" somebody kill me now, I sink down on my knees

I am not okay guys; I just typed this chapter to exist in another life, because right now my reality is not

all rosy and cheery. I needed to forget for a while and I did say that writing is my escape. Till we meet

again. Love you lots

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 83(not edited)

Thandiwe

It has been an entire week since Sizwe told me he wants to take another wife, I honestly don't know

how I feel about all of this, I love this man so much but it is clear that the man is just with me because of

his children, I don't know why I am never enough for Sizwe why can't he realize that I love him, I decided

to let him marry his hoe maybe that will bring peace into my house, maybe he will be a batter man and

father, as much as it hurts maybe this will redeem my marriage, oh I pray it does. I have invested a lot in

this marriage to just let it all go for another woman, I just need to find out who this bitch I am allowing

into my home is. You should see how happy Sizwe is these days, I can tell that he loves her and it breaks

me further apart. I wish I could talk to someone about my situation but I know everyone will tell me to

let him go and I can't do that, I know some of you will judge me for this but its okay. I am at the hotel

trying to calm down and digest all of this; it has been a 7 bloody days since he told me and it still feels

new. I have been trying to distract myself but nothing is working. I voice I know stales me and I look up to see her face

Her "sorry to scare you" I sigh

Me "no it's okay hey, I was just lost in my thoughts" she



narrows her eyes

Her "that is understandable hey"

Me "why do you say that" she sits down and places her bag on the vacant chair

Her "I mean you agreeing to your husband taking a second wife" I look at her shocked

Her "hai shame Thandiwe honey you are brave, I wouldn't have agreed"

Me "how do you know all of this Vicky" she rolls her eyes

Her "duh Thato is my flat mate and your husband proposed to her in my presence" it felt like someone was pushing a dagger through my heart.

Me "his Thato is your Thato?" I feel tears threatening; he has been cheating on me with that girl

Her "yes babes, he even bought her a car and that nail bar and restaurant" I felt like my world was

stopping. How could he, after he refused me going to school or starting my own business but he went to

buy that girl her own business

Me "uhm when was this" I swallow

Her "a while ago" she say's

Me "oh I see, where is that girl now"

Her "she still stays with me but we never talk coz I told her that what she is doing to you is not okay at

all, but did she listen to me hell no, she is parading like she was just crowned miss universe"

Me "when did this whole thing start"

Her "I can't tell you for sure but it hasn't been that long hey" I sigh and nod

Me "do they look in love"

Her "your husband is, but with Thato she just agreed to secure the bag" this is painful to hear

Me "uhm where are my manners, let's order something to eat please"

Her "oh okay thanks girl, huuu I am starving, and a cold bottle of bubbles will do me good"

Me "order whatever you like" I say and her smiles widens, I mentally roll my eyes, this one loves the

flashy life and she cannot afford it

Her "you are just the best, I wonder why your husband doesn't see that"

Me "that makes the two of us"

Her "don't stress wena love he will regret ever wifing up a hoe I tell you, you just wait and enjoy the show" I pray that happens soon

Liv

Sizakele and I are finally back at our apartment and I swear my father almost died, the man doesn't

function without Sizakele, I mean how did we get here, from being a ruthless lion to a love struck puppy.

I just want to reside in his head for a while and see Sizakele through his eyes coz wow. I have been

spending so much time with Steve and the sex is on another level I swear guys, and yes we did go to the

Dr and we both clean, he promised me exclusivity and we don't use a condom, don't judge me please, I

am an adult and I thought this through please. I am enjoying myself and honestly it feels like this is the

first time I am living my life, letting go of the pain my moth- I mean Fiona put me through was the

biggest gift I could have ever given myself. I open the door and Siza is watching Grey's Anatomy, somebody kill me now please. I roll my eyes and she laughs

Her "hey don't be like that" I sit next to her and peck her lips (our way of greeting, don't get it twisted)

Me "I swear you've seen this episode before"

Her "correct, but there was nothing better playing on TV"

Me "yeah right" she laughs

Her "if you don't want to watch this, go back to Steve's house" I blush thinking about all the delicious things he does to me

Me "I could but he is meeting with the boys, there is a game playing" she narrows her eyes

Her "you like him don't you"

Me "he gives the best sex" it's her turn to roll her eyes

Her "it's not about that Olivia and you know that, you like the guy it's not a bad thing come on"

Me "the minute we make it official things will change I know they will"

Her "you said you letting go of the past babe and that includes opening up your heart, if you die you

die" I burst out laughing

Me "I know but I am not yet ready" she sighs

Her "Steve really likes you Olivia maybe even loves you babe please"

Me "love hurts Sizakele, some of us won't be as lucky as you and my dad"

Her "stop that right now, my love story with Molemo is exactly that, ours, babe, you need to have yours

too. put yourself out there and if he breaks your heart or it doesn't work out we my friend will cry

together eating junk and watch romantic movies drink tequila and curse him out" I laugh

Me "you are crazy really" I smile

Her "so please Olivia" I sigh

Me "let's just take it a day at a time Siza, and I will grow into him and when I am ready, me and him will

label all of this"

Her "remember this is not only about you, Steve is also human" I sigh coz I know I seem selfish for

making him my sex slave while he clearly has feelings for me

Me "I know I know" she sighs and gets up

Her "I need a shower and so do you"

Me "why is that"

Her "woman you reek of sex" I laugh

Me "in that case I should go take a shower first"

Her "please do huu" I laugh standing up, heading to the bathroom

Steve

Olivia left and took a quick shower, to go meet with the boys, of course I preferred to watch it with her

but she told me to go see my friends, we are always together and I enjoy every second, she is the most

amazing woman ever. She is not like any woman I have been with before, she challenges me and she

doesn't bow down to my word, I see myself building with her, for the first time in my life I envision

myself getting married and having kids, coming straight home

after work coz the only face I want to see  
is my wife's and that wife being Olivia, she is stubborn though,  
she doesn't want to let me love her I  
don't know who hurt her, but I swear I wouldn't, all I just need is  
a chance to prove myself to her, to  
show her that we will be good together. I finish my shower and  
quickly lotion and get dressed, I drive  
and get to the pub, the gents are already there with drinks on  
the table, the game is yet to start, the  
place is packed but not in a way that you can't move around.

Me "hey boys, how are you guys doing" I say fist bumping them  
and they are looking at me like I am crazy

Mandla "and then wena, what's with the glow"

Vusi "only new pussy can get him this excited" I laugh

Me "gentle man no, this one is not just pussy no" they laugh

Mandla "who are you fucking Steve man"

Me "it's not fucking man, it's called making love" they burst out  
laughing

Vusi "who the hell is this girl making you crazy"

Mandla "what do you even know about love, Mr Grab and smash"

Me "guys I am really in love" I say pouring a drink

Vusi "man hoe who is this woman" I smile and pull out my phone and find a picture of Olivia and I"

Me "guys meet Mrs Me" I say handing them my phone, the shock on their faces

Vusi "this is Olivia, man what? When did this all happen"

Me "it happened brother it happened" I say smiling

Vusi "on the reals though, you too are together?"

Me "that is correct"

Mandla "are you sure man or her pussy just confusing you"

Me "I thought we don't disrespect the ladies of the house"

Vusi "you serious bafo, you in love"

Me "and it feels so damn good man" I say and sip on my drink

Mandla "I never thought I will live to see this day"

Me "I love her but it seems like she isn't feeling the same"

Vusi "why do you say that"

Me "each time I tell her how I feel man she quickly changes the



subject, she doesn't even want us to

make this official, I feel she is just using me for sex" they sigh  
and I gulp down my drink

Vusi "I don't know exactly what happened, but Mercy once told  
me Olivia lost a boyfriend she loved

after he hurt her so bad, she is still not over that maybe" I sigh

Me "I just want to love her that's all really"

Mandla "then make her understand, tell her, make her listen to  
you"

Me "I try each time we are together Power mfethu"

Vusi "then try harder bafo, I have never heard you say you love  
a woman and it is nice to see you like

this. fight for her, make it hard for her to not fall for you too"

Mandla "Mavusana is right ntwana" I nod

Me "I hear you guys I will do exactly that, I love her. she is all I  
ever think about" Vusi refills our glasses smiling like a lunatic

Vusi "to finding love" we toast and get ready to watch the game

Gadafi

Ntombi has been helping me around the house, she comes in 3 times a week and she ensures that my meals for the entire week are prepared; I feel like I have a wife, difference is I don't see her everyday nor sleep with her in my arms. She decided to come today to do my laundry and clean my bedroom since she couldn't the last time she was in, she had to go apply at culinary school. I am falling deeper and deeper in love with her, her beauty, innocence her mentality. She is everything and more. I went out to get us some food, I bought everything I thought she might like. I get back to the house after leaving for an entire hour and the woman is done and waiting for me in the lounge looking like the woman of the house, I smile to myself

Me "hey I am back" she smiles

Her "with so much food though" she laughs

Me "I didn't know what you like so here is it" she smiles and I place the things on the table and make my way to the kitchen to get plates and glasses.

Me "here we go, lets dig in"

Her "you didn't have to buy this you know I would have gladly cooked for you" I smile

Me "I know Ntombi but you work too hard I didn't want to add to that"

Her "thank you bhuti" I roll my eyes

Me "can you please stop calling me that please"

Her "what should I call you then"

Me "what everyone else calls me, Gadafi"

Her "that is a weird name" he laughs

Me "I know trust me" she smiles and I am just taken

Her "so what is your name, like your real name, the one your parents gave you" I sigh and look at her  
straight in the eyes

Me "my parents named me Tebogo. Tebogo Phoolo"

Her "you have such a beautiful name and you decided to call yourself Gadafi" I laugh

Me "that is my street name"

Her "okay Tebogo" she says with a Zulu accent and I felt like asking her to say it over and over again

Me "you are beautiful Ntombi do you know that"

Her "thank you" she says looking down I am not sure if she is blushing or what, I cup her face and make

sure she looks at me in the eyes, I feel drawn to her, I am lost in her gaze, I would stare in those pretty

eyes for hours, cruising in the possibilities in my head. She is perfection, I want her, I need her. I bring

my face to hers and kiss her soft thick lips and she doesn't respond, I continue until I feel her lip going

with my rhythm, I use my other hand to pull her to me and she moans and I swear my world is spinning

right now Fuck. I squeeze her waist and she pulls out and quickly stands up

Her "I am sorry bhuti but we can't do this"

Me "why not Ntombi, we are adults and we are both single"

Her "I am sorry but I will not be able to do this" she turns and walks away

Me "Ntombi wait, please don't go please" she doesn't acknowledge me. shit shit shit Gadafi that was

too fucken soon damn, now she probably thinks I am some psycho and pervert.

Have a great night guys

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

Chapter 84 (not edited)

NTOMBI

I just had to get out of that place quickly, Bhuti is a great man, he is successful and all but what is it that

he sees in me, I am a broken woman, I am damaged goods at least that is what the king used to tell. He

made it clear that no sane man will ever want a woman that has graced another man's bed, he made it

sound like I willingly gave myself to him, and King Mthetho is not a good man, the villagers might see

him as the savior but he is a monster, I started working at the palace straight after matric and he started

giving me strange compliments, I was very uncomfortable and my life took the wrong turn when the

chief maid assigned me to be one of his maids and that is when

he started going unspeakable things to  
me, I remember the first night he took my virginity he got off  
me and started getting dressed, and told  
me to not say a word to anyone about this, he laughed and said  
imagine how I would ruin my life, that  
who will believe me instead of him the great noble King that  
puts his people first, and he was right that  
man is loved by the villagers he is their alpha and Omega, so  
when mama Lungile was running I knew I  
had to run with her, she was my saving grace, I was tired of  
being that old man's slave. I know that  
where he is he is looking for us I just pray bab'Jola says nothing  
to give him a trail of where we are.

When Bhuti touched me like that I enjoyed it but thoughts of  
the King came flooding in my head I just  
had to run, I never want to remember that man. I got outside  
the house and I felt myself relax when  
fresh air filled my lungs, I stood there taking in in, and I felt him  
from behind me, I close my eyes and  
tears came involuntarily, he turned me around so I can face him.  
When he saw the tears on my face I

register guilt and panic on his face

Him "please don't cry Ntombi, I am sorry I shouldn't have done that"

Me "don't apologise bhuti, it's not your fault" I see that this bhuti thing is annoying him, but he lets it

slide and looks at me straight in the eyes like he is searching for the truth

Him "then why are you crying"

Me "it is nothing really, I am fine" he sighs

Him "you stormed out of the house, I find you crying and you say it's nothing. Ntombi people don't just

cry for nothing so please talk to me"

Me "it is not something I wish to share Tebogo"

Him "talking helps you know" I smile

Me "If I tell you I swear you won't look at me the same way" she shakes his head

Him "nothing will ever make me see you differently, I will always see perfection when I lay my eyes on

you, I am sure you have noticed that I am madly falling for you

Ntombi, even a blind man can sense my  
vibe" I feel something skip in my heart

Me "you don't understand Tebogo"

Him "then talk to me so I understand baby" why is he so  
stubborn, he want me to start loving him and

then I tell him the truth and he leaves me because I was raped  
repeatedly by that man

Me "please don't do this please" I let my tears fall and he wipes  
them with his thumb

Him "I never want to see you cry, let me make you my queen, let  
me make you happy, allow mw

remove all the pain, disappointment and sorrows in your life, let  
me Love you, I know I don't know these

things but I know I will try my best" he says with so much  
passion but I just can't really

Me "please drive me home " hi face falls, and I feel my heart  
break, it's better this way, we don't have

anything invested as yet, he will get over it quickly and so will  
this crush of mine

Him "oh okay, I will go get my keys" he says and walks back to  
the house, a part of me wants to call him



back so I can tell him to love me but I just can't, he doesn't deserve a worthless woman like me.

FIONA

Everything is set, I have finished strategizing on my plan and I must say it is a brilliant one, plus I have my

smoking gun, Mercy, she will testify against her father and she is one credible witness, Razor is not

getting out of this one, he is already old so a sentence of 15 to 20 years will mean he will die in prison. I

woke up early and my daughter decided that she wants to have breakfast in Cape Town, so we flew

there in the morning and we also did some little shopping, I sure missed this life, we just touched down

Jozi and we left our car at the airport, we got in and went straight to the police station, I could see that

Mercy was panicking, I just hope she doesn't pull out on me coz I will freak on her. We get there and ask

for Detective Moloj, the man has been chasing Razor for years and if it's someone I know will investigate

this case like a mad man is him, he hates him with all his heart.  
The lady cop at the front desk disappears  
to call him, they both come back and he laughs as he sees me

Him "what the fuck, what is this resurrection day" I laugh

Me "oh detective you know I have 9 lives"

Him "and so does your husband" I smile

Me "actually he is on his 9th and he will be out after I tell you  
what I came back for" he laughs

Him "oh you got back and found out that he has gotten himself  
a young beautiful student Dr now you  
suddenly want to rat him out"

Me "detective, let's stop playing games you want Razor and I  
want him gone, I will give him to you on  
one condition though" he laughs

Him "I am listening" he folds his arms

Me "I want my identity back and he is all yours"

Him "let's hear first what you have for me and if the prosecutor  
finds it worth pursuing I will give you  
your identity Fiona" I smile

Me "the walls have ears can we talk somewhere more private"

Him "sure lets go to my office" we follow him

Me "thank you detective, remember the is a case of missing person from a few years ago, Jabulani

Radebe"

Him "I do Fiona and there is no progress in that case, the boy disappeared into thin air"

Me "that is because he is dead and Razor killed him and buried him" his eyes widened

Him "are you sure of what you are saying Fiona" I tell him where Jabu is buried and leave out the part

where I was having an affair with him, all I say is that he was cheating on Olivia and he knew that she

loved him and that she was mentally unstable and when Razor found out he killed him to keep Olivia

sane and to never know the truth of what he was doing.

Him "oh this is good Fiona this is brilliant, I finally have that bastard, he might not pay for everything he

has done but murder is enough for me" I smile

Me "icing on the cake, my daughter will testify and so will I" he laughs in total excitement and punches

the air as a sign of victory

Him "I will go talk to the prosecutor right away, keep this to yourself and I will involve as little people as possible you husband had eyes and ears everywhere"

Me "certainly detective" we stand up and my daughter is not herself I know she is feeling guilty I will

just remind her that Razor loves Olivia more than her and I will have her back in corner

Him "I will keep you posted, leave me your number please" I write it down for him

Me "bye then" we walk out and the joy in my heart knowing that that bastard is going down.

RAZOR

I think it is high time Olivia gets a boyfriend so I don't share my woman with her, no man, I hate the fact

that I even want my baby girl to be with some stupid boy who will sleep with her and shit, but it will

keep her busy, she will go to the mall and parks with that boy and I will have Soft all to myself. I don't

think I can wait any longer to make Siza my wife, I know she hates cohabiting but because we are addicted to each other we do it anyway. I wanted her to finish her qualification before I ask her to marry me and before I knock her up, don't look at me like that, I need Sizakale's children at least 2, I won't live forever but at least she will have our kids to remind her of me and the most amazing love we shared. Okay I have been grumpy this week, from having sex every day to none for an entire week is torture, I just miss her, I was planning on going to see her at the flat but Gadafi called and said he is on his way and he didn't sound okay and I knew my G needs me, I will see the Queen later on the day.

Speaking of the devil he walks in and goes straight to my whisky and pours himself a glass and gulps it down in one go, damn he is really not okay

Him "something big happened to her man, I need to find out what it man"

Me "what are we talking about my brother" he sighs

Him "I told her I love her, I told her to give me a chance man, but do you know what she said"

Me "tell me G"

Him "she fucken said take me home" shit his ego is bruised

Me "just that?"

Him "no ma she told me that I wouldn't understand"

Me "and from that we know something is going on with her"

Him "exactly, I kiss her and she kissed me back she even moaned to my touch but quickly pulled out like

she was remembering something, man she was even crying  
Razor mfethu man" I sigh

Me "shit something is not okay" he pours another glass

Him "is this how fucken love is, you see her cry and you ready to bomb this entire planet just to know

what is hurting her" I laugh

Me "trust me this is nothing man, you are going to go insane, but love is beautiful I tell you"

Him "what do I do, you have been with Siza for the longest time, in fact where is she will know what to

do" I roll my eyes

Me "she is Braamfontein, Olivia took her"

Him "sucks sharing your woman with your daughter huh" I smile

Me "definitely. Back to Ntombi, I think you should talk to Lungile she will know what is wrong with your woman"

Him "you are right man"

Me "I know I am" he laughs

Him "you fucken corky you mother fvker"

Me "I know right" I say raising my glass

Him "let's go grab something at the taxi rank"

Me "good idea" we both stand up and walk out of my study to the car.

SIZWE

Thato has been complaining that Vicky has started making her stay in the apartment unbearable, so I

took a decision, she will be moving in with me and Thandiwe until she finds a house she wants for her

and our kids, yes I am planning on having more children with her. I was sitting on her bed in the apartment looking at her while she parks, most of her staff is in the car out I hired a moving car to help her take her things home.

Her "baby really I won't mind staying at a hotel till we find our own house" I shake my head

Me "I am paying lobola next week and no wife of mine will live in a hotel like we are hiding"

Her "I just don't want to make your wife uncomfortable in her own home, I took her husband and now you want me to take her space" I sigh

Me "baby I am also your husband please"

Her "let me stay with your mother then"

Me "Thato you and Thandiwe need to get to know each other, the kids need to know that they have two mommies now" she sighs

Her "I understand love"

Me "the real estate agent will get back to us soon as she finds a house that meets your requirements"



Her "I hope it's soon" I laugh

Me "finish parking, I promised my son to play with him tonight"

Her "I hope he likes me" I smile

Me "he will love you baby I promise" she finishes and the movers take them to the car, on our way out

we meet with Vicky

Vicky "and then what is going on"

Me "my fiancé is moving out and moving home with me"

Vicky "what, bitch you need to give 3 months notice, where the fuck do you think I will get money to for rent" she roars

Me "firstly, you don't refer to my woman as a bitch, and don't worry we know it has been hard to find a rich man to milk so we paid three months rent, relax" I see he relief

Vicky "get the fuck out of my apartment"

Me "with pleasure, baby let's go" I take Thato's hand

Vicky "also be ready because I will also come as his 3rd wife bitch" Thato laughs

Her "dream on nana" we get out and head home. Here is to the

life of a polygamous man, I hope

everything goes well, Thandiwe has to accept Thato, I love her.

Happy Sunday guys

SIZAS' TRIBULSTIONS

CHAPTER 85 (NOT EDITED)

THANDIWE

I decided to do something nice for my husband, maybe if I try to do different things he will not get bored

with me, so I cooked us dinner and I bought very sexy lingerie and set us up with a nice romantic picnic

in the balcony of our bedroom, I do hope he will like it. I took the kids to his mother, you know even

though she is a complete bitch to me she loves her grandchildren that I know and I will never doubt it.

she laughed at me when I told her that I want some quality time with my husband but I don't care, I will

make my marriage work no matter what. I hear the front door

open and I know it is my husband, I  
quickly fix myself so I look proper, the cleavage is another level  
if he doesn't find this sexy I don't know, I  
go to the corridor to meet him and the shock on my face, I  
quickly cover my exposed body and he is  
looking away like he isn't allowed to see me, his wife naked, he  
instructs the man he came with to take  
the boxes and suitcases upstairs to the vacant bedroom  
towards the left. I am so embarrassed, they  
finish quickly and they exit leaving us alone

Him "I am sorry I should have mentioned that I am coming with  
people"

Me "it's okay, but whose things are those?" he sighs and comes  
close to me, he pulls me by my waist

and kiss me so passionately, and for the first time I feel like he  
loves me. he pulls out and looks at me

straight in the eyes. And he sighs again

Him "you are the mother of my children and I care for you  
deeply, it was never my intension to hurt you

maTha, I hope we learn to live well together, I really need her

Thandiwe and I hope you understand this

please maka Nkanyiso" I start to panic

Me "what is going on Dlomo" he kisses me again

Him "I am coming just now" he exits and I am left there with a thousand questions, why is he so humble

all of a sudden, what bomb is he about to drop on me, he comes back and he is followed by Vicky's

friend Thato, the woman he wants to bring in as a second wife, I laugh coz wow

Me "I just hope this is not what I think it is Sizwe" I half scream

Him "let me explain please mkami (my wife)" I laugh

Me "I know you didn't bring this whoe into my house, I want her gone right now Sizwe" he quickly

comes to me and holds my hands

Him "let's all sit down as adults and talk about, we will all be a family soon please baby" I let my tears

fall and he kisses my hands and wipes the tears with his thumbs.

I look at Thato and she is looking down

in shame

Me "fine Sizwe" I am the first to head to the lounge" they follow

me one after the other and he sits next

to me and takes my hands

Him "baby Thato will be staying with us just for a while, my mother thought it would be best if the two

of you get to know each other as sister wives, and I agree with her, after some time I will get her a house

too, it is just so the kids get used to her too" I laugh that is why that bitch he calls mother laughed at me

Me "why are you doing this to me Sizwe, why her why" he tightens his hold on my hands

Him "I love her Thandiwe" I was hoping that will not be the answer

Me "and what about me"

Him "I care for you deeply, you are the mother of the two most important people in the world" the

sharp pain hits me in the heart, he loves her but only cares for me because I am the mother of his kids,

wow just wow, I stand up and look at him before leaving. And standing behind the wall

Him "she will come around my love, let's go to bed you had a long day" what about me? I close my eyes

Her "I hope so Sizwe. No please sleep with her tonight please love" he agrees and I confirm he loves

her, he never listens to anyone but his mother, he has never been this gentle with me and I am hurt

SIZA

I decided to go sleep at my baby's place tonight, he didn't sound okay over the phone, but I guess it is

the pressure on going back to work, trials are continuing and it is all chaos, I haven't registered and my

classes with commence first week February so I still have a little time before I get busy. I got to the

house early around 10am and started cooking, nothing much, just steak, Greek salad, onion rings and

fries. I decided to set up our bedroom into a spa, I got the bed and all full body massages products. I

decided to just wear his T-shirt with no underwear. And walk bare foot. I check my watch and it is 17:00

I know he is almost home, and just on time the bedroom door opens and he walks in, his face lights up as he sees me

Me "hey baby" I say rushing into his arms and he takes me and squeezes tightly and kisses my shoulder repeatedly

Him "I didn't expect to see you here, I have missed you so much my love" I smile

Me "didn't see my car in the garrage"

Him "no I parked outside, wanted to change and go see you" I blush and he kisses me fully on the lips

Me "I love you" he smiles

Him "I have been longing to hear your voice say that"

Me "well I love you sthandwa sam"

Him "o ratwa kenna mosadi waka" I giggle, he places me down and looks at the mini spa we have

Him "and then?" I laugh

Me "I am treating you to a back scrub and full body massage love then I am feeding you food and then

we talk about what is bothering you today and I make love to you" he smiles at the last point

Him "make love to me huh" I laugh and nod

Me "what would you prefer to start with Mr. Motaung sir"

Him "honestly baby I want to caught out first" I nod and take his hand and lead him to bed and we sit

and I take his hands into mine

Me "talk to your Soft" he gives me a side smile

Him "I miss my daughter Siza, I miss Mercy so much, I need to find her and reassure her that dad still

loves her and always has, I am done been mad at my baby girl, I am removing the ultimatum it is time

we start on a clean slate babe, but this time with me being her dad and her the kid, not throwing money

her, I just don't know how to go on about it" I smile at him

Me "I am so proud of you love, well firstly find the real estate agent that sold the house for her, maybe

it is the same one that found the new place for them and talk to her pour your heart to her like you are

doing to me, I totally understand you want what is best for your daughter, so how about you ask your

PA to teach her what she does and promote her then give Mercy her position, introduce her to your job

and make her see that corporate is not a bad environment, once



she falls for it advice her to apply for an LLB degree then help and encourage her and then the rest will be history then maybe with time she and Olivia will fix their relationship and you will have both your babies back” I see him sheared tear and I kiss it away.

Him “what could I be without your love and wisdom, my boys will be blessed to have a mom like you”

Me “those boys of yours will kill me, but the fact that they will be a product of our love is everything, I hope they look like you” he laughs

Him “they will mommy, I love you Soft”

Me “yeah yeah, get your ass up so I can feed you” he laughs and stands up taking off his clothes

Him “what did you cook”

Me “nothing complicated, take a quick shower and you will find me down stairs, I need to set the table”

Him “yes ma’am, I hope you will be the perfect masseuse” I wink at him and walk out

## GADAFI

I took it upon myself to drive to Alberton, I need to talk to Lungile about Ntombi, she didn't just cry for nothing, something deep in me tells me that something horrible happened to her, I need to know what it is coz it is making her block me out, she won't allow me to love her because of whatever she is going through, if I find out what it is I might fix it and maybe it will be a start of our beautiful union. I used to think love is over rated but it is clear that these village girls were meant to come and love my brother and I and turn us into weaklings, I am not complaining, it is just that I finally understand why Razor left it all for love, it is a risk worth taking, these girls are young and at any moment they might meet boys their age and forget about us but that doesn't seem to bother Razor I guess I will get there soon as I know that Ntombi loves me too. I made sure that I come on the day she has to go finalize her staff at the culinary school. I am with Lungile in the lounge and she poured

me a cup of tea and I don't drink this shit

maybe if it had whisky or brandy but because I need her help I will pretend to drink it till I get all the answers

Her "so what brings you over"

Me "I need to talk to you about Ntombi" she laughs

Her "what about her" I sigh

Me "I am going to be straight with you here, I am in love with that woman and I have a feeling that she

feels the same way about me too, we kissed but she was too quick to pull away and she ran and I don't

know why but I found her crying, she told me I wouldn't understand, I need her Lungile so I need you to

be honest with me, what is going on with her please"

Her "I don't think it is my business to tell you Gadafi" I sigh

Me "I know but it was not my business to help you with your husband either but I did it anyway, can you

extend the same curtsey to me" I see he shocked, I didn't want to use that card but I am desperate here

Her "so this is payback time?" I sigh

Me "I am sorry I didn't mean to blackmail you emotionally but Lungile I am sure you have eyes you must

see how crazy I am with that girl please help me help her so she can allow me love her like she deserves

to" she sips on her tea with her eyes fixed on me

Her "I love that girl like she is my own, she is innocent humble and she has been through a lot in her life

I swear if you hurt her Gadafi I will squash your balls" fuck I can't even laugh coz she is serious

Me "I wont I swear, but I wont be perfect, I will make mistakes here and there" she smiles

Her "Good coz as much as she is trying too hard to hide she has fallen in love with you too" I don't know

but I want to dance to celebrate what I just heard

Me "don't play with me like that Lungile"

Her "you really want to know what happened to her?" I nod vigorously

Me "I need to know so I can help her please" she takes a deep breath

Her "she suffered almost the same fate as my daughter Thandiwe, in the hands of the King's feel my

blood boil, fuck, how dare he, I don't know him but I will find him  
and he will regret the day he thought

it was okay to violate woman like that, I don't like man who  
abuse woman, in any way I hate and he will

regret it

Me "give me his name please"

Her "Mthetho Zondi" I nod

Me "thank you Lungile"

Her "help her, help her Gadafi convince her to see a  
psychologist maybe she will listen to you"

Me "I will don't worry" I put the cup on the coffee table and  
leave her house boiling with rage

VUSI

I got a call from Mandlas mother informing me that my mother  
is not in good health, apparently she

hasn't been for a while now and she really wants to see me, I  
don't know how to feel about this, I vowed

to never see my mother, she was my biggest downfall, I lost my

child because of her and she has been  
advising me wrongly for most of my life and like a fool I fell for  
that, but how could I have known I mean  
mothers are supposed to be your biggest cheerleaders there  
ones that will never mislead you. MaNtuli  
sounded like she was worried, so I know that it is bad and as  
much as I hate here right I am scared I  
mean she is still my mother and all. I even left work early  
because I couldn't concentrate on my work  
and luckily I didn't have court today just paperwork. My woman  
walks in and she throws herself on the  
couch, she must have had a crazy shit coz she doesn't even kiss  
me hello, to distract myself I go and kiss  
her and then take off her shoes and give a foot rub

Her "oh yes baby right there" she mourns enjoying what I am  
doing to her

Me "long day" she sighs

Her "it was too much baby"

Me "I am sorry love, I will go prepare you a bath and order  
something online, what do you feel like

having”

Her “anything baby you pick please”

Me “okay love” I say coolly

Her “is everything okay”

Me “no my babe, I got a call from the village apparently my mother is sick and she is asking to see me

ASAP”

Her “I hope you have already asked for leave” I sigh

Her “I don’t know if I want to see her” she takes a deep breath

Her “I know a lot has happened because of her but please think about it clearly”

Me “okay I will sleep on it”

Her “that is all I ask for babe”

Me “okay let me go get that shower ready then” she smiles and I get up going to the bathroom

OLIVIA

Him “this is just sex to you right”

Me "I don't understand why you want to label this, can't we just enjoy each other" he laughs

Him "because I am just your toy right"

Me "God why are you acting holly on me Steve I mean you are a man hoe" oh shit I shouldn't have

Him "oh really Olivia is that all I am" I can feel the pain in his voice

Me "I am sorry babe, I didn't mean to say" oh fuck it Olivia, you and your big ass mouth

Him "no thank you Olivia for telling me how you see me really"

Me "I am sorry love it was just a slip on the tongue I swear" he gets up from his bed and starts getting

dressed I feel really bad

Him "leave my key under the flower pot outside the front door" he says putting on his shoes

Me "baby please lets talk about this please"

Him "there is nothing to talk about Olivia"

Me "you know that is not true" he looks at me and laughs and takes his car keys and wallet on the

pedestal and he walks out, I am left ashamed, why did I do this fuck I am such a fuck up. What is he



wants nothing to do with me after this, I feel my tears on my cheeks. I love him why cant I just admit to that right now I just hurt him for nothing, I am such a fool.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 86 (NOT EDITED)

#### GADAFI

I am boiling with anger, mad at how a man feels that it is okay to violate woman in that way, I know I am

no saint but I could never do that to a woman, I could never take her soul like that so it disturbs me a lot

thinking of how a man pleasures himself while the woman under him is crying and begging him to stop,

how do you continue to thrust through those painful sobs, man like that fucken King and Mthetho

should all be burned alive. I want to find Ntombi and kiss her pain away but I am too mad. I have been

driving around this damn city in circles trying to think of a way to make him pay for hurting Ntombi and

every other woman out there we don't know. I find myself at Razors place, maybe he will help me come up with something, I get inside the house and find him and Sizakele cuddling and watching some movie in the cinema. I clear my throat and they look back at me.

Siza "oh hey there muntu ka Ntombi" her man laughs

Me "muntu ka Razor hello" I say making my way to the vacant sofa

Razor "G my man, what's good" I sigh

Me "nothing is, I need your help bafo"

Razor "okay I am all ears" I look at Siza, afraid to talk coz I am not to say this in front of her coz the last time we dealt with her father she got really traumatized

Siza "not to worry, I need to leave anyway, I got an emergency text from Olivia"

Razor "you are coming back though right?" she laughs

Siza "I don't know love, I will call you" she kisses him fully on the lips

Razor "I love you" she blushes and looks at me

Siza "G, I will see you ne, and you two mustn't get into any trouble"

Me "yes ma'am" she blows Razor a kiss and walks out closing the door behind her

Razor "so what's going on brother"

Me "that fucken King raped her man, he turned her into his sex slave Razor man" I see him clench his

jaw and tighten his fist

Razor "fuck, what the hell is wrong with those village fucks"

Me "I just want to kill all of them right now" he shakes his head

Razor "no don't do that, don't show Ntombi that side of you first, remember you are still trying to win

her over" I sigh

Me "then what do we do, we can't just let him get away with it, and prison won't be enough for that

fuck" he nods in agreement

Razor "he is regarded to be the noble King so lets take that from him, his pride and reputation, we

expose him to his people and then we take his manhood, chop it off completely and let him live a

miserable life, and most woman will feel safer knowing that one pervert is disarmed”

Me “okay I think I like this”

Razor “good then, but talk to Ntombi first and find out what kind of justice she wants for herself, we

don’t want her thinking she escaped one monster and found herself in the arms of another”

Me “when did you become so wise” he laughs

Razor “over 2 years ago when this other Zulu girl turned my world upside down” I laugh with him

Me “whatever muti these village girls are using is strong”

Razor “oh if it’s muti that she is using then she better not stop”  
I smile

Me “thank you brother”

Razor “you know I got you back G” we fist bump and share a side hug

STEVE

What Olivia said to me really hurt I won’t lie, why is she

shutting me out I mean I am in love with her but  
all she wants from me is sex, It really sucks being used like that  
but I guess she is my karma, I mean how  
many woman did I use and discard in my life, maybe she was  
send to give me a taste of my own  
medicine and I must confess it is bitter very bitter, after I left  
her at my house I needed to feel needed  
and respected, wanted and cherished so I went to some girl who  
studies at Wits, she has always wanted  
me to make things official with her but I didn't and still don't  
feel her to that level, she is a fucken good  
girl, she used to cook for me, I would bring my laundry and she  
would do it no complains and I just  
wasn't feeling her like that, she loves me and I don't want her, I  
love Olivia but she doesn't love me, the  
world is funny hey. I find myself outside her res. I am looking at  
her coming to sign me in with security,  
she is beautiful and maybe if I learn to love her we can be happy.  
She comes in the car with the most  
beautiful smile plastered across her face, she is always so happy  
to see me and I feel like mutherfucker for treating her this way.

Her "hey stranger, I have missed you" I smile at her

Me "I am sorry for disappearing on you, work has been hectic eish"

Her "you know that is a lie Steve but that's okay" fuck no, what am I doing

Me "I am sorry" she nods and brings her face close to mine and pecks my lips

Her "we can go in, I was busy cooking" I started the engine and we drive in and park then head to her

luckily her roommate is not here

Me "where is your friend" I ask to make conversation

Her "she is not yet back from the holidays" I nod

Me "oh okay, did you enjoy being home" she laughs

Her "yeah it was nice, though I always waited for your calls and for you to keep to your promise to

actually drive to my area to see me" eish I am such a flop

Me "I am sorry Mpho" she comes and sits next to me and my phone decided to vibrate, I take it out of

my pocket and it is Olivia again, she has been calling like crazy, I

leave this one to ring unanswered too. I

see her giving me a side eye and I put my phone back into my pocket. There is awkward silence for a while

till she decides to sit on top of me kissing me like there is no tomorrow, she is grinding down on me,

rubbing her body to mine, I move my hands to her ass and start squeezing it and she is moaning and in

that minute, Olivia's face appeared in my head and I immediately stop

Her "no baby please don't stop, I have missed you so much please" I sigh

Me "I am sorry I can't do this Mpho" I get her off me and stand up

Her "bathong Steve, you have never said no before what's wrong babe, you don't find me attractive

anymore?" I shake my head no

Me "of course you are sexy, just that I can't continue with this" she stands up

Her "I it because of the Olivia that just called" I sigh

Me "I am sorry" she rubs her eyes

Her "I see Steve, you won't love me but" I stop her

Me "don't do that to yourself, you deserve better trust me I am not good for you, Mpho you s=deserve

so much better, to make you feel better, I love her but she is only using me for sex" she laughs and

wipes her tears

Her "at least we are on the same boat, we both love someone who doesn't love us back" I nod. I must

stop this nonsense and try to make Olivia see that I love her, I promised her exclusivity and that is what I

will give her; she will love me eventually I just need to be patient

Me "you will find someone who will treat you like the queen that you are" I kiss her forehead and walk

out, wondering whether to call Olivia or just take this night to myself to think everything through

Olivia

I fucken messed up, now he won't even take my calls, but do I really blame him for the way he is acting

right now, I hurt that man, he has always made his intentions about me clear and trust m I feel the same



way about him I am just scared to put myself out there, love hurts a lot and I am not ready to deal with heartbreaks and disappointments, I know I should have not gotten myself involved with him but he makes me feel happy he makes my confidence levels rise so high I start feeling like I the only girl in the world, but still. I left his house coz I knew he won't be coming back; I will give him time and let him reach out when he is ready. I just hope he will still feel the same way. The door opens and Siza walks in

Her "what is the emergency Olivia, I had to sacrifice snuggles with my person to rush here" I sigh

Me "I messed up real bad Siza yoh"

Her "is this about Steve"

Me "yes it is" she rolls her eyes

Her "what did you do this time"

Me "I called him a man whore and said I just wanted sex from him" she closes her eyes

Her "okay honestly this is becoming boring" I gasp for air

Me "Siza please" she shakes her head

Her "no Olivia, Steve might have had his own share of whoering but when it came to you he made his

feelings clear from the get go, you are the undecided one here and you are toying with his feelings, you

are trying so hard not to get heartbroken but in the process of doing that you are breaking someone

else's heart, so tell me is that fair. If you are not ready to be with him let him go Olivia" I am just looking

at her dumbfounded

Me "you are right and I am sorry"

Her "I am not the one you should be apologizing to here"

Me "he won't answer my calls Siza"

Her "how about you leave him be till you figure out what you want"

Me "it's him that I want"

Her "still, take a few days to think about it more" I sigh

Me "thank you for being straight with me"

Her "I am your best friend it's my job to Liv" I blow her a kiss

Me "you are the best babe"

Her "I know hey. So get your ass up and go do some touch ups I am taking you out to eat"

Me "okay give me 15 minutes"

Her "you have 10minutes left. We need to beet traffic" I quickly get off the couch to my bedroom

RAZOR

Gadafi and I decided to braai some meat and have beers, it has been a while since we just had a young chillas and he kept me up to speed with what has been going on the underworld. Some days I miss it I won't lie but leaving the game was worth it really. I have peace in my life and I don't constantly have to look over my shoulder, I never believed that I could survive without the cartel but look at me, I just hope G will also decide to let it, I mean we have acquired so much wealth, so much money to take care of generations and generations.

Him "I am telling you man, Italy doesn't have a leader right now"

Me "so Bishop really had stroke" he laughs

Him "yeah he did, I guess all those hotties he filled in his house couldn't keep him young"

Me "maybe they are the cause of that stress, the man has 8 wives all under 30 years and his sons are in

their mid 30s, he can never be able to satisfy each and every one of those woman, maybe his sons

stepped in for him and he saw all of it happening and boom stroke" he laughs

Him "that might not be far from the truth"

Me "I am telling you G" he laughs again and we hear the door bell, a minute later my house keeper

comes in with Detective Moloji and another cop in uniform

Me "oh boy what is this clown doing in my house" he laughed

Moloji "oh Razor still cocky I see"

Me "old habits die hard"

Him "so what can we do for puppet" Gadafi says

Moloji "you are still his errand boy Gadafi nc nc nc nc" he says

that to prove G

Him "I will fuck you up boy" he says charging to him and I quickly hold him back

Moloi "oh please do, I would love to arrest you for assaulting an officer of the law"

Me "okay enough chit chat, what the hell do you want"

Moloi "oh yeah that, I have a warrant for you arrest"

Me "what? What the fuck did I do"

Moloi "Molemo Motaung you are under arrest for the murder of Jabu Radebe, you have the right to

remain silent for anything you say or do will be used against you in the court of law, you have a right to

and you have the right to an attorney if you cannot afford one the state will provide you with one" fuck

fuck fuck, this has fucken Fiona written all over it, I look at Gadafi and he has figured it out too

Moloi "cuff him" he says to the other cop and he comes to me and puts the cuffs on

Me "G call Vusi tell him to meet me at the station, and please don't tell Soft and Liv just yet" I firstly

need to find out how much they know and what they have on

me then I will have an idea of how much  
shit I am in. I must give it to my ex she got me and I didn't even  
see it coming.

Him "okay, I am right behind you"

Me "sure brother" they walk out with me and I get in the back  
of the police van trying to calculate my  
next move. This is bad real bad, this fucker has been trying to  
nail me for years and this right here is a late Christmas present  
for him.

Have a great weekend my loves

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 87 (NOT EDITED)

THATO

I just got home from my nail bar, I needed to get my nails done  
and check on how everything is doing,

and I am pleased that it is still the best and we are getting really  
good reviews. There is no sign of

anyone in the house, I spoke to my fiancé earlier and he mentioned that he will be going to see his mother and uncles about our lobola since it is happening this weekend, I also need to pack and go to Mafikeng coz I need to be there. I just wonder if Thandiwe and the kids left with him coz it is really quiet here, I changed into a comfortable outfit and decided that I should prepare dinner for all of us, I pour myself a glass of wine and start with the cooking, I am startled by a voice behind me

Her "who gave you the permission to cook in MY kitchen" I jump and scream a bit

Me "oh my God Thandiwe you scared me, I thought I was alone"

Her "well you are not, I asked you a question"

Me "I just wanted to cook for everyone"

Her "I can cook for my husband and children" I sigh

Me "I am sorry I didn't mean to offend you, I just wanted to do something nice" she laughs

Her "really you want to do something nice for me and my children"

Me "yes I do" she laughs some more and makes her way towards me

Her "the only nice thing you can do for me is to call off this joke you and my husband are doing"

Me "I am sorry Thandiwe but I can't do that"

Her "why you can't give up your ATM" I shake my head no

Me "of course not, I love our husband Thandiwe"

Her "my husband, MINE Thato, he is not your husband and he will never be"

Me "I am sorry for hurting you like this but I am getting married to him traditionally this Saturday

because I love him" she laughs

Her "you are breaking up my family, you are taking my husband away from me"

Me "I am not I swear, if that is what I wanted to do, I would have asked him to divorce but I didn't

instead I agreed to be his second wife"

Her "so what do you expect me to do, worship the ground that you walk on?"

Me "no I don't want that"



Her "oh but you do coz you just pointed out how you didn't want a divorce so he can be fully yours"

Me "Thandiwe please" she raised her hands

Her "you are nothing but a cheap hoe and that is what you will always be sis"

Me "I know I hurt you, but you don't know me so please don't insult me" she laughs

Her "this is my house bitch I can insult you all I want"

Me "it is equally Sizwe's house and he happens to be my fiancé, but not to worry I will tell my estate

agent to make it quick so I can move out of your hair"

Her "good you do that" I nod and try to continue cooking

Her "let this be the last time you get in my kitchen and attempt to cook my food for my husband and my

kids do we understand each other"

Me "loud and clear" I respond and she turns around and leaves. I sigh and gulp down my glass

RAZOR

I have been in this interrogation room listening to this down  
Moloi go on and on and on, I just want to  
stab him in the eye with the same pen in his hand and believe it  
is taking everything in me to stop myself  
from doing that, he is asking everything there is about Jabu and  
you would swear he will stop since I am  
not saying anything but that just seems to fuel him more, I  
check the time on the wall clock and I have  
been here for an entire hour. Vusi should be here any minute,  
the boy is a brilliant lawyer, after all he learnt from the best, ME.

Him "you are going away for a very long time Motaung"

Me "okay" I say

Him "just plead guilty, don't waste the states resources with a  
trial that you will never win coz the  
evidence against you is strong, no Judge in their right mind will  
give you anything but 20 years"

Me "if you say so"

Him "you can be calm all you want but I know deep down you  
are shit scared" he laughs and the door  
opens with Vusi walking in

Vusi "okay stop talking to my client and get the hell out"

Him "nc nc nc, little boy you seriously gonna take this case, why are you wasting your time and possibly

taint your reputation, he is guilty and he is going to jail for a long time"

Vusi "thank you for the short story now get out" he gets up from the chair and walks out

Me "what do we know" I ask Vusi as he takes the seat Molo was occupying

Vusi "Mercy and her mother are the ones who are feeding that down and the prosecutor information, she will be taking the stand to testify against you"

Me "who will?"

Vusi "Mercy sir" I close my eyes feeling so hurt, how can she do this to me

Me "oh I see"

Vusi "I am sorry but I am going to need you to tell me what happened" I sigh

Me "Jabu was Olivia's boyfriend, he got her out of her depression and she was so in love with him, I took him like a son, I did everything for him, but he betrayed my

daughter and I in the worst possible way, he was sleeping with my wife so I killed him”

Vusi “okay she didn’t mention the affair to the police, that already gives us a whole in their case”

Me “okay that is good” I sigh

Vusi “tell me how you found out and the events that led you to killing him, everything that happened particularly that night” I nod and start narrating everything to him, leaving nothing out

Me “so yeah, do you think we have a chance”

Vusi “I am not going to lie, they have a murder weapon and it has your prints on it too and Mercy’s testimony will definitely hurt us”

Me “take everyone you need at the firm and come up with a good defense strategy, everything and anything you need contact Gadafi he will make it happen just get me the hell out of this”

Vusi “I am going to do everything in my power”

Me “I trust you Vusi, I will be available if you need any information or help” he nods and the door opens

Him "okay time is up for today, it is time you go see your cell and familiarize yourself with it coz it will be your home for the next 20 years" I stand up

Vusi "keep telling yourself that"

Me "I will see you tomorrow Vusi, get Gadafi to set everything for my stay"

Vusi "he was already on it when he left my place" I nod

Him "what the hell are you too talking about"

Me "non of your business Moloji, take me to my cell please"

MERCY

I won't lie I am scared, scared of what my father might do to me after he finds out what I did to me, the

minute I told the cops all the information about this Jabu case I declared myself his enemy and I know

very well how he deals with traitors, I feel so guilty. My other worry is Olivia, me and her are not on

good terms and when she finds this out she is going to hate me so much there will be no opportunity to

mend our relationship. I have been asking myself a lot of questions, wondering if I did the right thing allowing my mother to throw my father in jail. I hear her scream from the bedroom then laughs like evil, a minute later she comes out and the smile plastered on her face, she goes pass me to the kitchen and comes back with a bottle of champagne and two glasses

Her "oh we need to celebrate this my love"

Me "what is doing on"

Her "I just got off the phone with Moloï, and he tells me that Razor was arrested an hour ago"

I feel my heart beat so fast, oh God this means he knows that I betrayed him

Me "oh okay" she frowns and hands me a glass

Her "what's wrong Mookie" I sigh

Me "I am scared mama, he wont let this go easily he will come for us"

Her "do you trust me Mercy" I nod

Me "of course I do mama"

Her "then trust me to protect you from that evil man"

Me "how will you do that" she smiles

Her "after I get my identity back, I am going to divorce him and then get 50% of everything he owns, and

you and I know it is a lot. Once we get that, we get new identities and go live in a new country where he

will never get to us" I feel myself relax

Me "okay that is a good plan mama"

Her "relax my baby I thought of everything, we are okay I promise"

Me "thank you" we hug

Her "the only thing you should be worrying about right now is deciding which country we are moving to

and what name you will be using" I laugh

Me "so long as it has champagne and designer stores I am okay honey"

Her "that's my girl, now relax and let mommy worry about everything, okay my princess"

Me "you are the best Fiona" I hug her

Her "I have you baby how can I not be the best" I smile and sip

on my champagne

SIZWE

Ma "so how is polygamy"

Me "Thandiwe is having a hard time ma, Thato suggested I sleep with her and spend time with her so

she can see that she doesn't want to break our marriage" she laughs

Ma "I love this one. She is smart, reminds me of my younger self"

Me "I am aware of your fondness towards her"

Ma "she makes you happy too so she gets to have my vote, treat her like a queen"

Me "are you sure you don't like her coz she is making my wife shake mama" she laughs

Ma "okay maybe that too son" I shake my head and sip on my scotch

Me "I should get going mama, not yet comfortable leaving them all alone"



Ma "I would love to see their cat fight"

Me "mother no, they are your daughters in law my wives I don't want that I will give me stress"

Ma "just kidding, bring my grandbabies by tomorrow I miss the"  
I agree then leave

SIZA

I got back to the apartment with Olivia, we kind of had one too many to drink so I decided to sleep here

coz I don't want to be arrested for DUI. She has been crying for Steve the entire time, it is nice to see her

vulnerable, letting herself feel and have emotions, she has always had her guard up living like a robot. I

have been trying to call this man of mine but his phone just rings and goes to voicemail, I tried the

landline too but he is not picking up, I decide to try one more time and it goes straight to voicemail

Me "okay Molemo is really testing me now"

Her "what did my poor daddy do"

Me "he is not answering his damn phone Olivia"

Her "maybe he is already asleep"

Me "he never sleeps before we speak"

Her "oh okay, wait a bit maybe he will call back" I shake my head

Me "no I am not doing that, I am driving to his place now"

Her "you are drunk babe you know he will be angry with you for doing that" true

Me "I know but still, something is not right, he always picks up my calls no matter how busy he is"

Her "I know that but"

Me "no but I am out of here" I say putting my shoes back on and taking my car keys

Her "okay I am going with you then" she gets up and I open the door, to find Gadafi about to knock

Me "oh G, what brings you here" he sighs and I don't like the look on his face

Me "Gadafi what s= is going on, where id Molemo, is he okay?" I feel tears threatening

Him "can we please talk inside"

Her "uncle G what is going on where is my father" I let my tears fall, we all sit

Him "ladies, Razor was arrested earlier on"

Me "what? what for?"

Him "murder" what the fuck what is this

Me "who do they say he killed" he looks at Olivia

Him "Jabulani" I see Olivia bury he head in her hands

Me "oh my God this is not happening, no"

Her "but how could they have know, he buried him in the cemetery mos"

Him "Fiona and Mercy are working with the police and prosecutor"

Her "what. My God how could Mercy to this daddy"

Me "does she know what she has done, I need to see my man, I need to see him now"

Him "you can only see him tomorrow I am sorry"

Me "cant I talk to him on the phone at least"

Him "no he doesn't have a phone yet, Molo is guarding him with his life"

Her "who is his lawyer uncle G"

Him "its Vusi baby girl"

Her "oh thank God he is good he will fight for dad"

Me "I need to be alone" I stand up and go to my room, I can't lose him like this, if he is found guilty he

will go to prison for a long time. I don't see myself going on without him. He is my life line I need him. I

am now sober, I change into my Pj's and get under the covers and cry myself to sleep.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 88 (NOT EDITED)

SIZA

I was up at exactly 3:30am waiting for the sun to rise so I can wake up and go see my man, I have been

tossing and turning thinking about life without my man and I must admit it is not something I want to

experience, we found each other and we haven't had enough time, he still needs to marry me, I want to

be his wife, Mrs. Motaung, the mother of his boys like he always

says, he needs to get out so that I can  
give him as much children as he wants, I am not going to take  
any moment with him for granted please  
lord see us through this, I will make sure that he praises your  
name for the remaining days of his life, I  
accepted that you took Phephe but please not Molemo too, I  
wouldn't survive it please lord, I find  
myself sending a little prayer to the man above hoping that he  
will feel my heavy heart, am I in a hurry  
or vele the time is moving like a turtle. I decide to wake to cook  
something for him, he must be hungry,  
my poor baby. My mind drifts to Mercy and I wonder how she  
sleeps at night knowing what she did to  
her father, Mo has done nothing but love his children, he might  
have gone lost along the way but he  
tried and he loves them more than they can ever imagine. Oh  
this Fiona woman will regret ever putting  
us through this I swear. I end up baking and by the time I am  
done it is 8am in the morning. I was lost in  
my thoughts I lost track of time. I tidy around the kitchen and  
go make my bed, once I am done I head to

the bathroom and find Olivia in the kitchen having a muffin.

Her "I don't know how I slept through the night while we are faced with this" I sigh

Me "even if you tossed and turned all night it wouldn't have changed anything"

Her "it got you up and baking though"

Me "I am just worried about him Liv, is he safe, did he eat or drink water" she smiles at me

Her "the love you have for my father is beyond anything I have ever seen before"

Me "I love him like this because he loves me so fearlessly" she smiles

Her "I can only hope to have what you guys share"

Me "oh but you do, I am going to take a quick shower then head to the police station, you coming"

Her "I will follow soon, I have to go see my sister first"

Me "just leave her Olivia" she shakes her head no

Her "no chance I want her to look at me in the eye and tell me why she did it, after everything dad did"

for us how could she send him to jail”

Me “we don’t even know where she stays now”

Her “I do, being Razor’s daughter meant I had to be resourceful, I asked a friend of mine who is a tech geek to hack her phone and find her location”

Me “like father like daughter I see” we both laugh

Her “it’s in the DNA I guess”

Me “I just hope my boys dodge that DNA”

Her “topic for another day babe, go get ready”

Me “sure, but please Olivia don’t do anything that will lend you in prison too”

Her “I am not promising Siza”

Me “If you feel yourself loosing it please get out of there please”

Her “I will honey” I smile at her then head to the bathroom and take a shower

NTOMBI

Have you ever missed a person so much but you and them have

not been close, but their void in your heart is felt and you just want to see them even if you don't say anything just to look at them and you know for sure that you will feel whole again, that is how I am feeling right now, I miss Tebogo and even though I told him to forget about us I just wish he won't listen to me, I just wish he will see how I am yearning for him to make me his, I am just scared but I know he is a good man, he hasn't been around the house for a few days and he also hasn't come here to pick me up to clean his place, I wonder what it is he has been eating, is he even okay where he is, I am scared that he took me seriously and he is not going to pursue me anymore. I don't know what to do; I am in battle with my own heart and brain. I am fighting world war 3 right now but I think my brain is losing coz right now at this moment I am on my way to his house. The Uber drops me off outside his gate and luckily the security knows me so they don't make a fuss about opening for me. I make my way to the house and I find his screaming at



someone on his phone, he sounds scary I never want to be on his bad side

Him "my brother is fucken arrested so excuse me for not giving a fuck about supplying you right now"

he says and hangs up, he looks back and I see his beautiful face, he looks like he didn't sleep a wink, he

even has a glass of alcohol in his hand, I see him struggling to find something to say to me so I start

Me "good morning"

Him "hey, what brings you here" I feel hurt so I look down

Him "that came out wrong, what I meant was how did you get here and you didn't mention that you

were coming" I continue looking down and fiddling with my fingers

Me "I just wanted to make sure that you are okay, I haven't seen or heard from you in a while"

Him "so you miss me huh" I laugh and remain silent for a bit before I speak

Me "I will get started on the cleaning then make you breakfast"

Him "sure" he says sitting on the couch and I feel so

disappointed, I was hoping that he revisits the topic  
of how he wants me. I stand there not able to move till he  
moves his eyes from his phone to

Him "is there anything else Ntombi"

Me "I am, I just, Tebogo I am so" I sigh coz I don't know what to  
say to him, he stands up and comes to  
stand in front of me

Him "are you okay baby?" oh that's the word he is still  
interested, I feel hopeful, I don't know what got  
into me, I just found myself pulling his face down to me and  
taking his lips into mine, he kisses me

hungrily and his hands are all over my body, I feel hot my  
panties are soaking wet, I have never felt this  
way for any man before. He stop suddenly and pulls out as if he  
is remembering something

Him "no Ntombi we can't do this" I felt tears forming in my eyes

Me "why can't we"

Him "you said we can't baby what changed your mind" I let my  
tears fall, he is such a gentleman, he

wipes them and kisses my forehead and attempts to walk away I  
pull his hand back to me

Me "don't reject me please" I say holding on to his so tight, we are looking deep in each other's eyes

like we are in deep communication with our soul

Him "fuck it" he says then attacks me with a kiss so hungry it makes my already wet panty to soak more,

he picks me up making sure he doesn't break the kiss. My eyes are close and I feel him moving I can't

see where we are going until he lays me down, as I open my eyes I notice we are in his bedroom. He

comes in between my legs and takes my lips in to his again and seconds later both our clothes are flying

across the room and I am screaming his name worshiping him, apologizing for things I don't even know I

did. I felt myself connect with this man in a level that could scare anyone else, it is safe to say he erased

the bad experience Mthetho gave me, I am not saying I am healed I just didn't have any thought of

everything that King did to me when Tebogo was on top of me making love to me

OLIVIA

I took a shower soon as Siza left and I left right after, I punched in the address on Google maps and it

took me straight there, I must say this is a cute gated community but it is definitely not Mercy's taste,

Fiona must really have her by the balls, from that mansion to this little thing wow. The security here

must really not get paid coz he refused opening for me but I flashed around a few R200 notes and he

opened the gates like I was some political delegate at one of those secret meetings that happen in

America where terrorist are suspected to hit so security has to be so tight it hurts. I park outside their

house and I see her car parked. The front door is open so I make my way in, there is one in the lounge,

just a sea food platter and a glass of champagne, I laugh. I walk further in and hear laughs from the

kitchen so I head there and stand by the door, they don't see me, they are having one of those stupid

meaningless conversations, Fiona is the first one to turn and notice me standing there

Her "Olivia"

Me "Fiona" I say coolly and move my eyes to my sister who is too embarrassed to even look at me

Her "you look good my baby"

Me "I am not your baby Fiona so cut the bull"

Her "Olivia please, let's move past this" I laugh

Me "Mercy why?" I ask walking further into the room

Her "Liv baby please let's sit down and have a conversation and you will see reason I promise"

Me "I wasn't talking to you Fiona, just shut your trap" she gasp for air

Me "Mercy I asked you a question, why would you betray dad like this"

Mercy "you wouldn't understand Olivia"

Me "then make me" she shakes her head and starts crying, her mother comforts her

Her "you should be happy that justice will be served and you boyfriend will finally rest in peace"

Me "you don't get to talk about him you hoe, you are the reason

why Razor killed him so don't you

dare" the shock on their faces

Mercy "she is still our mother Olivia you will not talk to her like this" I laughs

Me "she is your mother dear sister not mine"

Her "don't talk like this please my baby" I roll my eyes

Me "I just hope you two know what you are doing, if you think this plan of yours is going to work then

you have no idea what you got yourself into"

Mercy "that is easy for you to say Razor has always loved you more than me" I have never laughed so

much in my laugh

Me "is that the bullshit she fed you to get you to betray your father, oh Mercy how stupid and gullible

can you be though, seriously. Explain to me how does that tiny brain of yours work"

Mercy "if you are going to insult me please leave my house" I smile

Her "I don't want you girls to fight, Liv come to us baby, let's have a good relationship, let us be a family

again, Razor will never love you the same again, he has that young girlfriend of his and what will happen when they have kids”

Me “oh I thought the evidence you gave the cops was enough to send him straight to jail so where will

they get the chance to make children” she looks down “I am not stupid Fiona, I will not fall for your

tricks” she tries to speak but I hold out my hand to silence her

Me “when my father gets out of that place I will beg him to give me the go ahead to put a bullet into

your brain starting with your peanut brain Mercy”

Mercy “Olivia” she says shocked

Me “enjoys this while it still lasts coz he will come back and you will regret this I promise you” I turn and

leave them with their jaws on the floor.

SIZA

I got to the police station and the damn detective gave me the run around before he could allow me to

see my man, I have never felt so much hate towards a person,  
he made me wait for 2 hours before

taking me to see him, I get in the room and I am pacing up and  
down, the opens and he walks in with a

guard, I couldn't hold myself I just ran into his arms but he didn't  
receive me warmly like he usually does

Guard "hey hey no touching, this is not the bold and the  
beautiful" I give him a death stare then look at my love

Me "baby are you okay" he gives me a faint smile

Him "hey Soft, I am happy to see you" he kisses me fully on the  
lips I don't stop him, I know this kiss is

to shut me up

Me "Molemo Motaung tell me what is going on right now" he  
laughs

Him "nothing I can't handle"

Me "Mo baby please talk to me" I let my tears fall and I know  
that will get him talking

Him "hey hey. Soft baby please don't cry, I am okay I just got  
roughed up a bit"

Me "what did they get you help, Is the detective aware of this



love" I feel my heart break

Him "he is ware my love coz he is the one who put me in a cell with members of the rival cartel I used to

be in competition with" I sigh that bastard

Me "we need to tell Vusi this love, he has to get you moved" he shakes his head

Him "no baby don't stress, by the end of today I will be in my private cell okay, G is working on it" I feel

a little relived

Me "I brought you food my love and sorry that detective had to poke through it like I stashed something

in it" he laughs

Him "thanks my love" he gives me a genuine smile

Me "I love you baby and we will get through this I promise you"

Him "I love you more than life itself baby and everyone knows this that's why I need you listen to me"

Me "I am all ears"

Him "I am vulnerable right now, my enemies my strike at any moment. I need you and Olivia to move to

the house till all this is over baby, don't go anywhere without

the security G will assign to you, don't

leave the house unless you really need to, I don't even want you to come see me here"

Me "I will do all you say but forget it there is no way I am staying away from you, how could you even

suggest that baby, my heart is already taking strain knowing you are here so you don't want me to see

you, Molemo don't do this" my tears are just flowing

Him "sshhhh I am sorry I take it back, it's just that I don't want you to see me this weak Soft"

Me "you might b weak right now but I am strong for he both of us, you will get out of here and come

back to me okay, we need to start trying for our boy it's time now baby" I see him smile

Him "you are not just saying that right" I shake my head

Me "get out of here and see how serious I am right now"

Him "you and Olivia are the reason I was awake last night trying to come up with a defense strategy to

get me out of this mess, but what you just said to me now, gave me one more reason to fight to come

back to you"

Me "I am glad to hear that baba ka boy" he smiles and we continue chatting he is trying by all means to make me loosen up but I need him home back with me he has to beat this he has to.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 89 (NOT EDITED)

#### GADAFI

I don't know if I should say my Christmas present came early or late coz it's January, but whatever it is

you guys decide is I will go with it because wow right now I am the happiest man in the world, I have

slept with a million of woman, don't look at me like that you know I don't mean that literally right? I

couldn't stop myself from going on and on and on, and she screamed my name with pleasure each time,

I must admit I never knew I could make love, ask me anything about fucking and I will tell but this one it

was a whole new experience for me too, I don't know if it is possible but my love for her seems to have

gone from mild to extra peri peri and it took 3 rounds of passionate love making to get me there. Tell me how long should I wait to ask her to marry me again? Yes I am already there trust me I already see myself turning down Razors offer to go have drinks coz I only want to stay indoors helping Ntombi cook, look at me I mean that is what Razor has been doing to me for almost 2years now, I knew he was madly in love with Siza but I thought he was crazy to want to spend every minute with her, but the minute I buried myself inside her I understood why my brother became the man he is all because of a woman. I love this woman and I will never find the right words to explain exactly what it is I feel for her really. She is sleeping so peacefully next to me; I don't want this moment to end. I keep kissing her forehead and admiring her caramel soft skin, her beautiful thick body that just worshipped me like a God. I try to get up from the bed to drink some water but I feel her tighten her hold on me

Her "please don't leave" I smile

Me "I just want to go drink some water baby"

Her "no please don't take this moment from me" she says in a low sexy voice

Me "I thought you were sleeping" she laughs a bit

Her "I was just enjoying the moment Tebogo"

Me "Ntombi" I say with the widest smile on my face

Her "mhhh" she says and I can't help but blush

Me "I love you and thank you for coming over" she sits up straight and looks at me straight in the eyes

Her "I love you too, and I am really glad that I came here" I cup her face and kiss her passionately for a

few minutes

Me "you honestly came into my life at the right time, and funny enough I didn't know I needed you until

you showed up" she smiles

Her "that is exactly how I feel, you saved me more than you will ever know" I see sadness in her eyes

Me "what do you mean my love" I know she is referring to what that filthy King did to her but I won't

tell her that I know what he did to her, I want her to trust me enough to tell me on her own, I want her

to believe and be sure that she can trust me with anything

Her "I am afraid that if I tell you, you will never look at me the same way"

Me "that will never happen, if you could see yourself through my eyes then you will understand that

nothing will ever taint my love for you and the perfection I see when I look at you" she smiles but I still

see that fear and uncertainty

Me "I want you to know that I love you and I never believed in love but you changed that, whatever it is

it won't change this baby, when you are ready to talk to me I will be here to listen, not judge I love you

and whatever it is it won't change this" I reassure her and I see a smile on her face.

Her "okay" I smile

Me "good, now can I have one more please" I say and she giggles pulling me on top of her. is it me or

does it seem like my madam enjoys G junior as much as I enjoy her

## THANDIWE

I took a nap after I put my children to sleep too, I was really tired, and since Thato moved in here Sizwe

has never shared a bed with her and I appreciate that, at least he still has some kind of respect for me.

he has been making love to me like it is our first time and I enjoy every minute of it but it gets me tired

real bad I must admit. I check my phone and I see I have been out for over 3 hours shit I need to check

on them, I quickly get off the bed and head to Kayise's nursery and she is not in her crib, I move to my

sons room and he is not there either, I guess their father is home, I descend the stairs calling out their

names but it is dead silent, I start to panic, I move from one room to the other and there is no one there

absolutely no one, tears come involuntary, oh my God who could have taken my children. I was about to

run to get my phone and call Sizwe but he walks in humming a melody.

Him "hi wifey"

Me "Sizwe where are my children, somebody took our kids, I was sleeping after I put them to sleep but

now they are not there I don't" he puts his briefcase down and comes to me quickly

Him "what do you mean Thandiwe, calm down and explain everything to me" he says and I try to

breath, I explain to him and he takes a deep sigh

Him "okay, let me go see the footage and take it from there" he says trying to be calm but I can see he is

scared, he can be all evil but he loves his children very much. he was about to go to his study when the

front door opened and my son walks in first holding an ice cream and a toy car. I rush to him and hug

him so tightly

Me "oh thank God you are okay" I kiss him

Him "I am fine mommy aunty Thato took Kayise and I to get McDonalds and she bought me this, he says

showing me his car" I smile at him but deep down I am boiling with rage



Me "that's nice, go upstairs and put your new car with the orders, I will be right up okay?"

Him "okay mommy, thank you aunty Thato you are the best and I love you" he says smiling at her, my

anger just escalated, I look at her with a smile plastered across her face with my daughter in her hands

and a plastic from earth child. I chuckle

Her "it's a pleasure baby boy and I love you too" she says and my son runs downstairs

Him "oh hey baby, looks like you have won some hearts" he says smiling

Her "they are great kids I had a nice few hours with them" she says kissing Kayise, I charge towards her

and give her a hot slap across her face and take my daughter from her

Him "Thandiwe what the hell was that for, are you crazy"

Me "don't you ever take my children anywhere you hoe, you stole my husband and now you want my

kids as well" I said to her and she was crying silently

Her "I am so sorry you were sleeping so peacefully and they were awake so I took them out for some air

so they don't disturb you. I left you a note on your pedestal and I also texted Sizwe coz he wasn't

answering his phone I didn't want you to Panic when you realize they were not here, I am sorry" I part of

me feels bad, I look at my husband and if looks could kill I would be dead right here

Him "I am sorry my love, I didn't check my phone, and it has been on silence since morning, come lets

go put some ice on that beautiful face" he takes her hand and they walk towards the kitchen, he stops

next to me

Him "you are ungrateful Thandiwe, she was thoughtful, she is trying to make this work and all you do is

cause problems. I totally understand you were scared but you should have given her the chance to

explain first not attack her" I look down and they leave me standing there with Kayise in my arms. Oh

God I just given her more points with mu husband oh I just took 10 steps back right now after I managed

to go 2steps forward.

## RAZOR

Gadafi managed to get the warden to move me to a private cell and I couldn't be happier. Today we had

a bail hearing and I was denied, apparently I am a flight risk and I understand why they could say that. I

do have the money and the means to run away but I won't plus I knew it was going to be denied so I

simply didn't have expectations of me going home to my woman and daughter, speaking of which they

were hurt and disappointed when the judge denied me bail, I am more worried about them than me

being in here. I was with my legal team, we are trying to come up with a strategy that will get me out of

here, Soft decided to stay in and be part of the team so I let it happen if it will help her to be more calm

then I don't see why not, they couldn't allow a lot of people so Olivia left plus she had to go give our

recipients of her bursary foundation their contracts. It was just me, Soft Gadafi, Vusi and 2 more

lawyers. My woman has been standing by the corner listening

attentively to everything we have been saying.

Julius "we can reach out to your daughter and ask her to change her statement, say that her mother and

Moloi coerced her, if we remove her as their key witness we will have weakened their case"

Vusi "I totally agree"

Me "NO" I say

Marko "it is a great plan it will help us a lot really" I shake my head

Me "no, my daughter made her decision let her see it through, let her betray me like this"

Vusi "please boss, we need everything that can weaken their case, and getting your daughter to flip on them is exactly what will help us"

Me "I agree Vusi but no, she has decided to do this so let her. We can find something else"

Vusi "okay then"

Marko "all we have is the fact that your ex wife was cheating on you with the victim who happened to

be your daughter's boyfriend. They have the proof that you buried him, they have your daughter, the murder weapon with your prints on it" I sigh

Me "I know it looks bad right now, but we can turn this boys I trust you, you are my best"

Julius "we will definitely get you out Sir"

Me "thank you J"

G "we can end all of this very quickly, put a bullet in Fiona's head, make the docket disappear"

Vusi "sir please don't say such things in front of us please"

Soft "I have a question baby" I look at her

Me "go ahead my love"

Soft "whose gun was it, the murder weapon, whose was it originally"

Me "it was Fiona's baby why?"

Soft "have you ever owned a fire arm?" I narrow my eyes and we are all looking at her wanting to

understand where she is going with all of this

Me "I do have a gun baby, but I never use it, it has never been fired, it is super clean. I have never used

my own I always used the ones my boys provided and we got rid of them immediately” she nods

Soft “then that is all the strategy you need” we are all confused

Vusi “can you elaborate on that please”

Marko “guys can we stop waisting time please, no offence

Motaung but your woman knows nothing

about the law” I give him a death stare

Julius “let’s hear what she has to say Marko, please go on miss”

Soft “you can argue that Fiona was having an affair with Jabu who happened to be her daughter’s

boyfriend, and when Jabu got tired of betraying Molemo like that he told Fiona that he is ending their affair and he is telling Mo and Liv the truth, Fiona panicked, she couldn’t afford to lose her husband and

daughter and she killed him to protect her secret”

Marko “and how will we explain his fingerprints on the gun” I see Soft rolling her eyes

Soft “that is simple, Fiona and Mo were husband and wife, both their guns stayed in the same safe were

he also kept confidential documents about his cases so when he needed the documents he used to

touch the guns that is how his fingerprints ended up on the gun” I look at her with total admiration

Vusi “this is brilliant, how the hell did we not think about that God”

Marko “we still have the daughter and fact that he is the one who applied for the grave side”

Soft “sorry to say this but for a lawyer who is said to be the best, you surely are slow. You said Fiona has

been living with a woman who works at the mortuary right, so we also say that they used Molemo’s

identity to apply for that grave. I mean funeral homes have access to these things. With regards to

Mercy I am not sure how to handle that one”

Vusi “this is just perfect, we throw in a some law into that and it is brilliant, I guarantee you Mr.

Motaung you are walking they have nothing on you” I couldn’t take my eyes off Sizakele

Julius “what are you studying?”

Soft “medicine”

Julius “wrong career miss, you would make a bad ass defense lawyer, you should consider switching” he

says. I stand up and walk towards my woman; I cup her face and kiss her passionately on her lips.

Me "you just got me out of prison my love. What you just did for me Sizakele God I will worship the

ground that you walk on, I live for you baby you are my God do you understand me" she was now crying

Soft "I love you so much I would do anything for you Mo"

Me "fuck I don't know what good I did to deserve you Soft but God thank you"

G "marry her already" they all laugh

Vusi "thank you Siza you just made our job easy now, guys lets go we need to go perfect this strategy"

They all stand and pack their staff

Me "I will be out soon because of you, hang on okay?"

Soft "I am baby, once you get out of here we taking a well deserved baecation" I laugh

Me "plan it so long baby. And don't tell anyone about this strategy okay" she nods and kisses me

Soft "I will see you tomorrow" I smile at her

Me "okay, G get my queen home" he nods and they both walk out



Vusi "okay then tomorrow it is"

Me "stay behind a bit please" Julius and Marko walk out

Vusi "everything okay"

Me "did you do what I asked"

Vusi "oh yes sir I did. Everything you own legitimately now belongs to Siza and Olivia now, except for the

firm of course"

Me "good thank you"

Vusi "you will be out of here, first day at court you will walk. Siza came through for you"

Me "she is a Queen that one, I am blessed. Thank you Vusi"

Vusi "its okay sir"

Me "no thank you really" I won't say it to his face but I am glad that he messed up and led he to me.

OLIVIA

I just met with the group we will be paying fees for; they had to sign the contracts so we can make the

funds ready, for their registration fees and accommodations so long. I am glad I am doing this really, their stories are heartfelt and I am inspired, they had it bad but they managed to raise above it all and perform exceptionally they are so humble and very grateful and I just love them so much. I stayed with them for a while, we had lunch and got to know one other, they have such big dreams. They left me and I decided to have a bottle of wine to distract me, I mean after my father was denied bail and that sucked, kamona Steve is still not talking to me I am worried, I miss him, I am just a mess. Speak of the devil he walks in the restaurant with some girls and they are laughing, I felt my heart sink into my stomach. Oh boy No he didn't, how could he, he said he loved me, how could he move on so quickly, I know I pushed him away but. I couldn't stop battling with my thoughts and he was in front of me with this girl, how dare, does he want to rub it in my face.

Him "babe" this mother fucker for real right now

Me "hey, how are you?" he smiles

Him "I am okay, didn't tell me you will be near my office today could have joined you" are you for real

right now Steven, you haven't been answering my call, I say that to myself

Me "sorry, I was meeting with my bursary recipients, they just left" he nods

Him "you will tell me about it later, you coming over right" I am confused right now, what is he doing

Me "okay I will call you" I say and look at the girl

Him "oh where are my manners. Babe this is Blue my colleague and friend, ntwana this is Olivia my girl"

Her "finally I see the woman who makes my boy repent, she is beautiful hey, reminds me of my mami"

she says and I can tell that he is so lesbian no doubt, relieve floods through me" I smile like a genuine

smile and

Me "nice to meet you Blue"

Her "likewise, treat my boy right he is crazy about you" she says and I know he shared our problem with

her

Me "I am crazy about him too" I see Steve smile like a retard

Her "good, ntwana lets get lunch and go back before dragon lady descends on us for being late" he nods

Him "babe I wish I could join you but i need to head back to work. I love you" I blush and I knew I had to

Me "I love you too, I will see you later"

Him "okay beautiful" he says with a beautiful smile

Her "bye Liv" his friend says

Me "bye Blue" if happiness was a person it could be my man right now. He comes and kisses me on the

lips and walks away like he has just won the lotto, and I must say I feel good too happy, free, in love.

Guys thank you so much for the data I really appreciate you really, you didn't complain you didn't say

anything nasty to me for asking that from you, thank you so much I really appreciate you from the

bottom of my heart. I love you all

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 90 (NOT EDTED)

SIZA

To say I am relieved would be an understatement really, I am super grateful to God for saying Molemo

from this, I know he killed a person but I promise to make him a better man, he will worship him and

never doubt his existence and power not even for one day, I can't wait to have him home with me, this

time I am not taking any moment with for granted, I will cherish every laughter, every tear and every

fight so long as it is with him I am happy really. I asked Gadafi to drop me off at my mother's place and

he didn't even protest to that, in fact he had the widest smile on his face I tell you, his excitement is

visible, this crush he has on Ntombi is really something else, I decide to toy with him

Me "you seem excited to be taking me home, hoping to bump into someone" he laughs

Him "not hey, I am just granting my brothers woman her wish" I

chuckle

Me "oh come, we both know you are hoping to see a particular lady" he smiles and shakes his head

Him "it wouldn't be such a bad idea to see her twice in one day especially after the morning we had"

Me "what do you mean" I am now curious he laughs

Him "nothing Siza, thanks for coming through for my brother" I shake my head no

Me "oh no you don't get to change the topic I refuse"

Him "I don't have to change the topic coz we are here" I look outside and really we are in Alberton

outside my mother's gate, he presses the intercom at the gate and it slides open a second later

Me "trust me this conversation is not over"

Him "oh yes it is" he says with a smile and got out of the car. I follow him, we get in and find my mother

with Ntombi in the lounge watching some Nigerian movie, and you should see Ntombi's face when her

eyes land on Gadafi

Me "sanibonani" they greet back and G greets them too before settling on the single couch

Ma "what a lovely surprise you two" I smile

Me "I missed you, kodwa please lower the volume"

Ma "you have started Sizakele, you just got here and already you are making demands"

Me "I am just thinking about your ear drums mina that's all" she laughs

Ma "Ntombi sthandwa sam could you please fix them a drink"

Her "okay ma" she says looking down, she is even glowing what's going on lana guys

Him "I need to make a quick call please excuse me" I laugh and my mother claps her hands. They both disappear

Me "tell me ma, where was Ntombi this morning"

Ma "she went to clean Gadafi's house baby why"

Me "oh no just checking, I thought I heard Olivia say she is meeting with the bursary recipients"

Ma "oh okay but everything regarding her bursary is set, she just went to work" I nod coz I might know

what happened, they slept together, that is why she is glowing like this and he is smiling like a retard

Me "how are you though, haven't seen you in a while"

Ma "I am fine my baby, angisho uhlala une ndoda Sizakele (you are always with your man)" I laugh

Me "haibo mama come on" she laughs

Ma "I will also find myself a small boy to keep me company, what do you call them kanje?"

Me "ama Ben 10 and I would kill him myself" she laughs

Ma "your boyfriend is older than me but I am killing him, leave me be haibo" I laugh

Me "kahle salkazi" she laughs

Ma "have you seen a granny like me wena" we laugh and I sleep on her lap and watch the movie with

her, I love being so close with mamami guys

NTOMBI

I spent the whole day thinking about Tebogo, I couldn't even concentrate on anything, all I thought of

was what he did to me earlier in the day, I am so glad that I didn't listen to my head telling me that I



shouldn't pursue him, I wanted more of earlier, I need to be with him and just have him wrap his strong

arms round me, continuously telling me how much he loves me. The king always told me that I am

worthless and I would never find anyone to love me coz I am damaged goods only he can ever want me

and I believed that, maybe Tebogo only loves me like this coz he doesn't know the truth, but soon as he

learns what that filthy old man did to me, he will be disgusted and he will leave me, I love him and I

don't want to lose him but I don't want to lose him. He walks in wit Sizakele and my heart is on fire, I am

glad he is here, his cologne fills the rooms and I feel pussy pulsating from the memory of our love

making in the morning. I have this smile on my face I can't hide the joy I am feeling even though the

truth of what that old man did to me might take this away from me I will enjoy having this experience.

Mam'Lungile asks me to go prepare something for them to drink and I go the kitchen, a second later I

feel him behind me, his arms snaking my waist, I blush and take

hi scent in and enjoy the squeeze he gives me

Him "missed me?"

Me "more than you can ever imagine" I feel his smile

Him "good coz I missed you too baby" I blush and turn to face him, he kisses me so passionately

Me "stop someone might walk in on us"

Him "I don't care you are my woman mos" I blush

Me "I know but this is still mam'Lungile's house" he sighs and stops

Him "come home with me then" I laugh

Me "and where will I say I am doing"

Him "home with me baby"

Me "I am pretty sure it doesn't work like that sthandwa sam" I see him blush

Him "but she lets Siza and Razor do their thing" I sigh

Me "it might not seem so but it is way different and if you think about it you will see that"

Him "what does it normally take in your tradition to get you to sleep over" I laugh

Me "normally they visit each other during the but traditionally the man had to pay lobola"

Him "okay if that is the case marry then" I laugh

Me "you are very funny" I say but his facial expression doesn't change one bit it scares me

Him "I am not joking Ntombi" I am shocked guys help me please

Me "kodwa we haven't been together for long, marriage is a life time commitment"

Him "I know that and I know I want to commit to you"

Me "it take more than that to get married Tebogo"

Him "I love you, you love me, I have money, you can cook, you are respectful and humble plus bonus

the cookie between your legs is warm, tight and juicy, what more do we need to have to get married" I

laugh this man is crazy

Me "what would you like to drink" he sighs

Him "come on I am asking you to marry me here Ntombi, I have lived my life alone for long and now

that I have you I wanna spend every moment with you baby" I sigh

Me "you know what let us have this conversation in 6 months please"

Him "if you promise to sleep over the entire weekend"

Me "oh my God, I will see what I can do" he smiles

Him "that's my girl. Let me go back before they come looking for us. I love you" I smile

Me "I love you too, you crazy man"

Him "crazy about you" he winks then exits. The thought of being Mrs. Phoolo crosses my mind

STEVE

I was chilling watching soccer highlights when her text came through, she said she will be here in an

hour, I thought she changed her mind so you should see my excitement right now. I got up quickly from

the couch and went to the bedroom, I changed the bedding and put on some fresh ones and tidied up. I

moved to the bathroom then the lounge and kitchen, it was a bit messy coz I was having a mini

depression that she caused by the way. I managed to shower quickly and opted for some shorts and vest and slippers, I check my watch and she is due in 15 minutes, so I can be superman I managed to do everything in less than an hour. I go to Uber eats and order us some food. I really hope she meant what she said to blue about being crazy about me too, you should have felt my heart beat when she said I love you too, I never thought those words would move me like that in my life. The food arrives before her and I am starting to think that she changed her mind and I won't lie that stings a bit. There is a knock on the door and I know it's her coz only she knows the pin to the gate besides my friends and my sister. She doesn't wait for me to open coz she comes right in and comes to the lounge and settles next to me, she has a paper bag of food in her hands. She kisses me before saying anything

Her "I am sorry I am late baby, I went to get us food first" I smile "

Me "its okay love, you are here now and that's all that matters"  
I pull her in for a hug and I feel her hug  
me back tight

Her "I am so sorry for what I said the other day babe I am really  
sorry"

Me "thank you my baby and I forgive you okay" she nods still in  
my arms and me in hers

Her "I have been through a lot Steven and I got hurt pretty bad,  
the man I thought loved and saved me

hurt me so bad, he had an affair with my mother and that sent  
me straight back into depression, I have a

mental problem, I tend to be the prisoner of my own mind, but I  
am fighting it and there is progress

right now. I don't know if it will ever happen again and how bad  
it could get but I am telling you this coz I

know it can get pretty bad, so if you know you won't be able to  
handle me at my worst its okay we can

go our separate ways before we invest more than we already  
have. I attend therapy with my psychiatrist

twice a week and it really helps a lot. I am telling you this  
because I love you and I want you to know that

you are in love with a woman that has baggage and is dealing with a lot, behind this pretty smile there is

a lot of pain but the difference right now is I am dealing with it, I am no longer pretending to be okay. All

I ask is please love me honestly and talk me about stuff, I know talking is my weak point, I am kind of a

lose screw I jump into conclusion and I will go crazy on you most times without being aware of the facts

and once you explain I will feel like a shitty person then cry for being wrong and end up making you feel

bad for me crying then you will apologize time you did nothing wrong I am just crazy. I am not perfect

but I am real, plus I will give you cute babies" I am laughing and admiring her right now, she just poured

her soul out to me and found a way to make me laugh, my vest is soaking wet with her tears, I break the

hug and wipe her tears

Me "thank you for being vulnerable and letting me in. I love you too" she blushes

Her "you did here the last part of my speech right" I laugh loud, this one is really crazy

Me "I did baby and I still love you regardless"

Her "good, now that the soppy stories are over let me go dish up for us"

Me "okay I also got us ribs and wings"

Her "you are the best boyfriend ever" I smile

Me "I know right"

Her "no love ska phapha (don't be forward)" I chuckle, it is going to be such a beautiful journey with her

Me "please bring me a beer love" I shout loud enough so she can hear me since she is in the kitche

Her "no, I brought us gin and some tonic water check in my overnight bag" yes she is sleeping over

Me "you are such an alcoholic"

Her "khethile khethile" I burst out laughing and find myself putting her picture on my whatsApp status.

MERCY

My mother and I are sitting in the lounge watching some fashion and travel show on TV, I have been



having mixed emotions about all of this, I think I want to stop this whole thing, Olivia's words really hit

home, I had a lot to think about and I don't think I want to betray my father like this.

Her "Mookie are you listening"

Me "uhm sorry mommy what did you say"

Her "I just got a text from detective Moloï and the prosecutor got me my identity back" I give her a faint

smile and narrows her eyes

Me "that is good news" she sighs

Her "talk to me baby girl what's wrong"

Me "I don't think I can do this to dad ma, he doesn't deserve all of this" she sighs

Her "of course he does, where was he when you were suffering with no staff to help around the house,

when he took your black card and replaced it with that normal card, when he gave Olivia all the

attention instead of you" I sigh

Me "I think we should reconsider me getting on that stand"

Her "dammit man Mercy grow the fuck up, this is why he will never take you seriously, you are weak, you can't finish what you started, do you think if this was Olivia she would have given up, she wouldn't have she would have done as she had planned but you No. and you wonder why that boy left you, you couldn't keep him because you don't like finishing what you started, man the fuck up" oh my God why is she saying all of this, I couldn't contain my tears

Me "mom why are you being so rude" she sighs and comes to sit next to me

Her "I love you Mookie and I want you to be strong and independent, I won't live forever and I want you to be able to survive without me, Olivia came here yesterday because Razor told her to, they have been away not thinking of fining you but soon as he gets arrested they know our address, don't you see he knows you have all the power that is why he sent his favorite to come and manipulate you and make you think that I am the bad guy here, show his that you are capable of standing by your decision" she

says and I sigh

Me "okay"

Her "that is my baby girl mommy loves you so much my Mookie" I give her a faint smile but my heart is

still heavy I still don't want to continue with all of this.

Me "love you too"

Her "no Mookie, say it right or they say it at all baby"

Me "sorry, I love you too ma"

Her "that's better"

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 91 (NOT EDITED)

NARRATED

It been 3 days since the court proceedings and the court heard different testimonies from the witnesses,

they all painted Razor to be the bad guy and it was safe to say that the prosecution was rejoicing, but

the defense was not too scared because they had trust in their

strategy and believed that their comeback will not be anticipated by the prosecutors. The courtroom was filled with members of the media, Jabu's family members, other interested members of the public and of course Razors woman, daughter who came with Steve and Gadafi who was sitting between Ntombi and Lungile. Today was the day where Mercy and Fiona were going to be cross examined by Razors lawyer, Vusi, everyone could see that she was panicking next to her mother who was crying the entire time, playing the victim, after she told the court that Razor tried to kill her the public has been sympathizing with her and Mercy and condemning Razor, it has been a hard few days for Liv and Siza as the social media streets are having a field day with them, black twitter has no mercy. The court went to a 30 minutes recess and they are now back in court

Voice "all rise, the preceding officer, Judge Joel Kemp" everyone in the court stood up as the toughest

judge in SA walked in, he was known to be fairest ruler who was a no nonsense taker

Judge "thank you, you may all be sited" everyone took their sits

Judge "so today the defense will be cross examining the states two key witnesses, correct Mr. Khumalo"

Vusi "that is correct my Lord, but we humbly ask the court that it allows us to call on other witnesses

should we see fit for the proceedings"

Judge "I don't see why not, Mr. Gordon are you okay with their request?"

Prosecutor "yes my Lord, the prosecution is okay with the defenses request"

Judge "with that said we may proceed, Mr. Khumalo you may call your witness"

Vusi "as the court pleases, the defense will like to call to the stand Ms. Mercy Motaung" the panicking

Mercy got up from the chair and went to sit in the witness both, they swore her in

Vusi "Good morning Miss Motaung"

Mercy "hello"

Vusi "can you please tell the court what your relationship is

with the accused”

Mercy “uhm he is my father”

Vusi “okay thank you, before we go deeper I want to remind you that you are under oath and that

perjury is a serious offence”

Mercy “I am aware” Vusi smiled

Vusi “great then, Mercy why did you see your father kill the victim Mr. Jabulani Radebe”

Mercy “no I did not”

Vusi “so how did you get to the conclusion that he did it”

Mercy “uhm, I, I know the kind of man my father is and I know that he is capable of this”

Vusi “so your father is a bad man, is that what you are saying”

Mercy “yes” she says looking down

Vusi “please tell the court how your relationship was with your father a year ago”

Mercy “we were on good terms”

Vusi “and he was not a bad man then, so what changed”

Mercy “I realized that he has gone too far with getting away with everything Jabu’s family needed closer

and I had to give them that” Vusi nods

Vusi “how noble of you. Miss Motaung is it true that your father cut off your allowance by 50% and took

away most of your privileges?” she blinked a few time

Mercy “I don’t see how this is relevant”

Vusi “answer the question please”

Mercy “that is correct”

Vusi “why did he say the reason for that was”

Mercy “he said that he wanted me to go back to school or start a business so that I can secure a better

future”

Vusi “something any loving father would do, how did you take all of this”

Mercy “I was mad at him, livid for that matter, I didn’t want to go to school, I didn’t want to start a

business, I hated the fact that they wanted me to be like Olivia, his beloved daughter”

Vusi “now there is the truth, you were livid, mad at your father for doing that to you, you tried pleading

with him to not expect you to turn out like a sister you begged

him to not be concerned about your future and when he didn't budge that is when you decided that you will make him pay, you decided that you will team up with your mother to team up to take my client down by framing him for a murder he didn't commit correct"

Mercy "what you are saying is not true, he did it he killed him" she said shouting

Vusi "no Miss Motaung your problem is that you are spoilt rich kid who has no value for anything but money, power and the good life and when your father tried to show you the correct path you refused it and conspired with your mother to take him down and then acquire his wealth"

Mercy "you are wrong, that is not true" she was now crying

Vusi "you are a liar Miss Motaung, you are only painting your father black because for the first time in your life he refused you something and he has never done that to you before"

Mercy "oh my God, I am not the bad guy here my father is" Vusi laughed



Vusi "if you believe that, No further questions for this witness my Lord" he went to take his sit and

Mercy was crying as she went back to take her sit, the was nothing the defense could do, all they

needed to do was to show that Mercy had a grudge against her father and she was doing this to get back

at him and he did that very well, coz the prosecution was now shaken that their key witness was

shredded to pieces and he testimony of her father's character was out of the door

Prosecutor "your honor we request a 5minutes recess please"

Judge "Mr. Khumalo?"

Vusi "no problem my Lord"

Judge "no problem, session will resume at 11:40" he stood up and went to the chambers, and Vusi

made his way to Razor who had his head buried in his hands

Vusi "Mr. Motaung relax everything is doing wee, the judge can see that Mercy is not a credible

witness" he sighs

Razor "I know, but she is still my daughter and seeing her cry still breaks my heart, even though she is

standing there implicating me she is still my baby and I love her”

Vusi “I am sorry sir” he just nods and they discuss for a while and the session is back again.

the prosecution seems edgy and the looks on their faces satisfies the defense

Vusi “my lord the defense will like to call their next witness to the stand, Mrs. Fiona Motaung” she

stands up looking like a broken woman busy wiping her tears. She is sworn in and she takes her sit

Vusi “hello ma’am”

Fiona “hello”

Vusi “I will not waist the courts time, so you recently gotten your identity back after using a false name

for more than two years”

Fiona “that is correct”

Vusi “who helped you with that”

Fiona “detective Moloji and the prosecution”

Vusi “I see, and why did you disappear for so long and even use

a false identity”

Fiona “I had to stay away coz my husband the accused tried to kill me and he thought he did, he registered my death and I had to find a new identity to be able to survive”

Vusi “and why did your husband try to kill you ma’am?”

Fiona “we found out that Jabu was cheating on our daughter Olivia and Razor was livid, he took the gun

and went to the apartment he bought Jabu and killed him because he didn’t want Olivia to find out and

fall into another depression, I followed him ad begged him not to, but when we got there he did and I

just couldn’t I tried to call the cops but that is where he lost it and said I am betraying him, he tortured

me a while and I lost conscious and that is where he thought I died, so he threw me in the alley down

town Johannesburg” Vusi laughed

Vusi “what a sloppy job, but why didn’t he just shoot you like he did Jabu and bury you too rather that

taking all that risk”

Fiona “you will have to ask him that”

Vusi "fair enough, so Mrs. Motaung, where did you end up"

Fiona "luckily a woman found me and she helped me back to health"

Vusi "the woman referred to is a Miss Kekeletso Rantoa correct?"

Fiona "yes that is correct"

Vusi "what does she do or a living"

Prosecutor "objection my lord, relevance"

Judge "Mr. Khumalo, are you going anywhere with this line of questioning"

Vusi "yes my Lord, I just need the courts patience"

Judge "objection overruled, let's give him some time"

Vusi "so Mrs. Motaung can you please answer the question"

Fiona "keke works at a mortuary"

Vusi "okay thanks. Mrs. Motaung were you having a sexual relationship with the victim who happened

to be your daughter Olivia's boyfriend at the time?" she gasp for air totally shocked, she didn't

anticipate this she thought Razor will tell them to bury since it will be seen as reason enough to kill Jabu

Fiona "uhm what uhm of course not what kind of mother do you think I am" Vusi laughs

Vusi "Mrs. Motaung please remember that you are under oath here"

Fiona "I did not have an affair with Jabu"

Vusi "okay then, my Lord the defense will like to introduce new evidence in the form of a cctv footage

we ensured that it is indeed legit but we are open to allowing the prosecution to take it to the forensics

to confirm this"

Judge "I will allow" Vusi pressed play and paused at 1 second on Fiona and zoomed

Vusi "ma'am who is that" she looks down and starts to panic, she swallowed her saliva and looked at

Razor then Olivia

Fiona "it would appear to be me"

Vusi "I guarantee that it is indeed you" he played the video and it was her and Jabu kissing outside his

apartment, they were too intense and it showed Fiona unbuttoning Jabu's shirt and touching his private

part then they disappear into his room. The shame she had on

her face, she didn't expect this at all, and the prosecutor had his head buried in his hands mad as hell at Fiona for not disclosing this affair

Vusi "this footage proves that you are lying ma'am, you did have an affair with your daughter's boyfriend, and he got tired of it and he wanted to tell Mr. Motaung the truth, you couldn't risk that so the next best thing was to take your gun and shoot him dead, went to your friend Ms Kekeletso who works at the funeral home to help you burry him legally at the cemetery and used my clients identity to book that grave so it will all lead to him. You disappeared for almost 3 years and resurfaced to conspire with Detective Moloji to frame my client after he failed numerous times to convict my him on false charges he relied on the fingerprints my clients left on your gun because the both of you shared a safe with documents and he would occasionally touch your gun trying to access documents in that safe, the same detective also failed to make it known to the court that the murder weapon was registered to you

and that your fingerprints were also found on the gun, because he was trying to manipulate the law into

convicting an innocent man just for his personal agenda. He promised you your identity and you

promised him my client, you wanted him to rot in prison so that you can divorce him and get 50% of his

assets and boy you did coz just yesterday my client and I received divorce papers from your lawyer”

everyone in court was shocked and that was enough to shut Fiona up, even the prosecution had no

come back for that, everyone was just shocked

Vusi “the defense rests my Lord”

Judge “Mr. Gordon does the prosecution wish to say anything more”

Prosecutor “no my Lord” he said with so much shame in his voice

Judge “I will not waste any more time with this case and waste more of the states resources, the

prosecution failed to prove beyond reasonable doubt that the accused did in fact commit the crime of

first degree murder. Their case was filled with so much holes I

found hard to fill up and I am ashamed

that the prosecution came to court and presented such a case without concrete facts and evidence, as

for the detective who investigated the case I hope that the minister of police or whoever does his job.

This case has to be solved and I think from some of the evidence the defense showed a new direction

can be taken. Mr. Motaung the court would like to apologize sincerely for wasting your time and putting

you and your family through the emotional trauma this case caused. Mr. Motaung please stand”

Razor gets up looking like the fine gentleman he is

Judge “this court finds you not guilty on the charge of murder in first degree” he hit his gavel and

everyone stood up as he left the courtroom. Razor looked back at his woman and Liv and mouthed ‘I love you’ to them, they were holding hands crying.

Mercy was the first out the door with her mother

following, reporters were following them wanting to have a comment, Fiona was stopped by the door by



the police

Cop "Fiona Motaung your are under arrest for the murder of Jabulani Radebe" they continued reading

her rights and she couldn't do anything but cry, full of regret she was wishing that she never pursued

this, she wishes she stayed away and let Razor be. They took her away and Mercy couldn't believe her

life right now, she managed to get to her car and drove away full of regrets and hate for her mother. On

the other side Olivia, Siza and Gadafi were waiting on Razor to be released, they were just processing his

paper and he will be a free man. After a few minutes he appeared and Olivia ran to him and they hugged

so tight

Liv "I am glad you are out daddy, I love you so much" she says crying and Razor just smiles

Razor "I am glad I am out I love you too my baby" they hugged for a while and he hugged all the others

until he landed his eyes on the crying Sizakele being comforted by her mother

Razor "guys let me go say hi to my girl" he said with a smile and

walked to her "Lungile can I" She nods

and he takes Siza and hugs her, she lets out all her emotions out and cries to his chest till she comes

down,

Razor "hey baby, I am here now, I am sorry okay, I am here. I won't do this to you again I promise"

Siza "I missed you" he smiles

Razor "I know you do my love, and I miss you more" she smiles and he wipes her tears and she wipes his

Siza "let's get you home, need to feed you"

Razor "I know they are going to insist of going home with us and I won't stop them, but when we get to

the house can we take care of my hunger down there first, I am dying to be inside you right now" he

whispers to her and she giggles

Liv "okay okay we get it you too can we go now" they all laugh and Razor notices Olivia and Steve

holding hands, he looks at them and narrows his eyes but decides to say nothing. They all go to the cars

and drive to Razors house to have a little celebration.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 92 (NOT EDITED)

#### RAZOR

Here I am looking at these people who are in my corner and were never ashamed and afraid to be called

out because of me, if this is not blessings then I don't know what it is, we got home and the ladies

managed to cook up something real quick coz here we are in my dining table having a meal together

celebrating, I should be 100% here but my mind keeps going back to Mercy, wondering if she is okay

where she is, I know she betrayed me but she is my child and I have learnt that no matter what your

children do to hurt you they will always be a place in your heart that loves them unconditionally, I wish

she can just come and apologize sincerely so we move from this. I am hearing laughter across the table

and I have the most beautiful, smart and humble woman, who will do anything for me, who loves me

more than I can ever imagine, my baby girl is happy I can see that from the smile that has been plastered across her face, this boy must really make her happy, all I can wish for is that they treat each other good, I wouldn't want to see her back in that state of mind again. I am holding Soft's hand and I never want to let go. I clear my throat asking for their attention and I get it, they all look at me

Me "can we all please raise our glasses" they smile and do as I say

Me "firstly I want to thank all of you for the support you showed me through this trying time, it has really been challenging, but honestly I now know fully who is in my corner for real, my baby girl Liv you have grown up so much, you are my princess and I am proud of the woman you have become, you showed great strength and I have newly found respect for you, My brother G, I know even in my darkest time I have you and that you will fight tooth and nail for me and those I hold dearly, I would die for you

coz I know you would do the same for me, thank you man”  
everyone was smiling and Gadafi stood up

and we shared a hug, this right here is my day 1 the world might  
turn on me but I know he will never. I

look at my baby and I just can't help but flash her smile and she  
blushes, yep my dimples still have that  
effect on her

Me “Soft” I say so low and she looks at me straight in the eye”

Her “sthandwa sam” that Zulu accent man it tends to go  
straight to my pants

Me “I don't know the ingredients God used to make you but I  
sure know that it was not your standard

clay and paint, baby from the first day I laid these eyes on you, I  
knew I was selfish for wanting you all to

myself and I won't lie when you fell for me too, the world was  
okay, I never knew a love so pure a love

so selfless a love that continues give without expecting  
anything in return, you love me Sizakele and that

is something that changed the man I used to be to this man  
that wants to give you the world, you are

perfect and no one will tell me otherwise, it has been the most

beautiful 2 years of my life, I love you

baby and I know this might not be how you envisioned me doing this but I honestly don't want to waste

any more time, this experience opened my eyes and I knew I needed damn I want to do this life thing

forever with you and no one else" I go down on one knee and her hands move to her mouth

involuntarily and those tears form and I just flash my smile and retrieve the box from my pocket and

open it, revealing the platinum 2,90 Ct round cut diamond split shank engagement halo ring

Her "oh my God, baby" she lets her tears fall

Me "I am far from perfect but with you I know I don't have to be, you appreciate all my imperfections

and flaws and you love them, baby the way you love me humbles me, I am sometimes left shocked as to

how one person can be so amazing, I am blessed to have been the one to have you and for that my I will

lay my world at your feet and I will give you everything which you desire, you know when it comes to

you baby I can talk the whole day which I am doing now, I am

mumbling and I am sorry this was suppose

to be short coz the setting on it's own is not what I wanted or what you might have envisioned"

Her "baby"

Me "my love"

Her "you were not mumbling but now you are, stop and ask me already" everyone burst out laughing

Me "Siza, Soft waka, mother of my boys, will you my baby please make me the happiest man in the

world and give me the privilege of being your husband" she smiles and attacks me with a kiss

Her "I love you Molemo, I love so much and I would love nothing more than to be your wife baby" she

says with so my excitement, smiling between tears, I slid the ring on her finger and I stand up and we

share the passionate kiss yet.

Liv "oh my God daddy, congratulations guys" she says hugging us

Me "thank you my baby"

Liv "can I see that rock please" Soft smiles and gives her hand

Me "it's beautiful, perfect for my queen"

Liv "it is everything, but how did you get your hands on a ring coz you were locked up" I laugh

Me "I have my ways" everyone else comes to congratulate us and it's mini festivities, I love how she

can't get her eyes off her rock, I looks like it was made for her finger, but I am custom making her

wedding ring, I don't want anyone else having it

Lungile "thank you for making an honest woman out of my daughter Motaung"

Me "thank you for giving birth to this amazing soul, one day I will celebrate you in style"

Lungile "I will surely be waiting for that"

Me "and I will be sending a letter tomorrow, who do I send it to" she sighs

Lungile "it has only ever been me, I will talk to MaNtuli, and I will get back to you"

Me "thank you"

Liv "oh this is going to be wedding of the entire human existence, I already have a few ideas"

Me "Olivia this is not your wedding"



Liv "ouch" we all laugh

Ntombi "Siza can I be the caterer please"

Her "you don't even have to ask babe"

G "in that case, I will starve myself for the entire month before the wedding coz I don't want my taste

buds messed up" we laugh and Ntombi blushes, the look on my brothers face has me narrowing my

eyes and Soft pokes me and I look at her with a smile

Her "I think they are low key in a relationship" she whispers

Me "then why are they hiding, they should embrace their love"

Her "let's give them time baby" I nod

Liv "what are you too whispering about" I roll my eyes

Me "baby girl I am having a moment here with my fiancé, leave us alone and whisper with your

boyfriend" she laughs

Liv "oh so you are aware that I am here with my boyfriend"

Me "I am, but not that you cared to introduce us"

Liv "today it's about Siza and you, just know his name is Steve, we will visit soon and I will introduce him

and the day will be about me and him”

Me “welcome to my home Steve and all I could say and good luck, you will surely have your hands full”

Steve “thank you sir, I am already applying for extra hands coz these poor pair is full of her already” I

laugh and Olivia hits him with her elbow playfully

Liv “you don’t get to throw your own girlfriend under the bus baby”

Steve “I am already trying to negotiate half price Lobola here, you are abusive baby” I laugh again, I like

this one, but he will never know this. They continue with their banter and I whisper to my baby

Me “please go upstairs, I just want a quickie baby” she laughs

SIZA

I didn’t wait to have him ask me twice, I got up and ascended the stairs, even before I could close the

bedroom door he was already behind me, he turned me around and pinned me to the wall, his hands

cupping my face, his lips smashing mine hungrily, our tongues playing together as one, i manage to unbutton his shirt exposing his abs and the tattoo of my face, his kisses move from my lips to my neck, I tilt my head back giving him full access and he licks my exposed neck sending waves down my spine, he picks me up and I wrap my legs around his waist and he stands grinding his body on mine, I feel his erection poking me and I let out a soft moan, the wall is balancing me and his one hand is on my ass and he moves the other one to my panty and I am already soaking wet, I hear him hiss and I know he is pleased that I am so ready for him. He moves my thong to one side and inserts a finger and he adds another one leaving me going crazy wanting the real thing

Me "oh baby ahhhhh"

Him "you are so ready for me"

Me "then take me baby please" I say while taking in the pleasure of him fingers

Him "tell me what you want me to do to you Soft"

Me "I only just want to feel all of you inside of me right now baby please" he groans

Him "oh fuck Soft" he moves me to the bed and places me the gently and takes his clothes off in record

time, he is in his birthday suit and his spear firm and strong, he comes on top of me and removes my

dress leaving me in a lacy bra and thong, he got one boob out and started sucking on it and the other

one softly massaging the other boob, I open my legs wider making his spare meet my wet puna

Him "fuck, shit, oh my baby fuck" that was all I needed to do to get him to remove my bra and

underwear in a speed of light, we are now both naked and he looks at me deep in my eyes and I don't

shy away, I feel his manhood rubbing my entrance, my toes are curled, he inserts the tip

Me "ahhhh" I say arching my back

Him "look at me baby, look at me make love to you" I open my eyes and he smiles, he takes the pillow

and puts it under my waist, he rubs himself again on my entrance

Me "oh baby please" and with that he slides it in, slowly

Him "oh Soft baby, you are so tight and warm, never refuse me  
make love to you okay, always allow

your husband to worship this body okay"

Me "this is your body baby, however you wish to have it, I will  
never deny you" I say and It seems like

that was what he wanted to hear, coz his thrusts were going  
deeper and deeper, they are equal and

even, he is keeping his stroke rhythm at a balance so he doesn't  
mess up my build up, I feel it coming

the pleasure is building up and It is intense

Him "come for you man baby, give me your pleasure my love" he  
says going on and on

Me "oh Mo baby I love you oh baby yesss, oh my love yesss,  
ahhhhhh Mo baby yes please baby I love

you" I say and I just explode, I squirt and I feel the wetness all  
over us, he doesn't stop and he keeps

going through my orgasm making me scream his name louder. I  
don't know how but he manages to flip

me and he is now taking me from the back, he keeps spanking  
me and it feels so damn good, he does in

deeper and I feel it coming again.

Me "oh baby I am going to come again"

Him "me too my love, cum with me baby, give me my reward and I will give you yours" like a command

I obey and explode and he does the same coz he is squeezing my ass so tight and I feel him release his

load deep inside of me, then he collapses next to me and kisses my forehead

Me "that was amazing baby, I love you" he smiles

Him "I missed you and like always you never disappoint me. I love you Mrs. Motaung to be" I smile

Me "that sounds like a dream, I am so tired" I say in a low voice

Him "I will go get rid of our guests then, so we can play some more" I giggle and he stands up

DETECTIVE MOLOI

Damn he got off once again, I don't know if I should say the justice system is falling us again, or blame

the prosecution or maybe that damn woman Fiona, this

conviction was going to be big for my career but that mother fucker won once more, Prosecutors won't want to work with me after what happened, as much as I blame the others I am also partly to blame, but they were suppose to perfect their big law terminologies and he would have been locked up for good. He might have won this round, but the battle is not yet over, he will know mw well, I will start fishing around and I will find something, and this time he will pay for everything, I hear commotion outside my office, and the captain walks in

Me "sir, welcome"

Him "not here for pleasantries. What the fuck did you do Molo!"

Me "I am confused Captain"

Him "do you have any idea what you did to the reputation and credibility of this station"

Me "I take it we are talking about the Motaung case here"

Him "yes I am, didn't I warn you to let go of this Motaung issue"

Me "he is a criminal and my job is to chase criminals"

Him "I don't want to believe that you have suddenly become stupid"

Me "you are my boss yes but I will not take insults from you" he laughs

Him "yes you are indeed crazy, do you think you can take down Motaung huh, man like that are

untouchable, rich people get away with everything, you should have learnt that, even if they found him

guilty the government would have intervened for a lighter sentence, the man gives money to

government departments that are struggling, he is helping the state run the country so do you think

they would lock up their cash cow, don't be stupid, you have been in the force for a long time you

should know this"

Me "why are you here captain"

Him "you pissed off a lot of high powered people with what you did to Motaung, if he went down their

paychecks went with him and fr that they want you gone, they can't fire you on the spot but they can

tell me to suspend you pending investigation" I laugh



Me "what you can't do this Captain please"

Him "I am sorry but this is out of my hands now" he says  
walking out, I take the cup on my desk and  
smash it to the wall, fuck damn you Razor dam you nxa

THANDIWE

I walk downstairs to go make kayise a bottle and they are in the  
lounge, he has his head on her lap and  
they are looking at the laptop. Things have been really hectic  
around here, he doesn't even look at me  
anymore it is just so messed up, I don't know what to do, I finish  
making the bottle and I walk back  
upstairs but before disappearing I hear them discuss

Him "I like this one better baby, it will be near the nursery" I feel  
my heart go into my stomach, she is  
pregnant oh my God

Her "bathong baby. I thought we said we want our bedroom to  
be downstairs"

Him "I know love but this place has only one bedroom

downstairs and I want the baby's room to be next  
to ours" she laughs

Her "but we are not yet pregnant love"

Him "I know I am just excited about started our family"

Her "we will in a year I promise"

Him "thanks baby, I love you okay" I let my tears fall and hurry  
back to my daughter, they are playing in

my bedroom with her brother, toys are everywhere and their  
soft voices fill the room, they are happy

and I can see how much they love each other, I am standing  
there looking at my children like it is the

first time I have ever laid my eyes on them, but in all honesty  
this is the first time, I see that I have been

selfish staying in this loveless marriage, unhappy. They deserve  
a happy mother and I have been robbing

them off that, I am broken and I can never raise my kids with all  
that I have been through, I feel the

sudden urge to cry, like all the pain I have ever felt came back to  
me rushing like flood, the TV is on a

music channel and Ciara started singing 'if that boy don't love  
you right now, he will never ever never

ever love you' I don't know why but from that line I broke down and quickly rushed to my children and

held them so tight to me, I could see the confusion in their eyes, I kiss them like I am dying. I am crying

uncontrollably, I have had enough, I am enough of this life, marriage and mostly I am enough of myself

for staying in this situation, it took a lousy song to make me realize that I deserve better, why weren't

my children enough to make me know this, my son spoke

Him "mommy please don't cry, Kayise and I are very sorry we will not make noise again, and we will nap

when you want us to, right momo" he says to his sister who is eating her tiny hand with no care in the

world

Me "no baby boy, mommy is the sorry one, I promise that from now on you and momo are my priority

and nothing will ever take my focus on you guys. Mommy loves you so much"

Him "we love you too mama, right momo" I smile

Me "now can I count on you to nap and not disturb momo in her crib so she can rest too"

Him "yes mommy"

Me "that's my big boy" I pick up Kayise and take my sons hand, I take him to his room first and kiss his

forehead and he closes his eyes then I move to Kayise's nursery and place her in her crib and give her

her bottle and then exit. I go to my children's closet and start packing their clothes and in no time I am

done, I move to my bedroom and pack mine, I also pack everything of sentimental value. Once done I

take my laptop and move all the money across my different accounts to one the account that has R500k

he once gave me. I stand by my window and see Sizwe's car drive off, do down stairs and ask the helper

where they went to and she says they that they are going to see a movie then dinner, they will be back

very late. I sigh in relief and call the movers and luckily they can help me immediately. I don't know how

I am doing to do this but the first step is me moving out of his house, I will ask for a place to stay from my mother.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 93 (NOT EDITED)

## THANDIWE

I took my children and strapped them in their car seats soon as the movers finished loading our bags, I

am scared I don't want to lie, Sizwe might not give a rats ass about me leaving but I am scared that he

might want to take my children away from me, he is powerful and with his mothers help he can make it

happen, but I will fight tooth and nail before I let that happen, my children are all I have and I won't let

anyone take them away from me ever. I left Sizwe a message on the fridge, all I have to do is to be ready

to go to war with him. The drive to my mother's is a very short one; luckily my babies are both asleep so

I ask the movers to wait a bit while I go talk to my mother. I knock and luckily mama is the one that

opens for me, seeing her, I couldn't hold it in anymore, I just broke down, I felt my knees getting weak,

she managed to catch me before I fell down

Ma "Thandiwe sisi, what's going on my baby" she ask and the concern in her voice is only that a mother can have

Me "it hurts mama, it hurts so bad"

Ma "you are scaring me baby, what's wrong are the children okay" I nod while crying

Ma "well talk to your mother let me know what's wrong mama will fix it baby" hearing her say that made me break down even further

Me "I don't think you can make him love me, can you make him wirship the ground I walk on mama can you" I see her close her eyes in pain

Ma "oh Thandiwe, I can never and so can't you. All we can ever do is pray to God to help you heal and with time he will give you a man that he made for you, a man that will love you and your children"

Me "why can't it be him mama, the father of my children, my husband, why did God allow me to make vows he knew I wouldn't keep, why did he give me a husband if he knew he would never love me, mama your God is cruel"

Ma "don't talk like that, it might seem bad right now but I promise you it will all be okay and you will see the blessing in disguise, the silver lining in the dark clouds" she gives me a warm hug and I just let it all out, she doesn't say anything but just comforts me, it takes a while till I come down but I do after I remember that I left the movers outside

Me "mama can I please stay here for a while with my children" she smiles

Ma "ofcourse you can Thandiwe, this is your home, you are welcome here as long as you want"

Me "thank you mawami" she kisses my forehead, we are never too old to need our mothers

Ma "where are my grandkids"

Me "they are in the car asleep, the mover also need to get my things inside"

Ma "go get the kids maTha, I will go fix your room so long, but you know it's a 3 bedroom house, you will share with Kayise and I will share with boy boy coz Ntombi is using the other room"

Me "its okay mama thank you"

Ma "don't thank me sthandwa sam this is your home"

Me "I am sorry I refused you staying at my house that time  
mama just that I" she shakes her head

Ma "don't even think about it baby, it is all in the past now, I am  
just glad that you finally saw that you  
deserve better" is smile

Me "thanks mamami, I love you so much"

Ma "I love you too maTha" she says and I walk out to tell the  
movers to bring in my staff and apologize

for delaying them. I take my babies inside and put them in my  
mother's room while we prepare for our room.

OLIVIA

Yesterday dad threw us out with a lousy Siza suddenly has a  
stomach bug and she decided to go to bed

coz she was vomiting and bluh bluh bluh, they think we are kids  
those two, we all know that they left us

at the table to go do the nasty, they are such bad hosts God,  
but on the lighter side I am so happy that



they are getting married I mean it is long overdue yeses, I woke up early and left Steve in bed after we

had our morning glory he dozed off and I was too excited to go back to sleep, I mean I have a wedding to

plan here, I have been trying to get a hold of Sizakele to confirm the wedding colors and décor as well,

as the venue, I have shortlisted everything, but the woman is not answering her phone, I mean it is 7am

she should be up, what does it seem like I am the only one who is excited about this wedding. I try her

line again and it takes me straight to voicemail this time. I smell him from behind me and I just blush

Him "why are you up so early baby. I wanted some you know"

Me "I am sorry baby, I just needed to start with the preparations you know"

Him "what preparations manje baby" I roll my eyes

Me "wedding silly, 2 of the 3 most important people in my life got engaged last night" he laughs

Him "my love are you for real right now"

Me "yes I am" he laughs again

Him "Olivia, baby, they only got engaged last night, your pops is yet to pay lobola plus wont Siza want to plan her own wedding"

Me "I know that but we can't be too early to start planning, I mean if we want it to be remembered for years to come, and she my best friend she would want me to plan her wedding"

Him "I know you two are as thick as thieves but my love this is her big day, wait for her to give you the go ahead please, you know she loves you and what if she lets you go on with everything just so you don't feel bad kante she doesn't like any of it" shit he is making so much sense, I guess I am just so excited about this wedding

Me "I never thought about it that way, I guess I am just so happy that it is finally happening"

Him "let them enjoy their engagement and when they need your help with something let them ask"

Me "thank you baby, I will tone down my excitement a bit"

Him "thank you, when we get engaged you will get the chance to plan our wedding I promise I will let

you have anything you want, I would even wear a floral suit if you want me to" I laugh

Me "our wedding huh" I say blushing

Him "what you think I am here to play, woman I am going to wife up your annoying ass" I giggle

Me "I am so not annoying" he laughs

Him "I am just kidding my baby you are not"

Me "good"

Him "so are you just gonna sit there or our going to come back to bed and give daddy some love, I mean

look at the dude" he says pointing to his erection

Me "I am going back to bed and give daddy some lovin" he smiles

Him "that's my girl, now get your sexy ass over here" I giggle and rush to him, he pulls me close to him and kisses me

Him "I love you mami" I smile and peck his lips

Me "I love you too my Stevie Wonder" he bursts out laughing

Him "you know how to ruin my moments yaz baby" I laugh

Me "I am sorry baby, let me make it up to you" he narrows his eyes

Him "tell me how do you plan on doing that"

Me "I would rather show you, come papi" I say in a sexy low voice and take his hand leading him to the bedroom

SIZA

I open my eyes and the first thing that comes to my mind is to check my left hand, and yes the rock is

still there fitting me perfectly, I am soon to be Mrs. Molemo Motaung, I am so happy to be getting

married to this man, spending the rest of our lives together, I can see us raising our boys who I pray hard

that they come out looking like him, the only thing I will worry about is that they will definitely have

ladies eyeing them from left right and center, but not to worry mommy will teach them to be the finest

gentleman, for the first time in my life I am excited over the thought of having kids, after I lost my baby

girl I thought I will never open up myself to mothering a child again, she would have made the perfect big

sister, the perfect example to her brothers, I know she will look

out for them, she will be their guardian  
angel like she is mine. I am lost in my thoughts that I don't  
realize that Molemo is not next to me, he  
woke up pretty early considering that we didn't do much  
sleeping, the love making that happened  
throughout the night made me tired shame. I decide to get up  
from bed and put on my gown, I make my  
way downstairs to check on him, I find him in the kitchen in  
nothing but an apron, his firm butt exposed  
and he is walking barefoot. This man of mine is a whole entire  
meal, I should stop whining each time he  
goes to his gym and leaves me alone to be bored, coz wow the  
results of those sessions is visible, the  
view is so perfect SBWL one round yeses, the music he is  
playing is not helping my clit either. I move to  
further in the kitchen and wrap my arms around him

Him "good morning there fiancé"

Me "good morning husband to be"

Him "music to my ears" I giggle

Me "you are in a good mood this morning"

Him "life is beautiful baby, why wouldn't I be" he says while switching off the bacon. He was about to

turn to face me but I quickly moved my hand to his D and start massaging"

Him "ahhhh Soft" he groans very sexy

Me "do you know how sexy you are right now and all the time"

Him "tell me baby"

Me "you are so sexy baby, if it were up to me I would have you inside of me all the time" his erection

gets bigger

Him "you mean to tell me that I hit it that good"

Me "good is an understatement baby"

Him "you sure know how to make me feel good huh"

Me "I want you to make me feel good now"

Him "oh Soft you are so insatiable and I fucken love it"

Me "bend me over right here on this counter and take me baby, I promise I will cum so quick"

Him "I love it when you tell me what to do to you" with that he flips me over and bends me over the

counter, I feel his hands go up my thighs and feel my soft skin burn from his touch, my clit is throbbing

ready to take all of him inside of me, my gown is off in a matter of seconds followed by his apron, he

leaves kisses all over my back and my butt which he gives squeezes and spanks that drives me insanely

horny for him, he uses his feet to part my legs and bite my lower lip waiting to feel his size fill me up, I

feel him rubbing my entrance and I was about to enjoy the feeling when he slams into me so hard I

scream his name, he goes in deeper and faster and it drives me completely insane, I feel myself build up,

I was about to explode when he stopped and changed paces, completely throwing off my orgasm, he did

that on purpose, I cry his name

Me "baby please make me cum please" he doesn't say anything but continues with his slow deep

thrusts, I feel my body tense up and I know I am almost there I start calling his name and he does it

again, he stops and changes his pace again, he goes back to faster and deep, I am screaming pleasure

consuming my entire body, he is giving me all this pleasure but he wont let me cum for him, oh my God it's coming again oh oh oh, it too intense I feel my legs vibrate, my knees are weak, a second later I

explode all over the kitchen floor and he continues going in out of me until he comes calling my name

like I am his God. Oh fuck that was amazing

Me "oh Mo" I say and he removes his d from inside me.

Him "are you okay now"

Me "that was mind blowing"

Him "I know baby, when I was delaying your orgasms I was building up a much intense one"

Me "I have never exploded like that"

Him "oh that was nothing wifey, don't pee until after we make love again" I narrow my eyes

Me "why" he laughs

Him "I am going to give you an orgasm you have never had before"

Me "baby you do know you are the only man that has given me orgasms, you keep breaking your own

records" he laughs and has a smirk on his face obviously



satisfied with his doings

Him "I know love, wait here I am going to get a towel to clean you up" he says and pecks my lips

SIZWE

It is 10am and I haven't seen Thandiwe and the kids since yesterday, she always brings the kids to say hi

to daddy, I make my way upstairs to her bedroom but she is not there and the bed is made, I move

to her closet and it is fucking empty, WTF, did she maybe change bedrooms or what, I move to my sons

room and all his clothes and toys are gone too, I start to panic and I go to Kayise's nursery and same

story, Fuck. I quickly head to the kitchen to find the helper but she isn't in there, my eyes land on the

fridge and there is a paper with my name on it, it's maTha's handwriting, I open it.

Sizwe

I love you and I wonder why I still do, but I realized that I cannot be in this marriage alone, from day one

I have been married to myself, I have only ever been good enough for the public and to birth your

children but I can't take it anymore, you have always proved that you don't care about me and I don't

know why I hoped that you will one day realize that I worshipped the ground that you walk on and

decide to love me back. I waiting and waiting, through your emotional and physical abuse, the business

trips and the cheating but now you brought a woman home, one you wish to marry, I thought I could do

this but I can't compete with a woman you love, I will never be her and you will never look at me the

way you do her, I wish I could curse you but I can't because I love you and hurts because you love her. I

took the kids and went to my mothers, I didn't run away with your children, you are their father and the

door is always open for you to see them, I only have one request, if you ever felt anything for me, if I

meant something to you at some point and if you are also sorry for all the pain you have ever coursed

me please let me have my children, you have taken everything from me, my sanity my pride my dignity,

you can have it all but please let me have them please, we can co parent but please let me stay with

them I beg you Sizwe please give me this one thing, I have never asked you for anything please.

Thandiwe.

I found myself crying while reading her letter; I fold it and bury my head in my hands.

SIZAS' TRIBULATION

CHAPTER 94 (NOT EDITED)

SIZWE

I have never felt so bad in my entire life, Thandiwe has been nothing but a good wife to me and I should

have treated her better and appreciated her more, I have been nothing but a SOB and she has every right to pack up and leave coz I seriously don't deserve her, she is too good of a woman for me, I just wish I can undo all I did that led to her being this broken, she is the mother of my children and I should have been the one to treat her like a queen, our marriage was that of convenience to me, I won't lie and say I love her, but me and her we've had our share of good times but the bad outweighs the good when it comes to us and our union, I know you all are waiting for me to say I regret bringing Thato to my house, but I don't because she is the first woman I have ever loved this much, the first woman I saw worthy of my heart, Thandiwe is a better woman than Thato I will admit that, but when it comes to matters of the heart, the innocence and good behavior of a person doesn't count for much, I just wish I didn't hurt her like this. I explained everything to Thato and she asked me to please go and beg Thandiwe to come back home so we can all sit down and fix

things, but I just couldn't, I am done

stringing her along giving her false hope when I fully know  
where my heart lies, I am outside her

mothers house ashamed to even go inside, she opened the gate  
for me few minutes ago and I have

been in my car ever since. The front door opens and she steps  
out and approaches the car but doesn't

come near so I decided to walk out and meet her.

Me "maTha"

Her "babakhe" she says and my guilt escalates

Me "unjani"

Her "is that rhetorical question?" I sigh

Me "I am sorry obviously you not fine, where are the kids"

Her "went out with my mother for ice cream, your son was  
asking after you so my mother had to

distract him"

Me "I am so sorry Thandiwe" she looks at me straight in the eye  
for the first time ever since I got here"

Her "what for exactly"

Me "for all the pain and suffering I put you through I am sorry"

Her "I see" she says coolly

Me "I wish it we were in another lifetime where I could love you the way you deserve to"

Her "I just want to know why you never loved me Sizwe" I close my eyes and take a deep breath

Me "let's not do that please" she nods and wipes her tear

Her "so about my request?"

Me "you mean the children?"

Her "yes"

Me "I will never take them away from you never I promise you that, we will co-parent and I will support

them like I used to do" she attacks me with a hug and holds on to me for dear life

Her "thank you, thank you so much" I hold her too and kiss her head

Me "you don't even have to worry about my mother I will handle her. I will get my lawyer to start with

the divorce paper and come up with a good settlement, you and the kids will be taken care of" she cries

harder and I just hold her tighter

Me "please find it in your heart to forgive me please" she weeps on my chest saying nothing so I return

the favor by just holding her tight without saying anything so she can let it all out. We stand outside like

that for close to an hour until she lets go and walks back into the house without saying a single word to

me and I get into my car and leave

GADAFI

Weekend finally came and Ntombi came to sleep over like she had promised me, we have been cooped

up in the house, having sex like rabbits and ordering on Uber eats, I kind of enjoy this, though she is

making me watch these fucked up cheesy movies that end up with her crying, why are woman like this

though. If she is not crying she sleeps half way through a movie she fought to watch and I am left

defeated, I am yet to understand how the mind of females operates. Razor told me to not even bother

myself, all I should do is ready for the abuse that comes with loving a woman with all your heart, and apparently they have superpowers to make you apologize to them even though they were the wrong party, looks like I have a lot to learn, but I am glad I came clean to my brother coz he will help me navigate my way around this love thing. I mean he is going it really good coz the man is engaged to the love of his life, as much as I am enjoying this moment with my girl it us just not deep enough really, she is way too careful of what she is saying so she doesn't spill what the King did to her, she figures I will not love her the same if I know what she went through but if only she knew that I fell for her harder because of her resilience, the same thing she is looking at a failure and weakness I see her strength from it, I plan o making her open up to me today and trust me she will.

Me "baby girl"

Her "Tebo" I smile

Me "tell me about your time at the palace, I just want to know



what is it that you actually did do, did

you enjoy your job, you know was it fun what happened” I feel her body tense in my arms

Her “it was just a job baby nothing much pr interesting trust me”

Me “why is it that you never want to talk about your time at the palace” it’s time she opened up to me

about it do she can stop thinking that once I learn the truth I will leave her. I want her to love me fully

Her “Tebogo there is nothing to talk about, I beg you drop it please”

Me “no Ntombi I am not dropping it”

Her “I don’t want to lose you please don’t make me talk about it”

Me “talk about it please coz whatever it is is making you love me with reservations, waiting for me to

leave you so you keeping room for disappointment” she starts crying, I let her go, I want her to be

vulnerable and need me, I want her to ask me to be here and hold her, love her and never let her go

Her “you will never look at me the same and that is what I am

scared of the most losing you, I just

found you Tebo please" I stay silent, she has to give me more, I want to hold her but I need her to need

me and believe that I will be here no matter what

Her "baby please say something please"

Me "what do you want me to say Ntombi because you won't believe anyway since you are so sure that I

will leave you" she cries harder and it is taking everything in me to stop myself from pulling her to me

Her "he raped me okay, he took my innocence and every night since I have been that palace he

pleasured himself with me and then called me a nothing, he told me no man will ever want me I should

not even think about being loved coz he is the only one who will look at me the damaged goods" she

stopped crying and I can feel the pain in her voice

Her "you will never look at me the same after this Tebo, and it is okay I am damaged, I was just hoping

that you will see perfection in me for a while more" I sigh, thank you God

Me "I have known about this way before you even came here

and gave me your body, mind and soul, I  
knew what that devil did and I still wanted you, I still loved you  
and I still see perfection every time I look  
at you, I asked you to marry me fully aware of what you have  
been through. I love you and I will never  
leave you, I am the one who should be afraid of the possibilities  
of you leaving so I beg you baby love me  
with everything you have and I swear I will never leave you” she  
couldn’t believe her ears coz she just  
launched herself to m and I gave her my warmest embrace  
Her “I am so sorry, I just love you so much” I smile and kiss her  
forehead, while comforting her.

STEVE

I am meeting up with the boys for a few drinks, and yes I got  
the passport from the madam, I must admit  
man, dating once girl with 1000 personalities is amazing, my Liv  
Love is just something I have never seen  
before, I thought that being tied down to one girl is not the life  
but her I am enjoying everything about

it, from reporting my every move to asking permission to go some things. I am enjoying this, in a relationship with Olivia Motaung setup with every fiber, my mami is just my dream girl, she can be a handful, she is colored all because of the genes you know but I swear she has your Cape Town coloredness too just a little of it but it's there, okay please don't tell her I said that. We are chilling at the club it's still early around 9pm we've been here since 4pm the music not yet ear drum busting loud. We are having a chilled time with my boys over a light conversation when a woman suddenly sits on top of me, I look at her and she is one I used to full around with, I sigh

Me "please get off me"

Her "someone is playing hard to get"

Me "I am not playing anything sweetheart just get off me please" I say politely but stern enough

Her "okay you are tense, let's go to the bathroom so I can take care of that" I start to get irritated

Me "lady please, I am saying no so please leave"

Her "what is wrong with you today geez"

Mandla "okay what you are doing now is harassment lady, my friend is saying no just leave" she looks at

Mandla then me and chuckles

Her "it can only mean that you found Jesus, you met a girl and you think you are in love, or it doesn't

work anymore" she says laughing and leaving our table

Me "guys did she maybe leave a lipstick mark on me, I don't wanna get home and fight with my girl over

nonsense" the look at each other and burst out laughing

Vusi "who are you and what did you do with my friend Steve the freak" I laugh

Me "he grew up man, found a woman worth it and grew up"

Mandla "I never thought I will live to see this day" I laugh

Me "well you are my friends you are"

Vusi "how do survive with her, no offence but Olivia is multiple people in one, she is a little crazy"

Me "that's one of the things I love about her, she keeps me on my toes and in those multiple people I

find every person I need in my life wrapped up in one, Her"

Mandla "you have even become poetic" I laugh

Me "oh fuck you guys, leave me alone, I love my forl and there will never be Steve the freak anymore"

Mandla "I am proud of you buddy" we fist bump

Vusi "me too, I can't believe we are all in stable relationships with woman we see as our wives

someday" I nod coz I am definitely wifing my mami come hell or high waters, my phone vibrates and it's

a text from her

\*when I agreed to you going out I didn't mean you should go and not come, phela I am not the security

of your house, I miss you. Are you not yet bored from seeing all kinds of fat asses in fake clothes? Come

home to your vasplank please. I love you\* I burst out laughing, Olivia is crazy

Me "boys I need to bounce"

Vusi "she sends you a nude and you ditching us" I throw my phone at them

Me "it's better than nudes buddy" I say blushing like a retard and they look at my screen

Mandla "she is one of a kind" he says laughing

Me "tell me about it" I say standing up taking my phone and keys

Vusi "I should also get going my wifey probably waiting for me, Power lets vay mfethu"

Mandla "nah man I am going to chill a while" I look at him and narrow my eyes, he doesn't look happy

## MERCY

I have been locked up in this tiny house feeling all sorts of guilty, why did I let my mother use and

manipulate me like this, now she is gone again and I am left all alone in the mess she created for me, she

turned my life upside down, now the only two people who loved me probably hate me so much, I don't

even know how to go and face them and ask for forgiveness, I am afraid they will reject me after

everything I did I wouldn't blame at all. The pain is too much I tried staying drunk to numb the pain but

it is too much. I needed something that will give me happiness for a while and here I am finding myself

in the dodgiest place in Jozi. I am driving around and I spot one  
guy standing awkwardly by the corner,  
so I drive to him. I press my window down

Me "hello" he gives me a dirty look

Me "I am sorry to disturb you"

Him "what the fuck do you want" his ascent definitely proves  
that he is not a South African

Me "I just wanted to know if you know any place where I can  
find good stuff, quality" I signal with my  
hands going to my nose

Him "do I look like a fucken drug dealer to you lady"

Me "no please I didn't imply that, I just thought you might know,  
I am sorry" I attempt to press my  
window up

Him "wait" I quickly stop and look at him

Me "yes"

Him "you know police also come here pretending to be  
customer" I nod

Me "I am aware"



Him "so what do you want, I have cocaine, crystal meth, ecstasy, heroin"

Me "just get me started on the coke please" he nods and disappears to a corner and comes back with a small bag white powder"

Him "this is the good staff, you will enjoy, take my number I will be your supplier" I give him my number

and he also ask for mine

Me "my name is Mercy"

Him "I will just call you rich kid don't worry" I mentally roll my eyes

Me "how much?"

Him "I have R330 a gram"

Me "give me 5grams"

Him "that is R1650" I quickly reach for my purse and take out his money"

Me "here you go" he takes his money and gives me the product"

Him "I will see you around rich kid"

Me "wait, how do I use this" he laughs and explains

Him "if you forget Google it" he says then walks away, I don't

even know his name, so I store his  
number as supplier. I just pray this makes me forget of all I did,  
the way I betrayed my father and hurt  
my sister.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 95 (NOT EDITED)

#### VUSI

I think something is wrong with Mandla, yesterday when Steve  
and I left the club to come spend time

with our woman, he decided to stay back and drink some more,  
we all know that is not the time of guy

to choose booze over a peaceful night at home, something is  
definitely going on with him I swear and I

won't lie it is actually scary, I just hope Palesa is not back to her  
old dealings really coz he won't survive

the second betrayal, it took everything in him to forgive her the  
first time she played him like a grand

piano, I need to look out for my boy hence I have to do

something I wouldn't normally do but Power is more like a brother to me so I wouldn't want to sit back and watch him drown knowing I could have helped him. I am looking at Uriel not sure of how I should address this

Her "just say it babe coz I can't take the stares now" I laugh

Me "I am sorry Angel"

Her "out with it Vusi" I sigh

Me "you and Palesa are still good friends right"

Her "yes we are babe why" she says giving me a look

Me "I am sorry that I even have to ask you this, I know we agreed to stay out of their business"

Her "but?"

Me "is Palesa still faithful to my boy"

Her "she is baby, she doesn't even look at other guys, she is enjoying being a stay at home girlfriend

taking care of Mandla, he takes care of her well too, she has everything she wants I don't see why she

would jeopardize that, and I know for a fact that she is not

busy" I sigh

Me "thank you love"

Her "why? What is going on?"

Me "I don't know yet love but yesterday when we left the club  
Mandla didn't want to leave, he decided

to stay behind and continue drinking"

Her "you know Palesa sent me a text asking what time you got  
back home, I told her around 10 and she

was shocked coz Mandla got home after 2am claiming he was  
still at the club"

Me "what nah"

Her "seriously baby, entlek what is wrong with your friend,  
Palesa has been complaining that for almost

two weeks he has been closed off and behaving strangely, is he  
cheating Vusi"

Me "I wont lie my love but I don't know really, we picked up a  
vibe from him last night hence Steve and I

are worried about him"

Her "he better not be cheating on my friend"

Me "Mandla is not that type baby, my boy is a one woman man I

know him”

Her “then what the fuck is wrong with him”

Me “Angel language baby”

Her “I am sorry love”

Me “I will try and get to the bottom of this something really big is going on with my boy”

Her “please do coz whatever it is , it’s starting to affect my friend”

Me “eish wena ke” she laughs

Her “baby I need to go home, my dad is complaining now, can you drive me”

Me “yabo manje Uriel, I told you to come back and rent so we don’t have to do this”

Her “haibo papa, nyala phela, ntsha dikgomo (no Mr. you have to marry)”

Me “hai once coz I can’t be sleeping alone while I have a woman, what time do you want to leave”

Her “once I am done cooking, that’s in about 2 hours” I nod

SIZA

So my fiancé, emphasis on FIANCÉ guys, he has been nothing short of amazing and loving and everything a girl could ever ask for in her soon to be hubby. We are in the lounge listen to some soul music, house fresh and clean, sliding door open, cold bottle of the finest wine, expensive bottle of cognac, a delicious finger food platter and my sexy Mo with only his denim short, barefoot and exposing his chest, trying to paint my toe nail but making a mess of my pretty toes, I am enjoying this quality time with my baby, nut what he is doing with that polish is killing me I can't help but laugh

Him "fuck this, I will give you my card so you can go do some nails coz I can see that I am not doing shit"

he says and I laugh some more

Me "aow shame but you tried my love"

Him "I am no beautician love but I can see I messed up, thanks for the love though" I smile at him

Me "I will go get my nails did tomorrow then, coming with me

right?"

Him "if that is what you want, though that gay guy makes me uncomfortable"

Me "oh come on he is just appreciating the fact that you are a fine piece of meat"

Him "wow just wow, my whole wife to be calls meat piece of meat, I am hurt" I laugh

Me "I am sorry my love, you are my perfect gentleman, indoda yami that I love so much"

Him "mxm" he sulks

Me "hao monna waka tshwarelo hle ntate wa bashemane" he laughs and blushes like crazy at my

attempt to speak Sesotho with my Zulu ascent

Him "do you know how sexy you sounded a second ago" I giggle

Me "turned on?"

Him "like hell" I bite my lower lip

Me "oh well sorry babe, but sex is off the table till our honeymoon night, I want it to be magical" he

chokes on his saliva and it takes everything in me to not laugh at his expression right now

Him "what?" the shock in my baby's voice

Me "haibo Molemo ungizwile pho"

Him "do you want me to die of blue balls Soft, you not even sure of when you want the wedding to be"

Me "still baby"

Him "I am not agreeing to that"

Me "you don't have a choice love"

Him "if that is the case then I am paying your lobola next weekend and we go sign at home affairs then

we take a trip to wherever you like and it's all over, we will have the wedding afterwards"

Me "just like that" I ask amused

Him "yes coz the is no way I am not making love to my woman for months"

Me "you won't die, you know that right"

Him "easy for you to say coz you have never felt the warmness and tightness of that mini heaven

between your legs Soft"

Me "I see"

Him "by just thinking about it, look at me" he shows me his



erection and I smile

Me "that good huh"

Him "you have no idea baby"

Me "I guess I deserve a reward"

Him "orgasm maybe" I laugh

Me "nope I said no love making till honeymoon night, go take a cold shower"

Him "Soft you can't do this to me baby please"

Me "I love you so much" I say sipping on my wine and the sad look on his face is killing me right now

THANDIWE

I honestly don't know where to start without and the life I had with him, it is all I know and I am scared,

change is hard for an individual so what about a mother who has to figure it out for her two kids as well,

my biggest fear is failing and not being able to be the best mother to my children and have them grow

up and want to go live with their father and Thato, that will kill

me, I need to figure out what exactly I will do with my life. school or entrepreneurship, I am not sure yet what I love doing, I am not sure what my passion is and that is one more thing that keeps me awake at night coz I can't think of anything all I am good at is being a mother to my babies but that won't make me money, I need something I will build a legally for my children from. I won't always rely on him to support me and the kids, I know he promised and I believe him but I don't know how his wife and mother will react to that, I have depended on him and I got nothing to show because of that so I won't have myself go through that again I refuse shame, my mother managed to get my kids into s good daycare around here and my son says he loves it more there than his previous one, I wonder why. They woke up early and went to church so I cooked and waited for them but dololo I wonder where they might be coz it is almost 6pm, the front door opens and it's Ntombi, she walks in with a weekender, I wasn't even aware that she wasn't around

Her "hello" she says sitting down

Me "hi Ntombi, how are you"

Her "I am okay thanks, wena"

Me "I'm fine hey"

Her "where is mam'Lungile"

Me "she hasn't returned from church" she nods

Her "I am sure she went to one of her friends house"

Me "mama has friends"

Her "yes the ladies from church, they normally have lunch after the service at each others houses, they

are yet to come here" I didn't know that

Me "oh okay, so where are you coming from" she blushes

Her "a friends place" I laugh and shake my head

Me "boyfriend you mean, coz no friend ill make you blush like that" she giggles

Me "hai uyashesha sisi (you don't waste time) not even a year in this city and you already have a man,

be careful though men here are heartless, they will use you and

discard you like old shoes" he

expression changes

Her "excuse me" she says standing up

Me "one more thing please" she looks at me

Me "please don't fall pregnant in my mother's house, she won't be able to feed you and a child, it's

tough times for everyone"

Her "I don't plan to" she says and walks away, haibo she is rude I was just trying to give her some

friendly advise here, I mean I know the city more than her, I am the victim of Jozi man, she should just

listen to me and not bring more burden to my mother, already she is feeding and taking care of her and

my poor mother doesn't work, I am pretty sure the money Gadafi pays her is not even enough for

toiletries eish its tough out here, my mother though in this tough economy she brings a burden and

worse part she is dating and sleeping out instead of going out there and trying to find a proper job so

she can move out and start her own life you know be independent. I change the TV channel but it is

boring so I take my phone and go back to stalking Thato

SIZWE

My mother was ranging, boiling with anger, I have never seen her like this, but I promised Thandiwe that

I will keep her on the leash and I tend to keep my promise I mean that is the least I owe her shame.

She walked to the coffee table and took the vase on top of it and threw it against the wall and my

woman winced before but I just keep a straight face, I just hope she doesn't do worse phela I know my

mother can be a mental case if she wants to.

Mom "you let that village hoe walk out with my grandchildren"

Me "mama please"

Mom "don't mama me Sizwe"

Me "I can't talk to you when you are like this" I attempt to walk away

Mom "I dare you to walk away Sizwe I dare you to walk out on

me while I am still talking" my legs just

freeze and I sigh, she is one person I would never dare

Me "mama what do you want from me huh"

Mom "I want you to go back and bring back that girl to this house, we paid her lobola and she will only

leave here dead" I shake my head

Me "Thandiwe took a decision and I respect that I was long overdue, I have Thato now"

Mom "I have nothing against Thato, but you know what that village girl is useful for, your imagine Sizw

dammit man, a divorce won't look good on you man, the Chinese will drop you coz they do not believe

in divorce" I sigh

Mom "but they will understand polygamy"

Me "tell them that you want to grow your fathers family since you were the only child, you want to

leave this legacy to your children, we will tell then Thandiwe had complications with Kayise which

caused her womb so the both of you decided that you should get another wife and that she personally

choose her for you. Chinese love family they will worship you I swear, just get that woman back here with my grandchildren”

Me “I respect you a lot mama and you know I would do anything for you but this is one thing I can’t do. I

have hurt the mother of my children beyond and I need to let her be so she can heal and find herself”

Mom “you are testing me here son”

Me “I love you but no mama”

Mom Sizwe” she shouts

Me “I said no mama, this is about my marriage and my children, my life and I will decide on what to do

not you or anyone” she laughs

Mom “are you declaring war against your own mother”

Me “I will do no such thing but I will stand by my word, leave Thandiwe and my children alone, they will

stay with their mother and they will be well taken care of” she laughs

Mom “Thato talk to this fool of yours makoti wam”

Me “leave my woman out of this Mrs Dlomo please”

Mom "if you don't want to bring her back fine then get me my grandchildren or I will do it myself" with

that she takes her hand bag and walks out leaving clacking sounds of her high heels

Thato "baby your mother is so scary what are we going to do" I take her hand

Me "sorry you had to see that love, I figure something out okay"

Thato "whatever you decide I am here and I will support you through it, just keep the kids shielded from

all of this, we don't want to damage them really and they are still so young please baby" I smile at her

Me "I love you okay" she kisses me

Thato "I love you too babe"

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 96 (NOT EDITED)

RAZOR

I need to get my affairs in order and soon, I have to make right



by my woman, I don't know why I  
wanted to wait any longer to marry her, she has been nothing  
but amazing, my rock and pillar of  
strength in times of great need, we will make this work, I know  
we will. I plan to pay lobola very soon  
and I need to have finalized my divorce with Fiona, I am relieved  
that I managed to move everything I  
own to Olivia and Soft, Fiona will get nothing from me just a  
few hundred thousand. I get to the prison  
and the guard takes me to a private room, I hate this place shit.  
He opens the door and I enter and find  
her already sitting in her orange jumpsuit, she stands soon as  
she sees me and stares at me. I thank the  
guard and he exits

Me "Fiona"

Her "what are you doing here"

Me "I just wanted to see if the color orange suits you"

Her "fuck you Razor" I laugh

Me "I am curious, how did you think this would end?"

Her "I am pretty sure you didn't come all this way to ask me this"

Me "true but like I said I am curious" she chuckles

Her "you will pay for everything I promise you"

Me "you should have just stayed away Fiona"

Her "and leave you to enjoy life"

Me "yes, at least you would still have your freedom" I say shrugging my shoulders

Her "I hate you Molemo Motaung"

Me "me too sweetheart"

Her "what the fuck do you want" I sigh and cross my leg

Me "sign" I say placing an envelope and pen in front of her, she opens and scans the papers

Her "no fucking way, I won't grant you this no way forget it"

Me "you know I can get it done with or without you"

Her "then why are you here"

Me "because I am marrying the perfect woman, the innocent humble woman, I don't want anything to

taint my union with her, she is all that is good in the world and I want to give her everything good, and

divorcing you legally is one of them” she laughs

Her “you are marrying your daughters friend, are you sick  
Razor”

Me “it is none of your business”

Her “you are a pervert you sick fuck”

Me “says someone who fucked her own daughters boyfriend”

Her “go to hell”

Me “just sign the damn papers Fiona, not that I won’t kill you I  
just choose not too but trust me I will if I

have to” I say with a straight face as calm as possible and she  
blinks a couple of times then takes the

papers and signs them

Me “good girl, now listen here don’t you dare try and contact  
my children, leave them alone Fiona or I

will kill you this time I swear”

Her “just watch your back Razor”

Me “you fooled me once don’t ever think you will be that lucky  
again” I stand up and exit. Officially

divorced now I can marry my baby in peace

## MANDLA

Everything is just so complicated I don't even know who to talk to. I just wish I can wake up and realize

this was just a bad dream, my life is spiraling out of control and I don't know how to fix it, my license

might be taken and I might not be able to practice medicine again all because of something that was not

my fault, I hate money and all it can do because it fucks up our lives, so weeks ago a rich kid came into

the ER and she over dozed on morphine in its purest form and she suffered a stroke, the parents blame

me the Dr saying I injected her with that morphine and caused her stroke, I don't I don't know how the

papers changed and corroborate their story it's hard enough because the hospital is distancing

themselves from me, they said I should get my own lawyer, I am still waiting to hear from them

regarding my hearing, that's only when I will try get legal representation, I will talk to Vusi and maybe he

will be able to help me, I don't even know how I will tell my

mother and my friends, I have been leaving  
the house each morning pretending to go to work but Palesa  
can tell something is wrong with me, I just  
don't know how I will break this news to her.

Her "baby can I make you anything to eat?"

Me "no I am fine thanks"

Her "baby you haven't been eating, you never sleep, you are not  
yourself, please talk to me"

Me "I am fine just work"

Her "even so talk to me please"

Me "come on Palesa, I am not in the mood"

Her "I am sick and tired of this now, you are acting up and I  
don't even know why, you have been distant

from me for weeks now"

Me "I have a lot going on at work Palesa and you wouldn't  
understand"

Her "try me"

Me "damn it Palesa no man" he eyes pop

Her "I thought we agreed that we will communicate better this time"

Me "I also thought we agreed that you will be my peace but here you are being a nuisance"

Her "oh really I am a nuisance now"

Me "yes that is what you are"

Her "you are such an ungrateful bastard you know that, I put my life on hold playing wife while you go out there and be a Dr"

Me "I didn't ask you to put your life on hold" she laughs

Her "will you ever stop treating me like a fucken option like I am nothing"

Me "Palesa please"

Her "no Mandla, I have tried to be a better girlfriend this time around and you are not meeting me half way, this past few weeks this relationship has been a one way street" I sigh

Me "I think you should go home for a while"

Her "wow just wow" she says wiping her tears

Me "I am sorry I just need time to myself" I hate that I am

shutting her out but I need to be alone

Her "don't expect me to wait for you again"

Me "don't talk like this"

Her "I will be out of your hair this evening" a part of me wants to tell her the truth but how do I tell her

that my license could be taken that I might be stripped off something I working so hard for, I am a man

and right now I am fucking weak how will she look at me as her man how will I provide and take care of her

NTOMBI

I don't know why Thandiwe doesn't like me coz we didn't know each other before here, I have done

nothing to offend or step on her toes, I have been trying to stay out of her way because this is her

mother's house and I don't want her to be uncomfortable here, I am nothing just that mam'Lungile

helped me out and I should just try to move out of here before she insults me more. I miss my Tebogo,

he has been gone for 3 days now, he went to Italy to do what I don't know but he promised to let me know when he gets back. Speak of the devil, he is calling me, I can't help but smile

Me "muntu wami (my person)"

Him "baby waka, how are you" I smile

Me I am okay I guess, just miss you"

Him "daddy is coming home tomorrow baby"

Me "please I can't wait any longer now"

Him "I am coming baby, just get to my house tomorrow to welcome me okay"

Me "okay I love you"

Him "I love you more babe, you don't sound okay what's wrong"

I sigh coz this man knows me too well

in such a short space of time

Me "its Ntombi baby"

Him "is she still making you feel uncomfortable?"

Me "yeah even though I try to avoid her"



Him "baby I told you to come stay with me"

Me "I don't believe in cohabitation baby please my mother would turn in her grave"

Him "I know, I know. Let me get you an apartment then and I am not taking no for an answer, go tell

Lungile now, tomorrow we are going property shopping"

Me "Tebogo"

Him "Ntombi go tell Lungile you are moving out in a week" I sigh, we conclude on our conversation and I

go find Mam'Lungile who is with Thandiwe in the garden

Me "sanibonani"

Ma "hey my baby unjani" Thandiwe doesn't greet back

Me "I am fine thanks, do you have a minute I need to talk to you"

Ma "I am listening my baby, what's wrong"

Me "thank you for all you have done for me mama, I will forever be indebted to you, I have overstayed

my welcome so in a week I will move out I just need to find a place"

Ma "haibo Ntombi I never gave you a time frame, you are

welcome here forever if you like my baby”

Thandiwe “haibo mama she wants to leave let her”

Ma “she doesn’t have a job Thandiwe how will she pay rent” I sigh

Me “the bursary covers accommodation so It won’t be a problem”

Ma “I don’t care Ntombi. This is your home and you are not going anywhere uyangizwa”

Me “yebo ma”

Thandiwe “you should let her mama it was going to teach her how to be independent you know”

Ma “I said no Thandiwe. She is not leaving here she will finish her qualification then be independent. I

don’t want to talk about you moving out again, the topic is closed” she stood up and left me with a

Thandiwe whose look could send me straight to my maker.

Tebogo is not going to be happy about this,

not one bit nkosiyam

Thandiwe “if you really wanted to leave, you wouldn’t told her, you would have found a place and told

her the day you were moving out” she said and I didn’t respond I

just stood up and left

OLIVIA

I am glad I opened my heart to love again, I have been so happy with my baby, he is absolutely amazing,

a part of him lives to see me happy always and I love that about him, life couldn't be any better. We are

so close I practically live here with him; I swear if my dad finds out I am dead meat. I know it's wrong but

I can't find myself sleeping alone in that cold bed whilst I could be snuggled close with my boo thang, he

feels the same coz each time I need to leave he begs me to stay one more day and I end up staying for

another full week. Here we are again cuddling naked on the couch, after a steamy session, we are not

saying anything and the silence is very comfortable. The door opens and a girl screams

Her "oh what the fuck Steven really" she says looking away and I quickly stand up and my baby hands

me my robe and he quickly puts on his boxers

Him "we are decent"

Her "what happened to the bedroom"

Him "what happened to calling before you show up"

Her "I did but you never pick up, you have been promising to visit" okay who the fuck is this

Him "I have been busy man"

Her "on top of her I see that"

Him "hey no don't do that"

Her "who are you nana" she says looking at me, I know she didn't just call me nana

Me "Olivia"

Her "Olivia please be a darling and go get dressed and leave, my brother and I need some time" I laugh

Him "Noni no you don't talk to my girlfriend like that no"

Her "your girlfriend?" she laughs and I feel myself boil with anger

Him "sis I love you but you don't get to come to my house and disrespect my lady like that"

Her "right" she chuckles again and I have had enough

Me "listen here sis, you don't know me and you don't disrespect me like that" I say in a calm tone trying

so hard not to sound rude

Her "I am not your sis nana"

Me "you got that right, I wouldn't wish to have a disrespectful brat for a sis"

Her "Steve get your floozy"

Me "bitch you have the nerve"

Him "Noni the fuck no, leave tuu and come back once you have learned some manners nxa"

Her "you throwing your only sister out because if a woman really Steven"

Him "she is my girlfriend and you came here to her mans house and disrespected her I will not have that"

Her "I am so telling mom about this"

Him "if it will please you" she laughs and attempts to walk out

Him "wait" what is he kidding why the hell is he stopping her

Her "no you threw me out so don't stop me"

Him "please leave my key" the shock on her face, she shakes her

head and drops the key on the floor

and exits slamming the door, he turns to look at me

Him "I am so sorry my love"

Me "it's not your fault baby"

Him "I will call my mother and have her talk to Noni she was way out of line"

Me "okay love, thanks for standing up for me like that"

Him "it's my job baby and I love you"

Me "I love you too" we share a warm hug.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 97 (NOT EDITED)

RAZOR

I planned the most romantic dinner at our place, I wanted to do something special for Soft when I break

the news of my divorce to her, she might not have said it but I saw that it has been weighing down on

her, I think she was scared that Fiona might refuse signing the papers, I know this will be more than a

relief to her, she will start being fully excited about planning our wedding and that's all I want for her

really, for her to be happy, I mean the woman has made sure that I am more happy, she respects me

and she stands by me through worse of times. The person I hired finished setting up and I must admit,

she is going to love it. I finish taking a shower and opt for just the denim she is crazy about and a white

crisp v-neck, I head down stairs and pour two glasses of champagne and just in time the front door

opens and I immediately go to her with her glass and red roses, her favorite. The smile on her face

ignites a fire deep inside, a fire that reminds me of how much I love this woman.

Me "hey beautiful"

Her "hello baby" I blush and stop in front of her, and she pecks my lips

Me "here these are for you" I say handing her the flowers

Her "oh my love, these are very beautiful thank you"

Me "come with me" I take her free hand and she narrows her

eyes

Her "what are you up to Molemo" I laugh

Me "nothing baby I just want to appreciate my woman that's all I swear" she smiles and we walk into

the dining area and she gasp for air soon as she sees the set up

Her "oh God, Mo baby, this is so beautiful, all this for me, little plain me" I laugh

Me "this is all for you my deserving lady"

Her "what did this village girl do to bag this man though, universe thank you" I smile

Me "oh trust me I am the one who should be thanking the universe baby" she places the roses down

and cups my face and gives me a passionate kiss

Her "thank you love"

Me "you are most welcome Soft" I open a seat for her and she sits down and I do the same after

handing her the champagne flute

Her "so tell me Mr. Motaung what are celebrating"

Me "well ma'am please see for yourself" I hand her the documents and she scans them, her left hand



goes to her mouth exposing the diamond on her finger

Her "is this for real"

Me "for real for real"

Her "we are free to get married" she asks standing up

Me "yes we are baby" she hurries to me and gives me the warmest hug ever

Her "oh thank God, I was worried that she wouldn't want to sigh"

Me "nothing will stop me from marrying you Sizakele" she tightens the hug

Her "you are amazing"

Me "you know for you I am weak"

Her "you are my gentle bear" I laughs

Me "yes I am Soft" she kisses me

Her "okay now I have to find the best wedding planner in the world" I chuckle

Me "okay then, you plan it all"

Her "oh no Mr. you will be doing everything with me, choosing colors, flowers, cake flavors and the

menu, this is our wedding" oh boy it's about to go down, I fake a

smile and she giggles

STEVE

Just got to my house and it feels so empty without my princess, she makes it feel like a home, it is very

lively and warm when she is around, but today I couldn't convince her to stay one more week, I this my

sisters attitude didn't sit well with me, I know she doesn't blame me or something like that, but after the

incident I felt her detachment, who would blame her though, not getting along with your partners

siblings makes this hard, and I know my sister was just being a brat really. The front door opens and for a

minute I thought it could be my woman but I just dropped her off, she couldn't possibly be here so fast,

and I know for a fact that it's not Noni coz I took her keys, so it could only be my mother, I can't deal

with her not now, I decide to pretend to be asleep, footsteps approach and I sense her standing in front

of me, a second later I feel a cushion hitting me on the face,

Her "I know you are not sleeping Steven so get up from the pretend sleep" I sigh and get up

Me "mother"

Her "don't mother me, why did you fight with your sister over some straatmate"

Me "she is not a straatmate mama, and I didn't fight with your daughter she came her and started insulting my girlfriend"

Her "what girlfriend, the one that allows you to sleep with her all over the house"

Me "mama please. I am not doing this with you"

Her "no you will do this, why do you love these loose girls, they will just use you for money and dump you"

Me "well if that is what you are worried about you can relax coz Olivia has money, she can afford to buy herself anything she wants, what I do for her is out of the goodness of my heart"

Her "yoh she worse, the ones with money don't listen to any man, you will be her wife and she will be

the husband, is that what you want”

Me “mama what do you want mara ye, she doesn’t have money it’s a problem, she has money it’s still a problem, kante what must happen”

Her “I want you to settle down with that nice young girl I once met at that restaurant with you, she is humble, sweet, innocent she will make a great mother and wife I promise you” I shake my hand

Me “Olivia is the one I want trust me”

Her “exactly not the one you need” I roll my eyes

Me “you don’t even know my girlfriend for you to be crucifying her like this”

Her “I know enough, your sister told me about her and I trust her judgment” I laugh

Me “what your daughter needs to do is get herself a man and get fucked very hard”

Her “STEVEN”

Me “no mama, I love you and Noni but I will not have you come to my house and tell me who I should

and shouldn’t date, this is my love life, I will choose the woman I wish to spend the rest of my life with

and I don't need your opinion on that, just your support as my mother, my only parent"

Her "so I should just watch you make a mistake, I just want you to get a good girl man Steven"

Me "my girl is a good girl for me mama, I chose her coz I will be the one to live with her. Thanks for your

concern but Olivia is perfect for, if you give her a chance you will see this for yourself"

Her "mxm I wasted my time, let me just cook and leave" I laugh

Me "don't worry about that, she cooked for me, enough for the whole week" she looks at me and says

nothing

Her "I have errands to run I will see you, I love you"

Me "I love you too ma, and please tell you daughter to never contact me or show up if she is not ready

to apologize to my girlfriend"

Her "you know she will never agree to that"

Me "I guess me and her have reached our cross road, that's how serious I am about this one mama"

1 month later

NTOMBI

What could possibly be wrong with me, these past few weeks have been hell for me, I feel so sick

everyday and only in the morning, getting through classes is a drag coz everything just smells horribly, I

told Tebogo and he promised to take me to the Dr tomorrow coz it has been long overdue now, today I

woke up feeling worse, I didn't even go to school. oh my God here it comes again, I quickly get out of

bed and run to the bathroom almost knocking down mam'Lungile down with the cup of coffee in her

hand, I kneel down quickly and start vomiting, this is part of it, throwing up early in the morning, time I

haven't even had anything to eat. Once I am done I stand up and flush then rinse my mouth and brush

my teeth, I get out of the bathroom and mama is standing outside the door with a look on her face

Me "I am sorry mama, I just" she doesn't wait for me to finish

Ma "Ntombi, what's going on sisi"

Me "I think ngine nyogo mama" she laughs

Ma "in a human form yes"

Me "what do you mean mama" I ask coz really I am confused

Ma "come let's go sit down" I follow her and we go to the lounge, we sit and she looks at me straight in

the eye

Me "is everything okay mama"

Ma "you tell me sisi"

Me "I am lost mama"

Ma "Ntombi, do you and Gadafi use a condom" I tense up and give her the how did you know about us

look and she doesn't change her expression.

Ma "I was not born yesterday, I know about you too, you suddenly have a friend you sleep over at

ngama weekends, you receive nice expensive gifts, you are glowing" I look down embarrassed

Me "I am very sorry mama"

Ma "I am not angry, I just wish you could have finished school first and be independent, a child is a huge responsibility"

Me "a child? What are you talking about"

Ma "it is clear that you are pregnant Ntombi, morning sicknesses, you are always tired, everything smells bad, you are forever scratching your breasts" I felt my heart go into my stomach

Me "kodwa mama we didn't use it only once, after that we have been safe"

Ma "that's all it takes my baby" I feel like my world is about to crash, I am not ready for a child, I wanted to get my life in order first, Tebogo, will he be mad at me for falling pregnant

Me "oh God what have I done"

Ma "you had sex without a condom sthandwa sam and now a living proof will be here in a few months time" I feel tears threatening

Me "I didn't mean to disrespect you like this mam'Lungile" she smiles

Ma "like I said I wish you could have finished school first, a child



will grow, I just need you to promise me  
that you will finish your qualification and fulfill your dreams,  
don't depend on Gadafi, be your own  
woman please"

Me "I promise mama and I am sorry again"

Ma "you and Sizakele and these old man will kill me" we both  
laugh

Me "I will make it up to you mama"

Ma "once you have shared this with your boyfriend tell him I  
want to have a word with him" I nod and she gives me a warm  
hug

MERCY

I have never felt so good in my life, these drugs help me forget  
and that's what I need to forget that I

fucked up and lost the only two people that loved me to the  
moon and back because of my own selfish

reasons, I just had two lines of cocaine and I feel like I own the  
world, this weather is perfect to be

indoors and smoke with people and drink alcohol, just to have  
mad fun, my dealer and I have  
established a trust relationship, I no longer meet with him at  
corner I now go to his place, I must admit  
these people make a lot of money selling this thing to us, I find  
myself outside his house high as fuck,  
there are a few expensive cars parked outside, I just walk in ring  
the door bell, he comes to open and he  
is butt naked with a glass of whisky in his hand

Him "rich kid, what are you doing here"

Me "I need some stuff" he laughs

Him "you two bags last night, you mush upgrade to something  
stronger now"

Me "coke is still fine for now" I say trying to keep my eyes away  
from his exposed dick

Him "come in and have a few lines on me, my friends and I are  
having our own fun" I nod and walk in,

he closes the door then leads the way, as we go deeper in the  
house I hear sexual sounds, I stop on my

tracks and he laughs

Him "don't be scared like I said we are just having fun" we continue walking in and the next thing I saw, shocked me

Me "what the hell is going on here" I ask and he smirks and sits down placing a bag of coke, a bank card and a R200 note on the table

Him "this is fun its called cream pie" there are about 12 or so guys all naked and one woman, they are having turns with her and she seems to be enjoying herself, I have never seen anything like this

Me "can I" he nods and I start doing some lines, they eventually finish and the girl comes to sit next to me and does two lines

Her "hi my name is Vicky"

Me "oh hey I am Mercy, did they force you to do that" I whisper and she laughs

Her "no I enjoy doing it and they pay me good money" I am shocked

Me "I see" my dealer introduces me to his friends and rich kid and them as just the boys, one of them says something that seems to interest everyone

Him "let's have a gang bang" this Vicky girl laughs

Her "I doubt Mercy will agree"

Me "agree to what exactly" they all looking at me intense" my dealer speaks

Him "we all have sex" I gasp for air

Me "what, all 13 of you have sex with just the two of us"

Him "yes"

Her "it is very fun I swear" she says laughing, I am high yeas but this shit scares me

Me "I think I have heard and seen too much for one day" I stand up and drop a couple of notes on the

table and take two bags of cocaine and hurry out leaving them bursting in laughter.

Him "we will be here if you change your mind princess I know you are horny" my dealer shouts loud

enough for me to hear him, I get to my car and sigh, I don't know why but I start imagining myself in that group sex, but the thought of their inches is enough to get me to start my engine and drive off.

I will TRY to post again later when the electricity is back.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 98 (NOT EDITED)

#### GADAFI

Ntombi hasn't been feeling well these past few weeks, we don't know what is wrong with her so I

decided that it is time she consults a Dr, I just picked her up from Lungile's house a few minutes ago and

she has been off since, I try to make small talk here and there but she responds with one word answers

so I figure she is not feeling too well, maybe after she gets medication she will be back to my bubbly

baby, we get to the Dr's office and she walks out before I can say anything, if I didn't know better I

would say she is hiding something from me or something is really bothering her, we will have to have a

conversation after here. I take her hand after locking the car and we walk in, I kiss her knuckles but she

doesn't relax at all, no I am officially worried about her, we are right on time for our appointment so the

receptionists just tells us to go right in.

Dr "good afternoon, how may I help you guys today" the Indian female Dr says

Me "hi Dr, I brought my girlfriend in, she hasn't been feeling okay for weeks now" I say looking at

Ntombi who is looking down

Dr "oh okay no problem, so darling can you please describe your symptoms to me" she looks at me and

I see fear in her eyes, she is scaring me really

Her "uhm ahh, I uhm"

Dr "relax and take a deep breath, we could ask your partner to step out, if he is making you feel

uncomfortable" she shakes her head

Her "no it's okay, if it's true I want him to hear it so I don't have to repeat it to him"

Me "baby what is going on, you are scaring me" she ignores me and looks at the Dr

Her "Dr I think I am pregnant" in that point in time my whole world came to a stand still

Me "you are what?" I say half shouting, she doesn't look at me

Dr "okay that shouldn't be a problem at all, just take this cup and pee in it then we will run a quick test

and if it comes back positive we will get a scan and start you on some supplements okay" she takes the

cup and disappears in the bathroom, I am left with mixed emotions, I am not sure how to feel about all

of this, I mean I never thought about having Kids, hell I just only let myself fall in love, and know I might

be a father, this is all too much too soon, I love her and I just wanted to give her the world first, I mean if

my enemies find out about this I am ruined, they will use this child to get what they want out of me, oh

fuck how could I have been so stupid. I rub my bold head roughly

Dr "sir are you okay"

Me "I am fine Dr, was just not expecting this" she was about to respond when the door opens and

Ntombi walks out, she hands the Dr the cup and she inserts he gloves and inserts a strip in the urine and

put it down, after what seems like eternity she looks and smiles

Dr "congratulations, you are pregnant. Let's take a look at the angel in the" I look at my baby and she

has tears in her eyes. I feel like walking out of here and going for long drive just to clear my head, they

both stand up and head to the bed, I couldn't even stand, I swear shock can kill, they come back and I

see her holding on to a black and white picture, she even has a smile on her face but the pain and

uncertainty in her eyes is visible, she looks at me and I stare back with no emotions, I hate that I am

hurting her right now but this is all too much, I don't know really

Dr "mhh mhh" she clears her throat obviously feeling the awkwardness between Ntombi and I

Me "excuse me, you will find me in the car" I stand up and walk out, I need to talk to Razor right now, I

feel like I am losing my mind right now.

LUNGILE

My daughter surprised me and paid me a visit, I haven't seen



her since her Lobola negotiations which went well, MaNtuli's brothers managed to come through and negotiate for her, I am grateful for that really, I don't know what to do for that woman, for all she has done for me, we are in the lounge watching some Nigerian movie and I know that she is irritated but she must just suck it up because this is my house, Thandiwe decided to lock herself and her children in the bedroom coz her sister is here, I really don't know when she is planning to burry this.

Her "mama can we watch something else haibo"

Me "go to your house ke sisi" she laughs

Her "throwing me out because of these loud movies"

Me "I paid for this DSTV and this is my house, stop complaining and go cook"

Her "just wow" we both laugh, the door opens and Ntombi walks in looking defeated, she is even crying,

Sizakele quickly gets up and hurries to her, helping her to the nearest chair, I get up and sit next to her

Me "haibo sisi, yini ukhalelani (why are you crying)" she cries more and it pains me

Her "khuluma nathi Ntombi (talk to us)" she weeps in Siza's arms for a few minutes

Me "khuluma no mamakho sisi (talk to your mother)"

Ntombi "ngi'khulelwe mama" she says and cries harder

Me "oh my baby" I take her from Sizakele

Her "is it Gadafi?" she nods

Her "then you don't have to worry sisi, he will be here for you and the baby"

Ntombi "I doubt that, I was with him at the Dr, he was cold, he didn't even care Siza, he just dropped me

off here without even talking to me, why is he doing this to me" she cries harder

Her "that is unluch Gadafi, that man loves you, I am sure he is just scared, I mean he never thought he

could love a woman, and you came alone, hell he never thought he could be someone's father and again

here you are giving him the most beautiful gift in the world"

Ntombi "then why did he leave me off like that, he was so cold Siza"

Her "I am sorry, but he is just scared, he will calm down and realize how blessed he is, don't cry please"

Me "don't cry baby, you are upsetting my grandchild"

Her "mama is right we should be celebrating this new life not sobbing and sad like this, G loves you and

he will process all of this then come around I promise"

Ntombi "I hope so Siza coz I can't do this on my own"

Me "you will never do this alone, you have us sisi" she smiles

Ntombi "thank you so much mama"

Her "did they start you on supplements?" she takes out meds from her bag

Ntombi "she gave me all this"

Her "good then, are you comfortable with her or should we shop around for an OB/ GYN?"

Ntombi "I am comfortable with her thank you"

Me "okay let me go fix you something to eat"

Ntombi "no thank you mama I want to go and lie down a bit"

Me "this one is making you lazy" I brush her tummy and she giggles and heads to her room

Her "mama let me go find that fool Gadafi, I am pretty sure he

is at my house”

Me “bring him here when you find him, what did he think would happen if he didn’t use a condom”

Her “I will call you later, I love you”

Me “I love you too sisi, drive safely and stop being a stranger  
Sizakele I am your mother and I miss you”

Her “I promise I won’t mawami” we hug and she leaves, I head to the kitchen to fix something for

Ntombi, she has to eat it is no longer about her but the baby

SIZA

I am going to knock on that big head of his, how could he be so stupid God, I don’t understand how man

think sometimes, his stupid self thought it was okay to be a jerk at a sensitive time like this, I just hope

he is at the house coz I am not in the mood to look for him all over this city, he better have a fucking

good excuse as to why he did that to the woman he claims to love. I get to the house and the imbecile’s

car is in the drive way, I drive in like Lewis Hamilton and sprint out of the car like Usain Bolt, the house is

dead quiet so I make my way to his study, I find him pacing up and down with my man on his chair looking at him

Me "what made you think that doing that to Ntombi is okay"

G "how do you know"

Me "I was at my mother's when she got home crying and feeling all alone" he sighs and sits down, I go

to him and take the whisky glass from his hand and knock on his bold head with it

G "ouch Siza, brother talk to your wife please"

Mo "nope I wanna beat the living shit out of you myself"

G "wow brother wow"

Me "why did you do it"

G "I am scared okay, what kind of father will I possibly be Siza"

Me "the one that tries, the one that loves unconditionally and most importantly the one that stays through it all"

Mo "Soft is right brother, you are being blessed here, God is

giving you a chance to be a good man”

G “I never thought I could be anyone’s father man”

Me “she is scared, alone, she feels like you used her too, she feels like the king was right that no man

will ever see her worthy and right now you are making her believe those words more than ever, she is

carrying your child, she needs you”

G “shit I hurt my baby, how could I have pushed her away, I promised to never leave and I did just that,

how do I look at her”

Mo “just go see your woman and you will figure it out”

G “it’s just so complicated, my rivals and enemies, once they know about them I am fucked”

Me “you have been a cartel Lord all your life, it is time that changes Gadafi, it’s time to be a father and

partner to Ntombi”

Mo “yep help with grocery shopping and changing diapers” he laughs

G “the underworld is all I know”

Me “of fo God sake, you were not born a criminal. Your brother

managed to leave that life what makes  
you think you will fail”

G “Razor has always been a family man Siza, it wasn’t easy for  
him to be completely normal”

Me “do you love Ntombi”

G “more than anything in this whole entire world I swear”

Me “then go make things right with her, assure her that you will  
never do this again, prove it too”

G “I fucked up”

Me “yes you did but she loves you and trust me that alone will  
make her forgive you”

G “I needed to hear this thank you Siza, let me go see my  
woman, though Lungile is going to eat me  
alive and raw”

Me “make things right with Ntombi and all will be gone and  
forgotten”

Mo “Mrs. Motaung said it”

G “you are a lucky man brother”

Mo “and so are you, go get your queen and be happy you are  
having a baby” he smiles and leaves

## MERCY

I decided to treat myself to a 3 course meal at top restaurant, i have been spending so much on cocaine

I forgot I enjoy these things, I even bought myself a pair of shoes and a dress, I still need to look good, I

mean I am no junkie I am just using to forget and that doesn't mean I shouldn't take care of myself, this

champagne still tastes as good as the last time I remember. I was enjoying the taste on my tongue when someone grabbed a chair and set down.

Her "Mercy, how lovely to see you" she doesn't look like that other day at all

Me "oh hey Vicky"

Her "how ar you doing, the last time I say you, you were practically running out of Emi's house"

Me "Emi?"

Her "you dealer" she says in a low voice, oh that is his name



Me "I was traumatized" she laugh

Her "what world do you live in, what was happening was totally normal" is this girl for real

Me "there is nothing normal about sleeping with 13 man at the same time with no condom" she smiles

Her "when you are high on the good stuff honey it is, don't tell me that you are not aware of how nice

sex is when you high on coke" I swallow and press my thighs together

Me "that's outrageous" she laughs again

Her "you should let lose"

Me "you said the money is good, so how much do they pay you" she smiles

Her "enough babe enough"

Me "okay then"

Her "we should hang sometimes you know I don't have friends since my man married my best friend"

Me "ouch that sucks"

Her "tell me about it hey, so tell me why do you use"

Me "to forget"

Her "that means you use more than you should"

Me "you don't?"

Her "I am not stupid" I narrow my eyes

Me "then why do you use"

Her "to be in the presence of these rich boys, they blow money like nothing and this is Jozi honey a girls

got to survive"

Me "wow okay"

Her "a few lines once in a while only when I am with them, I get high I give them all the sex they want

and I get out of there with money to help me establish myself"

Me "establish yourself"

Her "start a business and leave this hustling the streets life"

Me "my father wanted me to start a business but that wasn't for me"

Her "what do you do for a living"

Me "I just breathe and spend some money"

Her "you really are a rich kid, no offence but why are ya'll so stupid though"

Me "excuse me"

Her "your parents always ask you to get qualifications or give you start ups for business of your choice

and you always see that as a death sentence geez open your eyes, they see that they will not live forever

they are just trying to help you survive when they are gone, just give me your life please" I swallow coz

her words remind me of my father so much

SIZAS' TRIBLATIONS

CHAPTER 99 (NOT EDITED)

VUSI

Uriel tells me that Mandla and Palesa have separated and honestly that shook me to the moon, she also

told me that he is currently under investigation at work but doesn't know for what reason since the

hospital management is keeping this under wraps, no wonder he has been withdrawn from us lately he

is going through the most and he is not sharing this with

anyone, I hate that he is keeping this from us, I mean I could have been able to help him from this. What is even nice is that Razor own that hospital so if I have a word with him he might be able to make this whole thing disappear, I have been hooting outside his gate and calling but I get no response at all, I start to really panic I decide to jump the fence lucky for me it is not that high, I walk to the door and try the handle and luckily it is not locked, I get in and the house is a mess, take away containers all over, empty alcohol bottles, his clothes are everywhere, I close my eyes coz this here proves that he is going through the most, I get to the lounge and he is sitting there watching videos of Dr's performing surgeries and he is crying holding a bottle of hennessy in his hand

Me "ntwana" he just looks at me and says nothing, I sigh and go sit next to him

Me "Uriel tells me what is going on at the hospital bafo, why didn't you come to me to help you fix this

mess ntwana yam” he lets out more tears

Him “it is all messed up but I swear I didn’t do what they are accusing me off”

Me “I know poi, I made my investigations, that girl was an addict, her parents are doing this to protect their imagine”

Him “at my expense ndoda, how fucked up can people be”

Me “people are cruel bafo, we need to fight this thing but first I am going to need you stop with the

drinking, I need you to get your act together, those people are rich and they will do anything not to taint

their reputation, I need you to get it together”

Him “like you said they are rich poi and the hospital is distancing themselves from me”

Me “I know the owner of the hospital, I just saved him from jail and I think he would want to show

appreciation”

Him “Razor”

Me “yes, that is his joint, the chief of surgery is his ex wife’s brother” he sits up straight

Him "are you for real, you would talk to Razor for me"

Me "you are my best friend bafo I wont sit around and watch some narcissists ruin your career because

they don't want the world to know that their precious daughter was a junkie that Overdosed and died"

Him "thank you Mfethu" he wipes his tears

Me "now I need you to go take a shower and be fresh"

Him "are you saying that I am smelling Vusi"

Me "you said it bafo I didn't" he laughs

Him "mxm ftsek" he stands up

Me "let me call the cleaning company so long and order us some food, we have a case to prepare for, I

want to approach Razor with all the facts" he nods

Him "thank you Vusi, I was gonna sit here and have a pity party for myself, I appreciate this"

Me "sure power, I know you would have done the same for me"

Him "order something spicy yeses"

Me "ngeke I want that hangover to teach you a lesson"

Him "you are evil bra" I laugh and he disappears to the bathroom and I make those calls so long.

OLIVIA

My baby called and asked me to come to his house coz his sister wanted to talk to me, I honestly don't

have time for that brat and all I will do today I will do for Steve coz this means a lot to him, I honestly

don't get why that Noni girl gave me attitude I mean she doesn't even know me to have judged me like

that, unless she wants to date her own brother or she has someone she wants him to be with and that

she will never happen coz I am not leaving Steven for nobody, I am here to build honey, this is not the

commitment fearing Olivia, this one right here is the one that knows what she wants and isn't afraid to

work for it. I get to the house and park behind a car I assume belongs to his sister, I unlock the door and

walk in find them sitting in the lounge in total silence, both busy on their phones.

Me "hello"

Him "hey baby" I go to him and peck his lips just to annoy her

Her "hi Olivia"

Him "you got here real quick babe"

Her "was driving to my dad's when you called so I just u turned"

Him "thank you for coming love"

Her "so what brings me here coz I was going to come later on"  
he sighs

Him "Noni, wanted to say something to you"

Me "oh" I say and look at her

Her "I honestly want to apologize from the bottom of my heart  
Olivia, I was a brat and I didn't have any

right to speak to you in that manner, you are my brothers  
girlfriend and he loves you that is clear sis so I

won't be a pain and cost him the first girl I have ever seen him  
so happy with, I hope we can be able to

put this behind us and start afresh" I fake a smile and look at  
my man

Me "ujm wow I didn't expect that coming here, but I really  
appreciate this Noni, we good I accept your  
apology"



Him "ahhh thank God, I was not gonna survive beef between my baby and my little sister"

Her "sorry bro, can we hug it out Olivia"

Me "why not, come here" she comes to me and we hug and settle on the same couch

Him "now can I order us food and fix us some drinks so you too can get to know each other"

Me "okay love" he gets up and goes to the kitchen

Her "don't ever for one minute think that I meant what I said, I am going to frustrate you till you live my

brother alone" I burst out laughing I know this bitch was just selling that to her brother

Him "share the joke babe" he shouts from the kitchen

Me "it's a girl thing babe, but your sister is such a joker hey" I say and look at this child

Her "I mean it Olivia, if you know what is good for you, you will just brake up with him now"

Me "oh you just gave me more reason to stay with him boo"

Her "you think I am playing with you"

Me "I don't have the time to play hun, and I would suggest that the time you going to invest in trying to

brake Steven and I up, I would advise you to use it to find a man  
so he can take care of you honey, you

need sex and a lot of it” she was about to respond when babe  
got back in

Him “here are our drinks, I ordered food on Mr D”

Her “thanks bro, you the best”

Him “sure thing Nons”

Her “and biggy I was hoping to spend the weekend with you, it  
has been a minute really”

Him “I would love that sis” let me show this child how it’s done

Her “oh God” I say in a low voice

Him “what is wrong love” I fondle with my fingers

Me “nothing babe” he narrows his eyes

Him “baby don’t do that”

Me “okay fine, I had planned a romantic gate away for the two  
of us, it was meant to be a surprise”

Him “oh nana why didn’t you tell me though” I smile

Me “SURPRISE babe hao” he laughs

Him “sis we gonna have to take a rain check, my baby wants to  
spoil me” she gives him a fake smile and

he hugs me, I stick my tongue out at her, I need to make bookings fast coz I just made this up to show this girl that there is no competition between us, she is his sister and I his girlfriend.

GADAFI

I decided to go to a baby store and bought a few things for the baby, the assistant helped me pick out

unisex clothes since I don't know what we are having, after speaking to Siza I saw that I hurt Ntombi, she

is scared and I was suppose to assure her that we are in this together not to run the way that I did, I can

only hope that she understands and takes me back. I love her and I don't want to live my life without her

and our baby, as much as I am scared I will do my best to the best father to my child and a fucken

amazing husband to Ntombi. I go to the florist and but her 2 dozens of white roses, I then to Alberton

and I wont like I am shit scared what if she doesn't want to hear anything that I have to say, but Siza said

she loves me and she will forgive me, I get to the house and press the intercom and a second later the gate opens and I drive in, I park and retrieve everything that I bought and Lungile is already waiting at the door, I walk towards her with shame

Me "Lungile"

Her "don't you ever make her cry like that siyezwana" I nod

Me "please forgive me I was just scared please"

Her "she is the one carrying that life inside of her, how do you think she felt when she learnt that she is

going to be a mother and the man who suppose to love her ditched and made her feel like she is

nothing" I really hurt my baby, I need to make this right

Me "I am so sorry please, can I see her" she sighs

Her "she is in her room, she has been crying since yesterday after you dropped her off" I close my eyes

Me "can i?" she shows me her room and I open the door, she is in the covers and I can her sniff, Fuck

man Gadafi, she will never ever cry because of you. I place the

paper bags on chair and the flowers on  
the chest of drawers, I remove my shoes and get in bed with her,  
she look up and sees that it's me and  
she cries harder, I am such a jerk yeses, I take her into my arms  
and let her cry

Me "I am really sorry baby, I was just so scared, I forgot that  
you are scared too, I just never imagibed

myself as anyone's father so I was really shocked, It doesn't  
justify the way I hurt you and I am sorry

baby, please forgive me, I love you so much, you and the life you  
are carrying, the life we created

together, I will try everything I can in my power to be the best  
father and partner to you, I don't have

any reference as to how I should do this but so long as I am  
doing it with you I know I will eventually get

it right, thank you for such an incredible gift you are giving, ever  
since you stepped foot in my life you

give me all these blessings and I really appreciate it, forgive me  
please" she says nothing but her hands

snake around my waist and she tightens her hold I kiss her  
forehead"

Her "please don't ever leave us like that Tebogo, we need you"  
she says after forever

Me "I promise I won't love, I need you guys too and I guess in  
the process of raising our gift we will also

do some growing up, especially me" she laughs

Her "I love you so much"

Me "I know my baby, and I love you too" she sits straight and I  
kiss her, I move to her belly

Me "hey princess, this is daddy here, I am sorry for making  
mommy cry this much, daddy doesn't want

and will never be the first man to break your heart, do me a  
favor in there, stop making my woman sick

please, now that we know you are growing in the be a good girl  
and give her some rest okay, and oh

daddy brought you clothes I hope you will love them" she is  
laughing and brushing my bold head

Her "princess huh"

Me "daddy's princess love, I can't believe I am going to be a  
father fuck"

Her "hey language"

Me "I am sorry babe" she smiles

Me "is she really growing in there?"

Her "yes she is, her heart beat is strong too" I smile

Me "can we please go to the Dr again so I can hear it too"

Her "no problem, I would love that very much"

Me "I will never make you cry ever again, except in the bedroom" she laughs

Her "Tebogo, my baby is listening, you can't be saying such things in front of her"

Me "yea ma'am, can you go home with me please"

Her "I would love to but I think mama is still mad at you"

Me "eish yeah she is, I guess I will settle for cuddling you in her house" I say placing my head on her tummy the bump is not yet showing though

SIZA

Molemo and I are with the wedding planner, if she wasn't good at her job I would fire her trust me, this

girl is flirting with my man like I am not in the room, I can see how uncomfortable my man is and I bet

you she can see it too but sis is on a mission God, I tried swapping sides with Mo so she can stop touching but she just finds a way to get her message, she is testing me I swear and if she doesn't stop this nonsense I will embarrass her, she is explaining the different venues and how she decorates each differently and why. She is talking destination weddings and none of that interest me

Me "honestly I just want my wedding to be at a vineyard, everything the ceremony, pictures and reception" she laughs

Her "oh but vineyard weddings are so 2017 don't you think Molemo, I mean Dubai is more like it"

Me "actually a vineyard wedding is more classy and reserved not in your face and all over like all these places you have been screaming about" I see her swallow her saliva

Her "oh I uhm"

Me "yeah so please get us a list of all the beautiful vineyards and please let them be in South Africa"

Her "is that what you want too Molemo"



Me "give my woman everything she want, if she wants table mountain give it to her if she wants TD

Jakes get him her, whatever she wants make it happen"

Her "you are lucky Siza" I was about to answer when Mo took it

Me "I am the lucky one" his work phone rings and he walks away to answer it

Her "he walks away to answer his phone, not a good sign sis" I sigh

Me "is that statement a part of the wedding plans" she narrows her eyes confused

Her "uhm no"

Me "then please don't whatever that has nothing with my wedding is none of you business and while at

it please stop making my man uncomfortable, stop flirting with him like I am not here it is pure

disrespect, I know a lot of people who will kill for this job and they know where to draw the line, I love

your work don't make me fire you right now, stay in your lane"  
Mo clears his throat with a smile

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 100 (NOT EDITED)

## THANDIWE

My husband, I mean ex husband asked to see the kids and I agreed, since he is afraid of seeing my mother he asked that we meet at a public place coz I also don't want to go that house and see Thato, though I didn't tell him that. I got my kids ready and packed everything they will need since they are going for the entire weekend, I decided to look good myself I mustn't show him how miserable I am, so I decided to do my makeup and rock a proper outfit with heels even, they say the best way to get revenge is to look way hotter after the break up, I stand in front of a full length mirror and even though I say so myself I look like money, I take my children's things and put them in the car then go get them and strap them in their seats. My baby girl is already out of it. We decided that we will meet at some private residential park, I get there and I see his car parked so I decide not to call him but to navigate him

myself. I take out my son and carry Kayise, who is now awake, we walk through the park and I see him

but he is not alone, he is with his new wife in matching outfit, I think I feel my heart sink into my

stomach, I manage to compose myself and walk to them, they both stand as they see me, behind them

is a family picnic, I look at it and want to cry, he never had time to do these things with me.

Me "hey"

Him "MaTha, how are you"

Her "hey Thandiwe you look really beautiful"

Me "thank you Thato, I am fine Dlomo how are you"

Him "we are fine thanks, and I really appreciate you agreeing to give us the kids for the weekend"

Me "it's a pleasure, having a picnic"

Him "yes we do but we going to start with a photoshoot, Thato wants us to have a huge photo of us and

the kids in the lounge"

Me "oh I see"

Her "I hope you don't mind, now I feel like I should have asked for permission" I fake a smile

Me "don't be silly it's okay" oh by the way my son saw food, junk food to be precise and he didn't even greet

Her "can I go change them so long while we wait for the photographer"

Him "good idea my love" I hand her Kayise and she calls on my son who goes with a huge smile and they disappear to the bathrooms

Her "when will they be back"

Him "Thato said on Monday, she will drop them off later coz I have work, after all I am about to miss this

entire weekend coz she told me this weekend is all about the kids" everything that I have always

screamed and begged him to do he is doing it gracefully for her, life ne

Me "oh, what do you guys have planned"

Him "oh she has this shoot now, then we will have a picnic then go home I think tomorrow we are going

to the theme park or wild waters then Sunday is kiddies carnival

then I don't know what she has planned  
in between, you know she is trying to establish a relationship  
with them and I am so grateful for her  
efforts, plus they like her it won't make her job difficult"

Me "sounds like fun"

Him "I think I am more excited really" he laughs and I can't  
stand seeing him this happy and content

Me "I have to go now, I don't want to be late"

Him "hot date" I laugh a fake laugh

Me "nope not ready for those, I am meeting friends" I lie just so  
he thinks that I have a life

Him "I didn't know you had any" I smile and walk away with a  
heavy heart

GADAFI

I am really warming up to the fact that I am going to be a father  
soon, I am still scared but the fact that I  
will have someone who will inherit all my fortune is just  
amazing, my princess will be a daddy's girl no

doubt, I have a close relationship with my sisters that I couldn't keep this a secret, I just want those close

to me to know that I have found the most amazing woman in the world and she has given me the most

beautiful gift ever, I know she is going to be over the moon, she has always begged me to settle down

and marry and have kids but I guess that was not the right time coz I wasn't even looking when I found

the love of my life I wasn't even trying when I got her pregnant I guess some things are just meant to be,

right now at this moment we just got to Mafikeng, we are 5 minutes from my sister's house, she doesn't

even know that we are coming I want to surprise her, Ntombi is worrying about nothing, they are going

to love her, plus my baby spent the whole night cooking for them, she even baked and I had to help I

won't lie I had so much fun, we park in front of the gate and I start hooting and she and her kids come

out screaming, excited to see my car, I get out and walk to them, my sister is the first one in my arms.

Her "oh my mother's only son"

Me "ousi waka (my sister)" I haven't seen her in a while

Her "never stay away from home for so long please"

Me "you will be happy to know why I haven't been coming" she smile

Her "tell me hao"

Me "let's get our things out of the car first" she clicks her tongue and moves to the car with a wide

smile, I give them our luggage and they walk to the house, I open my babies door and she walks out and

helps me carry the containers of food, we walk in and my sister screams making me laugh and scaring

my woman

Me "hai man come down Nthabi"

Her "is this the reason you mentioned outside" I nod

Me "yes she is" she attacks me with a hug

Her "oh finally Tebogo waitsi I thought you will die alone and miserable, I mean le Molemo got herself a

woman and he is marrying her"

Me "but Razor did have a wife"

Her "samplella ka lekgowa leo witsi sentle gore nekesa moarate, I just love her children (don't tell me about that white woman, you know very well that I never liked her)" I laugh

Me "okay okay, let me introduce to you okay baby this is my only surviving sibling, Nthabiseng and her

children they will introduce themselves, ousi waka this is the woman I have been with for a few months

now, she takes care of me and I am happy ko Gauteng since we got together, leina lage ke Ntombi"

Her "oh my sister you don't know how happy I am to meet you, thank you very much, I have been

screaming asking him to find a woman and I am sure our mother is rejoicing knowing that she will have a

daughter in law o fresh so" she squeezes her

Me "Nthabi don't squeeze like that, she is pregnant phela mothoo" she immediately let's go and move

her hands to her mouth and tears stream down her face a second later she kneels in front of Ntombi

and start kissing her feet

Her "god works in mysterious way, Ntombi baby, may the good



lord bless you and this pregnancy,  
whatever you need we are here, this is your home when you  
need an escape you are free to show up  
here any moment, Tebogo treat her like a queen she saved you  
and you are not even aware” she gets  
up and hugs Ntombi and my baby hugs her back, she is now  
relaxing with a smile on her face  
Ntombi “ngiyabonga sis Nthabi”  
Her “oh leZulu la ngwana ko gae bathong” we all laugh  
Me “Ntombi cooked, Kgao warm up and dish for us, surely my  
princess is hungry now” we all laugh

## RAZOR

When you get married to the right woman, she becomes your  
everything, a friend, pastor, mother,  
sister, lawyer, banker, teacher, stripper, drinking buddy, chef,  
personal and more, I mean I don't want to  
do anything without Sizakele, I have even started rejecting  
weekend meetings coz this is a time I get to

spend with my baby, yes we live in the same house, but during the week we have work and school, so when it's weekends like this, we just bond and reflect on the previous week and make plans and more plans. We are in our kitchen and she is playing architecture, she wants to change the kitchen and our bedroom, i wanted to buy her a new house but she refused saying she feels attached to this house, she says the first memories of us were in this house, leaving would feel like she is leaving a big part of what made us, that was deep I felt it, I want to buy her a house facing the ocean in Cape Town, she loves that city after all it will be here birthday present this year.

Me "you do know you are studying Medicine baby let the redecorating to professionals"

Her "so I can hire another whore who will try her luck with you"  
I burst out laughing

Me "the wedding planner knows her place now Soft"

Her "that was after I had to threaten her babe, I can't go around threatening all these woman I hire"

Me "then hire a gay guy love" she quickly turns and looks at me with a wide smile

Her "you my love are a genius, I will start looking for recommendations, atleast I know he will find you sexy but not try anything"

Me "allow me to never be around when you finally find one" she laughs

Her "and rob myself off seeing you looking like you want to jump out of your skin" I laugh with her

Me "they are too bold baby" my phone beeps and I take it, it's a photo from Gadafi, its Nthabi and

Ntombi, they look so happy, I am glad he is finally taking some huge steps

Me "baby look" I hand her my phone and she smiles

Her "ncoooo this is so cute my God"

Me "I am so happy for them"

Her "me too my love, they both deserve this really and I am happy they found happiness with each other" she says sincerely

Me "this baby will be the best thing to happen to my brother"

Her "I can't wait for the new life"

Me "we could be waiting on my son right now but you are denying me sex baby you are so cruel"

Her "I am not, just trying to make our honeymoon night more intense" I frown

Me "you are delaying me my children here love"

Her "baby you started me on some fertility treatment I am not delaying anything" I smile

Me "I want to cement my seed the first night of being allowed back in there" I say touching her private

and she laughs

Her "and I will gladly carry our love" I blush

Me "give me a lot of children Siza"

Her "three boys?"

Me "let's make that 5" she bursts out laughing

Her "you thinking pushing out a human head is all fun and games huh, even 3 is a lot nje"

Me "okay 3 is fine before you change your mind"

Her "good boy" I laugh and pull her to me

Me "I love you so much"

Her "I love you too babe lam" I kiss her

MANDLA

I am grateful to Vusi for coming through and not giving up even when I shut him out, I was dying alone

inside the thought of losing my license was killing me, I don't know what I would have done, medicine is

my life, I don't know anything besides it and I don't want to know anything, I pushed away Palesa and I

feel so bad about it, we have been doing good me and her really and I just had to blow it, she was back

to being that woman I fell in love with all those years back, I need to make things right by her. I decided

that I had to go explain myself to her mother first before I spoke to her, I have sent her daughter back

packing twice now and I feel that is disrespectful more especially since I am even living with her without

paying lobola. I just finished explaining to her what was going on with me in fact what is still going on

Her "oh Mandla ngwanake, people are cruel out here watseba"

Me "too much mama, and I regret that I couldn't talk to Palesa and explain to her instead I decided to hurt her again"

Her "yena she is very hurt son, but this is valid you were going through some terrible time and she will understand, what you kids need to do is communicate more"

Me "I totally agree mama, I shouldn't have shut her out"

Her "one more thing, I think you too should stop this living together thing, it is putting a strain on your relationship, fix things but stay apart until you go back to where you were before"

Me "I understand that mama and I agree with you"

Her "I will explain to her when she gets back and she will reach out to you"

Me "thank you so much mama, I hope she forgives me for this"

Her "she will, Palesa loves you ngwanake"

Me "and I love her too mama"

Her "that's all you need to survive"

Me "thank you ma, I need to leave my lawyer and I need to go

see someone who might help me with  
this whole thing”

Her “I will pray for you and God will make this right”

Me “I appreciate that mama, stay well”

Her “bye my son” I take my phone and car key and leave

Monday issa holiday guys, so I will see you on Tuesday, have a  
lovely long weekend my people

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 101 (NOT EDITED)

THATO

I have to drive the kids back to Thandiwe’s and I must admit  
that I am scared of facing her alone, I mean

I am partly to blame for her marriage breaking and I am pretty  
sure she hates me with all her heart and

honestly I don’t blame her, now that I am married to Sizwe I see  
how hard it is for every woman who is

married has it, your husband walks out that door and you are already paranoid, wondering if he is going to see some other woman, I won't say that Sizwe has given me any reason to think that he is cheating on me, I mean me and him are practically joined at the hip, the only time we are apart is when we have work or I need to go to school, all I am saying is I am really sorry for helping married man cheat in the past, I should have been my sisters keepers. I finish getting them ready and I feed Kayise, poor baby girl is knocked out immediately after eating, so I just go and strap them in the car, who would have thought that I would be comfortable being a step mother, but spending time with them makes me want to have my own child, my husband would be thrilled to hear me say this, I don't want to talk about my mother in law, the drive to Alberton seems long coz I am nervous as hell, I get to the house and call Thandiwe and a sec later the gate opens and I drive in, I take out the kids and little Kayise jolts awake looking so cute, she smiles soon as she lands her eyes on me, she is so adorable.



I was about to press the door bell when  
the door opens and Thandiwe appears

Me "oh hi"

Her "hello Thato" she says with a straight face

Me "how are you doing"

Her "you ruined my marriage and now you are playing mommy  
to my children so how do you think I

am?" I clear my throat

Me "I am so sorry Thandiwe trust me I am"

Her "save it Thato, it is only a matter of time till he does the  
same thing to you"

Me "Thandiwe I understand"

Her "you don't understand shit so don't come here pretending  
to be this good woman who made a

mistake, you knew very well what you were doing and the  
outcomes of it" she says shouting and Kayise

cries

Me "shhhh shhhh it's okay baby" I say trying to calm her down

Her "give me my child" she tries to snatch her from me but Kayise cries louder and holds on to my top

Me "please let her calm down first"

Her "they are my children and if you want yours I suggest you start spreading your legs or did you eat all

the children in your womb with all the abortions married man made you do" I swallow and keep calming

the crying Kayise, boy boy is holding on to my leg obviously scared too, she is besides herself, her

mother appears

Ma "Thandiwe why are you shouting like this, stop please you are scaring your children" she stops and

starts crying

Her "they are playing happy family with my children mama, now they poisoned them against me, look at

how they don't want me but her, they are mine mama they are mine"

Ma "we know sisi and no one will take them away from you"

Her "they are already trying" she cries harder

Ma "sisi let me take the kids" she comes for Kayise and she goes willingly and Boy follows

Her "I am sorry Thandiwe" I say

Her "fuck you yangizwa fuck you"

Ma "Thandiwe stop this now, the kids please" she slams the door and I walk back to my car

## RAZOR

I have a meeting with Vusi he said it is really sensitive matter and it is pressing, I won't lie it got me really

rattled I feared that it has something to do with Fiona or Jabu, I can't help but think of the worst, this

can't be happening really, I can't go to prison and leave Olivia and Sizakele, they won't survive this. Stop

this Razor stop over thinking things maybe it is about one of our clients or something. I would have

heard wind if this was about me so I am going to relax till I talk to him and get all the facts, even though

it is killing me, the wait shit, I am not a patient man at all, only when it comes to my family I try so much

to be. There is a brief knock on my office door and I shout come in, and luckily it's Vusi but he is not alone

he is with that boy who is Siza's friend, what's his name again, I will find out just now

Vusi "afternoon sir"

Me "Vusi" I say coolly

Vusi "thanks for agreeing to meet, this is Mandla I believe you have met"

Me "yes I remember him, how are you Mandla"

Mandla "I am very well thanks Mr. Motaung"

Me "I am fine thanks, so how can I help you gentlemen" I show them where to sit and I join them

Vusi "you are still very much the owner of the hospital right" I laugh

Me "last time I checked I still am, why?"

Vusi "sir I really need your help" I narrow my eyes

Me "I am listening"

Vusi "Mandla here is a doctor at the hospital and he is under investigation for a staged matter"

Me "explain"

Vusi "sir a girl came in and she was high on morphine, in fact

she had Overdosed on it, Mandla was operating on her and she died the parents are rich and they don't want the world to know that she was a junkie so now they are suing Mandla for negligence, they say he is the one who administered that high dosage of morphine on their child, Mandla has electronic paper work that proves that the girl came in already like that but the hospital records are changed and they corroborate the parents story" I am shocked

Me "oh wow that is heavy, so what is the chief of surgery saying"

Vusi "he said that the hospital is distancing themselves from Mandla and he will deal with this matter alone against the Brakens"

Me "Brakens, the investing tycoon" he nods

Vusi "that is correct sir"

Me "he is friends with Nathan so that would explain a lot, but why would he want to put you through all of this, I mean he knows the pain of almost losing a medical license"

Vusi "please help us please"

Me "I will go and talk to him tomorrow and we will take it from there"

Vusi "thank you so much sir"

Mandla "thank you so much Mr. Motaung I am grateful"

Me "it's okay, its not fair that you have to go through this for something you didn't do, i will help, come

see me tomorrow around 4pm so we can deliberate"

Vusi "much appreciated"

Me "sure thing boys, don't worry Mandla we will fix all of this"

Mandla "thanks and not to over step, how is Siza" I smile

Me "she is okay, just busy planning our wedding, she is dragon lady" I say and we all laugh

Mandla "oh boy good luck to you and congratulations"

Me "thank you, tomorrow 4pm same place" we shake hands and they walk out

SIZA

Between school and planning my wedding I don't know which is more demanding, I mean yoh guys, I know I have a wedding planner and but I can't trust that woman what if she sabotages me coz I told her off my man, she might be angry at me for that so I must oversee everything just to make sure she is following orders and giving me what I want, and I am happy with what we have done so far, my budget is unlimited so I get to have everything I want, Olivia said she is taking care of my bachelorette party and I know that she will do a stellar job, one less thing to worry about shuuu. I didn't attend class today coz my lecturer is off sick so I get to lazy around my house and browse through plans of how to change my kitchen and bedroom and later on maybe I will do the lounge and dining area, it is proving difficult finding a great gay architect, but I will be patient, I need them to start working on my house when we off to our month long honeymoon. They should be done by then. The door bell goes off and I drag my feet to go open, to my surprise it's Gadafi, he has the widest smile

on his face, I swear Ntombi is doing the  
most with this one, he is whipped

Me "hey love bug" he laughs

Him "you can now call me princesses daddy"

Me "we don't know what sex the baby is yet"

Him "I feel it deep down that it is a girl, she is going to be such  
a daddy's girl"

Me "don't spoil her too much please"

Him "I won't be able to hold myself struu" he says smiling

Me "how is mommy"

Him "she is beautiful, healthy and happy and she is all mine" he  
says and happiness just radiates on him

Me "I am so happy for the both of you"

Him "I am so happy Siza I am loosing my mind, you know I  
actually tried talking to God yesterday,

thanking him for such blessings, I thought Razor was crazy  
letting you drag him to go worships an

invisible entity that somehow lives in the sky" I laugh



Me "at least now you know his mercy"

Him "I guess so, I need to talk to you about something, hope I didn't disturb anything"

Me "nope was just trying to find someone to work on the house, what can I do for you"

Him "I don't mean to open your wounds but you are the only one I trust with these pregnancy things"

Me "its okay I have dealt with my daughters passing and it just gives me strength now, I know she is resting in peace and that she is proud of me" he smiles

Him "I am glad to hear that"

Me "so what do you need from me brother"

Him "I need you to please help her through this time, my sister is far and your mom has a lot on her

plate with Thandiwe and her kids, you have experienced this before you know just give her tips and all"

Me "don't worry we are here for her and believe me my mother will make sure she has an easy

pregnancy, but the supports she mainly needs is from you"

Him "you and Razor will help me right"

Me "through it all"

Him "thank you so much, so will you also plan that baby shower thing for her" I laugh

Me "she is only in her first trimester we will start planning it when she is around 8 months

Him "okay fair enough"

Me "don't stress I got this I promise"

Him "is there anything to eat here" I laugh

Me "she didn't cook for you"

Him "had to drive her back to your moms didn't want her to kill me" I laugh and move to the kitchen

OLIVIA

I am took out my boyfriend for some spoils, took him shopping, went to the barber to get him a fresh

hair cut and he also got some men manicure done, he was so shocked and amazed, I am trying so hard

to get this girlfriending thing right coz wow he has been nothing short of being an amazing man to me

and he protects me even from his family so why not do this for him, the boy is feeling himself shame

even the walk has changed nyana you know. One thing we can't decide on is where to eat

Him "but baby I thought this day was about me"

Me "it is about you love, but the restaurant you want doesn't have a lekker tarter source"

Him "but I never said I wanted sea food"

Me "what do you want to eat"

Him "I want some ribs, chops, fries and all that"

Me "baby they do have what you want at my restaurant"

Him "only thing is I don't want to eat there baby"

Me "oh my God you are so difficult love" he laughs

Him "this is my day love" I roll my eyes

Me "fine Steven"

Him "that wasn't so hard now was it"

Me "you have to make it up to me"

Him "oh I plan to baby soon as we get home trust me"

Me "can we please skip lunch" he laughs

Him "no way baby I am famished, will devour you when we get home I swear" I take his hand into mine

and blush, we walk to the restaurant and I bump into someone

Me "oh I am so sorry" she turns and smiles when she realizes it's me and I frown

Her "sis, how nice to see you"

Me "Mercy"

Her "how have you been, you look so beautiful"

Me "been okay, thank you" she looks at Steve and then she notices that our hands are locked

Her "Steven I hope you treating my baby sister well"

Him "Mercy, not to worry she is my queen"

Her "glad to hear that"

Me "baby, let's go eat please" I didn't expect this at all really and to tell you the truth I never thought

about what I would do should I bum in to here, so I was tied not knowing how to react, she looks

different really, I swear she lost weight, my heart felt something, I love her she is my sister but she has

to be the one who goes to my dad and apologize for what she put him through coz of her own selfish

reasons, know what let me not think about my sister

Him "are you okay love"

Me "I don't know my babe"

Him "talk about it when we get home?"

Me "yes please" he smiles at me and the waitress shows us our table.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 102 (NOT EDITED)

LUNGILE

Seeing my daughter break down in front of that woman who hurt her so much showed me that she is

still going through so much, I wish I knew how I could help her, she has been through a lot and I thought

leaving Sizwe would be the first step to her regaining her life but it's like things are spiraling out of

control more, she lost it in front of her children and they were

scared. I wish I had an idea of what I could do, I might try to understand how she is feeling but only she knows the depth of her pain, I am afraid if she doesn't heal her children will suffer and I don't want history repeating itself, I failed both my girls and I don't Thandiwe to fail her children too, I have prayed to God to show me the way and I don't know why he isn't showing anything to me, I need one before I lose my daughter to this pain and misery.

Her "mama are you okay" Siza says dragging me from my thoughts

Me "yes baby I am okay"

Her "khuluma nam mawami (talk to me mama)"

Me "I am worried about your sister Sizakele I don't want to lie she is breaking down with each passing day" she sighs

Her "mama Thandiwe needs therapy she needs to talk about what happened to her both with baba and her husband"

Me "she can't talk to me so how will she be able to talk to a complete stranger"

Her "sometimes it helps talking to strangers mama trust me, therapy did me so much good"

Me "you did therapy" I ask shocked I didn't know this

Her "yes I did when I first got to this city Molemo suggested that I try it out and I had my doubts but it

worked, I dealt with my demons and they no longer control me" I sigh

Me "you know your sister Sizakele she has pride and she will never agree to talking to stranger about

her pain let alone admitting that she is in pain" I let out a tear because everything is not making sense

Her "let me try"

Me "Siza" I say contemplating

Her "mama I know she hates me and we will probably never be friends me and her but those babies

need their mother"

Me "I know sisi but how do we convince her"

Her "she already hates me mama so let me do this coz with our relationship I have nothing to lose"

Me "what do you mean"

Her "I have a plan and it will infuriate her but it will help her a great deal"

Me "I don't know Siza"

Her "Thandiwe isn't okay mama, she needs someone to take control, she is screaming for help silently and we don't even recognize it" I sigh

Me "I am such a bad mother"

Her "stop that mama, you are an amazing mother considering what you were up against, you were and still are the best mother" I smile as she wipes my tear

Me "so what do I need to do to help you with this plan of yours"

Her "I need you to make sure she is at home tomorrow and make the kids disappear"

Me "why the kids"

Her "I don't want them witnessing anything hostile" I nod

Me "okay sisi"

Her "I need to leave so I can make arrangements" she tries to take her purse out

Me "don't worry about the bill baby I will pay" she stands and



kisses my cheek and walks out

RAZOR

That Mandla boys story really got me angry at Nathan how does he put this kid what he went through, he should be an advocate for such but he is using my hospital to help out his rich friends to do this so they can hide the truth and let an innocent man lose his license for something he didn't do, I haven't mentioned anything to Soft coz I wanted to fix this mess and help her friend. I get to the hospital and luckily he is in, the receptionist tells me that he is with someone, I couldn't care less I just went to his office and opened without knocking and there they are, I just stand by the door and laugh

Me "just wow"

Him "Razor what are you doing here, did we have an appointment that I forgot about?"

Me "nope not at all. I am just glad I caught the both of you" I say looking at Braken and his wife

Him "oh okay" he says narrowing his eyes. I walk in and close the door

Me "oh by the way condolences on your daughters passing"

Braken "thank you"

Him "guys I will see you later, let me attend to my brother in law" the attempt to stand

Me "no please don't leave"

Braken "we have somewhere to be" I change from polite to dangerous

Me "sit your ass down, all of you"

Braken "excuse me"

Me "you heard me"

Him "let's all sit" Nathan says to him, and they listen to him, I see a white envelope and take it, I laugh

as I see it is a check worth a million rand

Me "so this is how much it costs to destroy someone's career"

Him "no that is a donation to the hospital"

Me "we don't need donations I make sure of that, and don't take

me for a fool understand" he keeps  
quiet

Braken "I won't stay here and listen to this I have more  
important things to attend"

Me "you will not turn my hospital into your play ground Nathan,  
I gave you a chance when no one else  
wanted to touch you, now you are ruining Mandla's career huh  
how fucked up is that"

Him "what he is lying Razor, I didn't do anything I swear" I laugh

Me "do I look like a fool huh"

Him "no you don't"

Braken "that boy killed my daughter and you are here talking  
rubbish" I place the file on the desk, it is  
information that truly his daughter was an addict he takes a  
look and swallows hard

Braken "this is all fabricated"

Me "we can go test that theory in court and I will surely  
represent that boy"

Him "we don't have to do that" Nathan says

Braken "what do you want"

Me "I thought you will never ask, you will drop that suit against him and I will not put this information

out there and you get to keep your good image and that good Dr gets to practice medicine peacefully"

Braken "fine, honey lets go" his wife stands up and they leave

Me "Nathan Nathan, you disappointed me really, I am so hurt that you could do this to this guy, I am

done with you, you used my hospital to make a quick buck, how many of these you have done I wonder,

I will never trust you again, I want you to pack your shit and tender you resignation immediately you

understand me, I will give you your money and I never want to see you again"

Him "please don't do this please" I shake my head'

Me "you did this not me, leave Nathan and stay gone do you understand"

SIZA

I managed to arrange everything for her, I know she might hate me more after this but I do not care, she

has to do this for her children, they are still very young they need their mother and she has to be okay to raise those angels. I hope my mother did as I asked her yesterday, I managed to send the Alberton address to my contact and I have been parked outside my mother's place for a few minutes, I see the car pull up behind me and I get out of my car and welcome her and we exchange greetings and after that we walk in the yard and make our way to the house, I open and find my mother and sister sitting in the lounge, Thandiwe looks besides herself.

Ma "Sizakele"

Me "hi mama, Thandiwe unjani?" she just looks at me and says nothing and she gets off the couch and takes her phone

Me "just stop will you" she says nothing and attempts to walk away, I quickly go to her and hold her hand, she yanks it off

Her "leave me alone Sizakele what the fuck do you want from me" she shouts

Me "how long do you plan on having this pity party, how long are you gonna let that devious old man

who is dead control, how long do you plan on holding on to Sizwe who has clearly moved on" I say and

she cries

Her "you have no idea what I am going through, so don't come here and speak shit"

Me "I don't know your pain but I had a fair share of mine, I know how it feels to be alone and crying for

help with no one offering it, I know how it feels to wish that someone else could take control of your life

until you are better"

Her "I am fine I don't need your help Sizakele"

Me "you do and I will help you whether you will hate me or not after this I don't care so long as you will

be okay and be able to raise your children they deserve a happy and healthy mother"

Her "you would know right, you failed to help yourself and your child died because of that" the pain

that statement inflicted but I will not blame her she has her defensive walls up, trying to convince herself

that she has it better than someone and right now that is me and I will take it.

Me "this is Dr Nkitsing she owns a retreat center, it is a beautiful place, she will help you"

Her "who says I need to be thrown in a loony bin"

Me "it is not a looney bin Thandiwe, it is a retreat like a lodge, she has spa, swimming pools, sonars,

cinemas restaurant where you choose your own meals, she has activities to deal with your pain that is

all" she laughs

Her "then you go"

Ma "Thandiwe please sisi"

Her "oh so you are in on this too with your precious daughter mama" I sigh

Me "stop this man we are trying to help you here"

Her "I said I don't need help, leave me alone"

Me "mama go get her bags she is leaving now, coz if you don't Thandiwe I will call the social workers

and tell them you are an unfit mother and they will take your children and give them to their father is

that what you want” I say to motivate her, I will never do that but I needed something to make her

agree to this and her children were the only thing I could use. She lets out a tear

Her “you wouldn’t dare Sizakele”

Me “try me please” she cries for a few minutes and my mother holds her

Her “how long will I be gone for and my children”

Me “until you feel better, mama and I will look after them and we will bring them to visit you”

Her “I hate you Sizakele, don’t let Sizwe and his mother take my children” she says and I nod. She walks

to the door and the Dr Follows her behind, I take her bag and my mother stops me

Ma “thank you for doing this for your sister”

Her “she needs this mama, its okay” I say and walk out leaving her crying

GADAFI



Staying indoors with the Queen is nice, though she has become a cry baby then blames it on my princess, she said she feels like she doesn't matter anymore since we found out that we are pregnant, she is crazy coz honestly right now I am more crazy about her than before trust me, she has become more to me than life itself, she gave me the most beautiful gift any broken man could ever dream off, a chance to be a father and ridiculously amazing partner. I am happy and I don't think anything can change this for me really. I just got home, I was sent to find hot wings and mageu, is that even a combo, for someone who isn't showing yet she is too much but I am not complaining I am loving every minute of this. I have my head on her lap as we are laying on our bed

Me "I think I want to name her after me"

Her "Tebogo for a girl?"

Me "no baby I was thinking maTebogo" she bursts out laughing

Her "what no never, we are not naming my baby that, it's like we are saying she is your mother"

Me "it's the perfect name for a daddy's girl"

Her "tell you what, if we have a boy we will name him Tebogo Junior, TJ, but not maTebogo for our girl baby no"

Me "I thought I was naming her"

Her "you are naming her baby that still sticks love but not weird names loves, so I suggest you come up with a list now"

Me "nope you scratched out my favorite name" I am legit hurt and she is just laughing at me

Her "I am sorry maybe that will be your pet name for her" I smile

Me "yeah maybe"

Her "don't be like that baby, Princess will be sad" see she uses my baby to get away with everything

Me "you are so slick" she kisses my head

Her "so start thinking of other names"

Me "or I could just wait for you to give birth and I look at her for the first time and whatever feeling I have will lead me to giving her the name"

Her "yes my love I totally agree" I smile

Me "I am glad you do"

Her "you are going to be such a great father baby" I smile

SIZAS TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 103 (NOT EDITED)

MANDLA

I am happy Mr. Motaung managed to help and I am pleased to inform you that I am back at work and

I must admit I feel whole again, I am happy this got fixed before I told my mother she wouldn't have

taken none of this well, my mom loves me so much that when I am not okay she literally falls sick, I am

her everything that's why I tread carefully around her. one of the nurses just informed that the big

boss Razor himself asked to see me in the Chief of Surgery office, I managed to finish up with my

patients and I am making my way to the west wing of the hospital to go hear what he has to say to me. I

knock on the door and he shouts come in from the inside, I get in and the man is in a suit looking like he owns the world, which he does but that is story for another day.

Me "Mr. Motaung sir how are you?"

Him "ahhh Mandela, I am well thank you, how are you doing?"

Me "I am very well thanks sir, you asked to see me"

Him "straight to the point I like that" he says smiling and takes a sit and signals me to do the same

Him "how has your return been is the staff treating you okay"

Me "I am happy to be back here sir and I have you to be thankful for, some people are cool with me but

the others are just being people, but I am not here for that" he smiles again

Him "you keep on making my day Mandela proving that I made the right call"

Me "I don't follow sir"

Him "tell me, where do you see yourself in five years" okay what a question

Me "well I have always dreamt of opening my own private

practice, getting more into medical research

and be a part of trial that work tirelessly in trying to find cures”  
he smiles and nods

Him “that’s good, so how about I offer you practice” I narrow  
my eyes

Me “practice?”

Him “you know Mandla when I first bought this hospital I didn’t  
have much purpose for me it was just

another income stream, but now it is a gift that I will give to my  
woman once she graduates, this whole

place now belongs to my wife and because she still has to learn  
I want people I can trust to help

maintain it and keep it safe for her while she still navigates her  
way around medicine, I trust you and I

know she trusts you too. since I fired Nathan for what he did to  
you and putting my hospital in jeopardy

this place does not have a chief of surgery, I was hoping that  
you would take the sit and run the show” I

couldn’t believe my ears I swear my whole world stopped for like  
a nano second, I have always dreamt

of being chief but I didn’t think it would ever happen

Me "sir I don't know what to say" I say mumbling

Him "just say you will take the job"

Me "ofcourse I will sir it has been a dream for me, I am grateful for the opportunity" he nods

Him "great then, we will make the announcement tomorrow and you will move in to your office after

that, redecorate if you like I know Nathan didn't have style" I laugh

Me "thank you so much Mr. Motaung" we both stand and shake hands

Him "don't disappoint me, Siza will kill you if you run her hospital to the run" I laugh

Me "I will do a great job sir I promise"

Him "and please don't tell her it has to be a surprise for when she graduates okay" I nod

Me "I wont breath a word to anyone sir especially her" je winks at me

Him "good boy, now let me leave you to go crazy coz I can see you only calm because of me" he says

walking out and I just scream and run around the office, I can't believe this me Dr Mandla Ntuli, Chief of

surgery at Harmony medical center one of the biggest private medical facilities in the country.

## THANDIWE

I have been here for almost 3 weeks now and I must admit this place is a mini heaven, it has everything,

it is the ultimate retreat center, when I first got here I thought this is a loony bin given a fancy name but

it is indeed a retreat center, just that most things are restricted, no cell phones, smoking or alcohol, we

have everything cinemas, pools, a restaurant, spa and what I hate the most therapy sessions. It took me

a while before I opened up to the Dr but when I eventually did I let out my deepest darkest secrets and

pains and fears to that woman and I have been feeling lighter since, but don't tell her I said that, she

thinks I hate her but I don't I just hate how she makes me talk about these things without even trying, I

needed this time alone and to just reflect back on my life and try and build from what I have left, I miss

my children so much, mama brings them to see me two times a week coz that is the maximum days for visitation, the Dr doesn't want us to connect deeply with our lives outside before we have found ourselves and purposes fully. I am normally in my room reading novels and in the spa, today I decided to go chill by the pool and maybe have a drink over there, I have a task to write 5 things I want to do first when I get out of here and it might sound like a simple task but trust me it isn't. I male voice startles me

Him "oh my God I am sorry I didn't mean to really" I smile

Me "it's okay I was just lost in my thoughts you know" he nods

Him "I know. Can I join you" I nod and smile sweetly at him

Me "I have never seen you around her before"

Him "that's because you always in your room, even take room service" I laugh

Me "are you stocking me Mr" he laughs and I must admit he is good looking dammit

Him "not at all it was just a mere observation"



Me "if you say so"

Him "Mbuso Mahlangu" he stretches out his hand to me and I take it

Me "Thandiwe Dlom, arg I mean Dlamini"

Him "not sure about your surname I see"

Me "I divorced a few months ago" he sighs

Him "oh I am sorry to hear that, I guess that's why you are in here"

Me "I wouldn't give him all the credit but he is parts of the reasons why I am here"

Him "I say good for you this is the first step of reclaiming your life"

Me "I guess so, how long have you been here"

Him "18 months Thandiwe" my eyes pop

Me "so long God" he laughs

Him "I was fighting all sorts of demons I still am but I can say that I am winning"

Me "wanna share"

Him "let's just say love put me in here"

Me "now I can say love is the root of all evil"

Him "and they blamed it all on the poor money" we both burst out laughing

Me "the nerve" he smiles

Him "want to go grab lunch, my treat" I smile

Me "I would love to"

Him "in that case, shall we" I nod and stand up and we start walking

Me "I miss home cooked meals"

Him "you and both my dear"

Me "I think that is the first thing I do when I get home, cook myself a feast" he laughs

Him "I see she has you on the list task, write it helps with the direction you want your life to take after here" I nod and we get to the restaurant

SIZA

I have been helping my mother with my sisters children and they are just angels, Molemo is in love with

being around them, especially the boy, I think he is already

practicing, he plays with him every chance he gets and that made me realize how much my husband wants to have sons, even if it's just one he would for the opportunity, I have been with them the entire weekend and today their father is coming to get them, they are visiting for the whole week before they head back to my mothers. I just finished packing their things and the new toys Mo bought them, he has to tone it down a little I am not trying to get Thandiwe's kids out of control, when we are at the mall with them he buys them everything they want, and when it comes to our boys I think I will be the stricter parent coz wow I can't count on him to be the bad cop, I feel him snake his hands around me and I smile and take his cologne in

Me "you smell so good baby" he kisses my neck and starts rubbing my breasts

Him "I miss you so much soft" he says in a low seductive voice I feel his hard on my ass

Me "I know baby and I miss you too"

Him "just one round Soft please my love" he bites and I moan

Me "ohh baby no please we are almost at the finish line, one more month and we have our magical night"

Him "I will be dead by then baby please" I turn and kiss his so passionately I feel his hunger for me but

no I am not giving in. I stop and go down on my knees and unzip his pants, the many ways to please this

man, he groans and I do my business, going all around it like a professional, he is groaning and calling my

name, his one hand on my head

Him "fuck fuck, ahhhh baby I am about to come shit" I don't stop I just keep going till I feel his warm

load in my mouth, still on my knees I look up at him and he has his eyes shut, he looks down at me and I

decide to swallow, he doesn't believe what I just did

Him "did you jus"

Me "swallow your cum, yes I did baby, and I must admit you taste good" he smirks

Him "baby you never cease to amaze me" a soft voice disturbs us

Boy "aunty Siza what are you going to uncle Mo that is making him cry" oh my God no no no, I quickly  
get up and wipe my mouth

Me "hey baby boy, he is just sad that am making him wear that trouser coz he wanted jeans just like you

cry when I dress you in shorts instead of jeans" I try that direction and I see his smile

Boy "see all the boys want to pick out their own outfits"  
Molemo laughs

Me "I see that now baby boy, please go check on Momo I will be with you just now okay" he nods and  
leaves me with Molemo who is laughing like crazy

Me "babe why didn't you close the door though"

Him "I didn't know that you were going to give me such great head baby I am sorry"

Me "just thank your God that you had your back to the door, the poor child would have been  
traumatized" he continues to laugh

Him "how about a repeat of what you just did"

Me "oh you enjoyed that huh"

Him "baby your smart mouth is not only smart with words but it's gifted in that department too" I laugh

Me "is that so Mr. Motaung"

Him "yes wifey now give your husband another round" I laugh

Me "you going to wait till the kids are gone" he smiles

Him "fair enough, now get your sexy ass here and give your husband a kiss" I giggle and launch myself to my baby.

NTOMBI

I swear this baby wants to drive me insane, I am so big nothing fits me anymore, I know Tebogo tries to

make me feel good about myself but wow his child just goes out of her way to put my confidence down,

not even my shoes fit, I practically leave on slides and morning slippers, I have been trying to find

something to wear for over an hour and everything makes me look like a fat pig, I just can't anymore, I

need this baby out of me now, she is taking over my life, my body everything, I love her with all my heart

but no, I just sit down on the bed and cry, the door opens and Tebogo walks in

Him "baby I have been parked outside for 20 minutes now what's the hold up, Lungile said you will be done long time ago" I ignore him and continue to cry

Him "hey what's wrong my love, is princess okay" I take the dress on top of the bed and throw it at him

Me "she is fine, I am not" I see him want to laugh but hold it in and it just makes me more emotional

Me "you are even laughing at me, your daughter is driving me insane and all you do is laugh"

Him "I wasn't laughing baby I would never" he says coming close

Me "oh now you think I am stupid"

Him "baby please I didn't"

Me "if you think it is easy carrying this child then take her and be pregnant" I say crying some more

Him "I know it's not easy my love and I love you so much and appreciate you for carrying her, now tell

me what she did so I can reprimand her for making my woman

cry like this”

Me “she is making me all so emotional Tebo then she makes me eat all the food in the house and now I am fat and my clothes wont fit me”

Him “baby we are going to buy you new clothes that’s why I am here mos” I look at him

Me “Tebogo”

Him “okay okay, I am sorry let me talk to her okay”

Me “please” he smiles and places a hand on my belly and kisses it

Him “hey princess it’s your daddy” she kicks and we both smile, she does that each time her father talks

to her

Him “I love you so much baby now please stop making you mama so emotional coz she goes all crazy on

me here” I smack his bald head and we both laugh

Me “suka Tebogo” I say smiling

Him “princess please behave my baby please for daddy’s sanity play”

Me “uyangi jwayela wena” I say standing up and he laughs



Him "find a dress love let's go shopping" I smile and opt for the maternity maxi dress Siza bought me, I

let my braids loose and he helps me put on my sandals and takes my hand bag and we walk out, we find

mama in the lounge

Ma "let me guess you found her crying" Tebogo laughs

Him "you know her Lungile"

Ma "lo mtswana wakho omenza kanje"

Him "atleast you acknowledge that my princess ke Motswana I know you Zulu's and pouching babies"

we all laugh

Me "okay okay let's go, you wasted too much time already"

Him "trying to calm you down yes" I give him a look

Ma "hey this pregnancy is making you bossy man"

Him "atleast you see the type of abuse I am subjected to here" I laugh and take his hand

Me "mama will see you later"

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 104

## MERCY

Addicts don't take their baths and they stay in the streets, they also steal to feed their addiction right?

Right so I guess I am not an addict I just use cocaine as a coping mechanism really and it is working for

me, but to tell you the truth it is no longer exciting, I am used to its high now, I really think I need to

upgrade to something strong and maybe cheaper because wow I am running low on funds, paying for

this drug everyday and maintaining a lavish lifestyle yeses, I guess one has to go and it is definitely not

my powder, I just need a way to keep my finances afloat before I go broke. I am with Vicky at club

nation, we just had lunch and I needed a line immediately, my last fix was night and she only brought

me the staff now coz I couldn't drive to our dealer myself.

Me "please hand it to me"

Her "really Mercy, you gonna do drugs here" I roll my eyes

Me "I am going to do a line in the bathroom"

Her "no, let's go to your house"

Me "don't be a party pooper please"

Her "you always say you are not an addict but your actions always proves that you are"

Me "what is that supposed to mean Vee"

Her "you use this thing every day, what if you OD" I laugh

Me "child please me OD Pshhhh never"

Her "never say never Mercy, this powder is just to be used occasionally"

Me "not when you can afford it"

Her "I know you running low so don't act like Bill Gates on me" I sigh

Me "you are honestly killing my vibe here"

Her "I am just looking out for you"

Me "I appreciate that but I am cool" she hands me the bag of cocaine

Her "you know you can just go and apologies to your dad and stop using to make yourself feel better"

Me "don't do that, don't play psychologist on me now please"  
she raises her hands in defeat. She looks

behind me and frowns

Her "this bitch" I was about to ask when this other girl came to  
our table, she looks good hey

Girl "hey ladies, are you still okay"

Her "we are fine Thato you can see that, if we were not we  
could have called the waiter" she says

annoyed and I wonder what is going on

Girl "oh I just wanted to make sure that my customers are well  
taken care of you know, but I am glad

you are okay" she says making gestures with her left hand  
flashing her diamond ring annoying Vee

Me "your customers?"

Girl "oh sorry, I am Thato, my husband and I own this place"

Me "oh is that so" I say looking at Vee, she told me a friend of  
hers back stabbed her and took Sizwe

from her, I guess this is the girl

Me "oh you are that Thato"

Girl "yes, and please excuse me I need to go say hi to hubby,

enjoy” she says and flecks her 40 inch

weave with her well manicured nails before she walks away

Her “give me that” she snatches the powder from my bag with a card, I laugh

Me “who is the addict now” she gives me a look of annoyance

Her “shut up Mercy” she says walking to the bathroom and I am left alone laughing, oh man are trash look at what they turn us into

STEVE

I just finished cleaning the house and doing my laundry, I just wanted to save my girlfriend the trouble of

having to do that when she gets her, I never thought Olivia was domesticated but my baby never ceases

to amaze me really, she normally does the laundry when she has the time but when she can't I take it to

my mother or the Laundromat, I just opened my first beer and switched the channel to 203, Manchester

city is playing in 20 minutes, I wish Liv was coming over, I miss her, tomorrow is too far man. I went to

the kitchen to fix myself something to eat before I get drunk. I  
am disturbed by a knock on door, okay Liv  
never knocks, I took my sisters key and my mother is out of the  
province, so how did this person get in  
the yard in the first place, I mentally slap myself coz I didn't lock  
it when I came back from the bottle  
store, I walked there that's why I didn't lock the small gate, I  
wipe my hands dry and go open, it's Mpho,  
that ex of mine from Wits and some guy, she is drunk and I just  
sigh

Him "grootman, I just hope you know her, she told me to drop  
her off at this address" I sigh

Me "yes I know her" he sighs

Him "thank God"

Me "let me take her"

Him "she didn't pay ne" I help her drunk singing ass to the  
lounge and go get my wallet and give the guy

his money, I go back to the lounge and find her posing on my  
couch with her skirt pulled up exposing her

thigh

Her "hey baby I have missed you"

Me "Mpho, what are you doing here"

Her "I came to see my man what else" I sigh

Me "I thought I explained that" she cut me off before I can finish

Her "and you thought I was going to let you go just like that Steve"

Me "don't do this please" she smiles

Her "don't do what babe, love you so much"

Me "you are going to get me in trouble here"

Her "oh with that girl what's her name again, Olga?"

Me "Olivia you mean" she smiles

Her "yes Olivia that's right" she gets off the couch and comes to me and starts dancing for me pretty

close, I try my level best to avoid her but she is so persistent, you know drunk girls are mos

Me "stop this Mpho I have a girlfriend and I love her please"

Her "the man in your pants seems to enjoy what I am doing" yes I do have a boner but no

Me "don't mind that one he has a mind of his own really"

Her "oh come on baby this will stay between us"

Me "my girlfriend and I are exclusive, I am happy with her with our sex life I am not jeopardizing anything"

Her "why do you love hurting me so much Steven, all I ever wanted was for you to love me that's all"

Me "but I can't force myself to do that" she starts crying and goes to the couch and cries, oh this is not

happening, Olivia is going to freak if she finds this girl here

Her "just try please"

Me "I can't do that to myself I can't do that to you, trust me you will find a man that loves you"

Her "because you love Olivia right" I sigh and nod, she gets up from the couch and heads to the

bedroom, I follow her and she throws herself on my bed, Olivia's white bedding she is going to kill me

Me "no no you can't sleep in here, you need to leave Mpho please" I say but to deaf ears coz she is out

of it. contingency plan I am not going to lose Olivia over this, I take out my phone and dial her but it

takes me straight to voicemail \*babe my ex just showed up at



my house drunk and she won't leave\*

THANDIWE

I am in my session with the Dr and like always she wants to go deeper in my soul, if she wasn't helping

me, I would bitch slap her really, I swear she has this evil powers of making you talk about things you

didn't know you felt till she touched on the subject, I am laying on the couch with my feet up, throwing

the ball up and catching it, her office is so huge and full of staff to make you relax so you will be free to

talk about anything, smart right? No evil I say. She keeps asking but I don't know how to answer this

Her "Thandiwe come on give me my answer, what are the first five things you going to do when you get out of here"

Me "okay oaky gezzz" she laughs

Her "I know you hate me but talk or I am keeping you here"

Me "first I want to go to my father's grave and cuss him out, let him know how much he hurt me and stole my childhood from me then cry my eyes out before letting his silent grave know that I forgive his ass" she nods and rights down on my file

Her "the 2nd thing Thandiwe"

Me "I guess I will go have a civilized sit down with my ex and his wife as well and talk about co parenting" she smiles

Her "you are not forgiving them?"

Me "did that a long time ago trust me" she writes down again with a grin on her face

Her "glad to hear that, you can go on"

Me "I take my children and go on a mini vacation with them and make sure that they see that their

mom is happy and healthy and she will love and take care of them like never before and after that I will

also cook a massive dinner for my mother and Ntombi and thank them for putting up with me after my

divorce and taking care of me and my children, then lastly I am going to decide on whether I am going

back to school or starting a business” she nods and writes down again

Her “and what about Siza your sister” I sigh

Me “what about her” I ask defensively

Her “no need to be hostile, I am asking about her because if it wasn’t for her you wouldn’t be here

getting the help that you need” I let out a tear

Me “how do I look at her after all I have ever done to her, how do I say I am sorry Siza for always wishing

I was you, being jealous of your looks and charisma, and I am sorry for rejoicing when you lost your

daughter and what else oh I hated you because our father didn’t get the chance to rape you too” tears

stream down my face

Her “that is exactly what you say to her Thandiwe, be honest with her and yourself, she has no idea why

you hate her so much so just put her out of your misery it will also help with your healing, you have

been channeling your anger at the wrong person, she has never ever done you wrong, your father did,

your ex husband did not Sizakele”

Me "she will never forgive me for what I've done to her" she smiles

Her "she went out of her way to get you this help Thandiwe, she didn't do this because she pities you

but because she loves you and she longs to have a good relationship with her sister" I cry harder

Me "how could she love me after all I did to her"

Her "from the little I saw in her and how you always explained her character without noticing, she is a

selfless person and she loves even when she is being hurt"

Me "are you sure" she nods

Her "you are both little girls at heart, both longing and crying out for your sister, you love her you just

don't want to admit it and it kills you to know that she loves you even after everything"

Me "I hate you" I say wiping my tears and she laughs

NTOMBI

I came to see my OB/GYN for our monthly checkups and I

report that Tebogo's princess is doing well and growing like she should, I must admit her heart beat gets me emotional each time and I can't help but fall in love with her each time, I don't know how and why I became this lucky but thank you God, I came alone coz Tebo had a meeting and he has been rescheduling it because of me, I didn't want to be selfish and ask him to postpone it again, I made sure to ask the Dr to print out a 3D photo of the ultra sound, this is going to blow him away trust me, I just hope he won't enlarge it and frame it to put it in his house, the way he is so obsessed with his daughter I wouldn't put it passed him, the thought of him talking to my belly is enough to make me blush and let out a tear, I just finished my meal at the hospital canteen, man I was too hungry to go find a restaurant, at least they don't sell crappy food, don't look at me like that I am a chef in training so I am allowed to criticize other peoples cooking, I walk out and decide to just walk and request for an Uber when I get to the mall not far from here. i swear this corolla is

following me or I am paranoid. I try and pick up my pace, Oh God I regret walking to the mall now, the car also accelerated a bit and I want to cry at that moment coz the road is not busy and the only person I see is so far, why this city won't be busy when you need it to be is a mystery. I try run but it finally accelerate and hits the brakes in front on of me blocking my way, two man get out of the car and I try to run back but my belly is too heavy so they catch me and one puts a cloth over my nose and I just feel myself drift

I am woken up by someone splashing water all over me and I want to scream at him coz it can only be my baby's father, Tebo can be annoying at times but I Love him regardless, I open my eyes and don't recognize my surroundings and I remember that I was taken by those two man, I just cry and attempt to brush my tummy but my hands are restrained

Me "who are you please let me go please"

Voice "just shut up bitch will you"

Me "please my boyfriend has money just call him and he will give you enough just let me go please"

Voice "I won't repeat myself" I just sit there scared for my baby's life coz I am panicking and I feel

myself sweating, I can't have my blood pressure elevated it will put my child at risk, I try taking deep

breaths and they help a bit but I am still scared I won't lie. The door opens and I run my eyes to see who

it is and I can't believe my eyes, he found me this monster has found me

Him "oh yes my love it is me" he says and stands in front of me, and I just cry

Me "what do you want from me Mthetho"

Him "this city has ruined my good obedient girl you now call your king by his name"

Me "just please let me go please"

Him "why would I do that my love, I went through so much trouble just to find you, I must admit this

city is big" his eyes land on my belly and his expression changes

Him "don't tell me we are expecting?"

Me "this is not your child Mthetho and when her father finds

you trust me you will regret it” he laughs

Him “you gave yourself to another man Ntombi” he is now livid

Me “yes and he loves me and he wants to marry me, I am not as worthless as you rendered me”

Him “you bitch” he slaps me so hard across the face it stings

Me “please stop please” he is mad so mad I am scared, he looks at one of the boys

Him “find me a discreet Dr who will remove that thing from her immediately” I feel myself numb

Me “no please my King please don’t do this please I beg, it’s just an innocent child”

Him “another man’s seed inside my woman is not innocent Ntombi” he walks away and I cry begging him to not kill my child

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 105

GADAFI

She was supposed to be home hours ago, we agreed that I will



come home straight after my meeting  
and she will also make her way here when she is done with the  
doctor, this is unlike my baby really she  
is very punctual, what worries me is that she is not even  
answering her phone, it rings and rings and  
rings. I just got off the phone with Lungile and she says she last  
saw her when she left going to see her  
Dr. I am freaking out right now I won't lie, hence I am driving  
like a maniac to that OB/ GYN's practice,  
maybe there were complications with princess and they decided  
to admit her and she is way out of it to  
be able to use her phone, I get to the hospital and rush to the  
Dr's quarters and luckily it's still open and  
empty. The lady at the reception gives me a faint smile

Her "hello sir can I help you"

Me "yes please, I am looking for my wife, she had an  
appointment with the doctor earlier on and since  
then she hasn't been answering her phone I am really worried"

Her "I am sorry sir I am not allowed to share patient  
information with you"

Me "she is my wife dammit"

Her "even so I am sorry" I feel myself losing my cool, this bitch, does she understand that I don't know

where the mother of my child is

Me "listen here lady, you seriously don't want to mess with me right now" I half shout making the Dr to

come out of her office

Dr "Brenda what's going on" she asks and her eyes land on me

Me "thank God you are in"

Dr "Mr Phoolo what is going on here"

Me "I am looking for Ntombi Dr, last spoke to her when she said she is about to see you and she was

suppose to meet me at home immediately after your appointment but she never showed up and I have

been calling her and it just rings unanswered, I am worried please"

Dr "Yes she was here and she left immediately after the check up"

Me "is there a possibility that I can see the footage"

Dr "by all means please let's go to the security" I sigh and she

leads the way, we walk for a while to the back of the hospital and the security offices finally appear, we walk in and she greets the guys in there and I do the same

Dr "guys I need you to check the footage from around 11:30 this morning" they nod and play back and

we see her walking from the Dr's office to the cafeteria and leaving the hospital and that was the last of

it

Dr "as you can see she left the hospital at around 12:40" I sigh

Me "I can see that and it seems like she was walking towards the direction of the mall"

Dr "maybe she is shopping for the baby" I just nod but my gut tells me that something is very wrong and

I can't shake off the feeling

Me "thank you Dr for helping"

Dr "you are most welcome, please let me know when you find her"

Me "I will ring you"

Dr "okay bye" she walks out and I follow and walk to my car, I

need to see my brother right away he is  
the only one with contacts that can hack the city's security  
system to look at the streets cameras maybe  
we will see what happened to her along that road. I just hope  
she is okay where she is, I can't have  
anything happen to Ntombi and our daughter

OLIVIA

I don't know what's wrong with this damn phone these days, it  
just decides to freeze when it wants and  
switch itself off just like that, I am sure my boyfriend has been  
trying to reach me all day, I know I said I  
will see him tomorrow but nah I can't wait any longer, not  
seeing him for the entire week was torture  
enough, so let me just drive down to his place, I pack my  
weekender and take my ID and proof of  
residence so I can go buy a new phone tomorrow coz this scrap  
is not cutting it. I close my curtains and  
switch off all the appliances except for my fridge, I take my  
things and leave, the drive to Steve's house

is not so bad hey, I open the gate and drive in, his car is not in the drive way, I am sure he went out with the boys, I will try charge this thing I call a phone and let him know I am home. I regret not stopping for food on my way here, but I will relax a bit then drive out to the complex around the corner. I open the door and the TV is playing, I always tell him to never leave the television playing but does he ever listen mxm, I walk in the lounge and the is my baby on the couch napping, he must have passed out during the game. I kiss his lips and he opens his eyes and smiles as he sees it's me, he rubs his yes then sit straight

Him "hey beautiful, I am glad you are here"

Me "I couldn't wait till tomorrow I miss you so bad"

Him "did you get my voicemail" I was about to answer when something shocking happened

Her "baby please tell me you have pain killers this headache" she stops as she sees me

Me "oh hell no Steven hell no, what the fuck" I say standing up from the couch and he stand quickly too

Him "baby wait please it is not what it looks like please"

Me "don't tell me that shit please don't patronize me right now"

Him "my love please come down and let me explain"

Me "explain why you have a hoe in your house, a place that you always preach that it's our personal

space" I say fuming

Her "huh excuse me, who are you calling a hoe"

Me "you have a mouth even" I take the center piece on the coffee table and throw it at her hard, she

tries to move out the way but she is too slow it hits her hard on her arm

Her "Steve your girlfriend is a hoodrat is this the woman you want as a life partner"

Him "Mpho shut up just shut up okay" she starts rubbing her arm and Steven is holding me so I don't

charge at her

Me "let me go Steven, I am not doing this, I have been here before I am not going through this again, let

me leave you too to enjoy what I disturbed"

Him "OLIVIA JUST SHUT UP AND LISTEN OKAY" he shouts

and I jump a little, he lets me go

Him "as soon as she showed up here I asked her to leave but she didn't, and when she went into our

bedroom to sleep without my permission I called you to let you know, I got your voicemail and left a

message and I thought that's why you came today instead of tomorrow, I did that coz I love you and I

don't want anything or anyone to ruin what we have, I would never cheat on you babe I promise" I look

at him all smitten and shit. He looks at the girl

Him "Mpho I have apologized and I will do it again, I am sorry for using you in the past and I really hope

that you will find someone who will love and respect you the way I do Olivia, please let it be the last

time you show up here and pull this stunt, she is my girlfriend please respect that, go get your things let

me drive you to back to res"

Me "don't test me Steven drive her to where, how did she get here"

Him "she came with an uber love"

Me "then let her leave the same way she came, I will gladly

request for her”

Her “I know how to request for myself thank you very much”

Me “good then, and learn to find your own man too nxa” Steve sighs and takes my hand into his

NTOMBI

I’ve never been so scared in my life, I am so scared for my baby, Mthetho is a sick man and I don’t doubt

that he is going to kill my baby soon as he finds a willing Dr to deliver my daughter, oh God please don’t

let that happen, mama, baba wherever you are in the heavens please protect me and your grandchild

from this evil man, please show Tebogo that something is wrong so can he start looking for us before

this man carries out his plan of killing his first child, losing his daughter will kill him Lord please. I am so

thirsty and this position is not comfortable, I feel like my back is going to break



Me "can I please have water" they ignore me and the door opens

King "you heard her" they stand up quickly and one of them gets me bottled water and helps me drink

Me "please let me go please, my child is innocent"

King "Ntombi don't infuriate me, do you think I am going to raise another man's child in my palace"

Me "we can give her to her father once she is born please"

King "it's even a female child, what a waste that man is, he can even make a boy, what did you see in him"

Me "my king please I beg you please"

King "stop begging Ntombi, you are going to be a Queen soon and I surely don't want a weak Queen by my side" I cry

Me "why are you doing this to me, you don't care about me, you said it yourself that I am worthless"

King "don't be stupid, I said all those things so you don't go looking for other man and giving them what

is mine, you belong to me Ntombi, you are mine, you will bear me children, many many children and

you will get over the little harlot you are carrying, you and I will rule the village side by side, I will make

you the envy of all woman, they will wish they were you. I will announce to the whole village that you

are my first wife and the sitting queen on the throne, all of your co-wives will bow down to you”

Me “ I don’t want all of that please”

King “wait till you start living it and you will see that power is everything Ntombi wami”

Me “you will burn in hell” he laughs and kisses me on the lips

King “I love it when you talk dirty. It turns me on”

Me “my God will save my child from you and you will never control me never” he goes silent for a long time and smiles

King “you just gave me a good idea; boys cancel that Dr right away. This child will be my leverage on

you, I see how much you love it and that will work in my favor. From here on she is my daughter and

everyone else in the village will know her as my princess, she will be the reason why you don’t run away

from me anymore. You will stay with me to protect your precious bastard. I get to keep you and you get

to raise that thing growing inside of you” he laughs an evil laugh and I just cry, I can’t imagine my baby

being raised my this man, what if he rapes her like he did me, I can't have my child suffer the same fate as me

Me "I would rather die Mthetho than be your wife and have you arise my child"

King "oh but you don't have a choice my love"

Me "Tebogo will find me and when he does you will wish that you never set your foot in this city to look for me"

King "do you see him anywhere sweetheart"

Me "you are the devils reincarnate"

King "thank you so much for the compliment, boys get everything ready we are leaving at dawn"

Them "sure bozza" these goons are not from the village, they are definitely from this city and I am

pretty sure that they might know of my boyfriend, I will try that angle and see if it won't work for me when this ruthless King is out of sigh

RAZOR

So did Siza and I tell you that we are getting married on my birthday? Cool huh. The best birthday I will

ever have in my entire existence, the love of my life being my wife, my forever and more. She is on her laptop with her legs on my lap, I am watching current affairs, trying to be kept up to speed with what is happening around the world, I look at her and I must admit those eye glasses look good on her, she looks like a hot nerd right now. She is concentrating on her computer and I wonder what it is that she is doing that she doesn't even feel my gaze on her.

Me "what are you busy with"

Her "trying to find you a birthday present" I laugh

Me "Soft you are marrying me on my birthday, that's enough hun"

Her "mmmhhh" I roll my eyes

Me "so stop then"

Her "nope I found a few things just can't choose one"

Me "let me help you then"

Her "it's your gift dummy you can't see it till I give it to you"

Me "who are you calling dummy" I close the laptop and take it

from her, carefully throwing it on the  
other recliner in the cinema. I remove her legs from on top of  
me and kneel on the couch and pull her by  
the legs till she is laying on her back, I part her legs and get in  
between them, start kissing her neck while  
tickling her and man she is so ticklish, her giggles fills up the  
entire room

Her "baby please stop please" she says in between my favorite  
sound in the world-her giggling-

Me "call me dummy one more time"

Her "okay I am sorry my genius" she says and the door bursts  
open and my brother walks in

Me "G you really need to learn how to knock on the real" he  
keeps a straight face and I know he means  
business, I quickly get off Soft

Me "what's going on"

Him "Ntombi is MIA"

Her "what do you mean MIA" she asks alarmed and I wait for  
his response

Him "she went to the Dr for her checkup and she is nowhere to  
be found, her phone just rings

unanswered”

Her “maybe they admitted her, let me make a few calls”

Him “I thought so too and went to the hospital and she left the hours ago they showed me the cctv”

Me “oh shit”

Him “you have to help me brother please”

Me “you don’t have to ask man”

Him “the last thing I know is she took the direction to the mall near your hospital”

Me “at least that area has cameras, I will call my contact at the city office”

Him “please brother” I see tears forming in his eyes, I take my phone quickly

Her “we will find her” Soft says going to him and she folds him in a hug and he returns it

Me “yeah sure, it’s Razor listen I need today’s footage of the area around my hospital especially the

direction of the mall...money has never been a problem...no 30minutes bring it to my house...your

money will be ready...thanks man” I hang up

Him "thanks Razor"

Me "you don't have to man, she is my family, she is carrying my niece and she is like my wife's sister and she is your everything I will go out of my way to get her back" he smiles and wipes that tear about to fall

\*\*\*\*\*

Guys I never ask for much, can I please get these likes and shares, pretty please

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 106

NTOMBI

It was almost dark outside and I was left with the two guys that took me on my way back from the hospital, I just pray what I am about to do will save my life really. if they are from this City they will definitely know of princess's dad and uncle and maybe that will be enough to scare them and they will

let me go. I am trying to find the right approach in my head and I must admit I am finding it a bit difficult

to do so but then again I am not doing this for marks I am doing this to save my life and that of my

daughter, they are busy listening to music from ones phone.

Me "I wonder if you two are ready to die because of a man like Mthetho" I laugh

Guy 1 "bitch just shut up or I will gag you"

Me "you know my man is probably going crazy where he is trying to find us and when he does

ncncncnc"

Guy 1 "if he was so high and mighty he would have found you by now"

Me "Gadafi is a calculated decision maker, he probably already knows where I am right now just waiting

for the right time to hit, with a brother like Razor they are not to be messed with"

Guy 2 "did you just say Gadafi and Razor" he asks alarmed and relief floods through me

Me "yes I am Gadafi's woman and this in here is his first child"



Guy 1 "is that suppose to scare us lady" I want to cry

Guy 2 "of course it does ntwana are you crazy, do you know what happens to people that cross the brothers" the other one laughs

Guy 1 "wow don't tell me about those two, Razor is weak now he left the game because of some bitch he is marrying and Gadafi will always be his bitch, his errand boy"

Guy 2 "if you think just because Razor stepped down he is weak then you are stupid"

Guy 1 "what did you just say to me"

Guy 2 "I said you are stupid, I am done with this whole mission, you can keep all the money he will be

paying, I would rather be broke and alive than to be rich and dead coz that is exactly what we are going

to be when he finds out we helped that man abduct his woman"

Guy 1 "you are such a weakling I don't know why I rolled with you for so long"

Guy 2 "its cool mfethu, I am out" he takes his phone and stops the music, he wears his jacket and takes

his gun walking out. Shit shit it didn't work

Guy 1 "stop talking and planning in that little brain of yours, I don't fear your boyfriend or whatever he

is, he is just a little bitch just like you"

Me "we will see about that"

Guy 1 "I said stop talking didn't I"

Me "you are going to regret this"

Guy 1 "sweetheart you should be rejoicing, you are going to be queen not some gangster in a suit's

girlfriend" I swallow

Me "then you go be his queen if you think it is all rosey"

Him "if I had a pussy I would" I sigh and just let him be

THANDIWE

I decided to go to the cinema to watch some animation just to feel close to my children since I miss

them so bad, my mother couldn't bring them this week coz they are spending the week with their

father. I know my son is a sucker of animation and cartoons so I guess the next vacation is Disney land

with them both. I walk out of the cinema with the last of my popcorn and slash puppy, I am outside my door and it is difficult for me to retrieve my key from the jean pocket

Him "need help with that" I jump

Me "you seriously want to give me a heart attack right" he laughs

Him "I am sorry Thandiwe"

Me "please hold these so I can take the key out of my pocket" he takes the things

Him "went to watch a movie huh, why wasn't I invited?"

Me "because you are never on sight"

Him "but I told you my room number, you could have came" I sigh

Me "I don't think you were going to enjoy animation"

Him "show me a parent who doesn't enjoy animation" I laugh

Me "you have kids" his face falls

Him "yeah I have 3" he sounds so hurt saying that

Me "I am sure you miss them coz I surely miss mine"

Him "I miss them so much Thandiwe"

Me "you sound so sad though"

Him "if you knew what I have been through you would understand"

Me "would you like to come in?"

Him "sure why not" I opened the door and we walk in

Me "feel at home"

Him "your room is nice" I smile

Me "thanks, I have snacks and some orange juice would you like some?"

Him "yes please" I smile and pour us some juice and some snacks and go sit on the bed since he is on

the couch

Me "so who is Mbuso outside this place"

Him "before this place I was Mbuso the father of 3 amazing children and I was married to my high

school sweetheart, I was working for a big accounting firm, was their chartered accounted and it all came

crushing down one day" he says with a side smile

Me "want to talk about it?"

Him "if you don't mind I would rather not at least not yet, who is Thandiwe"

Me "she is a woman who harbors a lot of pain and anger but one day at a time I am taking my life back"

Him "a day at a time is all you need Thandiwe, so I was in my therapy session today and I finally gave her

the first five things I am going to do when I get out of here since that was my final step to my healing she

is discharging me on grounds that I see her once a week so she can assess me on how I am handling life

outside"

Me "that is great news Mbuso, I am so happy for you" I say going to hug him and he hugs me back

Him "thanks but there is a lot on the outside I hope I will handle everything"

Me "I believe you will just have faith in yourself" he smiles

Him "thanks dear"

Me "so wait once you give her your first five things you are ready to go back into reality"

Him "yes but only if she feels you are not holding anything back"

Me "oh okay I see" I have given her my list and she didn't speak of discharging, what is it that she feels I am holding back though, coz she is the only person I have told everything to

STEVE

I am looking at her cooking in the kitchen with a glass of wine next to her; she is in nothing but my T-shirt and her slippers, the perfect sight I tell you. I don't know how I fell in love with this one but I am happy I did, she is a breath of fresh air and I wouldn't have her any other way. She really did refuse me taking Mpho home, I mean she even took my car keys and I just laughed, she even refused her waiting for the uber in the house. Told her to go request in the street, Olivia is savage I tell you. I am a lucky one to have found this woman, she completes me in every way, I take a sip of my beer and look at her sexy self again and my hard gets harder

Her "your dick will fall off if you don't stop eyeing my sexy ass"  
she says without turning and I laugh

Me "how did you know I was looking at you"

Her "I have eyes at the back of my head"

Me "I would believe you" she laughs and spanks her own ass  
and continue cooking

Me "baby you should have washed your hand"

Her "boy please what's spanking when you eat my pussy out  
like dinner after I have peed the whole

damn day" I have never laughed so much

Me "you are so nasty Olivia" I say going to hug her from behind

Her "you love me either way"

Me "yes I do babe"

Her "and I love you too"

Me "why are you so crazy"

Her "she started it though, why would she come here after you  
told her about me, she was craving a

beating shame coz she doesn't listen"

Me "I swear you broke her arm"

Her "I should have broken her virgin so she doesn't go around offering it to peoples boyfriends" I laugh

Me "baby she is not like that, she was just drunk"

Her "excuse you? Don't get me mad right now" I raise my hands in defeat

Me "I was just saying love"

Her "Steven let me not see you anywhere near that girl coz wow"

Me "baby never, look at me" I say cupping her face and she blushes

Her "what?" she says with a cute smile

Me "you know I love you sweets, I only have eyes for your crazy ass" she laughs

Her "khethile khethile"

Me "and I am happy with my choice, I wouldn't even change the color of your hair, you are perfect for me love"

Her "you sound so romantic right now, if I didn't know you like I do I would melt but I know you just

trying to get me to bed so I can go all monkey on you" I laugh out loud



Me "Olivia who's girlfriend are you mara, coz you are definitely not mine" she pouts her lips

Her "I am Steven Bodibe's girlfriend and he is so in love with me"

Me "I love you babe" I say and I genuinely mean it

Her "I love you too boo, and sorry I thought you were cheating on me"

Me "its okay babe, I know you go crazy first and ask questions later" I laugh and she attempts to hit me

with the wooden spoon but I manage to dodge it

Her "mxm wa bora waitsi"

Me "finish cooking I am hungry woman"

Her "yes Sir Mr. Bodibe" I wink at her and go back to the lounge to watch the highlights

GADAFI

I am pacing up and down in Razors study, waiting on this tech geek to finally arrive at the earlier footage

of the direction Ntombi took from the hospital, there is a lot to

look at and I feel like we don't have time,

Siza is trying by all means to calm me and I really appreciate her but I will only be calm when I find

Ntombi and my daughter. I go pour myself a drink and gulp it down. It has been hours now I just hope

whoever took her has not hurt even a single strand of hair on her head because I will rain hell on them

Razor "brother come we found something" I go to them quickly and look at the screen, the two boys get

out of the white corolla and take her seconds later they speed off. I take the glass on the desk and throw

it to the wall it smashes all over

Me "fuck the damn car doesn't have number plates and those fuckers are wearing baladavas"

Razor "that has never stopped us from tracking down anyone before, I am going to find your woman

trust me"

Me "I know I am sorry brother"

Razor "it's okay G, I totally understand, I would go crazy if some fuckers had taken Soft too but we are

going to find her and whoever is behind this I promise”

Siza “let me go get the broom” she says smiling at me and I regret doing that now I have caused her unnecessary work

Me “I am sorry Siza”

Siza “its okay you can break anything you want I will clean up”

Razor “I will kill him” we laugh and he takes out his phone and dials someone to come to his house

Me “who is that”

Razor “the tracker” it’s some guy who has a gift of finding people no matter how deep they are hidden

Me “thanks man I know you are going to owe him a favor since he doesn’t accept cash”

Razor “I would do anything for you G, you are my brother” I fist bump him, one of my boys walks in with a boy I don’t recognize

Me “what the hell are you doing here, you were supposed to be guarding the warehouse in case one of our enemies is behind this”

Him “sorry boss I just had to bring this fool here, he has news

on the madam” I charge quickly to that  
boy and hold him by his throat

Me “where the fuck is my woman you piece of shit” he struggles  
to breath

Razor “G let him go, how will he give us answers when he is  
dead” I let go and go stand by the corner

Him “I am sorry bra G lwena ta Razor I didn’t know she was  
related to you but soon as she mentioned it

I cut all ties with the mission and went straight to look for you”

Me “where the hell is Ntombi” he rubs his neck

Him “she is in Berea at some flats, we were told to kidnap her  
by some king from the village the money

was good but I let it all go when she said she was your wife, I  
couldn’t betray you like that bozza yam”

Me “that bastard, I should have killed him, is she okay is my  
woman and baby okay?”

Him “yes they still are okay, he is planning on leaving with her  
at dawn, I am really sorry maGrootman”

Razor “you showed your respect by coming to inform us and for  
that you are forgiven”

Me “listen get all the boys to go and surround that place and

Razor and I will follow behind. Get in there  
and secure the King and his lap dog make sure Ntombi is not in  
the firing line when you make your way  
in understood" I say to my boy  
Him "sure braza I am on it" he walks out making a call  
Me "wena you are coming with us and thank you" I say to the  
boy who came with the info  
Razor "soft I will be back okay my love" he says kissing her  
Siza "please be safe guys and bring Ntombi back please" she  
says kissing him back and comes to hug me

\*\*\*\*\*

Show me some love

SIZAS' TRIBULTAIONS

CHAPTER 107 (NOT EDITED)

NARRATED

The flat where the King kept Ntombi was now surrounded, one of them managed to enter unseen so he can take a look at the situation inside, like instructed Ntombi had to be out of the firing line so before everyone entered he had to ensure that when guns started to go off she was safe from all the bullets that were going to be flying around. Once he saw that she is closed in the room alone he sent an sms to Gadafi to alert them that she is far from it all and that they can come in, Mthetho and his guy had already called for a replacement for that guy that drop the mission and went to inform G and Razor.

Before they knew the King and his guy were surrounded and they didn't even have the chance to draw their guns to even try anything because they could see that they were outnumbered and whatever they tried would just back fire, so they just surrendered and they were restrained and G and Razor came.

Mthetho was furious seeing that the other guy had snitched on him and that it resulted in him being caught. The first thing Gadafi asked was where they kept his

pregnant girlfriend, soon as his guy showed him, he immediately ran to the room.

NTOMBI

I hear commotion in the other room but no gun shots, I won't lie at this point I am scared to death, I

swear I have never been this scared before, I am even getting some cramps, I am trying so hard to calm

down but I swear I am fighting a losing battle here, my daughter's life is in danger and there is nothing I

can do to help her right now, I can't contain my tears, losing this child is going to break me, I don't even

want to think of Tebogo, he is going to be devastated. The cramps keep on getting worse and all I can do

is pray to god to keep my child safe. The door bursts open and he appears as if I had planned more tears

just stream down my face, oh my God he found me. He quickly comes to me and unties me

Him "oh baby I am so sorry this happened, I am sorry I wasn't there to protect you"

Me "you are here now that's all that matters"

Him "I should have dealt with that fucker a long time ago"

Me "baby something is wrong, please take me to the hospital now please"

Him "what what's going on, is it princess?"

Me "yes please let's go quickly please" he scoops me up bridal style and hurries out, we get to the

lounge and King Mthetho and his goon are restrained and the room is full of armed men and Razors

Him "brother I need to take Ntombi to the hospital, she says something is wrong with princess"

Razor "hurry and take a few boys with you so they can drive and for security, I will take care of this

trash"

Him "thanks bro" one of the guys opened the door and stepped aside, we were about to step out when

another guy appeared and he pulled his gun and shot at me, I have never felt so much pain before

Him "nooooooooooooooooooooo" Tebogo screamed as he sank down



on his knees with me still in his arms

Razor "get that mother fucker now" he screamed but late  
because after the shots the boys were already

running after the guy that shot me

Him "Ntombi baby please stay with me don't close your eyes  
baby stay with me please" he says crying

Me "tebo please save our daughter please" I say drowsy

Razor "rush her to the hospital now Gadafi, I will call them to be  
ready for her" he got up and ran

towards his car

Him "drive like your life depends on it do you hear me" he says  
to the driver and I feel the car moving so

fast. He is crying and he is making conversation so that I don't  
close my eyes

SIZA

I couldn't stay in my house alone, so I decided to go be with my  
mother while we wait for them to call us

to tell inform us that they have found her, my mother is not

coping with this at all, she has taken Ntombi  
like her own daughter, the way I see her as my own sister, she  
doesn't deserve all of this, she should be  
home enjoying her pregnancy not worrying about surviving this  
ordeal, I pray they find her safe and they  
better deal with that fucked up King. I pour the hot water in the  
cups and take the cups with me to the  
lounge and mama is sitting there still crying.

Me "they are going to find her mama"

Her "I pray so baby"

Me "I trust them, she will be home with us soon, just be strong  
for her"

Her "I should have went with her to that check up, I am suppose  
to be her mother Siza, she needed me  
and I failed her"

Me "you didn't know this was going to happen mama, none of  
us did Sthandwa sam"

Her "why is Mthetho so evil"

Me "he will get what he deserves that one don't worry about

that”

Her “the world will be a better place without him and Madoda”

Me “I just wonder what happened to them to be such messed up man”

Her “I will always wonder too Siza”

Me “is your coffee okay?”

Her “just the way I like it baby thank you, let’s watch some Nigerian movie to distract me” I laugh

Me “no please mama yoh no”

Her “what I need to be distracted and their drama will do just that”

Me “no let’s find something else”

Her “tell me about planning of your wedding then”

Me “better, so all three of my dresses are done mama and they are all so beautiful”

Her “why do you need so many dresses though Siza”

Me “one I will walk down the aisle with, it’s a princess dress, then the other is for the reception, for the

speeches and all that, it’s body hugging and long so nice, then the last one is short for when the party

starts" she laughs

Her "you are just wasting Motaung's money, and the décor"

Me "it's magical mama, everything I have always dreamt of and more"

Her "good just don't forget the food phela no matter how beautiful the wedding is if people don't eat it

was a bad wedding" I laugh

Me "I know, Ntombi is still in charge, she gave me the menu and Mo and I couldn't be any happy, she is

just the best mama, and we also agreed to hire chefs that will cook her recipes coz she can't stand long

in her condition, for the drinks, it will be an open bar with waiters going around"

Her "I am so happy for you my baby" she smiles

Me "thank you mama" my phone rings and its Molemo

Her "I hope it's them" I nod and answer

Me "hey baby, did you find her?...what oh my God baby no...okay will be right there" I hang up

Her "what's going on Sizakele"

Me "we need to go to the hospital now mama, she has been

shot”

Her “oh Nkosiyam kodwa yini” she says getting up from the couch, I grab my keys and mama and I run out to my car.

## THANDIWE

I just got out of my therapy session and the Dr is saying nothing about me leaving this place, which is odd because I gave her my list and people say once she gives you the list task it means she is happy with your progress and once you submit it, she is going to discharge but why is that not the case with me, I am frustrated really, all I want to do is go home to my children, I miss them so much, I swear I am much better even she can attest to that but why is she not letting me leave, I will never figure out how psychologists works really. I think they are the ones who should be institutionalized really, but in all honestly I am really grateful to have been here, I have really healed even if it's not completely but I now acknowledge and understand my hurt and how to deal with it,

it's safe to say I have direction now. A  
knock comes through my door

Me "come in" the door opens and this beautiful man walks in

Him "hey I have been waiting for you to come out of your  
session for forever now"

Me "sorry we went passed our scheduled time, you know how it  
gets in there" he laughs

Him "trust me I had a lengthy one myself last night"

Me "oh so that's why you didn't come to the cinema last night,  
you stood me up for crying and talking

non stop" he stops

Him "we just lost track of time"

Me "I totally understand Mbuso"

Him "I will make it up to you soon as you get out of here" I  
narrow my eyes

Me "why not tonight?"

Him "she signed my discharge papers last night, I couldn't come  
tell you coz I figured you were already

sleeping"

Me "that's great news I am happy for you"

Him "I am going to miss you so much" I blush

Me "me too"he looks around and spots a pencil on my desk and takes out R100 note from his pocket

and he writes something on it and hands it to me

Him "this is my number, call me when you are out okay"

Me "are you sure this is still your number and if the phone even still exists I mean you have been in here

for almost 2 years" he laughs and takes it out of his pocket

Him "I tested it this morning and it still works luckily" I smile

Me "where did you keep that"

Him "since I checked myself in she kept my stuff in my locker coz no one was here to take my personal

belongings" I didn't know he checked himself in

Me "how come your number is still working after all this time"

Him "let's just say my company wouldn't let me terminate my contact coz of a hidden clause, so I had to

talk to them on the phone twice a week, and do my job telephonically, just to advise on this and that, so

that's how the number was active and the network provider

didn't block it"

Me "that was breaking the law"

Him "it was the only way I could get help, without the firm taking legal action against me" I nod

Me "well I guess the only thing you need now is an upgrade, your phone is so 2 years ago"

Him "mxm, stop dissing me and come give me a hug, I was supposed to be out of here 5 hours ago"

I stand and go to him, we fold in a hug, a warm hug, and he smells so good I swear he is making me weak

at my knees

Me "I wish you all the best" we let go and he kisses me on the forehead

Him "Thank you Thandiwe you too. Listen to everything she says, she cares" I smiles

Me "safe travels"

Him "call me when you are out of here okay?" I nod and he smiles and walks out

GADAFI



I don't remember the last time I cried, hell I don't even remember last I was scared, I mean I have done all sorts of cruel things and cruel things have been done to me and never have I been scared, I am an underworld boss, my cartel is feared all over the world, people respect me and my brother and that means we have nothing to fear but here I am pacing in the bloody hospital scared to my stomach, even crying, a man like me doesn't cry but I guess love makes even the coldest of hearts melt. I can't lose Ntombi and my daughter, for the first time in my life I have a purpose, I am not just living for myself, I have two people who I have dedicated my life to and right now they are in that operating room fighting for their life, Ntombi is fighting for her life and our daughters life, he is going to pay dearly for this he will regret ever setting foot in this city, my territory. Razor comes to me

Him "drink water G and sit down please"

Me "this is all my fault, I should have been with her, but I decided to attend some stupid meeting"

Him "I will not have you blaming yourself do you hear, you couldn't have know this was going to happen"

Me "I should have dealt with that mother fucker"

Him "I will deal with him just focus on yours right now"

Me "I just hope she will be able to forgive me"

Him "she will never hold you responsible for this man"

Me "promise me something"

Him "anything brother"

Me "make him wish he was never born" he smiles

Him "you don't have to ask twice, I have already moved them to the warehouse"

Me "I trust you Razor" the Dr appears and practically run to him and a second later Lungile is next to me

Me "Dr how are they doing" he sighs

Dr "the bullets caused a lot of damage, all three went to her stomach, she had lost a lot of blood and the

baby was in distress, we had to perform an emergency c-section"

Me "no no Dr she was only closing her 7th month in 3 days no"

Dr "I know sir but we had to deliver or the baby could have died" I close my eyes

Lungile "how are they"

Dr "they are both critical but stable"

Me "what the hell does that mean" I say shouting

Siza "in layman's terms it means that their condition that they are in is not pleasant but at the present

time they are not getting worse either, in this case the Dr can't really predict what will happen in a few

hours or tomorrow or a few days" I close my eyes

Me "can I see them"

Dr "the mother is still being made comfortable in ICU, you can see your daughter though sir, she is in the

neonatal ICU"

Siza "I will go show him, just please go and assist with the mother"

Dr "thanks Dr Dlamini" nearly forgot that she is studying medicine, she walked me to the place and we

get in, the nurse shows us where my princess is and I go there,

she is in a glass, she looks so tiny with all  
these tubes and machines beeping, I couldn't contain my tears  
Me "hey princess, it's daddy here, you look so beautiful my love,  
please fight for daddy baby, I can't lose  
you baby please" I weep and I feel Siza rub my shoulder  
Siza "she is half you and half Ntombi and the both of you are so  
strong I know she will fight this and be  
okay, your baby girl will be okay" I nod and look at her, my baby  
girl.

Sorry for disappearing the past week was not easy I was an  
emotionally wreck, let's just say my father's  
passing still cuts deep and sometimes I need a minute to deal  
with it.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 108

RAZOR

I left the hospital because I needed to deal with those fuckers

for what they did, seeing my brother like  
that woke up the beast in me, G is a real G but those man  
played with his heart, they almost took away  
the only two people that made him human again and for that  
they will pay dearly, it wasn't easy leaving  
the hospital but I had to because he asked me to take care of  
this and I intend to do just that, I explained  
to Soft that I needed to go and she didn't dispute in fact she  
told me to take care of it and kissed me  
passionately on the lips. I park outside the warehouse with  
another car that won't be linked back to me;  
I started at my house first to change into something more  
appropriate. I walk in and find them  
restrained on the chair, there one that shot Ntombi was passed  
out

Me "good afternoon my King" I say sarcastically bowing down  
King "it's good that you know I am a king, so untie me and let  
me go and I will pretend like this never

happened" I laugh and shake my head

Me "oh I am sorry my king but I can't let that happen, you see

you came in our territory and took my  
brothers woman and your boy here shot at her now she and my  
niece are in the hospital fighting for  
their lives”

King “is Ntombi okay?” I change my look from calm to beast

Me “don’t you ever mention her name don’t”

King “who the hell are you?”

Me “your worst nightmare, I don’t have the luxury of touring  
you the whole week coz I have a wife to go

home to and she loves my attention so we gonna take care of  
you real quick maybe we might stretch it

to the week depends on how fun it is to play with you yeah?”

King “whatever he is paying you I will double it” I laugh

Me “loyalty and brotherhood doubled huh” I laugh “I have a  
problem with rapists so knowing that you

still have a dick infuriates me, we need to take care of that now,  
boys give me some gasoline and match

sticks” I say and my boy disappears to get me some from the  
storage

King “what are you going to do with those please” he asks

panicking

Me "don't worry we just gonna have some fun playing games and all, and boys make sure I have enough

adrenaline, these mutherfuckers are not going to pass out on me no" the other one comes back and I

other them to stripped all 3 man naked and they do so in no time, I untied the one that shot Ntombi and

restrained him with his arms in the front. I applied some gasoline on his hands and then applied some

on the Kings dick and the other one I just applied on his thigh

King "sir please don't do this please" I laugh and start with him, I light up a match and throw it to his

privates and do that to the others also where I applied the gasoline, I took the fire extinguisher from the

wall and watched them as they scream and begged me to put out the fire, you should have seen how

the sleeping one woke up and started screaming like a little bitch, I put out the fire on all of them and

they were all crying

Guy 1 "ta Razor please I didn't know she was related to you"

Me "oh but you did coz your friend here walked away soon as he

heard her mention me and my brother

and what did you do you called us weak and for lying to me I will do what I just did on your mouth” I

applied some gasoline to his mouth and lit him up for just 10 seconds and trust me to him it felt like

forever, I kept on picking random parts on their body and burned them

Me “this is how she begged you to stop my King and you just had to have your way with her, this is how

powerless she felt when you violated her for years on end telling her she is worthless”

King “I am sorry please stop, I can’t take it anymore” he says in a faint voice

Me “but the fun only just began, boys inject them with adrenaline seem like they want to go offline on

me here” my boys did as I ask and I could see them coming back to life, they will feel every bit of pain I

inflict on them

King “what will it take for you to stop this please”

Me “at this rate nothing, guys can I please have the rats and sacks” my boys smiled. I injected some rats



with some drugs that make it go out of control when it is restricted to an enclosed environment, three of my guys each came with their rat and sack and the other three came with a fire gun that emits so much heat. They put the rat in the sack and covered the king and his goons' head and tied up a rope not to tightly around the necks so they don't pass out and to keep the rat in the sack

Me "hit them" I give the instruction and the other start the fire gun, the rats started to go crazy from

the drugs and the heat that was burning them up and in return it just bites and stretches trying to find

an escape, I let it go on for a full 5 minutes, their screams are out of this world, they are trying by all

means to losses the restrains and they are failing dismally, I look at the cam recorder and it is still rolling,

my brother will feel much better after watching this

Guy 2 "please make it stop Grootman please" I hold out my hand and my boys stop and remove the

sacks, damn those rats are savage jeses, I swear their faces are rearranged

King "I beg you please, I didn't know she didn't want me in that way, I have always wanted to make her my wife please"

Me "do you want me to burn your mouth for lying to me?"

King "no no please no"

Me "you all look so tired hey, but the adrenaline will not allow you pass out, the beauty of it. so my king

I heard you wanted to call the Dr to come take out my niece from her mother's womb before her time"

King "but I decided against it please I am sorry"

Me "but you did think about it so it doesn't really matter, so as I was saying, my wife is a med student

and she makes me watch all these medical series and she sometimes schools me on this and that and I

must say I have always wished to perform surgery on someone and who better than you"

King "sir I know I shouldn't have and I know this now please let me go please, I promise to never set foot

here" I shake my head vigorously

Me "don't stress it will be quick and you will see everything I have instructed them to get me all

equipment they have at the hospital and so you don't miss out on anything I asked them to put a full

length mirror on the ceiling so you get to watch me open you up like you wanted to open up Ntombi, it's

just going to be a minor procedure removing your balls but from the inside I just pray I don't get carried

away and shit, so I will see you tomorrow, boys please go hang our Kind up with his leg thank you. and

you, you were ready to let this monster take her again and go rape her once again with no care in the

world, I mean don't you have sisters, you make me mad man, so that you can feel her pain and

sympathize with her I got you 5 of my friends who are currently locked up but I managed to pay

something to have them here with us for a few hours, they haven't had sex in such a long time I figured

who better than them, maybe now you will understand why she begged you to let her go"

Guy 1 "bozza yami please yoh ntate modimo ke chunneng" I look at the one who pulled the trigger

Me "wena san you just take all the breath in my lungs, boys just

do a smash and burn on him but make

sure he doesn't die, we are going to take a quick drive to that lion farm so they can feast on him"

Max "fuck I missed you in action boss yoh" I shake my head, I didn't want to come back to this life but

eish, they took the King away and untied the other guy and gave him to my prison guys so they can feast

on him. Two of my boys went to the bar and brought back bottles of whisky with them and started

hitting him with them, the bottles breaking and the contents all over him

Me "cigar please" they handed it to me and I took a few puffs and threw it to him and the whisky

instantly caught fire and he was burning, the smell of human flesh still makes me wanna puke

Me "just for 5 minutes and then inject him with more adrenaline and then load him up"

GADAFI

I am still at the hospital and I am with Lungile and Siza, my

brother had to go and take care of that trash  
and I will sleep better knowing that they are paying for all of  
this, yes it won't change anything but it will  
make me feel a lot better. She looks so peaceful but she is so  
pale and seeing her with all these tubes is  
disturbing I won't lie, I am freaking out, I am scared of loosing  
Ntombi, I just found my purpose and it  
can't be taken away from me just like that, I never thought I  
would love but I did and being a father was  
out of the picture but here I am a father to the most beautiful  
and perfect baby girl my princess, Ntombi  
brought joy to my life and if I lose her I am afraid of the man I  
will become. A hand on my shoulder  
brings me back from my train of thoughts, I look up and its  
Lungile

Her "she is going to be okay, we just need to pray"

Me "I can't lose her not like this"

Siza "she is a fighter, she will come back to you, they both will"

Me "I need to check on my daughter for updates"

Siza "I just came back from her, she is still the same, but don't lose hope" I fake a smile coz I am dying

inside

Her "we want to go get something from the cafeteria, would you like something?"

Me "no thanks I am fine"

Siza "we will get him a cup of coffee mama" I chuckle

Me "okay coffee will do thanks" they smile at me and walk out, leaving me with nothing but the beeping

machines, I take her hand into mine and kiss it

Me "baby you have to come back to me, our daughter needs us, I know she is also not okay but if you

wake up maybe she will feel mommy and also want to fight please" I say crying "Ntombi you can't leave

me after coming into my life and making me experience all this love and endless possibilities, you are a

huge part of me and I feel dead watching you so lifeless, baby please I beg you don't leave me please" I

hear someone clear their throat and I quickly wipe my tears

Dr "sorry to disturb just came to check her vitals and administer some injections in her drip"

Me "it's okay Dr you can go on" he nods and gets on with his job

Dr "it's good that you are talking to her, we believe that they can here you and for as long as they are connected to this side of the world we think it gives them the fuel to fight the coma" I nod

Me "in your experience as a Dr have people come back from this?" he sighs

Dr "I will be honest with you, I have seen people get back from worse and we've lost people from simple things, what I am trying to say is every patient is different, we are Drs' but we still wonder how the science differs when it is performed the same each time"

Me "I hear you"

Dr "but do not give up hope, i am a Dr a scientist but in order to not lose my mind I also believe in a higher being, I think you should too"

Me "you mean like God"

Dr "it can be God yes"

Me "I don't even know how to pray"

Dr "there is a first time for everything sir"

Me "thank you Dr" he smiles

Dr "pleasure, I need to check on my other patients"

Me "sure let me not keep you" he smiles and takes his things and walks out

MBUSO

When I checked myself in almost 2 years ago, I was a mess, I was suicidal, my life had just turned upside

down that the only thing I could control and I was good at was my job, I never thought that the love of

my life would play me the way she did and it still stings a bit but I am okay now I have dealt with my

pain, with the betrayal and today I face it all, I have always wondered how today would play out but I

guess I am about to find out. I am parked outside my house and I see her car in the driveway, this place

hasn't changed one bit and so has the neighborhood, everyone is locked up in their fortresses minding



their own business, I was about to get out of the car when she gets out of the door with our son mxm I

mean Bandile, man he has grown up so much, he is turning 13 this year. They both go to her car and she

opens the boot and they retrieve some groceries and go back inside. I attempt to drive but I remember

why the first five things are important and I did say my first thing was to show face so that they know

that I am still alive, I was their father after all I owe them that much, I get out of my car and go to the

gate, I want to ring the intercom but I decide to try the pin and to my surprise it hasn't changed one bit.

I walk in slowly a part of me wants to go back but something keeps on pushing me forward. I finally get

to the door and it takes everything in me to press the door bell and seconds later Bandile opens and he drops the yoghurt in his hand

Him "baba?"

Me "ntwana yam" I say and drop a tear and so does he, without warming he attacks me with a hug and I

just fold my arms around him and tighten, he cries and I can't hold back mine too

Him "where have you been daddy why did you leave us" he asks

Me "I went to get help ntwana yam"

Him "why didn't you take us with you"

Me "I needed to be better Bandile I didn't leave because I wanted to I left because I needed to"

Refiloe's voice echoes from the hall

Her "Bandile who is at the door" she asks and then appears her eyes landing on me, the shock on her face

Her "MBUSO"

Me "Refiloe"

Her "oh my God baby where have you been" she tries to come to me but I hold out my hand and she

stops in her tracks

Me "boy boy, where is your sister?"

Him "she went to Natalie's house" I smile

Me "please go get her for me" he nods

Him "okay I will be right back" he walks out and I am left alone with this monster I used to love with

everything

Her “you look so different baby, where have you been Mbuso we have been worried sick about you”

Me “I am different Refiloe, you didn’t have any business concerning yourself with me”

Her “ofcourse I do, I am your wife” I laugh

Me “une sbindi ntombazane (you have the audacity girl) after all you did you still call yourself my wife”

she was about to say something when a little girl about a year old appeared, and I just chuckle

Her “I can explain Mbuso”

Me “you gave him another child Refiloe” I half shout but quickly compose myself

Her “I swear it’s not what it looks like I swear my love” she says

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 109

VUSI

My father called again 2 days ago to let me now that my mother

is on her sick bed and she really wants  
to see me, apparently I am all she asks of, I don't know what she  
could possibly want from me, I mean I  
am not sure how I feel about my mother because of how she  
treated my daughter and her mother, I  
mean she is the reason why my daughter bled into her brain and  
died, if she had loved and took care of  
Phephe maybe she would still be alive, I don't think I can ever  
forgive her, yes she is my mother but she  
is too toxic for me to have in my life, on the other side I don't  
know how I am going to face my dad after  
I disappointed so much I mean he tried to show me the right  
path but I disregarded him and I will  
forever regret that. it took a lot for me to decide to come here, I  
am parked outside and Uriel is holding  
on to my hand trying to reassure me that I made the right  
decision coming here

Her "come baby let's go in please" I sigh deeply

Me "okay I can do this"

Her "yes you can my love" I kiss her knuckles and get out of the

car, and go around to open her door

Me "thank you for doing this with me baby"

Her "partners remember" I smile and we walk to the door and knock, my father comes a second later to

open and he stands there looking at me then Uriel and shakes his head

Him "Vusi" he says coolly

Me "baba, unjani"

Him "as expected, come in"

Me "baba this is Uriel, babe this is my father"

Her "good morning sir it's nice to meet you"

Him "welcome" he says without even looking at her and I give my baby a give him some time look

Me "ukuphi uDali"

Him "in the bedroom she had just asked of you" I nod and we walk to the bedroom and she looks

horrible, like a shadow of herself, lost so much weight there is only bone left, I never thought I would

see the high and mighty Dali in this condition, she coughs and her breathing is not too good

Him "Dali, Vusi is here" she slowly turns her head and sees me, followed by tears

Dali "oh my son, you came" she cries

Me "yes I came"

Dali "son I am very sick, I am paying for all my evil doings, Siphophelo is even haunting" I felt myself boil

Me "don't ma, don't you ever mention my daughter, she is not haunting you, my baby is resting in

peace so let her, never again mention her siyezwana?"

Dali "I am sorry for what I did to her Vusi, what is did to you, I have always mislead you, I was never a

good mother to you and your siblings that's why none of them are here, I am really sorry mntanami"

Me "and you only realize this coz you are on your death bed?"

Him "Vusi you will not talk to your mother like that"

Me "oh so you are on her side now baba" I ask furious

Dali "I don't want you to fight I just wanted to apologies, and please Vusi allow me to ask a huge favor

from you" I chuckle

Me "I knew it, you called me here to ask for favors, let's hear it

ma, what do you want”

Dali “I need to see Sizakele, please ask her to come and see me please I beg you” I laugh, wow just wow,

I can't listen to this woman I need some air, so I just walk out leaving them in there with her as she calls after me.

MBUSO

I am standing across this woman wondering how she became so evil and why she did me so bad, I loved

her beyond everything, I sacrificed my dreams so that I don't leave her, I loved and took care of her

more than I did me and that was still not enough to stop her from sleep with my brother and giving him

kids and lie to me, let me raise them and love them while she and Mphathi laugh behind my back and

continue with their relationship, even when I disappeared they didn't care they went on about their

lives even having another child, it hurts I won't lie, this little girl is looking straight in my eyes and I can't

help but stare back, I feel drawn to her, she is consuming me.

The door opens in the midst of the thick  
tension in room, I look back and Bandile is back with Samkelo.  
The look on her face is horrific

Me "hey princess" God she has aged so much, she turns 16 this  
year

Sam "Mbuso, what do you want?" I look at Refiloe and she looks  
down

Me "I came to see you guys" she laughs

Sam "after disappearing it's only now you come back"

Me "I have been in a retreatment center getting help baby girl"

Sam "you didn't even care to call to let us know" I sigh

Refiloe "can we all go sit please" we follow her to the lounge

Me "like I said to Bandile, a lot happened, I didn't leave because I  
wanted to I left because I need to, I

was losing myself, and I didn't want that toxicity near you kids"

Bandile "what do you mean baba"

Me "I am sure your mother must have explained a few things to  
you" they look at me dumbfounded

Sam "what things" she says with attitude and I look at Refiloe



Me "you didn't tell them why I left, why I was going crazy, why our family fell apart?"

Refiloe "babe please don't do this please" I chuckle

Me "wow Refiloe, you hid the truth from them, they deserve to know the truth"

Bandile "mama what's going on here, what truth"

Refiloe "nothing that concerns you baby it's between me and your father" I laugh

Me "I am not lying for you, part of my healing depends on everyone knowing the truth and facing it so

you are going to tell them right now"

Refiloe "please don't make me do this please Mbuso" she cries

Sam "daddy just tell us what's going on please, mama?" I cry and look at their mother she won't talk so I

should just tell the truth, they deserve to know

Me "I just want you two to know that I will always love you okay and I will always be here for you when

you need me, but the truth is I am not your father but your uncle, my brother Mphathi is your father,

your mother had an affair with him which resulted with the 3 of you, I lost my mind that I needed to go

away and to heal myself I was way too broken to stick around”

Bandile “mama is that true” he says crying but Refiloe keeps silent

Sam “is he telling the truth ma?” she shouts

Refiloe “I am so so sorry, I made a mistake please forgive me please”

Sam “what, mama how could you” she says running upstairs and Bandile follows his sister

Refiloe “are you happy now that you have ruined me” I laugh

Me “you are sick in the head wena” I say standing up to leave I need to get out of here

Refiloe “I apologized Mbuso and I meant it”

Me “yet you went ahead to give him another child”

Refiloe “Thandolwethu is not Mphathi’s child Mbuso, she is yours, I was already pregnant when you left,

I swear to you” she says and I just stand there full 10 minutes not knowing what to say to this snake

Me “if that’s the case you wouldn’t mind doing a DNA test” I say then walk out

3 DAYS LATER

NTOMBI

I have been walking and waling without getting tired and I must say this place has some sort of serenity,

I am at peace, I feel no pain, all the hurt I have ever been through seem to have healed, where is this

place, I think I want to stay here forever, the world is a cruel place, everyone seems to have their own

agenda and they don't care if they hurt others to get what they want. I want to be here now, I have

been through so much in my life I deserve some peace and maybe this is my peace, I keep on walking till

I get to a bench and I decide to sit, in front of me is a river of clear water I look up and the sky is clear

blue, I can't explain the air in the atmosphere, the more I inhale the more I want. A voice startles me, I look back and it's my parents

Ma "mamgobozi"

Me "mama is that you" I say with tears in my eyes

Baba "it's us Ntombi yami" I get off the bench and run to them and they bring me into their warm

embrace, I have never dreamt of my parents ever since they died and seeing them here makes

everything okay

Me "I have missed you so much"

Ma "I know my love I know"

Me "how did you guys get here" I ask and my father kisses my forehead

Baba "we live here baby"

Me "that means we can be together now right?"

Ma "listen baby girl, you are not suppose to be here, you need to go back"

Me "no I want to stay mama, the world hasn't been easy on me" I cry

Ma "we know baby but now the lord has wiped your tears, you need to go back to your daughter and

her father, they need you Ntombikayise" I cry

Me "I need you"

Baba "we will always watch over you, I promise"

Ma "remember how life was unfair to you without a mother  
don't let that little girl go through the same  
thing please baby"

Me "all I ever wanted was to be with you guys again"

Baba "we will always be with you, carry us in here" he says  
pointing to my heart

Me "I love you so much"

Ma "we love you too and we are very proud of you"

Baba "and we are proud of you Ntonto" I smile and they both  
wipe my tears

Ma "now go back before it's too late"

Me "but how do I go back, I don't know how I got here"

Baba "find the will to go back in your heart"

Ma "fight to go back baby they need you"

Me "but we could be happy here together mama"

Baba "think about the happiness your daughter will bring to  
you" I start imagining her sucking my

breasts for dear life and her tiny hand holding on to my finger, I  
remember the kicks when her father

spoke to her and how his voice calmed her down, I remember the love and happiness I have felt since I

met Tebogo and how happy he says I make him

Me "I can't be here mama this will break Tebogo, I need to leave my daughter and her father need me

mama I love you but I need to go"

Baba "take that way and run Ntombi run, your life depends on it" I ran like I have never run before, my

daughter and her father being the force pushing me to run forward

GADAFI

I am woken up by sounds and movement; I move my head from her bed since I was sleeping on a chair

with my head on the bed and look at her, it's like she is choking from the tube in her mouth, fear

consumes me I am stuck on this chair I can't seem to move an inch, a second later a Dr and a nurse burst

in her room and ask me to move and excuse them but I can't it's like I am glued to this chair, tears

stream down my face, she is leaving me, the pain cuts deep so deep I am numb. The nurse manages to escort me out of the room and closes the door I am just standing outside not feeling anything but pain, after what seems like forever the door opens and the nurse comes out and rushes to where they keep medical supplies, she comes back and gets in without saying anything to me, I am too numb to ask what is going on because I am scared I won't like what she will say. I decide to go see my daughter maybe she will make me feel better, I get in sit next to her incubator and hold her hand

Nurse "she is getting stronger, she even eats a lot now" I smile

Me "I can feel her grip on my finger"

Nurse "she is a little fighter this one"

Me "I think her mother just passed on, I don't know what I am going to do, I have never felt so much

pain in my life, I can't do this life thing with Ntombi, we need her" I cry out loud

Nurse "I am so sorry sir"

Me "I have never loved anyone the way I love that woman, I mean look at the gift she gave me, a man like me, she gave me hope, she loved"

Nurse "all will be okay" she says and I wish that were truth nothing will be okay without her. The phone rings and she goes to pick up

Nurse "neonatal ICU...yes Dr he is in here...really I will let him know...bye" I look at her and she has this smile on her face

Nurse "your wife is asking for you, she was moved to the recovery wing, on 4th floor, you will ask at the reception which room she is in. it didn't wait for her to repeat herself, I just ran out of there and went to the lift pressing 4 so many times, a few seconds later I am on the floor and luckily I spot the Dr coming out of one of the rooms

Dr "she is awake and she is asking for you" I nod at him and get in, the nurse is helping her drink water with a straw, I stand by the door with tears streaming down my face, I thought I lost her but here she is, they finish and she looks my direction and smiles



Her "are just going to stand there" she says and I make my way to her and put my head on her lap and

just cry it out

Me "I thought you left me and princess"

Her "shhhh I am so sorry my love, I am okay now, I am here and I love you"

Me "I love you so much Ntombi and this experience showed me how much I don't want to leave without

you baby"

Her "I never thought I will live to see the day you cry like this" I laugh

Me "I was scared baby"

Her "I am here now and I am not going anywhere"

Me "this might not be the right but I just can't hold back anymore, life is short and anything can happen

at any moment, I don't want to live my life without calling you my wife so please baby marry me please"

I take out the diamond ring I have been keeping with me for weeks now

Her "do you go around hospitals carrying such beautiful rings" she says with tears flowing down her

cheeks

Me "when the love of my life is in this place yes, please marry me"

Her "I want nothing more than to be your wife baby, of course I will marry you" she says and I slid the

ring on her finger and cup her face kissing her so passionately

Me "thank you baby, I will live my life making sure that you and our daughter are happy and loved the

way you deserve to

Her "how is she doing?"

Me "she is strong like mommy, they just going to keep her in the incubator till she is a bit bigger but the

doctors are happy with her progress" she lets out a tear

Her "we are parents baby"

Me "to the most perfect baby girl in the world" she laughs

Her "thank you so much Tebo"

Me "no baby thank you from the bottom of my heart I love you dearly" I kiss her once again and she

looks at her ring

Her "you are so not romantic yazi" I laugh

Me "I couldn't delay it anymore babe"

Her "I am glad you didn't, I don't care where and how you propose I just want to be your wife"

Me "I am glad to hear that"

Her "can you ask the Dr if I can go see her?"

Me "okay let me go do that"

Her "have you named her?"

Me "I wanted you to be awake for that" she smiles and I walk out t go find the Dr.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 110

#### URIEL

I know that Vusi hasn't healed completely from the pain of losing his daughter, and I totally understand that we grieve in different ways and that's okay, but what he shouldn't do is shift all the blame to his mother or any other person, as much as this is a bitter pill to swallow he is also to blame and I am not

saying this because I am judging him no I love that man and I am going to stand by him through it all and

that means I have to be able to be honest with him without feeling guilty or holding anything back, he

said he wanted a life partner and I think one of those has to tell you even the truths you don't want to

hear. I look at Vusi's mother and she is in bad conditions, she needs medical attention and fast, Mr.

Khumalo is just standing next to me, it an awkward moment really

Me "I will go try and talk to him"

Him "okay " he says and I exit the bedroom going outside I spot him sitting outside an abundant hut

with something like a teddy bear in his hand

Me "hey baby" I say brushing his back

Him "hey" he says without taking his eyes off the bear

Me "that is cute" I say and it is the truth thing is it is so dirty

Him "I bought this for her the last time I was home for Christmas and apparently my mother took it soon

as I left and gave it to one of my brothers children” he says and his voice is laced with so much pain

Me “I am so sorry to hear that baby”

Him “my mother hurt me babe but she has hurt Siza more than you can ever imagine, and now she want

her to come so that she can apologize and die in peace” he says and I sigh

Me “if it’s something I know about Sizakele is that she is the most selfless person ever”

Him “you don’t understand babe, Siphephelo was her everything to her” he says and wipes a tear

Me “can I be blunt”

Him “if you need to my babe”

Me “honestly Vusi, your mother is not the only one to be blamed for your daughters passing, you are

also to blame, your ex Mercy is also to blame, but right now you are shifting all this blame to your

mother so that you can feel better and that’s not right” he looks at me with tears in his eyes

Him “Uriel baby” I hold out my hand to stop him from talking

Me “babe listen, you let your mother manipulate you, you

decided to let Mercy to go and change while

your daughter needed you, you are the one who decided to stay away and leave your daughter and her

mother here to suffer In the hands of your mother, you babe and no one had a gun to your head, I am

not judging you I am just telling you the truth” I say and he just weeps

Him “if I could just turn back the hands of time”

Me “but you can’t babe, you need to forgive your mother baby, and most importantly you need to

forgive yourself, all this blame shifting and anger won’t bring her back at all”

Him “I failed her babe I failed Siza and...”

Me “ssshhhh baby. Forgive my love just forgive her please”

Him “how do I do that”

Me “the same way Siza did when she forgave you” I say and there is silence for a while

Him “you are the best babe, thanks. I love you”

Me “I know and I love you too”

Him “let me just go and talk to her”

Me "I will be right here when you are done" I say and he pecks my lips and go to the house, I sigh in relief at least I managed to get through to him

## NTOMBI

The doctor gave us the permission, so Tebogo and pushing my wheelchair to the neonatal ICU where our baby girl is, we get in the and the nurse in the is just so friendly, these are the type of people who should be nurses; their smiles are warm and their voices reassuring. We stop in front of a cot and with one look my heart melts and I feel all the love in the world, I can't contain my tears, she is so tiny and yet so beautiful, she is the most perfect sight I have ever seen, I can't believe she is ours. My tears fall, I just want to hold her and kiss her tiny lips, tell her how much mommy loves her. I look at Tebo and the look on his face, he is looking at his daughter with total admiration.

Him "she is perfect isn't she?"

Me "she is the most perfect sight I have ever seen baby" he comes down and kisses me

Him "she is all me and you baby"

Me "a mini me" I say smiling and he wipes my tears

Him "I am so happy you met her"

Me "can I hold her?" I ask the nurse

Her "yes you can, I am sure she is dying to be in mommy's arms coz daddy has been afraid of holding

her" I laugh

Me "is it?" I ask looking at him

Him "she is so tiny I was afraid I am going to break her" he says in his own defense and the nurse hands

me my baby

Me "I can't believe she survived all three bullets" I say looking at this little girl who has stolen my heart

Him "she is our miracle baby she is a treasure God gave us" I smile at him

Me "she needs a name you know"

Him "I just name her babe. Her name is Letlotlo (treasure)



Kgakgamatso (Miracle) Phoolo”

Me “what do they mean babe” he explains and I am satisfied with the names

Me “Letlotlo Kgakgamatso Phoolo, I love it babe” I say and he smiles

Him “I am happy to hear that babe”

Me “babe could you please call mam’Lungile and inform them”

Him “right, I totally forgot, I will get to it now” he says taking out his phone and making that phone call

Nurse “just look at that” she says looking at the monitor

Me “what?” I ask confused

Nurse “the kangaroo mother care is critical to baby development”

Me “so me holding her like this is helping her”

Nurse “yes it is, it works better if its skin on skin”

Me “help me hold her so I can remove this gown” i say not thinking twice I will do anything to help my

baby be baby, I remove my gown and my pajama top leaving me bare, with my breasts exposed

Nurse “oh remind me to give you breasts pads”

Me "will do thanks, won't other parents be offended by me exposing breasts"

Nurse "they hardly come in here but when someone comes I will give you something to cover" she says

giving me my daughter and I place her on my chest

Me "thank you" she smiles

Nurse "just look at that, her vital signs are improving more"

Me "so can I do this the whole day"

Nurse "I wish but you also need to rest, but your husband can do it"

Me "I will talk to him" he walks in

Him "nudity in the hospital baby, why are you displaying my food" the nurse and I laugh

Me "calm down you mean your daughter's food and the skin on skin helps Letlotlo" I say and he sighs

MBUSO

It's a Sunday and I am hoping that my mother still insists on having her children over for lunch, my

brother and I grew up with two parents in a warm loving home, she was a nurse and she took care of us

and tried by all means to give us everything we wanted until my father left us when I was just 18 to go

be with his mistress, he was police captain and when he died a year later my mother inherited

everything he had. His money managed to send me to university, my brother is 4 years older than me

and he had already started his company from when he was 18 and it was doing well. He managed to

upgrade my mother from the township to the suburbs he has been the favorite ever since, I have made

a name for myself in the industry I work in, we don't have many chartered accountants in the country and

I am pretty good at what I do. Then there is my baby sister the apple of my eye, I love her so much. I am

just 3 years older than her, she is a good pianist, she travels all over the world performing for the rich

and high class musical concerts and I hope she is around because I miss her so much. I am parked

outside my mother's house and I see two cars in the drive way. I

open the plastic that has my personal belongings and retrieve keys to my mother's house, it has the remote to open the gate, I press and drive in, parking behind an expensive Rolyce Royce and I immediately know it belongs to Mphathi. I get out of my car after what seem like forever and walk in without knocking, I hear laughter erupting from the dining room and I follow it there. It's my mother, my brother and some woman sitting next to him looking all cozy and there is my baby girl my baby sister, Nandi looking as beautiful as ever. The first person to see me is Mphathi and the look on his face; he is looks like he has seen a ghost

Me "well well well sanibonani family" I say and they all turn

Nandi "Bhut' Mbuso?"

Me "hey nana" she doesn't hold back she comes running to me and I fold her into my arms

Nandi "oh my God it is really you Bhut wam, I have missed you so much, where have you been"

Me "some retreatment center getting help"

Nandi "what help bhuti, you just up and left no explanation no phone call nothing" I laugh

Me "you and Refiloe didn't tell them?" I say looking at my brother and he remains silent

Ma "Mbuso mtanami" she says coming to me with tears streaming down her face

Me "mama" I say and she pulls me to her squeezing me

Ma "you are alive, I was afraid that something had happened to you"

Me "I am okay mama, I am fine now"

Ma "thank you Jesus for bringing my son back to me"

Nandi "come sit and have a plate, you have to tell me why you disappeared leaving us with broken

hearts" she says dragging me to the table

Ma "I will dish up for you boy"

Nandi "have you been to see sis'Ref and the kids, she was so worried and I have never seen her like

that" I laugh and look at Mphathi who looks guilty as hell

Me "yeah I have been to see them"

Nandi "then why didn't you come with them"

Me "ask Mphathi why" she narrows her eyes

Mphathi "mama me and my fiancé need to leave she has to be somewhere"

Me "I just got home brother and I am sure that your fiancé would like to meet your prodigal brother"

Lady "I would love to yes, I have heard so much about you, it's good to see you back and healthy"

Nandi "so you said you went to get help, what help" my sister goes back to the interrogation

Ma "Nandi stop pestering your brother with questions he just got home" she says annoyed and I knew

there and then. She knew about the children all along she was protecting them. I stand up furious as hell

Me "mama you knew about what Mphathi and Refiloe did?" she stops dishing for me and just cries

THANDIWE

This place is boring without Mbuso, he made my days here bearable, I just wonder how he is coping

outside in the real world. I just hope he won't relapse when he

faces his demons. I look at the R100 note with his cell phone number and smile, I am about to go into my therapy session for today, I need to ask the Dr why she is not discharging me coz I have done everything I needed to do, I miss my children and I don't want to be away from them any longer, they might start questioning my love for them. I knock and she yells come in from the inside, I get in and close the door and make my way to the couch by the window facing this breath taking view.

Her "Thandiwe, welcome"

Me "hey Dr"

Her "how are you feeling today"

Me "I am confused Dr"

Her "talk to me, I am here for that remember"

Me "I just want to know why you haven't discharged me yet"

Her "because I feel you haven't healed completely and you have some demons you don't want to deal

with" I laugh

Me "I have opened up my heart to you more than I have anybody"

Her "but you have reserved one thing just one Thandiwe"

Me "then tell me what it is" I say crying

Her "your sister Sizakele, your savior, the one who noticed that you needed help when everyone you

love was just hoping you would miraculously heal she went out of her way to find you help the woman

you hate so much got you the help you needed, she loved you when she had absolute reason not to and

you won't acknowledge her and you won't acknowledge that deep down this is not hate that this is love

and you are struggling to find a way to stand in front of her and tell her you love her and you wonder

how bruised your pride and ego will be when you say thank you to the one person you have always

looked down on" I was now crying silently

Me "what do you want me to do Dr"

Her "be honest not only to me but yourself too"

Me "I have been"



Her "just not about your sister"

Me "tell me what to do then"

Her "I am going to arrange a session with your sister maybe that will get you talking"

Me "if you think that will help then okay" she smiles

Her "okay then I will contact her and get back to you, so what else is on your mind"

Me "was just wondering if Mbuso is doing okay"

Her "this is the 8th time you've mentioned Mbuso in our sessions"

Me "I wasn't aware we were counting" she laughs

Her "did you fall in love with Mbuso Thandiwe" I smile

Me "calm down we are just friends"

Her "just don't rush into anything please, heal first and focus on your children and getting your life on

track either with school or starting a business like you said"

Me "I plan to"

Her "good then, so what more do you want to share with me?"

No edits

can I get my reactions and shares guys, it's not too much to ask right?

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 111

VUSI

I decided to bring my parents along with me to the city, my mother is not in the best conditions, so I

want her to have access to the best medical care, it took everything in me to try and put everything

behind us, let's just say what my woman said made a lot of sense, hating my mother won't bring back

my daughter and I should just accept that and hold on to the good memories I have of her, after all

Siphephelo was a sweet little angel with a big heart. I will always love her no matter what I will carry her

in my heart all days of my heart. It's visitation hours and I

decided to go and see her since I couldn't  
come yesterday because I had a busy day at work, in and out of  
court. I brought her flowers and some  
fruits, her condition hasn't improved yet but I have faith in the  
doctors.

Me "hey ma, unjani? (how are you)"

Her "Vusi, I just thank God for another day?"

Me "are you comfortable here?"

Her "too comfortable, I am not in so much pain anymore, plus  
the doctors and nurses are good and  
patient" she coughs

Me "I am glad to hear that"

Her "where is that beautiful lady"

Me "she is here actually, Uriel is a surgical nurse here"

Her "oh she chose a good career she has a soft heart"

Me "that is true"

Her "what happened to Mercy" I sigh

Me "things didn't work out ma"

Her "do you think it will work with this one"

Me "I believe so mama, I want to marry her, I was hoping to talk to baba about it later on"

Her "just make sure you are ready first don't rush and realize it's not what you want"

Me "I have actually thought long and hard about this" she nods

Her "in that case all the best"

Me "ngiyabonga ma (thank you mom)"

Her "have you managed to meet with Sizakele"

Me "eish mama that's going to be tough"

Her "I beg you please son, I need to talk to her"

Me "I am afraid that we will open up her wounds mama, I mean you were never good to her"

Her "that is why I need to apologize"

Me "Dali I don't think she is ready to face you"

Her "she needs to see me so I can apologize and she can move on with her life completely, let's give her

a change to tell me how much I have hurt her and let her just speak from the heart"

Me "I will go see her and ask her"

Her "thank you"

Me "but if she refuses we will respect that right?"

Her "yes I will let her be I promise"

Me "okay"

Her "are those mine"

Me "oh yes, do you love them"

Her "yes, I have never received flowers before, but it's that banana I find appetizing" she says

Me "have one then plus you hardly ever eat Dali" I say taking one out and hand it to her

## THANDIWE

I extremely nervous, I won't lie, today is that session the psychologist spoke of, she invited Sizakele

through and she agreed to come, I am not sure how this day is going to end, I don't even know what I

am going to say to her, I finish preparing and look at myself at the mirror and sigh. I can do this. I put on

my lip balm and brush my hair once more then head out, I sigh

heavily before hitting my knuckles on the door and she shouts come in from the inside, I get in and Siza is already here with a glass of water in her hand, she looks amazing.

Me "sanibonani (hello)"

Dr "Thandiwe hello"

Siza "hey, how are you"

Me "very well thanks wena?"

Siza "I am great thank you" I take a sit opposite her

Dr "first of all thanks for agreeing to this Siza"

Siza "you said this will help her so I am happy to do it"

Dr "that is very selfless of you, I won't waste time, so I want to know how you feel towards Thandiwe"

Siza "honestly Dr, I have always longed to have a good sister relationship with her but for reasons I don't

know I feel Thandiwe hates me and no matter what I do I she will always see me as her enemy and I an

not, I just want my sister and I want her to love me" she says with a tears in her eyes

Dr "when did you realize that she feels hate towards"

Siza "when we were very young, we were okay me and her until she just suddenly changed, what hurt

the most is how she rejoiced when my father disowned me for getting pregnant with my later daughter"

Dr "Thandiwe is the any truth from that" she asks and I just cry nodding vigorously

Me "yes and I am so ashamed of myself"

Dr "tell Siza why you felt so much hate towards her"

Me "I hated her because I wondered why dad chose to hurt and rape me instead of her, I hated her

because she took his attention from me without having to do all I did, I felt like I gave up everything my

childhood to protect her and mama but she just decided to follow Vusi and fall pregnant, so when that

happened I was happy that baba was mad at her and that meant I would get all the love and attention

again" I say and look at her she is crying and so am I

Dr "you said hated her, does that mean you no longer hate her?"

Me "yes I don't hate my sister Dr, I was just hurt that's all, and I

am really truly ashamed of myself for

wishing that my sister went through what I went through in the arms of our father”

Dr “Siza how does that make you feel”

Siza “really bad really, she went through so much and she didn’t have anyone by her corner, she had to

live with the pain all alone, dying alone inside. I am very sorry Thandiwe, you didn’t deserve what baba

did to you no woman deserves to be raped, I wish I could take your pain and help you heal”

Me “I am sorry too Siza, you are not the monster I made you out to be in my head I guess I just needed

someone to blame and channel all my anger to and you were the easiest target for me”

Siza “I accept your apology”

Me “thank you for getting me help, you don’t not what you have done for me and my children”

Siza “it’s only my pleasure”

Dr “thank you both for being honest with each other”

Me “thank you for making me do this Dr, and Siza I hope we can be able to start again”



Siza "I would really love that" she says wiping her tears and I stand up to give her a hug

Me "I love you sis and I am very sorry" I say and I hear her sob more

Siza "I have always longed to hear you say that to me, I love you too maTha" I smile with tears

MBUSO

It has been days since I found out that my mother knew about my wife and brother having an affair and

it resulting in the two kids, the kids I loved and raised as my own, now she claimed that the little is mine,

I couldn't trust her word so we managed to do some DNA tests and luckily I have a friend who is a

pathologist, he said he will work on it quickly and so today we are getting the results back. I honestly

don't know how to feel and what to expect. I have been staying over at some hotel and that friend said

he will come drop off my results in a few minutes, I called Refiloe to come through so we can open the

results together, she is sitting awkwardly on the chair opposite me with Thandolwethu on her lap. I can't

will myself to even feel something for that little girl in case she is not mine. There is a knock on my door

and I stand to open, my friend walks in and greets

Him "I am sorry I can't stay I have to rush somewhere real quick"

Me "no problem buddy, thank you"

Him "sure thing"

Me "will call you sometime this week so we can have a drink yeah"

Him "yeah man I would love that, we have a lot to talk about" he says and walks out. I walk back to my

chair and sit, contemplating on whether to open the envelope or not

Her "are you going to open it Mbuso" I look at her and decide that I am just delaying for nothing

Me "let's get this over and done with" I open the envelope and immediately tears stream down my face

Her "what does it say Mbuso" she says impatiently and I just

drop the paper and make my way to her  
and take the little girl in my arms

Me "oh Nkosazana yami" I say hugging her tightly. And just  
continue to cry

Her "I told you she was yours" I ignore her and sit down with  
my daughter and I can look at the  
confusion in her sparkling black eyes

Me "I am sorry I have never been around, I am here now  
sthandwa sam and I am not leaving you again"

I say kissing her forehead

Her "so what now"

Me "what now?" I say not even looking at her

Her "where does that leave us?"

Me "nowhere Refiloe, we are just going to co-parent  
Thandolwethu that's all"

Her "what about our other kids"

Me "they are Mpathi's children Refiloe, I will always be there  
when they need me but you can't expect

me to be able to look at them and not be hurt by your betrayal"

Her "I am really sorry, I truly believe that we can work past this

baby”

Me “no there is nothing to work out. We are done Refiloe, we only have Lwethu to talk about if it doesn’t concern it is not my business”

Her “baby please”

Me “No Refiloe No”

Her “we need some time to rekindle our love and...” I stop her

Me “can I please have her for the rest of the afternoon I will bring her back later”

Her “I don’t mind staying with you guys”

Me “no I just want to spend time alone with my daughter” I say and she sighs and stands up

Her “I will expect her later” she says and takes her handbag and heads to the door

Me “daddy needs to get a house now and prepare you a bedroom fit for a princess. I am going to love

and protect you with all that I have” I kiss her forehead and she giggle, she is just a sweet baby, she is

even not crying coz her mom is not here.

SIZA

I just got home, this afternoon was very emotional, Thandiwe and I iron things now and I believe we are in a better place, when she gets out of the center we have a real chance of working to better our relationship and I must admit I am very excited with that. I get out of my car and walk in the house where the architect is busy redoing my whole kitchen, it's going to look amazing, I am going to have a walk in pantry and freezer so I am really excited to see the final thing. I go to the study to find Molemo and he is not there so I go check in the gym and he is in there blasting some music working out bare chest, the tattoo of my face is something I still can't get used to it

Me "baby do you want to break my windows?" I say lowering the volume

Him "I couldn't listen to your people drilling and hammering making all that noise"

Me "I am sorry, I promise they will soon be done"

Him "you said you are redoing our bedroom too, can we just move into a hotel until they are done with everything" I roll my eyes

Me "you not going to let this hotel issue go huh" he laughs

Him "I am afraid not"

Me "fine Mo, we will go check in later tonight coz tomorrow morning they starting with major staff"

Him "thank God, now tell me why your eyes are so puffy baby" he says pulling me to him

Me "just that Thandiwe poured out her heart and I did the same"

Him "how did it go"

Me "it was great babe, we are good now, she even told me that she loves me" I say smiling

Him "I know how much you have always wanted a relationship with your sister"

Me "yes my love, I am so happy"

Him "and that makes me happy"

Me "I love you okay" I blush

Him "how could you not, I mean have you seen me" he laughs

Me "cocky much Mr Motaung"

Him "yeah maybe a little" he says and we both laugh

Me "what are we having for dinner"

Him "I think we should eat when we get to the hotel, room service will do"

Me "I like the sound of that baby"

Him "I think we should go and start packing"

Me "after you have showered mister you stink"

Him "what did you just say" he says tickling me and I just giggle like a high school girl

Me "baby stop it please stop" he scoops me up bridal style and we head out of the gym upstairs, he

takes us straight to the shower and places me down opening the taps

Me "but my hair babe"

Him "I will buy you all the hair in the world, I have missed taking a shower with my wifey"

Me "it has been a while since we did babe"

Him "I hate school and work"

Me "me too takes time away from us"

Him "I m just glad that it doesn't affect our love"

Me "nothing can ever change my love for you Mo"

Him "that is music to my ears" he says leaning down to me and kissing me so passionately

Him "can I just put in the tip babe" I burst out laughing

Me "not until our wedding night" he frowns

Him "you don't want to see what I am going to do to you on that night, and I don't want complaints" I laugh

SIZAS TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 112

LUNGILE

Looking at my daughter so young and care free and genuinely happy brings me real peace, today is

visitation and I brought her children to see her but like always they only hovered around their mother

for a few minutes and they were off to the children's room leaving us by the pool, this place is safe so

we don't have to worry. I look at her with so much admiration,



her resilience is something I commend,  
she faced her demons and came out victorious and for that I am  
so proud, very proud

Her "mama why are you looking at me like that?"

Me "I am just so proud of you, you are a whole new person"

Her "thanks to my sister for that, if she didn't force my hand to  
come here I would still be that trapped

little girl who has anger issues" I smile

Me "your sister" she smiles

Her "yebo mama my sister"

Me "how did the session go?"

Her "Siza didn't tell you"

Me "she was supposed to come around but she is renovating  
her house so she is busy ensuring that

they finish on time plus her meetings with the wedding planner"

Her "I hope I will be out by then, I can't miss her big day"

Me "what happened with you too"

Her "let's just say me and my sister are in a better space now,

we are not completely there but we have  
taken a first step, we are both willing to work on our  
relationship” I smile and a tear falls

Me “I have never wanted anything more than to have my girls  
love one another and be each other’s

keepers” she smiles

Her “it’s all my fault you tried to tell me that Siza is a good  
person but I just”

Me “stop that now, you were dealing with so much and no one  
would blame you for that, I am just glad

you are okay now”

Her “to tell you the truth my heart is at peace”

Me “I am happy to hear that”

Her “so how is Ntombi and the princess”

Me “oh Letlotlo is the most beautiful thing ever, she is stronger  
now and Ntombi is healing nicely they

will soon be out”

Her “oh that’s great mama, I can’t wait to lay my eyes on her, I  
am sure Gadafi is happy”

Me “he is over the moon, from a Lion to a puppy, his daughter

melts him”

Her “I can’t believe that they are even engaged”

Me “he couldn’t wait, you know near death experiences have such effects, he even asked to pay lobola

next coming weekend. He says he wants them with him when they get discharged”

Her “that’s great mama, you making money mos first Siza, now Ntombi, I must get a man soon” she says

jokingly and we both laugh

Me “hai wena, you must heal first”

Her “I am in no hurry for a relationship mama, I have to focus on me and my children first”

Me “I am glad to hear that baby”

Her “thank you for everything mama”

Me “it’s my pleasure baby” we hug and the bell to alert us that the visiting hours are over rings

Her “time flies yoh”

Me “we will see you again soon okay, I love you”

OLIVIA

I haven't been to my place since that girl came here and tried to seduce my man, each time I want to

leave Steven comes up with an excuse for me not to leave and I fall for it each time, but I must admit,

vat n set is nice man yoh, sleeping and waking up to a dick that knows it's business when it comes to

your body huu, I haven't seen my dad and Siza I have been making excuses of being busy at school to

Razor and Siza knows exactly where I am. So today I decided to go have lunch with them both,

apparently they are staying at the hotel I am yet to find out why, even my baby decided to meet up with

his boys today I mean we have been cooped up alone in our love nest. We just finished taking a shower and getting dressed.

Me "I am going to miss you" I say kissing him

Him "you coming back home right?"

Me "I don't know love, it depends on how it goes with my father"

Him "don't say that babe"

Me "you know he is going to kill us if he finds out that we've been living together"

Him "I know and I promise I am going to marry you" I laugh

Me "will you really buy the cow when you getting all the milk for free?" he laughs

Him "you are not a cow now are you?"

Me "you bet your sexy ass I am not" he pecks my lips

Him "let's get going so we can come back"

Me "do me a favor and stay away from these harlots"

Him "my girlfriend is too crazy for me to try any shit" I laugh

Me "mxm" we go to my car and I drop him off club Nation and give him my card

Him "thank you my blesser"

Me "sure blessee, have a great day my love"

Him "I love you babe, will see you when you come pick me up"

Me "I will call you okay" he blows me a kiss and I drive off to the North, I get to the hotel and head to

the restaurant and find Sizakele already having a martini

Me "look at you looking like money" I say and she stands up to come give me a hug

Her "look at you, shame dick suits you" I burst out laughing

Me "and my baby can lay it on me"

Her "just don't get pregnant"

Me "don't remind me of that, the nigga nuts in me like I am that bucket they pee in" she laughs

Her "are you on birth control?"

Me "when I remember"

Her "OLIVIA"

Me "I know I know babe eish, you know LOVE has me going crazy"

Her "I love to see you this happy"

Me "one word Steven" I say blushing

Her "I see you two are making waves on instagram, you are the cutest thing in the love world right now"

Me "I know right" we both laugh

Her "you deserve this happiness baby"

Me "thanks love and where is your husband"

Her "he will be here any minute now, he left court a while ago" I nod

Me "and why are you two living at a hotel again?"

Her "because your father is a drama queen, I am re-doing my kitchen I want a walk in pantry and

freezer, so he says the noise is getting to him" I laugh, listen to her being the moguls wife suits her man

NTOMBI

I am healing really well and so is my daughter, we are thankful to the lord for his mercy. on the other

hand my fiancé is over protective of me and his daughter but I think his daughter more, Letlotlo just

came to the world to steal my man, I laugh at my silly thought, I guess no one can ever come in between

a father and his daughter, the love is just too much, I am happy that my child will have a father that will

love and protect her at any cost, I think I am more in love with Tebogo now because of how he is with

our daughter, he is a gentle bear. I get up and go to the bathroom, yes I can now move about without a

wheelchair but not for long the Dr wants me to rest at take it

easy. I open the ensuit bathroom door

going back to the bedroom and there he is looking so handsome with his daughter in his arms

Me "look at you two"

Him "hey mommy"

Me "when did you get here"

Him "got here a while ago babe was in the NICU, the doctor was briefing me and I said I will let you in on it"

Me "okay?"

Him "so your daughters lungs are fully developed now and she doesn't have to be in the incubator

anymore" I felt tears in my eyes

Me "really babe"

Him "yes my love, they will set up a cot in here for her, but they will still be keeping you here a while"

Me "I am just happy our daughter is getting better" I go sit next to them and he stands up and puts

Letlotlo on my bed and comes back to the couch

Him "come here" he says directing me to his lap



Me "what's wrong love"

Him "I haven't held you in a while, and I haven't told you how much I am grateful for the treasure you

gave me, my miracle baby. Thank you for being the best thing that has ever happened to me. you make

me whole Ntombi and you agreeing to be my wife is beyond everything, you will now not only be my

daughters mother but you will also be my wife that I will cherish, protect and love all days of my life" I

was now crying with my face buried in his neck

Me "thank you for loving me the way that you do"

Him "you made it easy for me my love"

Me "and our daughter is blessed to have a father like you" I say and I see his face light up

Him " I have a confession" I feel my heart race

Me "what babe" I say with a low voice

Him "I asked my family to sent a letter to Lungile for your lobola and she agreed on the date I had recommended"

Me "why didn't you tell me babe, what date is that"

Him "I just wanted you and our daughter to come home with

me baby I am sorry I should have informed

you, they will be paying your lobola and damages for Letlotlo this coming saturday” he says looking down

Me “but babe, I will here mos”

Him “I know and I explained to my family and they don’t mind”

Me “you are such a sly fox” I say laughing

Him “you are not mad”

Me “of course not I mean I agreed to being your wife and I don’t have second thoughts with my

decision, I want my family under one roof” I hear him sigh in relief

MBUSO

I just finish signing the documents to my new house and it looks amazing, it will be perfect to raise my

daughter and I hope she will love it here, after all I got if so she doesn’t have to visit me at hotels and all,

before coming to the bank I went passed some interior décor office to ask them to furnish my house and

decorate my princess bedroom. They said they only need a week and they will be done with everything.

I managed to go and buy my daughter a few things she might like, I got her a human size teddy bear,

some flowers, chocolates and kiddies champagne from Woolworths. I get to my former house and I

notice Mphathi's car outside, a part of me wants to leave but I decide that they are not worth me

coming to give my girl her things, I know she is one but I want to spoil her and show her that daddies

here, I mean a daughters first love is her father and how I treat her will ensure that she doesn't accept

anything less from a man when she is all grown. I press the pin and park in, I open without knocking and

I can hear them arguing in the lounge and I walk through there and they both stop screaming when they notice me

Her "oh I didn't know you were coming today"

Me "I didn't inform you I was just in the neighborhood and I just wanted to drop these off"

Him "you two are back together now" he laughs

Her "those are very beautiful I love them babe thank you" she says

Me "oh no these are not for you Refiloe, they are for my daughter where is she?"

Her "oh I uhm, she is upstairs in her room"

Me "please go get her for me"

Her "of course I will be right back" she heads upstairs and I am left with my brother

Him "you shouldn't be mad at our mother"

Me "your mother you mean"

Him "you have always been jealous of me baby brother" I laugh

Me "I am not the one who slept with my brother's wife so for what you just said you shouldn't look too

far you only need the mirror" he swallows

Him "do me a favor and stay away from my children they know their father now"

Me "oh so now you are ready to play daddy, how cute. I am sure you fiancé will love playing step mom

to two teenage kids" I say and he keeps silent

Me "I thought so, we both know you don't give a shit about Sam

and Bandile you are just trying to get under my skin, and I am sorry to tell you that you are not winning at all” he was about to say something when Refiloe came back with Lwethu in her arms and soon as she sees me she wiggles out of her arms

and runs to me, I go down to be height and receive her

Me “hey princess” I say and she just giggles

Me “look at what daddy got you baby” I show her the things and the first thing she jumped on was the

teddy I just smile looking at her being so happy, I take out my phone and take a few snaps

Her “let me go put the flowers in the water and the champagne in the fridge” I hand her the things and

she tries to hide the chocolates from Lwethu

Her “if she eats sugar at this time she won’t sleep” I nod

Me “I was hoping to have her for the night” she sighs

Her “okay I will go pack her bag then, I will send you her day care address”

Me “please do but I won’t be taking her tomorrow I have a full day planned for us”

Her "oh okay then" she walks away and I pick up my daughter and tickle her while she giggles

Him "mxm I don't have time for this nonsense, tell Refiloe we are not done talking"

Me "I am not one of your servants Mphathi, ungangi jwayeli wena" I say and he clicks his tongue and

leaves

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 113

SIZA

OH my God the way Letlotlo is so cute she makes me want to get pregnant right now this minute and fall

pregnant immediately, I mean she reminds me of the day I gave birth to my very own princess, it was

the perfect Thursday afternoon, I remember I was busy cooking at the back of the house when the pains

started and, I was all alone at home and luckily I had asked around on what to expect and when they hit

I knew exactly what was happening so I just went to get the little I had for arrival, the neighbor was around when I left and the old lady could see what was happening with me she came to me and accompanied me to the clinic and I remember the intense pains I experience but when I first held her in my arms I knew it was all worth it. Ntombi drags me back from my train of thought and only then I realize I am crying

Her "are you okay?" she asks concerned

Me "oh I am so sorry" she frowns

Her "don't be sorry just tell me what's making you cry"

Me "I just dated back to when I gave back to Siphephelo" I say wiping my tear

Her "oh Siza I am so sorry sis wam"

Me "its okay really, I have dealt with it"

Her "you can never completely heal with her death and that is understandable"

Me "I still hurts so much"

Her "as it should she was your baby"

Me "I miss her everyday"

Her "God will give you many daughters"

Me "amen, let me stop my silliness. I got her these"

Her "ncoo Siza they are so cute"

Me "I know right I couldn't resist plus we never had a baby shower for you"

Her "you still owe me one though"

Me "you gonna need to get preggos again soon then"

Her "oh hell no" she says and we both laugh

Me "oh my God look at the time, babe I need to leave I have class in 30minutes"

Her "its okay love. Thanks for coming and for these bane nhlanhla o'Letlotlo having rich aunts and all"

Me "I envy her too" I say standing up and hug Ntombi then go to kiss the princess in her cot then exit, I

bump into someone in the parking lot

Him "oh my God I am so sorry" I look up and it's Vusi

Me "oh hey it's not a problem, here to see Uriel?"

Him "uhm no I have been meaning to come see you" I narrow my eyes



Me "what's going on?" he sighs deeply

Him "Dali is admitted her, she is really sick"

Me "oh?" I say not understanding how that is any of my business

Him "she asked me to please ask you to come see her, she says she wants to apologize" I felt myself

boil, so I just laugh, emotions consuming me

Me "isn't that lovely, let's kill Sizakele's daughter and ask for forgiveness, coz she is just the mother

Christmas of everyone that hurts her right" I say crying and I am bursting out with anger

Him "I am sorry Siza I didn't mean to make you angry I am really sorry"

Me "just tell your mother o leave me out of her redemption story coz it won't bring my daughter back"

I say and leave him standing there and get to my car driving to the hotel I can't go to class like this

STEVE

I am my house chilling with Mandla, he says he gave himself a day off, the man runs the entire hospital

so I mean why not, he says he needed this one day to get in touch with reality coz he feels like he has

been walking on water so much, I just laughed at the statement, it's just a Tuesday after work for me so

nothing heavy just a couple of beers then he will be leaving.

Vusi couldn't join us coz he had to go see

his moms at the hospital. We just finished braaing some meat and now we are in the lounge watching

some highlights. Olivia is going to be thrilled finding braai meat.

Him "so you and madam moved in officially"

Me "definitely not ntwana, Razor will kill us if he even know we are doing this now" he laughs

Him "she has brought so many changes in your life, I mean look at your pozi"

Me "it has a woman's touch now huh, feels a lot like home warm and all"

Him "I am happy for you guys really"

Me "thanks bafo" the kitchen door opens and my mother walks

in

Her "sanibonani madodana" we greet back

Me "what a nice surprise, what brings you by"

Her "I was running errands and I went by the atm to withdraw some cash and the damn thing

swallowed my card and the branches are closed coz of the time, I was hoping to get your card and I will

pay you back tomorrow"

Me "eish o'lady I don't have a card with me manje"

Her "haibo where is it?"

Me "Olivia is using it" she laughs and claps her hands laughing

Her "and you said she is no gold digger" I roll my eyes

Me "mama please, she uses my card I use hers it's no big deal"

Her "I knew it, you love making excuses for this girl" I was about answering when Liv walks in with

shopping bags

Liv "babe I am back" she gets in the lounge "oh sorry didn't realize you had guests, dumelang"

Her "that's all you know spending my son's money on clothes and alcohol" my mother says

Me "mama just stop it please"

Her "hey shut up wena, why won't you see her for what she really is, give my son his card you hoe" I see

my baby cry and she never cries for such thing and I know my mother is really hurting her

Me "I will not have you insult Olivia like this mama please"

Liv "with all due respect mama, I love Steven and I am not with him for the money, I can afford my

lifestyle and"

Her "you don't even have manners, you talk back at elders" She opens her purse and takes out my card

Liv "Steve take your card and can I have mine, I will send you back the money I spent today" she says

Me "no you not doing to do that babe, we are in a relationship, my money is yours and the fact that you

also let me use your card at times"

Liv "it's okay just please give me my card" she places mine on the table and I retrieve hers from my

wallet and hand it to her.

Liv "thanks, I will send it later when I get to my place" she says and heads to the kitchen door

Me "babe no you are not leaving"

Her "let that harlot leave Steven"

Me "mother stop will you just stop it right now" I say and run out to find but Liv has already drove off, I

run back to get my keys but my mother took them, I don't want to fight with her so Mandla just signals

me with his eyes to take his keys and I take them quickly on the coffee table and run out, she is shouting

behind me, even cursing me out but I don't care I just drive out, I can't believe my mother really

RAZOR

I had the longest day ever and I am happy to be home really, okay not home really but wherever I am

with Soft its home. I get to our suit and its dead quiet I wonder where she is, I mean I have even been

trying to call her all day and she hasn't answered my calls, I knew she has back to back classes but now

the hotel room is dead silent and her car is in the reserved parking spot, or maybe she went down to the

spa or something, I walk into the bedroom and she is in bed sleeping, I just want to annoy her and I just throw myself on the bed and start waking her roughly like we always do to each and her reaction scared me

Her "can you just stop this nonsense of yours Molemo, just stop with your stupid shenanigans I don't have time for games today okay" she says with so much anger and I am shocked

Me "babe I am so sorry I was just"

Her "you were just nothing, you can be annoying at times" I look at her i mean look at her and it's obvious she has been crying her eyes out

Me "Soft baby" she lets her tears fall

Her "I am so sorry my love I didn't mean to be that rude"

Me "it's okay what's going on talk to me" I say picking her up and holding her in my arms

Her "I just miss her Mo, I miss her so much" she says and I know exactly who she is talking about

Me "I know baby I know you do, and I wish I had super powers to bring her back" I say and she just

weeps so painfully in my arms breaking my heart

Her "I am sorry for the outburst" I kiss her forehead

Me "its okay my love I totally understand your reaction, what happened today"

Her "I went to see Letlotlo and Ntombi and I just remembered the day I gave birth to Siphephelo, then

when I left I met with Vusi and he told me her mother is admitted at the hospital and she wants to see

me to apologize, and I just lost it, she is responsible for me losing my child and only when it suits her she

wants to apologize, that woman has put me through so much and she thinks her apology will make it all

go away" from this statement I just knew how much this woman hurt Soft, my wife is quick to forgive

and for the mere fact that she is holding back from this it means she is still hurting and I hate myself for

not noticing this

Me "I am so sorry my love so so sorry"

Her "its okay baby, I am sorry too"

Me "stop apologizing babe, can we please drive down to her grave on Saturday after the lobola"

Her "I would really love that babe, I wish her grave was near"

Me "we can exhume her remains if you want"

Her "I don't believe in that my love but thank you"

Me "I will do anything for you Sizakele Motaung I mean anything"

Her "I know and for that I will forever be grateful"

Me "can I please run us a bath so we can relax and then order in and binge on your favorite series until the am's"

Her "we have work and school in the morning love"

Me "we are not going tomorrow I will ask my team to take over for me and you will ask your friend to take notes for you" she smiles

Her "in that case I would love to"

Me "now that's my girl, I will be right back, strip off those pajama's" I say and wipe her tears away

Her "okay babe" I cup her chin

Me "God will give us children babe not to replace Siphephelo but to bring us joy okay"

Her "okay" she says with her eyes sparkling with the love and



trust she has for me

MERCY

I am really low on funds right now, being on this stuff full time is a drag plus having to buy for everyone

else, let's just say for the past few weeks I have been blowing cash like a crazy person, taking

unexpected trips when I am high making stupid decisions, I think I am left with R26 000 in my back

account and that is not enough to keep my house lights on and to buy groceries, patrol, data, drugs and

keep up appearances. In a weeks' time I will be broke as hell, I need a plan and I need it fast.

Her "so what are you going to do babe" Vicky asks annoying me

Me "I don't know as yet babe eish"

Her "I have a suggestion"

Me "spill it out already"

Her "I was thinking maybe you could sell the house"

Me "it's going to sell for R1.5 million I will blow that in less than 3 months" I say

Her "we use that money to invest in something"

Me "Vicky we are bloody addicts invest in what coz we are going to smoke that investment" she laughs

Her "so fucken true God"

Me "I need my allowance back, the only way to be able to continue is to go back to being daddy's girl, where he pays for everything"

Her "now that is a plan for life. if your dad allows you back into his life he will pay for everything and still give you an allowance to be able to feed this addiction"

Me "exactly lovie" I say taking a bite of my bunny chow.

MBUSO

Me "so I will have her every weekend and maybe sometimes during the week coz I am going back to work next week"

Her "fair enough" she says, I am with Refiloe, we are discussing how we are going to co-parent Lwethu

Me "so I will take care of her day care fees and the transport and I will send you her monthly allowance

for her upkeep and I will also send some for Bandile and Sam"

Her "uhm ahhh Mphathi has been doing that but thanks" she says looking down totally embarrassed

Me "okay then, I am going to talk to them too about visiting me at my house and how we are going to

keep our relationship going, I might not be their father biologically but I raised them"

Her "I really appreciate that"

Me "yeah sure"

Her "was she well behaved" I smile

Me "she is the sweetest thing under the sun"

Her "I am glad she finally met her daddy"

Me "I am glad I met her, she is my whole world now"

Her "Mbuso I am so sorry please" I shake my head I take out an envelope from my daughters bag pack

Me "here please look through it, but it's fair, you can keep the house and the two patrol stations I saw

that they are still running pretty good so they will keep you

afloat considering that I will take care of my daughter and Mphathi is supporting Sam and Bandile” she is looking at me like she is hearing foreign

Her “you are divorcing me”

Me “don’t act surprised Refiloe” I say standing up and leaving

Her “can we at least talk about it”

Me “I will see you Friday when I come to fetch my daughter”

no edits my loves

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 114

SIZA

Its Saturday and Mo kept to his promise and after the lobola we packed our things and drove down to

the village, knowing how long the drive is and that there are not so many stores that sell edible food, I

decided to pack us some food and took some beverages so we

don't have to eat trash along the way. He was even so considerate as to buy some flowers that we will put on Phephe's tomb, he is just so sweet, I know if my daughter was still alive he would have loved her like his own. I called MaNtuli to let her know that I am coming and she said she will prepare a room for me and my husband. We just took the off ramp that leads to the village and in less than 15 minutes we will be there. I look out the window and just take in the beautiful view the village as to offer, I can't believe I made it out of this place, I feel a hand on my thigh and I look at him and he just gives me a reassuring smile. I start giving him directions to the cemetery and in no time we are parked and we both take flowers and walk to her grave, it's very clean and I know uMaNtuli has a hand in this. I let out a tear soon as I lay my eyes on her final resting place; I put down the flowers and sit on top of the tomb

Me "hey sthandwa sami, it's me, uSiza wakho, I came to see you and I know it has been a while and for

that I am sorry, never think that I have forgotten about you because that will never happen, you are my first love and I will hold you dearly in my heart forever and ever. This past week has been really hard on me baby I miss you so much, life has finally come along for mommy and I wish you were here with me to finally get all you have ever dreamt of. I pray that your beautiful soul is resting in peace, please look down on me always, and Siphephelo you better visit me in my dreams wena ungangi casuli (don't make me mad" I giggle after saying that and I feel Mo joins me Him "making threats even, I guess once a mom always a mom" I smile and wipe my tears Me "she hasn't been visiting like she did before and she knows that she has to. And oh Phephe baby remember when my first visit after I moved to the city, I came to tell you that I have met someone, he is here with me right now and baby him and mommy are getting married in two weeks time, your presence would have been everything, I could just imagine you in a princesses dress and being our

flower girl, it could have been so magical” I say and I just break down, Molemo quickly sat down and

took me into his arms

Him “shhhh it’s okay my love, she will be there with us in spirit, she knows how much you loved her in

fact she knows how much you love her and I know she loves you too baby, this little angel will want you

to heal and be happy remember the letter she wrote you, she never wanted to see you cry so please my

love let’s honor her please. Phephe my angel I want you to rest in peace knowing that I will love and

protect your mother for as long as I live, please visit her in her dreams she still lives for you and she

loves you so much” he says and I just fall in love deeper with him. We sit there for 30 minutes with me

in his arms. I get out of his hold and stand up and he does the same, I take a little stone and kiss it then

place it on the tomb

Me “continue resting in peace my love” I say and take Mo’s hand and we walk back to the car, I feel much better now

Him “are you okay?”

Me "I am love and thank you for doing this with me"

Him "you are my wife I will do anything for you and with you. I love you"

Me "I love you too"

Him "I just hope your other mother will love me" he says sounding nervous

Me "oh please who wouldn't love you my big sweet bear" he laughs

Him "on our wedding night I am going to show you that I can still be a beast" I giggle and blush

THANDIWE

I just got a message that the Dr would like to see me immediately and I am panicking right now, I

wonder what I might have done. I manage to take a quick shower and I just can't help but crack my skull

trying to figure out what could be so urgent but I am failing dismally, so I decide to stop and just go find

out what she might want to talk to me about. I get out of my room and make my way to her office, my

mind is so far I don't even knock I just walk in and go straight to



my favorite spot, the couch by the window facing this amazing view it's breathtaking I swear

Dr "thank you for coming Thandiwe, I just had to shift your session to earlier"

Me "is everything okay?"

Dr "oh yes it is. I am sure you are wondering why we haven't spoken about the session we had with your sister" I nod

Me "yes I have been wondering but I have learnt to never try to figure out how shrinks work" she laughs

Dr "right. So Thandiwe I was very impressed with how you were raw with your emotions and how honest you were with her"

Me "I figured it was about time"

Dr "and that was the only reason I was keeping you in here and you finally gave me what I wanted and I am proud of your progress"

Me "thank you" she smiles and hands me a paper

Dr "please sign this discharge paper" I look at her with the

widest smile on my face

Me "are you serious?"

Dr "I am my Thandiwe, but on the condition that you come in once a week for post retreat therapy just

to see how you are dealing with being out there" I nod vigorously

Me "I will be here Dr" I say signing the papers, excitement consuming me

Dr "so since it's still early you can leave with the center shuttle or you can wait for tomorrow for your

family to come get you"

Me "center shuttle please" she laughs

Dr "can't wait to get out of here huh"

Me "I miss my children"

Dr "I totally understand, remember the first five things, carry out each and every one, also stick to fixing

your relationship with your sister and I want you to know that I am proud of you"

Me "I will doctor and thank you so much for your help"

Dr "I am glad I could help you"

Me "let me go pack"

Dr "I will call on Monday to discuss that one day you have to come in for that session"

Me "I will wait for your ring" I go to her and hug her so tightly

Dr "who knew that you could be this soft" I laugh

Me "oh please, thanks again"

Dr "keep well Thandiwe and all the best"

Me "you are the best, continue doing this amazing job and helping people like me"

Dr "I will" she says and I walk out to practically running to my room, I can't wait to see my children God.

I owe my life to Sizakele for doing this for me. I feel like the best vision of myself. I am happy and

content with where I am right now but I am warn the world, they better be ready for who I am about to

be coz she is going to bring fire, she is the storm and everyone be warned.

OLIVIA

I can take all this nonsense from his sister but not from his mother too, I love Steven but his family seems like they are out there to destroy me, I know I have to just remember our love for each other and hope that it allows us to fight through everything together, but when I remember what my best friend suffered in the hands of a woman who believed she was not worthy of her son, I can't find myself in the same predicament. When they hate you they will do everything in their powers to get rid of me and as much as I love Steven I would rather we stop now than hold on and have his family tear us apart and by then it will break me. I am hurting as it is but I think this is the right thing to do. that day his mother rained insults on me I drove away with a broken heart, I knew he will drive after me so I didn't drive to my flat and I went straight to my father's house, he won't think to look for me here since I told him that Siza and dad left coz it's under renovations, but he has been blowing my phone since and I know that I am hurting him but I am also hurting, but today I decided to tell

him where I am so we can talk. I am  
sitting by the pool away from the noise in the kitchen.

Him "hey baby" he startles me

Him "oh I am sorry love, the people working inside told me  
where to find you"

Me "it's okay I was just lost in my train of thoughts" he walks  
towards me and I stand, he charges to me  
and folds me in his arms

Him "I am so sorry my love" he say's and I just cry

Me "they will never like me Steven"

Him "they don't have to my love, for as long as I love you, I will  
protect you from them I swear babe"

Me "you will get tired of fighting with your family Steven and I  
don't want you to live like that"

Him "don't talk like this please babe"

Me "I love you so much but your family will always fight us, it  
will get tiring at some point and we will

call it quits, better we do it now, at least we don't have so much  
invested"

Him "Olivia no never no I am not loosing you babe"

Me "Steve my best friend lost her daughter because Vusi's mother hated her, believed that she was not good enough for her son"

Him "I know baby I know but I will protect you Olivia please, don't rip my heart out of my chest, don't

take away all the love, happiness and possibilities you brought into my life baby please" he says crying

and this side of him is killing him

Me "baby please"

Him "I love you please don't do this to us" he says going down on his knees

Me "I love you two Steven but"

Him "no buts baby, our love will get us through this please" his tears fall and I just go on my knees too

Me "I love and I don't want to do this it hurts me too but they will never stop" I am crying myself

Him "don't hurt us baby please, our love is stronger than this babe please, Olivia you changed me, got

me talking about marriage and having kids and buying big houses and going to school plays please don't

take this away from us please I need you” he says and kisses me so passionately

Him “I am not letting you go Olivia Motaung do you understand me, you are my forever and not even

my family will come between us. Me and you are not breaking up not now not ever. I love you and you

love me and I will fix this okay” I nod

Him “say it babe”

Me “we are not breaking up love” he wipes my tears and I wipe his

Him “I am yours Olivia and I will do right by you. I am going somewhere now, can I please find you at

home when I get there please nana” he says and kisses and I return it hungrily, we haven’t made love in

a few days, he stops the kiss and leaves looking furious, my heart is happy that he didn’t listen to me

VUSI

I am with my father by the garden having a young drink. My head is miles away, I can’t stop thinking of

Siza's outburst the other day, she didn't seem herself and I am really worried about her, I take a sip of my drink and try to figure out how I am going to tell Dali that Siza refused to come and see her, I have never seen my mother so desperate to see someone but we agreed that we will let her be should she say no and I plan to keep to my word I don't want to cause Sizakele more pain, we have already did a lot of that my mother and I.

Him "Vusi, what's running through your mind"

Me "eish baba, I met with Siza"

Him "and did you ask her" I sigh

Me "yes I did baba but she refused, I have never seen so mad before, she didn't want to hear any of it"

Him "I don't blame her, I mean she suffered greatly in your mothers care and let's not pretend that Dali

is responsible for her daughter's death, you know very well how much Siphephelo meant to her"

Me "I know baba"

Him "what I have always loved about that girl was her humility



and pure heart, she will come around. I

have always wished that you would have come back for her; she would have made a great wife and

mother, but you were foolish and arrogant”

Me “please baba I know what I’ve lost but I have Uriel and I am satisfied with her, I love her and she is

amazing in her own right”

Him “at least she isn’t like that other one you paid Lobola for” he says laughing

Me “I made a mistake okay” he shakes his head

Him “you are one stupid boy” he says and sips on his drink and my woman brings dad and I food.

MBUSO

These people I hired for my house are just everything they finished everything in just 3 days and I must

admit it looks amazing yoh, my daughters room is fit for a princess, they even turned one of the rooms

into her play room, I pray she likes it though, I had to come sign

in some few things that are going to arrive so I couldn't go get Lwethu, so I asked Refiloe to bring her. my door bell rings and I go open for them and to my surprise she is with Bandile and Sam, you should see the smile on my face.

Me "hey guys, what a lovely surprise" I say and take Lwethu from Refiloe

Sam "wanted to come see the new house"

Me "you could just say I missed you baba" she laughs

Bandile "can we sleep over too"

Me "ofcourse you can guys this is your home too"

Sam "I am choosing a room first" she says already running up the stairs and Bandile follows screaming

Me "somethings will never change" I say laughing

Ref "they are still competitive, nice house by the way"

Me "thanks, and for also bringing the kids" she smiles

Ref "in that case I will head to the kitchen and start making some snacks for us"

Me "no need for that, I will take care of that, me and the kids

will be fine” I say taking Lwethu’s bag  
from her.

Ref “oh okay bye I guess” she says and turn my back on her  
Me “guys what do you want me to order for you, and I am  
choosing the first movie” I scream

no edits

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 115

GADAFI

I am officially someone’s husband traditionally and it feels so  
damn good, my sister has never been so

happy and excited for me, she cried a river. She if fussing over  
Ntombi and our daughter and I think she

will be going back to Mafikeng any time soon. I wanted to take  
care of my wife and daughter myself and

with her there she won’t let me, I appreciate her presence  
though. Immediately after my elders came

back home to tell us that everything went well, I just stayed with them for one drink and I drove like

crazy to the hospital to tell Ntombi that we finally hitched. I get to her room and find her breastfeeding

Letlotlo she is even talking to her

Her "so I wanted you to know that your daddy and I are very blessed to have you as our baby, you have

brought so much joy into our lives baby, thank you for choosing us but you are such a traitor baby why

did you have to look like your father this much huh" I laugh and she looks back

Me "my DNA is stronger babe" she laughs and I walk in even further into the room

Her "yeah right I am so hurt shame"

Me "I am a barrier of good news"

Her "I am Mrs you?"

Me "damn right you are my baby" she giggles and stands up putting Letlotlo down and comes to hug me

Her "I am so happy oh my God"

Me "I am the happy one, thanks baby"

Her "thank you my love for giving me all of this"

Me "and I will live my life giving you more, just love me the way you do" I say and brings my face down

to hers and our lips touch, we kiss and my daughter starts crying, I let go of Ntombi and go pick her up

Her "Letlotlo is so jealous my God"

Me "she wants all the attention to herself" she rolls her eyes and settles down on the couch since I am

on her bed

Her "so baby, are we buying a new house or we moving into that one?"

Me "what do you want us to do love?"

Her "your house is more of a bachelor house I was hoping we could get a family house"

Me "then consider it done, I will a few real estate agents to come show you what they have and you will

decide and when you feel better you'll go view them and choose and I my love will make the payment"

Her "thank you, you are just the best husband ever"

Me "simply because you are the best wife" she blushes and I look at Letlotlo who is suckling on her

thumb for dear life

Her "I am craving chicken soup from that restaurant you love so much"

Me "eish you gonna have to wait for Monday love"

Her "why is that?" she says folding her arms and I laugh

Me "they don't serve it on weekends"

Her "oh boy, I just want to eat something great"

Me "I am gonna have to talk to Razor, he needs to find a new chef"

Her "oh babe, the food here is good, just too healthy, limited salts and spices as well as sugar, food is ether boiled or grilled not fried, but I am just craving not so healthy food right now"

Me "I understand babe, I will go get something for you now" I stand up and hand her the baby and kiss her lips

Her "thank you babe"

Me "I will be back just now" I say and walk out

STEVE

My mother really hurt my girlfriend that she thought of ending our relationship, I found Olivia and i

don't want to live without her, I have already made plan to make her mine and mine forever so this

experience of nearly losing her scared me. I have never cried like that in front on a woman in my life. I

love her more than words can describe. I am so mad at my mother I am driving to her house like a

maniac, I just want to tell her a piece of my mind and go home to my woman, I just hope they will see

and feel how serious I am right now. I get to the house and park, I walk in and find her and daughter

dearest in the lounge having lunch and laughing

Me "do you see that nonsense that you pulled the other day, mama don't you ever and I mean ever do

that to my girlfriend again, do you understand me?"

Ma "who the hell do you think you are talking to Steven"

Me "I am talking to you mama, what you did coming to my house to insult Olivia better not happen

again, please hear me and understand me very well”

Ma “do you see why I say she is not good enough for you, you are even coming here to insult me for a low life that is after your money”

Me “why the hell would Olivia want my money, do you know my girlfriends father, he has so much money I think Olivia’s allowance is more than my salary so really why would she be with me if not because she loves me, she doesn’t need even R100 from me”

Noni “then why does she have to take your card”

Me “that is none of your business wena”

Ma “no she is right to ask” I laugh

Me “because she is my woman and that’s what wed, I spend her money she spends mine. We are in love and we don’t mind sharing everything we have with each other”

Ma “you are a fool, a woman with more money will never respect you” I laugh

Me “you just don’t have a solid reason why you hate her right mama”



Ma "she will never be welcomed in my house" I sigh

Me "well in that case I am also not welcomed"

Ma "don't be silly"

Me "no mama I love her and she loves me, if you reject her ma you reject me too"

Noni "you would turn your back on us because of her"

Me "I am saying don't make me choose between you and her because trust me you wont like my decision not even one bit"

Ma "you wouldn't dare Steven, I carried you 9 months, I raised you, fed you, paid for your schooling and made you the man that you are today now you want to turn your back on me because of some girl"

Me "you have always taught me to follow the word in the bible"

Ma "what does the bible have to do with this"

Me "it say a man will leave his mother and father for the woman he loves, or something along those

lines. And if you don't stop this nonsense I will leave your life and you will never see me again, I will

marry Olivia and you won't be a part of it, we will have kids and

you will never ever see them”

She was now crying

Noni “Steven don’t hurt mama like this”

Me “but it’s okay for the both of you to hurt Olivia right?”

Ma “because of a girl you do this to me”

Me “I hope you have heard me mama, I love her and not even my family can tear us apart” I say and

walk out leaving her crying. Sometimes for my mom to hear you have to be harsh and it will get through

to her because simple human conversations seem to be challenging for her.

SIZA

We got to mamas house and she was thrilled to see us. Oh how I have missed her, I remember our time

here with my daughter, it was almost warm and homely and my daughter used to love it here. it has

always felt like home, where I was loved unconditionally, I will always be grateful to MaNtuli for making

my daughters last day so magical. I had just finished cooking dinner and Mo was taking a bath and he asked to nap a little before dinner. He was happy to find that mama has electricity, I might be living in the city now but I can still leave without electricity provided that my husband is with me. I fish and remove the pots from the stove and I walk out to find mama under a tree, it's almost evening but trust me the heat is still too much, I changed into a floral maxi dress and slides to cool down. Mama is drinking some wine which I got for her, she has always been a lover of the grapes

Me "is it nice"

Her "too much baby, I even finished the bottle" I laugh

Me "I am happy you loved it"

Her "thank you for all my gifts baby, they are so expensive"

Me "you deserve them love"

Her "your husband, is a fine man" I blush

Me "I am blessed"

Her "he is the blessed one baby, you are God's gift to him" I smile at her

Me "he would agree with you on that one"

Her "I have always wished that something could happen with you and my boy Mandla"

Me "I am sorry mama"

Her "it's okay my baby. I am just happy that you have found your happiness, and the way he looks at you I can tell he loves you" I blush

Me "he loves me so much mama, and I thank God for him everyday"

Her "respect him and keep him happy always"

Me "I promise I will mama, so what has been happening in this village" she sighs

Her "hai Siza, the village is under fire, the King had disappeared for a while and just a few weeks ago his

wives found his body at the palace, he was badly injured, he was opened up like he underwent surgery

or something" I act shocked

Me "oh my God that is sad, I can't believe the King is no more, but who would do such a thing mama"

Her "hai my baby, no one knows, but there is a rumor that he was used by another King from some other

kingdom to strengthen them, they say he was used as a human sacrifice" I put my hand on my mouth

Me "my God"

Her "now his two sons are fighting for the throne"

Me "but it's known that the first son is the heir apparent to the throne"

Her "that's true, but the first son was born out of wedlock"

Me "bathong idrama engaka (so much drama)"

Her "you can say that again mntanami"

Me "hai mama"

Her "I have missed you so much Siza"

Me "I know mama and I missed you more. I promise to visit soon"

Her "hai I want to visit your house before the wedding"

Me "yes please I would love that very much, I'll be able to spoil you properly"

Her "haii but that city of yours"

Me "trust me you will enjoy, just like MaMthethwa"

Her "hai your mother looks like the president's wife sisi yoh" I laugh and we just continue having a chat

## THANDIWE

The drive to my mother's house is long or maybe because I am eager to get home and see my family, if I could I would just ask this guy to give me the car and I will drive myself, patience Thandiwe patience, you have been gone for a couple of months a few more minutes won't hurt man. I just wonder if they will be happy to see me, I just hope I find them at home I know my mom doesn't love staying in her house plus with Ntombi still in the hospital. We finally drive through into Alberton and I start giving him direction to my house. He stops at my gate and I press the intercom and a second later my mom speaks through the speaker

Her "hello"

Me "open up please"

Her "Thandiwe?"

Me "yes mama it's me please open" the gate slides open and the guy drives in, my mother is already by

the door looking confused, I get out of the car and the driver helps me retrieve my things from the boot

and then he drives out

Her "Thandiwe baby, what are you doing at home please don't tell me you left without their advice" I

laugh and shake my head

Me "no mama I got discharged, she was happy with my progress, but I need to go once a week"

Her "oh my baby come here" I go to her and we hug so tight

Me "where are my babies mama I miss them so much"

Her "they went over to their father, their grandmother asked for them yesterday"

Me "I need to go get them immediately mama"

Her "I understand my love, I am happy that you are home and you look really good Thandiwe" I smile

Me "thanks mama, where are my car keys?"

Her "I will give them to you, let's get these bags in the house"

we carry the bags and we walk inside, she  
gives me my keys and i practically run to the garage and I drive  
out, getting to Sizwe's house took a blink

of an eye. I get there and the house is still the same, the  
security opens for me and I drive in and walk

out, I press the door bell and the maid opened

Her "madam what a lovely surprise" I smile sweetly at her

Me "it's just Thandiwe please, is your boss here"

Her "yes Mr and Mrs Dlomo are both here, please come in" we  
walk in and find them in the lounge all

lovey dovey and I don't even feel a pinch of hurt nothing  
whatsoever, Sizwe is the first one to see me

Him "oh my God, MaTha what a lovely surprise"

Me "hey guys, I am sorry for showing up unannounced"

Him "no man it's all good, it's nice to see you, when did you get  
out"

Me "I got out a couple of hours ago and I got home my mom tell  
me that the kids are with you. I miss

them so much I couldn't wait I just had to see him" I say

Her "oh I totally understand, but they are not here but mama is



bringing them back in a few, she took  
them out for ice cream” Thato says and I sigh  
Him “you can wait for them if you don’t mind” Sizwe says and  
remember one of the 5 things I said I  
would do was to sit down with them and talk about co-  
parenting”  
Me “I don’t mind plus we need to talk”  
Him “yes I hoping so too, but you first” he says  
Her “please sit down Thandiwe and what can I get for you”  
Me “just a glass of sparkling water” she looks at the maid and  
she leaves after Thato gives her some  
orders  
Me “so I wanted us to discuss a plan on how we are going to co-  
parent” I see him smile

MBUSO

I have a missed call from a private number and it’s worrying me,  
Thandiwe has been on my mind heavy  
these past few days and what if she was the one calling and I

missed her call, what's more frustrating it's the fact that I can't call back. I wish I could call someone at the center to ask if she is still there or she has been discharged. I think I am going to go crazy if I don't hear from her soon. On the lighter note, my daughter loves staying with me, sometimes Refiloe calls me t night coz she cries for me, at first I thought she was just trying to make Lwethu an excuse to make me go to her house but when Sam called to tell me her sister is screaming her lungs out coz she wants Bambi, that's what she calls me and it melts me each time, I just put her to sleep so I can have a conversation with Nandi, my sister.

Her "she makes you so happy I mean look at you" I laugh

Me "she is my whole world sis"

Her "I totally understand bro, but how are things between you and Sam and Bandile"

Me "we are trying hey, we spend time together and they even have rooms here"

Her "your brother won't like that one bit"

Me "I know, he has already told me that to stay away from his kids" she laughs

Her "the nerve, I always knew Bhut'Mphathi is selfish but this one shame it takes the cake"

Me "yeah hey"

Her "I am going to miss you so much" I narrow my eyes

Me "what do you mean, where are you going?"

Her "I have an offer to be the pianist for the biggest music group in London"

Me "you moving to London permanently?" she nods

Her "I am considering it bhuti I just want to be far from your brother and mother"

Me "I don't blame you sis, I don't even know how to look at ma, she has proved time and time again

that she will always protect Mphathi no matter what"

Her "and then she will manipulate us to believe that it's to protect all of us"

Me "I am so done with her really"

Her "she has been crying asking me to beg you to please talk to her"

Me "I am not going to do that, mama doesn't deserve my ear, let her continue with her precious son"

Her "that's why I am going away"

Me "I am going to miss you too baby girl"

Her "I love you bhuti and I want you to be happy okay, I promise to always keep contact and visit when I can"

Me "I love you too and I will be sure to always fly there with Lwethu"

Her "you better"

Me "what do you want to drink"

Her "tequila please"

Me "Sdakwa lomtwana" she laughs and I go get

Her "ngifuze wena" I laugh shaking my head. I get to the kitchen and make Lwethu's bottle first then pour a drink for my sister and I.

No edits. I love you all guys.

SIZAS TRIBULATIONS

## CHAPTER 116

### THANDIWE

Sizwe, his wife and I agree on ways to co-parent, we agreed that he will continue paying for their schooling and now he will increase their allowance for the upkeep and also, they will have the kids every forth night so that they can also have their time as a couple, it was my suggestion, their father asked that he sometimes has access to them during the week and I agreed, we kept their access open in cases of emergency and I think that's how it should be. I also asked that I communicate with Thato instead of him just so I can respect their union and I think I will cause fewer problems for our arrangement. I have been out and I feel amazing really, even my children love having mommy around, two weeks at home I am just at peace, I have done everything on my list except for two, I still need to take my babies on a vacation and decide on school or business, I have been doing

some research and I think I will have a decision soon. Siza's wedding is in less than 2 weeks and I am grateful that she managed to squeeze me in and I will be one of her brides maids God I am so excited for that really. today I am meeting with her and the designer so he can take my measurements and do all the dresses the other bridesmaids have.

We are meeting in the North and when she sent me the name of her designer I almost fainted, I mean the boy makes clothes for the rich and famous and I almost forgot that my baby sister fits into that category now. I get to their studio and the receptionist shows me where the designer is

Him "oh you must be Thandiwe" he says, he is so gay and I love him

Me "yes I am Siza's sister"

Him "my God you girls have the most perfect skin ever" I laugh

Me "thank you, where is she?" he rolls his eyes

Him "oh that one my love is always late get used to it" he says and the receptionist comes back with

three glasses and a bottle of champagne

Me "oh my I love your work"

Him "oh thank you honey but your sisters attires has to be my best wedding collection by far, and she

helped, don't tell her but the girl has style" we both laugh

Me "your secret is safe with me" he winks at me and sips his champagne

Him "these are your dresses please just choose a style for everyone of them" oh my God these dresses

are amazing Gosh the texture of the material

Me "oh my God I can already feel this material on my skin"

Him "I know right, makes justice to my work"

Me "Gosh I can just see how beautiful everyone will be that day"

Him "I just need to find me a man as rich as her fiancé to give me a unlimited budget for my wedding" I

was about to say something when the door opens and my sister walks

Her "I am really sorry I am late, Mo was just acting spoilt today" I stand up

Me "hey sis it's okay, haven't been here long" we hug and she

kisses my cheek and goes to greet the  
designer who is so excited to see Sizakele

Her "mi amor"

Him "my beauty, I have already made sure that the bubbles are  
ready" they laugh

Her "oh yes honey, I need to quench the thirst, but we drinking  
one bottle though, I am taking my sister  
out for some late lunch and maybe a movie and shoe shopping"  
she looks at me and I just smile

Me "I would love that sis"

Him "in that case Thandiwe my love let get some  
measurements of you darling" I put my glass down

and go to him, he does his business and once done we finish our  
champagne will we listen to him taking

all sorts of things making my sister and I laugh like tomorrow  
doesn't exist, after we leave for the mall

RAZOR

I tried by all means to get Soft to stay with me at the hotel but



she was having none of it, she wouldn't even allow me go with her to the designer coz she wants some sister time with Thandiwe afterwards and that's the reason I let her go, I love how happier she has become since they started working on their relationship, this is what she has wanted all her adult life. I couldn't be at the hotel room one minute, I just need us to go back to our house at least that is in 3days coz everything is fine we were just wanting on the smell of paint to fade away in our bedroom, and I must admit the changes she made are amazing really. Since it's Saturday and my wife ditched me, my brother also told me that they went house shopping with his wife and daughter, let me not even talk about Olivia, since she started with that boy I hardly ever see my child. I decided to come down stairs to the bar and get some drink and maybe some sea food platter for one, while waiting for time to pass for the match to start. A voice I know very well disturbs me

Her "hey daddy" she is behind me and I just freeze and turn

around to face her after what seems like

forever

Me "Mercy" I say coolly, looking at her reminds me of her betrayal but even so, my heart longs to bring

my baby in my arms and tell her all it's okay now but the rational me votes against it

Her "how are you?" she says

Me "I am okay, how are you"

Her "I have been better daddy" she says and there is an awkward silence

Her "can I join you please" I sigh

Me "sure have a sit" she places her bag on the other chair and I get a chance to look at her, she has

changed so much, lost so much weight, her complexion has darkened and her hair is unkempt,

something is seriously wrong with her

Her "daddy first of all I would really love to apologize for everything that I have done to you, the hurt

and pain I have caused everyone when I connived with Fiona, daddy I am really sorry for what I did to Olivia, I

have caused everyone so much pain, I am truly sorry daddy please" she says crying and I just look at her

with my heart breaking

Me "why though Mercy, why did you do me like that?"

Her "daddy when Fiona came back she made me think that you love Olivia more than me and she also

made me believe that you will always choose your new wife over me and I bought her story because of

how you didn't stand up for me when Vusi left me for your wife's friend and you did nothing"

Me "I couldn't force that boy to love you Mercy, you could have been miserable"

Her "I know that now daddy, please forgive me please. I am tired of leaving my life away from my

family" she says and that melts my heart

Me "I miss you so much baby girl"

Her "I miss you more papa I swear please forgive me, I will never do anything like that again"

Me "where have you been"

Her "I have been living with a friend of mine, coz Fiona wouldn't tell me where the money from the

previous house is”

Me “so she is with a couple of million rands from the sale of that house” she nods

Her “I just wanted to believe that we could be a family again that maybe she was genuine when she said

she wanted to be our mother again” I sigh

Me “it’s okay baby, I will discuss with Sizakele a way forward then inform your sister then I will get back

to you okay” I say and she smiles

Her “thank you papa and I promise to be the best daughter”

Me “I am glad to hear that, have lunch with me” she nods and it feels good talking with my child

SIZA

My sister and I finish at the designer and I am glad to have involved her in my wedding, I did say we will

be having late lunch, I just can’t wait for my wedding and maybe everything will calm down, I am just

glad that the renovations are done and we can finally move

back to our house in 3 days, trust me I love staying at the hotel, no cooking, no chores whatsoever but I miss my personal space. We get to the restaurant and the car guard who always looks out for my ride appears and I just smile sweetly at him

Me "baba how are you"

Him "I am very well thank you my baby, it has been a while since I saw you"

Me "I know baba and I am sorry for that, how is the family"

Him "they are all good and my daughter said thanks for the uniform and my wife was happy with the groceries she says God will continue to bless you" I smile

Me "amen and amen baba" I check in my wallet and realize I don't have cash

Me "sis can you give me R100 if you have it" she looks in the purse and hands it to me

Her "here you go babes"

Me "baba please take this and buy some lunch, I will see you when I get come back"

Him "thank you my baby, I will run quickly to that place where they sell proper African food" he says

and runs off, maTha and I just laugh and walk to the restaurant, they show us to our table and we order

Her "thank you for doing this"

Me "I love spending time with you sis"

Her "me too Siza, you are just the best really and I learn so much from you every day, look at what you

did for that man and his family" she says and I smile but her expression quickly changes

Me "what's sis" I asked alarmed seeing her head buried in her hands

Her "I gave away the R100 Mbuso wrote his phone number on" she says and I narrow my eyes

Me "who is Mbuso and why is he writing his number on money" she giggles

Her "Mbuso is a friend of mine I met him at the center, he got out before me and I didn't have a phone

and paper so he just wrote in on money"

Me "how romantic ncooo" she rolls her eyes

Her "didn't you hear me say friend of mine Siza" I laugh

Me "If you say that mntaka ma (my mother's child)"

Her "how the hell am I going to get his number now"

Me "girl haven't you heard of social media"

Her "I don't think Mbuso is on these things"

Me "worry not you have me, I will help you track down your friend" I say the last part sarcastically

Her "mxm, anyway have they finished your kitchen"

Me "it looks amazing sis yoh, I know have my own closet and he has his of course his is smaller, and in

our bathroom we have separate sinks and mirrors so we don't get in each other's way when he shaves

and I do my hair and stuff"

Her "that was smart but I am dying to see the kitchen"

Me "we can go see it tomorrow afternoon if you like"

Her "okay I am game, and I wanted you to help me with something sis"

Me "talk me to me dear sister" I say and she sips her champagne

Her "the business I want to venture in and the course I want to do" I nod

Me "you wondering which one to pick"

Her "yes sis I am so confused, I just want to get my life in order"

Me "do both then baby, you are so determined I believe in you, you can make it work"

Her "you think so" I nod and hold her hands and give them a reassuring squeeze

OLIVIA

So Steven invited me to his grandmothers birthday braai, I agreed to go because it is not at his mother's

house so she won't really make me feel small, the other reason being it's his paternal grandmother and

he did mention that his grandma can't stand her mother and yes that just had to make me happy, I

decided to buy his grandmother a gift, it was just a bag, sunglasses and a scarf, I didn't know what else

to get an elderly fabulous woman, trust me from the photos bae showed me she knows her staff, we get

to her house and it's beautiful, she lives in Sebokeng in the Vaal, getting there my palms starts to sweat,

and I wonder what if she will be worse than my boyfriend's



mother.

Him "hey baby what's wrong" he says sounding worried

Me "what if she hates me more than your mother" he laughs

Him "don't worry baby, she is going to love you" he says and gives me a reassuring smile, then gets out

of the car to get my door, I walk out and retrieve the gifts and flowers from the back and we walk in,

people are already there drinking in groups and having conversations, laughter and happiness seems to

be the order of the day. Steve introduces us to a few people before we finally get in the house. The first

people we meet in the kitchen is his mother and sister and I just feel like disappearing

Me "dumelang"

S.mom "Steven what don't you understand from the word Family gathering"

Noni "you can ask him again mama" my boo was about to stand up for me when his grandma I

recognize from the photos appears from the lounge

Granma "Noni I told you to stop being an evil twin with your mother, no man will ever look at a little girl

with such a bitter heart and wena talking about family, are you family? Remember my son divorced you

years ago and you don't want to accept that but you still feel the need to come to my house to play

daughter in-law, my grandkids are grown they do not need you to accompany them anymore" she says

to them and they remain silent, oh they are afraid of others I see, she turns to Steve and I

Granma "oh my baby, come give me a kiss" Steve goes to hug his grandmother and she kisses him on

the lip

Him "in front of my girlfriend really" she looks at me and smiles

Granma "you must be Olivia, oh she is more pretty than the photos you send me ka whatsApp, it's nice

to finally meet you my baby" she says pulling me to her, how old is this lady again to be using the app

Me "it's nice to meet you too granny" she laughs

Granma "hee Olivia, letjetje lao tshwana lenna (a young virgin) granny I refuse, please call me Evie" she

says and we laugh

Me "got it, and happy birthday Evie, I got this for you I hope you

like them” she smiles and opens them

and screams a little

Grandma “I love them sweetheart, thank you so much, and welcome feel at home okay don’t let anyone

walk all over you” she kisses my lips

Him “I told you she will love you” he whispers in my ear and I just blush

Grandma “haii Noni take my beautiful flowers and go put them in the water, the vase is under the sink,

and go sit with your cousins I don’t want you near your mother today, I want you to be a child”

Noni “okay Evie” she says so calm

Grandma “Mpolokeng” she shouts and a lady our age appears “please give Noni that savanna you love,

I want my grandbaby to be a child today” she says and the look on Stevens mothers face is priceless, I

am loving Evie so much it hurts. My baby leads me out to the gazebo and we sit with his cousins and

their wives and husbands and some girlfriends like me, the group is amazing and the vibe is just on a 100

I am really enjoying every minute here and I just want to ravish

that braai

Him "I love you so much baby, and thanks for coming with me and meeting my family" he says and I smile and peck his lips quickly

No Edits

Another chapter will follow later that's if the electricity doesn't play a number on us like it did the whole of yesterday

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 117

SIZA

I have a meeting with my sister and I just finished preparing, I made sure to have breakfast with thy

husband so he doesn't sulk when I have to leave, remember yesterday I promised to take her to my

house so that she can see the kitchen and my bedroom, I walk to the lounge whilst lotioning my hands, I

bring my eyes up and find Olivia having a drink with her father.

Me "oh hey you what a lovely surprise" she stands up and we share a hug

Her "hey babe, you look nice going somewhere?"

Me "I am taking my sister to see the house"

Her "can I tag along"

Me "I would love that" Molemo clears his throat

Him "can I please talk to you too before you take off"

Me "okay babe" I say settling down, his tone is worrying me

Her "what's up daddy" he sighs deeply

Him "so yesterday i was dining downstairs and Mercy came to see me"

Her "oh boy"

Him "Olivia please just listen"

Her "okay I am sorry, what did she want?"

Him "well she acknowledged her mistakes and how she betrayed us as a family, she asked for

forgiveness" Olivia laughs

Her "good for her"

Me "that's good right?" I ask not knowing what to say

Him "I believe so my love. I loved having to sit down with my daughter, I have missed her so much I have

never been so worried about her like I was when we were not in contact"

Her "so you forgave her" she asks

Him "of course I did baby, she is also my little girl, I just wanted to let you guys know"

Me "okay thanks for informing us"

Him "there is something I need to ask from you Soft"

Me "I am all ears"

Him "Fiona won't give her back the money from the sale of her house, she has been living with a friend

of hers and she says its not in good conditions, since I am not ready to buy her another house or

apartment I was hoping she could move in with us for a while till I can see that she is ready to get her life

together" I have a huge lump on my throat making it hard for me to respond

Her "you do know that she doesn't like Siza right?"

Him "she promised she has changed baby please"

Her "if you say so daddy" I just remain silent not knowing what to say

Him "Soft baby" he say

Me "mmhhh?"

Him "what do you say?" if I refuse I will come across as hating his child, if I agree I will have to share my

space with her and Olivia is right Mercy doesn't like me much and I doubt it will ever change

Me "it's your house baby, and she is your child so I guess it's fine"

Him "Soft it's our house love"

Me "yeah sure" I am really not looking forward to staying with her but what can I say

Her "oh daddy, I hope she has indeed changed"

Me "I will see you later, Liv let's go" I say taking my bag and car keys and leave him

MBUSO

Being back at work and doing what I love is everything, my life is on the right path, I am reclaiming it a

day at a time, and the is the bonus my baby Lwethu she makes this life thing easier for me, I think

finding out that she is mine just made me want to fight to be much better to ensure that I become the

best father to her, I lost a year of her life and I am going to live my life making up for lost time. My office

is still the same and my assistant is still as nosey as ever, the first I came back to work she was pestering

me wanting to know exactly where I have been and why I disappeared without telling her, that's Lilly for

you, a call comes in from her

Me "yes" I say coolly

Her "boss I was just reminding you that you have you have an appointment at 12 at club nation" oh yes

one of my private clients, I am meeting him to tell him that I am back and I will go back to handling his

business books taking over someone I recommended he use



while I was away, he heard I was back and

he made contact hence I will be meeting with him

Me "I still remember thank you"

Her "and someone is here to see you"

Me "who is he"

Her "your brother" I frown wondering what the hell Mbuso would want from me

Me "okay send him in" I say and place the phone down, I continue doing my work and the door burst

open, no knock nothing, this man is arrogant my God

Him "what did I say to you"

Me "all this money and you couldn't buy manners" he rolls his eyes

Him "I am not hear to play Mbuso"

Me "I don't believe you could come all the way to my work place to play with me, we are not friends like

that Mphathi, so to what do I owe the visit"

Him "you see Samkelo and Bandile are my children and I want you to stop playing dad to them"

Me "you let me do it for over 10 years so why do you want me

to stop now”

Him “because now they know who their real father is” I laugh

Me “you are so unbelievable”

Him “just stay the hell away from my kids, I will provide everything they need”

Me “do you think that’s what being a parent is all about, flashing money at them”

Him “it does the trick”

Me “you naïve, self-centered narcissist, it takes being there and asking how school went, helping with

home work, attending school functions, going to restaurants when all you want to do is sleep, saying no

to things you know they really want because you want to teach them that you won’t always get what

you want, not money Mphathi. If you really care about them you will either walk away or be a real

parent, don’t use them to fight a battle with me I know nothing about, coz honestly you are fighting

alone” he clenched his jaws

Him “you see what you just said to that to your daughter and I will raise mine the way I want”

Me "I don't have time for this, I believe Bandile and Sam will decide if they want me in their life or not"

Him "don't test my patience Mphathi, or you will find yourself back at that looney bin you just came

back from" I just laugh and pack my laptop and a few files and stand up taking my phone and car keys

Me "see yourself out Mphathi, I have somewhere to be"

Him "I hope you heard me" I shake my head

Me "bye dear brother, and greet your fiancé for me" I say walking out and I hear my door slamming and

him walking behind me mumbling under his breath

## THANDIWE

We went to view the house and God it is to die for, I saw why she was speaking more about her

bedroom it is breath taking, but guys the kitchen man Jesus I think I will always be sleeping over at her

place. Olivia, my sisters best friend said she is craving ribs and chips from club Nation and even though I

didn't want to go I agreed I mean I have nothing against them now and yes they are to die for so I agreed, we had just finished the last of it on our plates

Liv "damn I needed that"

Me "thanks for suggesting it, I didn't realize how much I missed eating this" we laugh

Siza "I am watching my weight, I don't want to gain at the last minute, and neither should you"

Liv "don't worry baby we will be in shape looking perfect next to you"

Siza "you better" she says sipping her sparkling water

Me "what time is it, I need to pick up Kayise from day care, my boy has soccer practice so the school shuttle will drop him later"

Siza "you still have 2 hours sis"

Me "okay at least"

Liv "guys I was thinking we should organize a mini baby arrival shower for Ntombi if there is something like that"

Siza "exactly coz we never had a baby shower for her"

Me "can it be after you return from your honeymoon"

Liv "yeah true we already have too much on our hands" we all agree and I am distracted by a face I

know very well walking to the office with Sizwe, they are laughing, I narrow my eyes

Siza "maTha, what's up, you look like you have seen a ghost"

Me "I think I just saw Mbuso"

Siza "the writes phone number on a R100 note guy?" I laugh

Me "yeah him"

Siza "then why are you still sitting there go and say hi hao" she says nudging me with her elbow

signaling me to get up, and I quickly rose on my feet and head to Sizwe's office and knock, he shouts

come in and I do so, Mbuso has his back to me, Sizwe smiles as he sees me

Sizwe "ao maTha what a lovely surprise" he says and I smile at him

Me "oh yeah, sorry for disturbing I just" he turned to look at me and smiled standing up

Mbuso "Thandiwe" he says

Me "I thought that was you" I say walking near him and we hug

Mbuso "my God you look so good, when did you get out"

Me "2 weeks ago" he frowns

Mbuso "and you didn't call me why" he says sounding sad

Me "I kind of lost the R100" I say and he laughs

Mbuso "I am happy to see you so will let it slide" he says

Sizwe "okay okay, how do you two know each other"

Mbuso "we were at the same retreat center, how do you two know each other" he nods

Sizwe "oh Thandiwe is the mother of my kids" Mbuso looks at me

Mbuso "he is your ex husband?"

Me "yep he is"

Mbuso "wow small world. We have a meeting now, please don't leave, I will finish then we can have

drinks please" I blush

Me "I would love that, you'll find me in the there" I say smiling and he returns it

Mbuso "I will be there just now" I let go of his hand and say bye to Sizwe with a confused face

## MERCY

I moved in with my friend Vicky a few weeks ago and we sold the house, we have been financing our

lifestyle with the money of the sale, my father called a few hours ago and asked to see me, so I needed

him to see where I stay now so he can see that he needs to accept me back, so I send him my location

and he said he will be here soon, I avoided taking a line of cocaine, and God don't I need my fix yoh. The

house was a bit tidy; everything was where it's supposed to be. A second later there is knock on the door

and I go open, he looks like he owns the world but my dad had always looked like that, the high and mighty Razor Motaung.

Me "hey daddy thanks for coming"

Him "sure baby"

Me "please come in" he gets in ad we go sit down

Him "where is your friend?"

Me "she went to work"

Him "oh okay"

Me "sorry for making you drive down here, just that I don't have gas"

Him "its okay baby I don't mind"

Me "I would offer you something but we don't have anything here"

Him "I am okay nana, I had something before coming here"

Me "okay daddy"

Him "so I spoke to Siza and Olivia" I shift a little on my chair

Me "and?" I say with the lowest voice

Him "Soft agreed that you can move in with us till I find something for you"

Me "thank you so much papa, and Olivia?" he sighs

Him "she is not ready for you Mercy"

Me "I understand I will give her some space"

Him "thanks, and Mercy remember that Siza is my wife and that



is her space, please respect her and our union, respect her space and her things, try to make it work please”

Me “I totally understand and I will do just that I promise”

Him “good, so we moving back home on Tuesday. You can come in on Wednesday”

Me “okay that’s okay I will be there, and thanks again daddy”

Him “I can’t stay long but take this and buy some gad and groceries for the time being” he says handing

me a stack of R200 notes. We hug and he leaves. I wait till his car drives off and I go back inside and just

scream happy. Yes I am finally back in. I throw myself on the couch and start wiggling my legs; I stand up

and come back with my coke and a card making a few lines. Let the celebrations begin

No edits

Can everyone who reads the story please react, I just want to see something, please guys just react please

# SIZAS TRIBULATIONS

## CHAPTER 118

### THANDIWE

Mbuso and I have been in constant communication, we talk every morning and before we sleep, he is a great guy really, we both are trying to get our lives in order and I think that's one of the reasons why we get along so well, he went through something similar to mine which makes me understand him better and vice versa, but honestly my family makes it a bit easier on the other side he is doing this alone coz he is not in good terms with his mother and brother, the only person close to him is his little sister and she is not around, wondering how I know all of this, well the day we met at the club we stayed and spoke for hours my sister even decided to get Kayise for me and go drop her off at home with mama. I got home after midnight I swear we both didn't realize the time; we just went on and on. It has been a

few days since we met again and he asked that I have late lunch with him at his house and I agreed, he

knocks off at 4pm and he suggested I get to him at around 5. I find mama in the living room with Kayise

and boy boy watching cartoons

Me "mama are you sure you are doing to be okay?"

Her "just go baby we will be okay I promise"

Me "thank you mama"

Her "it's a pleasure but don't come back pregnant or after midnight" I laugh

Me "I told you we just friends mama, we went through the same thing and its easier for us to talk to

each other than other people"

Her "I understand maTha" I look at my watch and 4:45 pm I take the keys and my bag and walk out after

kissing my children. I punch in his address on the GPS and start the car, it takes me 38minutes to get

there because of the traffic. I press the intercom at the gate and a second later baritone voice comes

through the speaker

Him "hello" he says and I feel butterflies going crazy in my stomach

Me "hey it's Thandiwe"

Him "okay come on in" he says and the gate swings open and I drive in, his house is very nice and family

like. But he did say he bought it for his daughter. I park and he is already at the door waiting for me, I

walk to him and he looks so lazy in his cargo pants and a white polo golf t-shirt, he is barefoot God and I

must say his height today is on steroids, he opens his arms for me and I go gladly and we fold each other

in a warm embrace, God he smells heavenly, I am lost in his arms, the feel of him chocolate skin under

my hands God help me this man is sin considering how long it has been since I got some.

Me "nice house" I say breaking the hug before I ask him to take me to bed

Him "thank you Thandiwe, shall we" he says offering his hand and I take it, he leads me in and the décor

matches the house. There is a big portrait of a little girl and him  
in his lounge

Me "Lwethu?" I ask not taking my eyes off it

Him "the one and only"

Me "she is so pretty" he smiles

Him "thanks, and that is Sam and Bandile over there" he points  
to another frame by the wall

Me "your kids are beautiful" I say and he kisses my knuckles and  
we head to the kitchen and he lets go

of my hand

Him "I hope you are a lover of dry white" he says

Me "my absolute favorite" I respond and he punches the air in  
victory

Him "I knocked off early to cook for you, hope you will enjoy it" I  
blush, no man has ever cooked for me

Me "ncoo that's so sweet, I am sure I will love it" I say and he  
hands me my glass

SIZA

Today Mercy is moving in and I really don't know how to feel about all of this, first of all she hates my guts and I doubt it will ever change so the fact that we are going to be in each others' faces takes all the oxygen from my lungs, I know this house is huge but God with that girl here it will feel like a 4 roomed house. I was packing our things back in my closet, I had already arranged his and it looks good. I decided to not go to campus to get it done. I smell his cologne and I know he is home. A second later I feel him wrap his arms around, honestly things haven't been rosey between since he said his daughter is moving in her.

Him "hey my wifey"

Me "hey Mo"

Him "Soft my love what's wrong"

Me "nothing Molemo"

Him "you are calling me by my name so I know it's something baby please talk to me" I sigh

Me "this thing of your daughter moving in with us" he lets go of me

Him "I know you don't get along but I spoke to her and she promised to respect you"

Me "it's okay Molemo"

Him "Soft baby please, she is about to arrive can we please make her feel welcomed"

Me "please don't expect me to pretend to be happy to see her" I sighs deeply

Him "I know you are not but can you be civil though"

Me "I don't think that will be a problem, how long is she planning on staying?"

Him "I will get her something soon as I can trust her I promise"

Me "I see, and oh I will be moving back home on Sunday"

Him "please don't do this to us baby, we are getting married next week we should be happy, don't leave because of Mercy"

Me "I need to leave because we are getting married my mother wants me home the entire week" I say a

partial lie, yes I have to be home but my mom did say I could come on Wednesday next week, I just

don't want to see Mercy in the house on my wedding week so she can ruin my mood

Him "understandably, come give me some sugar" he says smiling and tries to pull me to him but we hear someone shouting his name

Me "your guest is here" I say and sway my hips away from him and I hear him mumble something, I

walk downstairs and he follows, we find Mercy and Vicky and I just laugh

Him "welcome home baby girl"

Mercy "hey daddy and thanks again for doing this I really appreciate it, hey Siza"

Me "hi Mercy" I say and just sit down

Mercy "this is my friend Vicky, babe this is my father and his wife Siza"

Vicky "it is a pleasure to meet you Mr. Motaung, and we meet again Siza"

Him "oh you know my beautiful wife"

Vicky "yes sir, we used to work together at club nations" he thanks her

Vicky "you have a beautiful home" he nods and I just roll my eyes, coz I can see right through her

Me "excuse me I was busy upstairs" I say and walk back to our



bedroom and continue what I was doing

Him "baby did you have to be that cold"

Me "please don't expect me to forget all your daughter did to me and to you, be happy and jubilant that she is back Mo just leave me out of it"

Him "Sizakele"

Me "I am busy here I am not in the mood to talk about Mercy, and I hope her friend is not moving in too"

Him "of course not baby this is just a temporary arrangement" he says and I leave him in my closet

## RAZOR

It has only been one day since Mercy moved in but I tell you the tension in my house is just so thick you

can literally cut it with a knife, my wife is not happy with the whole thing and now I feel so bad for

inviting Mercy into her home, I mean we just came back from a very difficult time, she hasn't completely

healed from her daughter's death and now I brought someone

who had a hand in her passing, I am such  
a fool, but I am her father what was I suppose to do really?  
throw my child out too, I just wish we could  
find an amicable solution to this whole thing, I know getting her  
a house is what could make this right,  
but I need to find out if she has grown enough to handle life on  
her own, I need to convince her to get  
her life together and I believe I can do that when she is close to  
me. I need an outside opinion hence I  
am in my brothers house to see him

Him "sorry man, she is finally asleep"

Me "fatherhood suits you brother"

Him "thanks man that little girl just has me wrapped around my  
finger"

Me "I can see that hey"

Him "this house is just so warm with her and Ntombi here  
finally feels like home" I sigh

Me "I wish that was the case in my own home Gadafi" he frowns

Him "what's wrong you fought with Sizakele?"

Me "not directly I mean Mercy finally apologized and she told me she has nowhere to live and stuff I felt

real bad and I told her I will speak to Soft, which I did but it's only now I realized she said yes so she

doesn't seem like she hates my daughter, the tension in my house G"

Him "you can be stupid sometimes man"

Me "come on G"

Him "no man Razor, it's good that Mercy finally came back to her senses but allowing her in your wife's

space is totally dumb, you know she doesn't like yours"

Me "I just wanted to keep an eye on her, persuade her to go back to school or start that business"

Him "that should have been the terms of her return back to your life" I sigh

Me "I know that now"

Him "one week to your wedding and you do this"

Me "don't remind me of that, we should be happy that finally our big day is approaching but nope we

are not on good terms and it's only been 1 day man but I miss my wife so bad"

Him "yeah you look like shit"

Me "don't rub it in"

Him "fix this mess Molemo, that woman is your life, I am not asking you to pick between her and your child but all I am saying is be careful"

Me "just tell me how to fix this" he laughs

Him "no one knows your wife better than you so figure it out"

Me "you are useless man, just go pour me a drink"

Him "cognac or Armagnac"

Me "give me scotch" he goes to his to pour and comes back with two glasses

Him "I wanted to discuss something happening in Italy but I will hold it off" he says handing me my glass

Me "just share with me it will take my mind off thing"

Him "okay so trouble is coming this side, those mufuckers want to take over my firearms operations in GermaY"

Me "where did you hear this"

Him "Zaine called me Razor and he says the Italians are working with some West Africans"

Me "fuck, you need to find out" I say and he gulps his drink

down

SIZWE

I am so busy with these papers, but my head keeps moving to Thandiwe and Mbuso, the way they were

the last time in my office worries me. I wonder if they are dating or something coz wow it is too early for

Thandiwe to think of getting into a relationship, she needs to focus on our kids man, eish why do I even

care what Thandiwe gets up to with her life I mean I am happily married and her private life shouldn't be

my concern, but I can't help but feel like she should take it easy, I don't think she is ready after all I am

the only man she knows and these mean will play with her then my children will suffer the

consequences of that, I need to talk to Mbuso to leave her alone. Damn Sizwe get a grip on yourself

Thandiwe is a grown woman, you have Thato remember that. the door to my study at home opens and

my wife gets in looking nice

Me "finally you are home" she smiles

Her "sorry my baby was just helping the manager close up"

Me "nope not working for me, I mean we pay her enough to be able to close down alone, you are my

wifey and I want to see you first thing when I get home" she blushes

Her "oh really now" she comes and sits on my lap

Me "yes Mrs. Dlomo" we kiss

Her "oh baby before I forget, Remember Thandiwe wants to go on that vacation with the kids"

Me "yes and I said I will fund it"

Her "oh yes she called to ask about it babe, so when will you deposit her the money"

Me "their Visa's still need approval baby"

Her "she says the embassy called and they will be ready soon"

Me "okay I will talk to her when I go get the kids on Friday"

Her "it's her turn to drop them off, Sizwe do you ever look at the rooster"

Me "just a little confused"

Her "your head has been all over the place for a few days now" I sigh

Me "business is just stressful babe"

Her "in that case we need to relax, how about we drive down to Mafikeng this weekend I know you love

being around my family" she is right her uncles and cousins are a ball of fire, fun to be around

Me "I would love that but the kids"

Her "I will call Thandiwe and find out if she would mind"

Me "if she agrees I am all in I promise" she gets of me all excited and goes out, I take out my phone and

go on my whatsApp I check peoples statuses and I see that Thandiwe posted a few pictures, first one is

of her in a beautiful body hugging dress captioned sexy momma of two, she couldn't have chosen a

better one damn, the second is of a glass of wine and a plate of two, no caption the last is a video of her

and Mbuso laughing, captioned he cooked for me and now he is an entertainer, a man with many

talents #friendshipSoBeautiful, I feel my heart pounding from my chest, I am stung by jealousy and I

don't know why I am feeling this way. I power off my screen and bang my phone a little on the desk and walk out to find my wife, and make love to her, I can't be jealous over my ex wife being friends with Mbuso, but is that all there is to it I mean I did see how she blushed when she was talking to him and that Video. No Sizwe stop thinking about this, Thato is here, she is amazing and you love her. I say to myself and my subconscious just laughs, and I slap him down so quickly I don't need him confusing me

No Edits.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 119

SIZA

It is Friday and I am so tired, this day was the worst my God, tests, assignments and presentations have me by the balls and I still have to ensure that my wedding



preparations are going on smoothly, yes  
things in my house are still very tense and I try by all means to  
avoid Mercy but I swear she is going out  
of her way to make me feel her presence in my house when her  
father is not around and oh you should  
the angel she is when Mo is at home, I don't even want to waste  
my breathe telling him what Mercy is  
doing to me. I get home from school and sit in my car for about  
30minutes and in total silence, i didn't  
think a couple of days to our wedding me and my husband will  
be so closed off. I am startled by the  
knock on my widow and it's Molemo I sigh and press my  
window down

Him "baby, why are you sitting in your car"

Me "was just thinking"

Him "oh Soft" he was about to go sentimental on me so I just  
open my door and retrieve my books and

laptop from the back and walk to the house, he is following me  
in, I throw my things on the couch and

he does the same, I get into the kitchen and freeze at the

entrance, the mess in there, the door of my  
walk in freezer is open and it's evident from the coolness in the  
kitchen, the dishes are piled up in the  
sink and packets of chips and containers of most of the  
leftovers are just laying around all over the  
counter tops, I look at Mo and he deeply sighs

Him "baby I am so sorry I will talk to her" I chuckle and roll my  
sleeve up and start tidying up, he was  
about to come to me when his daughter walked in, as  
hyperactive as ever, I frown

Her "hey parents" she says and giggles

Him "Mercy what the hell is this mess"

Her "I am sorry daddy"

Him "your sorry won't cut it Mercy, you can't be at home all day  
and make this mess then expect Siza to  
come tired from school to tidy up and cook, no I won't have  
that"

Her "I am sorry papa I really am just that I thought the maids  
will do it"

Him "have you seen the maids here since you moved in" she  
looks down, I put the dishes in the dish

washer and all the snacks back in the pantry and the empty containers in the trash can, he is still talking

to her about respecting me and our space but I am not interested, I am not staying one more minute

with this girl here. I walk upstairs and go to my closet and come back with a few dresses and scarf's and

leggings then go to his closet and come with a few of his t-shirts, I put them in the weekender bag and I

find my toiletries, he walks in and starts hurrying to me when he sees me packing

Him "soft baby what are you doing my love"

Me "I am leaving Molemo"

Him "I can see that baby but why, you are only leaving on Sunday"

Me "change of plans I am leaving now" I say and he quickly pulls him me to him

Him "Siza please"

Me "stop it Molemo please, my wedding is in a week, and if I want to be happy and to enjoy my day I

have to leave now before your daughter ruins my whole mood please"

Him "I miss you"

Me "and you think I don't miss you too, I need to leave I can't exist in the same house as Mercy"

Him "please tell me you love me at least" I sigh

Me "of course I love you Mo, I love you with every fiber of my being"

Him "I love you more than life itself and I am sorry so bringing Mercy here baby I really am" he says and

I wiggle myself out of her hold and go find shoes, he sits on the bed and buries his head in his hands

## MANDLA

Saturdays means I can rest but my phone is always available in case I am needed at the hospital, being

chief means I can't be in the in the operating room frequently, coz I am busy with paper work, ensuring

that the hospital runs smoothly and I must admit I miss saving lives, I think I will start performing surgery

first thing in the morning so that when my day as chief starts I would have been a surgeon first. I have a

meeting with the gents today a couple of beers and then they will leave, these one's are whipped, they

leave the club early, Steven loves Olivia so much that she practically drives him to the club then swipes

alcohol for him then leaves, if he wants to leave he calls her and she picks him up again, on the other

hand Vusi chats to Uriel the entire time we are together, I don't blame them having a good woman will

make you like that. We are meeting now around 3 so that they can leave early before 8 or 9pm. I take

my keys and phone as I open the door I am shocked but a part of me happy to see her, she looks good really good.

Her "hey Power"

Me "Palesa" I say with a grin on my face

Her "looks like I came at the wrong time"

Me "no I was just going to meet with the boys nothing important"

Her "oh okay"

Me "please come in" she smiles and walks in man she is as beautiful as the last time I could remember

Her "this place hasn't changed much"

Me "yeah you know me" she laughs

Her "yes I do"

Me "can I get you something to drink?"

Her "no I am fine thanks, I just came to see you" she says  
looking down

Me "Pali I miss you" he says

Her "you always say that then kick me out" she says and I feel  
so guilty

Me "I was going through the most baby and I didn't know how  
to tell you"

Her "Uriel told me what happened" I nod

Me "I am very sorry baby please, I came to talk to your mom"

Her "yeah she told me the very same day you came"

Me "I waited and waited for you call of for you to show up, I  
wanted to make a move but I wanted you  
to decide that you want me back"

Her "so you haven't moved on?"

Me "of course not my love"

Her "how sure am I that you will not throw me out anymore"

Me "if we get back together, I want to do things right Pali, I don't want us to move in, I want us to date

and to get to know each other again gradually" she smiles

Her "I was hoping for the same thing"

Me "what are you saying to me baby"

Her "I am saying please call the guys and tell them you can't make it coz you will be chilling with your

girlfriend" she says and I laugh and go sit next to her

Me "my girlfriend huh, I like the sound of that" I say then cups my face and kisses me

Her "let me go slip into something more comfortable"

Me "is it lacy and red" I tease

Her "Power down boy, I am just going to wear your shorts and vest" she says and I laugh

Me "let me just make the call then I will come change too"

Her "okay love" she blows me a kiss, I am really happy she is back I won't lie. This on and off must end.

NARRATED

It is the last Saturday before the wedding, so Siza and the brides maids had to go see the designer to so they can make sure that their dresses still fits and make alterations where needed, the designers was bubbly as always and happy to see the bride, he made sure there was enough champagne and finger foods for Siza and her entourage, the groom and his men came earlier on and that made the designer to talk none stop about how sexy those men are, he laughed as he told them how Molemo's older brother was uncomfortable when he took his measurements coz he is gay, couldn't believe how backwards some people are, this is the first time they met and he will be working on his outfits this week. They finished and the only dress that needed alterations was Olivia's, she was not surprised coz she and Steve eat like there is no tomorrow. Ntombi had to leave coz she had to attend to her princess and Uriel had to go to work, she had just asked someone to fill in for her so she could come. The ladies were super excited and



they were all dying to see Siza's wedding dresses but she wanted no one to see how she looks until her wedding day. The bride her sister and best friend continued and went to meet with the wedding planner, Siza had to give her final approval on the little things such as who sits and which table and what not. they also had to ensure that everyone who comes to the wedding has accommodation since the wedding will be at some vineyard in Stellenbosch, the nicest thing about this vineyard is that it is also a hotel so the reception will be held there and the guests will sleep there too to avoid driving under the influence.

OLIVIA

Of course I gained weight, I mean how could I have dodged that bullet when my boyfriend and I eat for the whole of Africa, this week I need to be disciplined coz I can't risk gaining guys or the designer will skin me alive, we get to the mall and walk to the restaurant where we are meeting with the wedding

planner. We walk in and my phone rings and it's Steve, I tell them to walk in and I will follow, I don't want to blush amongst the people so I stand outside and we talk for a while, he was just telling that he is in the Uber going to the club to meet his friends, he asks what time I should pick him up and I say he will let me know. We end the call after endless I love you's. I walk in and find the table they are at and the shock I find

Siza "oh come sit next to me" the person I am shocked to see is also shocked to see me

Me "okay babe" I say and take the chair next to her

Siza "oh let me introduce you, babe this my wedding planner, Noni, girl this is my best friend and my husband's daughter Olivia"

Me "I know her she is Steven's baby sister" I see her swallow

Thandiwe "as in that bitch you told us about" she blurts out unapologetic

Siza "maTha" she gives her an what you know its true look

Me "so you are planning my father's wedding"

Noni "I wasn't aware of that but yes" she says in a low voice

Me "you are doing a great job though, she is happy and I know my father will be happy too"

Noni "thanks Olivia" she says

Siza "okay, so please show them the vineyard" she pages through the album labeled Siza's wedding

Me "oh my God babe it's so beautiful, so classy"

Thandiwe "please look at where the reception will be and die in peace" I peek and boy it's breathtaking

Noni "they send me the confirmation for accommodation"

Siza "now I can sleep peacefully at night, Thank you"

No edits

SIZAS'S TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 120

RAZOR

This whole entire house is empty and cold without her, did

Mercy have to show up a week before my wedding and just turn me and my wife on our heads, I miss her so much, I miss talking to her, helping her cook, taking long hot baths with her, helping her study for tests, I mean this whole before she left she has been studying and doing it alone in the study, those are some of the things that made us fall in love with each other more. I get up from the bed; I slept on her side so I could take in her scent and be able to fall asleep. I rinse my mouth and make my way down stairs, Mercy is in the kitchen drinking coffee, I have been avoiding her since Soft left and now is the perfect time to address her

Her "morning daddy" she says with so much energy and it's only morning

Me "yes Mercy"

Her "slept well?"

Me "no, my wife was not next to me"

Her "you really love her huh" he says

Me "so much which is why I am going to say this to you. I asked you politely to respect Sizakele and this

house and not even a week here you had already caused tension. Mercy this is her house and after

everything you did you are just a guest, I am trying to accept you back into my life and have the father

and daughter bond again but if you continue making things difficult for my wife I will cut all ties with you

completely. You are my child I love you but stop these silly stunts because you think I would die for you"

she swallows and I can see she is aware of how serious I am

Her "I hear daddy and I am very sorry"

Me "one more thing, if you think you won't behave or be happy for us at our wedding next week please

don't bother showing up"

Her "I will behave papa and I am sorry please"

Me "I hope so" I say pouring myself coffee from the coffee machine, her friend walks in

Vicky "morning Mr. Motaung" she says and I narrow my eyes

Me "you slept here?"

Vicky "yes sir Mercy said it's not a problem"

Her "I thought you wouldn't mind" I laugh

Me "of course I mind Vicky this is my wife's house and you can't invite your friends to sleep over here

without her permission and worse in her absence"

Her "daddy I"

Me "no Mercy no more sorries, you need to grow up and fast coz if you don't I will wash my hands off

you for good this time"

Her "friend please go take a shower so I can drive you" she quickly hurries out of the kitchen

Me "you are making me regret why I allowed you back into my life"

Her "please don't say that"

Me "you have caused me chaos Mercy, Siza left earlier than she had to because you are making her

uncomfortable now you doing this nonsense and you want me to bat my lashes and look the other way"

Her "I will have my act together"

Me "you better or you are out of here do you understand me"

she nods and I click my tongue and walk  
out remembering Olivia's words the day I told her and Soft  
about this. I need to find her something so  
she can get out of my hair yoh this child

SIZA

I sitting outside with my mother sharing a bottle of wine, we are  
having a light conversation but my head  
is not here at all, I miss my man so much, he called to ask to see  
me later on and I agreed I can't stay like  
this and pretend like I am not dying inside. The preparations of  
our wedding are all done; everything just  
needs to happen now. Noni will go to Stellenbosch on Tuesday  
because the décor of the reception is  
way too complex needs a lot of time to complete she needs to  
make sure that it is perfect, also my  
designer will fly there with us Friday afternoon and then I will  
be ready to get married. Ntombi has  
everything under control in the food department. Oh Oh and  
MaNtuli will be here on Wednesday, both

her and my mother will be walking me down the aisle.

Her "baby what are you thinking about coz manje I am talking to myself" she say's patting my thigh

Me "sorry mama"

Her "don't say sorry ngithi what's wrong" I sigh

Me "I miss Molemo" she smiles

Her "now that you have touched on that subject and we are all alone, tell me why you came home early

coz I did say you can come on Wednesday"

Me "just wanted him to miss me" she rolls her eyes

Her "you two miss each after separating for 3 hours so try another lie" I laugh and decide to tell her

Me "he invited Mercy to stay with us, mama she is just pretending to like me when her father is around

but when we are alone she shows me the real her" mama laughs

Her "and you fled your house because of that brat" mama says

Me "I didn't want my mood to be ruined days before my wedding mama"

Her "you will never ever leave your house because of anyone



else, you will never again leave your house  
because you allowed someone to take the warmth and  
happiness from your home, unless Molemo has  
started treating you differently you will leave that house and  
come back home to your mother who will  
welcome you with warm arms. I didn't have the perfect marriage  
but I don't think anyone has my love  
but the love you and that man share is magical don't allow  
anyone to take that from you. protect your  
peace at all costs, I am not going to teach you to be submissive  
and be a yes my husband no my husband  
type of wife, I did that and I got nothing but abuse from it, your  
submission to him will come naturally  
because of the way he treats you, but no matter what you will  
respect him and you will never ever  
shrink yourself to make him feel more of a man, but baby  
understand that men's ego's are easily bruised  
so careful with how you approach him and the words you use.  
Lastly never let go of your dreams  
because now you are married to a rich man, life is  
unpredictable" she says and tears are streaming

down my face

Me "mama I don't know what to say" she smiles

Her "you don't have to say anything just tell me you heard all I said" she wipes my tears

Me "I heard you mama and thank you very much"

Her "now do me a favor when that men gets here be happy and be excited that it's a countdown to your

big day" I smile

Me "I will mama I promise"

Her "I can't wait to walk you down that aisle handing you over to the man I know will love and protect

you, you two are blessed to have each other, I just pray you see that"

Me "you making me emotional, let's change the subject, where is my sister" she laughs

Her "she is with her friend" she say's friend making inverted commas with her finger I laugh

Me "I can't wait to meet this Mbuso guy"

Her "I just want to see what makes her come back home after midnight each time she is with him"

Me "oh mama you know great conversations can do that" she rolls her eyes and I giggle my poor sister

MBUSO

We spoke in the morning and she mentioned that her kids went to Mafikeng with their father and step

mother and I saw a chance to ask her to come over if she can and she said yes, I woke up and cleaned

the house quickly and subscribed on this Netflix thing, Lilly mentioned that they have all these nice

movies, so I just wanted us to have some pizza and wine and watch some movies, if we will, we tend to

talk for hours and even lose track of time, my daughter spend the weekend as usual but I asked Refiloe

to come pick her up coz I had a lot to do before Thandiwe arrived, she said she will be here before 2 pm

but it's half past three already. Intercom from the gate comes on and I go answer

Me "yebo" I say

Her "it's me" Thandiwe's voice comes through leaving me with a smile on my face

Me "you are late" she giggles and I open for her, I open the door so she can just walk in I need to go

switch off the washing machine, when I get back she is already in

Her "hey you" she says and I go hug her, man she fits perfectly in my arms, I squeeze making this hug

hotter than it has too, I let go before she can feel my erection, thank God I am wearing sweatpants so I

just bury my hands deep in my pocket to hide my bulge

Me "come on in, I have Netflix can you believe it?" she laughs

Her "oh really, you don't say" she says acting shocked

Me "tell you what please pick a movie and I will go get the pizza and cold wine"

Her "yeppie what a lekker combo" I smile and go get the things and find her scrolling the remote

with her shoes off, I sit next to her and pour us each a glass and we enjoy it over a nice romantic movie

she chose, I am not a fan but I will take one for the team, the door opens and Refiloe walks in, her

eyebrow rises soon as she sets her eyes on us

Ref "I didn't know you had company"

Me "I do, thanks for coming to get her"

Ref "is this why you wanted your daughter gone earlier so you can entertain her"

Me "I didn't call you here for drama so don't cause any please"

Ref "please go get my child I have somewhere to be" she says leaving me laughing

Me "Thandiwe please excuse me a bit I am just going to get Lethu upstairs she is sleeping"

Her "no problem" the look on Refiloe is murderous, I get upstairs and take my daughters bag and carry

her gently downstairs, Refiloe is now sitting near Thandiwe drinking from my glass"

Ref "help me take her to the car Mbuso" she says giving Thandiwe a dirty look before she walks out I

just laugh and follow her she opens the door and I strap Lethu in her car seat

Ref "please don't introduce our child to other woman, I am her mother"

Me "get off that high horse and fuck off" I say and walk back to

the house. I find Thandiwe with a smirk  
on her face

Me "why is your face like that"

Her "you sure know how to pick them" I laugh

Me "I could say the same about Sizwe" she laughs

Her "okay we are even then"

Me "let's forget that she was even here to disturb the perfect  
moment we were having"

Her "who again was here" she says and I burst out laughing

Me "just press play Thandiwe" she smiles and presses play then  
takes her wine glass and sips, the way

her lips touch that glass let me just shut up

Her "wait I need to warm up this pizza"

Me "you are so weird who warms up pizza" she sticks out her  
tongue and walks to the kitchen leaving

me starring at her petite sexy body. Thandiwe man yeses.

OLIVIA

I was at my house, I love being with Steven but we need to get a hold of ourselves if my father finds out that I have been practically living with a man for months now he will kill me dead, and I am too young shame to be Razor's victim. The house was so dirty I spend most of last night cleaning; I am so not used to this place anymore, I just come, take my clothes and leave. I didn't go and get Steven at the club coz I was also under the influence. I needed to celebrate finally gagging Noni, I hope she went running to mommy to tell her so they can stop thinking I am with Steve because of his money. I knock comes through my door and I just stay silent, the person is persistent, how did they see I was back you know people from these block of flats are annoying man yeses. I stand up and go open, the smile on my face seeing who is behind the door

Him "I brought a toothbrush and towel with"

Me "are you gonna wear my clothes?"

Him "I don't see why not, coz you wear mine too" I laugh

Me "please come on in love" he walks in

Him "I am sorry for showing up without letting you know just that the bed was too cold last night"

Me "you are so addicted God" he laughs

Him "tell me you didn't miss me too" I blush

Me "nah babe, I have seen too much of you" he puts his hand over his heart acting hurt

Him "and here I thought I was the love of your life"

Me "you and no one else my baby" he pulls me to him and kiss me

Him "I have never slept over you know"

Me "now that you mention it, you haven't"

Him "but it's a risk coz your dad might show up any minute and kill me" I laugh

Me "that's true, so when are you leaving to Stellenbosch, coz we are leaving Friday morning"

Him "the guys and I will be down there Friday evening, we booked some guest house for that night coz

the wedding accommodation is only for Saturday night"

Me "speaking of wedding accommodation, why didn't you tell



me your sister is a wedding planner”

Him “I never thought I should bore you with her with all that’s happened”

Me “you won’t believe that she is the one planning my father’s wedding” his eyes pop

Him “no way babe, she has been making noise about planning wedding of the year with unlimited

budget and how this is going to take her career to new heights, how did you find out”

Me “I went with Siza to meet with her and imagine my shock”

Him “the only shock I want to imagine is hers when she found out that you are the rich clients

daughter” he say’s and bursts out laughing

Me “I can still see her face really, I must admit it was nice seeing her like that, with nothing to say”

Him “I just hope she went running to my mother”

Me “your mother will still hate me babe”

Him “that’s her business my love, I need to go see them tomorrow just to rub it in their faces”

Me “I am going to buy them flowers to give to them”

Him "oh this is great news love, they will stop making noise about how you spend my money"

Me "but I do spend it"

Him "and yeah ne you do leave me broke" I laugh

Me "but I make sure you have food and gas mos"

Him "I need to get this company up and running with the woman I want to marry, I need to be rich" I

laugh and hit him with a cushion, and he kisses me so passionately.

Him "but honestly baby, thank you for not putting pressure on me, for accepting the little I do for you"

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 121

RAZOR

I just finished preparing myself, a part of me excited to see her but another one nervous as hell, what if

she is still cold towards me, I don't think I will be able to not hold her today, kiss her and see her smile

warmly at me, I miss my wife and I know I am to blame but I wish we could just focus on our wedding

and I swear I will fix this soon as we get back from our honeymoon. I descend the stairs and thank my

God that Mercy is nowhere in sight. I get my car keys and get out of the house after grabbing a bottle of

water. I drive to Alberton, I eventually get there and send her I am outside text and a second later the

gate opens and I drive in, I walk out of the car and she just comes to me and attacks me with a hug,

relieve floods through me

Me "oh my baby" I say squeezing her

Her "I have missed you so much" I feel wetness on my shoulder obviously she is crying

Me "I am so sorry baby, I have been dying without you, never not talk to me Soft please"

Her "I love you and I am sorry"

Me "no baby I am the one who is supposed to be sorry here

baby”

Her “are you okay, have you been eating right” I blush, her concern for me

Me “I have been eating at Gadafi’s house” she laughs

Her “you should have starved” I laugh

Me “ouch, I thought you asked because you care, kante you wanted to see if I suffered”

Her “I am just kidding baby, I was worried” she pecks my lips

Me “can I please take you out for some ice cream” I say and she blushes

Her “I would love that baby” she says and I open her door and she gets in then I too, we drive to some

cool ice cream place around Alberton and find a park with swings

Me “when was the last time you were on a swing” she laughs

Her “when I was about 10 in the village by the river we made our own swings from ropes and we would

tie it so hard on the trees” she says giggling as she remembers the memories

Me “come let me push you on a proper swing” she comes and sits and I start pushing her and she laughs

obviously enjoying herself, it goes on for about 10minutes

Her "so you still won't tell me where we are going for our honeymoon" I laugh

Me "nope it is a surprise babe, but I must say you are going to love it, your visa's are approved, all I just want to say is don't pack anything"

Her "what will I wear then babe"

Me "I am taking you shopping in every city we get to plus you won't need much but your swimwear"

she screams in excitement.

Her "I think we can skip the wedding and go straight to the honeymoon" I laugh

Me "not after all the money we've spent, you are having your dream wedding baby, come hell or high waters" she blushes

Her "and it is indeed my dream wedding baby, it's going to be so magical, every girls dream"

Me "you deserve everything Soft, I am going to lay my whole world at your feet baby"

Her "you have already done it my love and thank you for everything"

Me "I promise I will make this whole Mercy thing right"

Her "I appreciate that, but can we please not talk about her, I just want us to be excited about our big day, I want to only talk about us and our future"

Me "your wish is my command Queen"

Her "I hope you ready to make love to me Saturday night" I felt myself get an erection instantly

STEVE

After what my girlfriend told me, I just had to go rub it in my mother's face, I think Noni already

swallowed her shame so let's make my mother swallow hers, I agreed to Olivia buying them those

flowers just to make it harder for them. I made sure to also wear clothes that my girl bout me I just want

to make them regret ever thinking that Liv is after my money. I must say baby did go to the most

expensive florist, and we both knew that it was perfect coz Noni is a wedding planner and she would

know that they didn't come cheap, I laugh at my thought. I am going to enjoy this. I get to the house and walk in finding Noni showing her the Album

Me "oh showing mommy dearest my father in-laws wedding"

Her "yes Steven I am"

Me "how does it feel though sis getting your fat paycheck from my girlfriends father" she rolls her eyes

Ma "we know that they have money Steve" I laugh

Me "oh by the way my rich girlfriend got you these flowers" I hand them to them and my mother has this bitter look on her face

Ma "why would she buy us flowers"

Me "rich people don't need a reason to do anything" my mother clicks her tongue

Her "Steve stop please"

Me "tell mama to appreciate my girls efforts I mean you do know the florist"

Ma "we get it she is not after your money Steven"

Me "damn right she isn't mama, you two need to understand

that I love her and she loves me too and

no matter what you do I am not going to leave her so just get over it already”

Ma “you will learn the hard way son”

Me “learn what exactly mama”

Ma “a woman who has more money than you will never give you respect” I laugh

Me “she doesn’t have it’s a problem, she has money it’s also a problem, so tell me mama what should

happen, what should this woman have so that you can accept her”

Ma “she must be humble like that girl I saw you with at the restaurant”

Her “Mpho her name is Mpho”

Ma “that’s the kind of woman you should go for”

Voice “she prefers one like her my baby” my grandmother says

Ma “what are you doing in my house Evie” she says

Granma “my granchildrens house you mean dear”

Me “hey beautiful, you didn’t call to say you coming”

Grandma “I figured you will be with my darling Olivia, she is



such a sweet girl bring her for a sleep over

at my house I want to spoil her rotten since your mother can't make her feel welcomed to the family"

Ma "why did you come here without informing us Evie" my mother insists

Grandma "my granddaughter knew I was coming" she says sitting

Ma "Noni why didn't you tell me this" my sister keeps quiet

Grandma "leave her alone wena, I am here to take her shopping for the perfect outfit she did say she is planning the most fabulous wedding"

Me "actually that is my father in-laws wedding"

Grandma "you don't say boy, your sister spoke highly of that wedding and he is not your father in law yet marry that good girl first and claim in law" I laugh

Me "trust me Evie that is my wife"

Grandma "I will even give you lobola money now my boy, I know your father would help too"

Ma "forget it" Evie laughs and I go sit next to her while she tells me about a potential grandpa

## MERCY

I decided to go through to Vicky's place after buying some snow, since daddy has a problem with my

friends coming over I going to be driving a lot coming here, I don't know much but I know Siza has my

father by his balls. He has become a puppet and she is the puppet master, my father does everything

this girl says I just wonder what is it that makes him go this crazy over her. She is just so annoying really.

I get to the flat and walk to her flat damn 3 floors to get to her apartment and no elevator, thank God I

wore flats. I open the door and find her having sex with some guy on the couch

Me "you are so nasty God" they pause and look at me

Her "what happened to knocking"

Me "I didn't know you would be this nasty"

Her "just go to my room I will be done soon"

Him "no no why don't you join us, it would be fun"

Her "babe stop she is not into threesomes"

Him "what a pity I would have laid it on her real nice" that statement alone send shivers to my spine I

felt my clit pulsate. It has been so long since I had sex God

Me "who said I am not into threesomes" I ask and Vicky raises her eyebrow

Him "so what are you saying" he says and God the guy is fucken sexy, we do know how our west African

brothers look like right so forgive me for having cravings

Me "I am saying we can have fun"

Her "did you bring some blow?"

Me "obviously" she smiles and gets off the guy and boy I get a full view of him dick and I am salivating

Her "boo let's do some lines"

Him "now you talking, let's get this party started"

Me "here cut and row it up" I say throwing the cocaine at Vicky

Him "you are not being fair right now"

Me "what do you mean"

Him "we are naked and you still have your clothes on" he says and I want to scream

Me "how about you come and undress me" she licks his lower lip and Vicky laughs. He comes to me and

pushes me till I am pressed by the wall. I feel his hands feeling me up and I am happy I wore a dress

He pulls the dress up and it's off leaving me with a matching bra and panty

Him "you look amazing" I blush and he continues touching me all over. He undips my bra and my

breasts are left bare, suckling on one while his hand massages the other, his hand moves to my

underwear and I gasp, he stops and giggles, he takes off my underwear leaving me completely naked

Me "we are all even now"

Him "not until I have a proper feel of you"

Her "okay you two stop and come here" she says and the guy leaves me by the wall, leaving me

admiring his naked ass, I clear my throat

Her "come on Mercy get your act together, Kofi will give you dick"

Him "tell her mama, I will give it to her good" he says and I make my way to them

Me "I will be the judge of that" I say trying to act confident, he laughs

Him "baby girl you will be blowing up my phone asking me to come see you" he says rubbing his dick

Me "we will see about that I guess"

Her "there is no point trying to act tough, he knows his business trust me"

Me "can I get a taste of your theory, get the condoms"

Him "baby girl you won't feel me with that plastic, I am clean trust me" he says

Me "okay then" I take a line and he does after me then he pulls me to him

## THANDIWE

I get to Sandton city because I need to find shoes to match my outfits for my sister's wedding. We have

3 dresses so I need 3 pairs of fabulous shoes, so Siza said I could invite Mbuso to her wedding and he

was happy to receive the invite, I am so excited to have him there, honestly speaking I love spending

time with him, his sense of humor is just out of this world, he makes me feel like a high school girl. A text comes through my phone and it's him

\*I didn't know trying to find a suit for a wedding could be this difficult" I laugh

\*I think trying to find anything for a wedding is a challenge, I am trying to find shoes and it's a real struggle" I send back

\*Where are you\* he texts me

\*I am at Sandton city" I respond

\*what do you know, I am here too, tell you what, help me find a suit and I will help you find shoes\* he sends another text

\*I would love that very much\* I send with a smiling face

\*okay give me a few minutes I will call you just now\* he says and I am left there blushing like a high school kid. I see

Thato coming towards me

Her "hey Thandiwe" she says smiling

Me "hey, how are you?"

Her "I am great thanks, what about you?"

Me "I am very well thank you"

Her "oh the kids were just so amazing, my mother loved having them"

Me "boy did say he had an amazing child. Thank you for taking them with"

Her "no Thandiwe, thank you so much for allowing me in their lives, I honestly love them"

Me "they are blessed to have two mommies" I say and she smiles

Her "we should plan something for them, just the four of us, leave Sizwe behind" I laugh

Me "sounds good, we will discuss that"

Her "here for some shopping"

Me "I actually need shoes for my sister's wedding"

Her "oh I heard they are getting married this weekend"

Me "yes they are"

Her "can I please give you hair from my salon so people can see it" she says "please Thandiwe" she begs

Me "okay no stress" she smiles and claps excitedly

Her "we can go now if you can"

Me "not now, I am waiting for someone" as if on cue he walks in the shop

Him "I thought that was you, why are you not answering your phone" he says and hugs me

Me "I am sorry I didn't hear it" I say

Him "can we get to it" I smiles

Me "yes and oh, Mbuso this is Thato, Sizwe's wife and Thato this is Mbuso" I say and they greet

Her "nice to meet you Mbuso"

Him "likewise, greet your husband for me" she smiles

Me "I will come to your shop tomorrow is that fine?"

Her "okay I will be waiting and thank you" I smile at her and involuntarily I take Mbuso's hand into mine

and he looks at me and smiles

Him "where should we start?"

Me "I think with your suit" I say and he nods brushing my knuckles with his thumb



SIZWE

It has been the longest day ever, we are hosting a major event for one of the top magazines in South

Africa this weekend and everything has to be perfect really, if we pull this off my club will be on the map

with hosting such prestigious events and I will be able to launder more money through it, after all that's

why I opened club nations. I get home and my wife's car is in the driveway, and she listens, I don't want

to come home and not find her, that manager must be able to open and close on her won Thato is my

wife and the boss she isn't supposed to be doing her job. I get out of the car and walk to the house and boy the aroma hits my nostrils

Me "and my lovely wife is home early and she cooked for me" she laughs and comes to give me a kiss

Her "hey baby, how was your day"

Me "it was hectic but coming home and finding my wife cooking for me looking this sexy just made

everything okay" she blushes

Her "my husband did say he wants me home when he arrives from work, because he is my King I obey

him" I smile

Me "that's my baby. So how did your test go"

Her "I nailed it love, everything I studied was there so I know I aced it"

Me "I am proud of you, you need to be rewarded"

Her "I love the sound of that babe"

Me "I need to shower after having a beer" I say taking one out of the fridge

Her "I bumped into Thandiwe"

Me "oh where"

Her "the mall was going to look for a dress that I will be wearing to the club on Saturday"

Me "is she okay" she smile

Her "she is great, she even agreed to wear my hair at her sister's wedding and we said we will discuss a

trip with the kids we are leaving you behind" I smile, oh how I wish they got along this well when Thandiwe was still my wife

Me "oh that is nice my love"

Her "and her boyfriend said I should greet you" I narrow my eyes

Me "who is her boyfriend" I ask feeling myself boil

Her "Mbulelo, Mbuti" something along those lines

Me "do you mean to say Mbuso"

Her "yes that's him babe, you know him?"

Me "yeah he is my accountant" I say ranging with anger inside

Her "and they looked so cute babe, so in love hearing her say that made me more angry but I couldn't

let my wife see that I am jealous of my ex getting in a relationship

Me "did she say they were a couple"

Her "not really I could just tell from how they looked at each other"

Me "I just hope she won't introduce him to the kids yet"

Her "why not, he seems like a pretty good guy"

Me "don't they all"

Her "come on Thandiwe is a great mother she wouldn't expose the kids to anything that she knows

would harm them, you know this” she says

Her “after all she deserves some love after all she has been through” I couldn’t listen to this any longer

Me “I guess so” I walk upstairs; I am so mad, real mad. I get to the bathroom and open the shower taps

and take off my clothes, looking at the beast on the mirror, I want to scream so bad. I just move to the wall and just punch the wall so hard. Damn Thandiwe damn it

VUSI

I get to the hospital to see my mother, her condition is not getting better and I am glad it is not getting

worse either, Uriel assured me that the doctors are doing everything in their powers but nothing seems

to be working, I don’t know what to do anymore, I know for a fact that this is the best hospital in this country so it’s not them, we just don’t know why my mother is not getting any better. I get in her room and find the nurse helping her back into bed

Me “hello, how is she today”

Nurse "she is still the same sir but today she has an appetite and that's something to start with"

Me "oh really that's great"

Nurse "yes it is, I will be back later to administer her meds"

Me "okay no problem" she walks out

Me "did you hear that Dali, your appetite is a start"

Her "I told you what would make me better Vusi"

Me "and you know she said no, you promised to let her be" she cries

Her "I know but I really need to see her"

Me "Dali please we have already done enough damage"

Her "try one more time please"

Me "she is busy Dali, she is getting married this weekend and she is happy about that I don't want us to

be the reason to make her mood go south"

Her "oh Nkosiyami, please get into her heart, make her whole again so she can be able to forgive me"

Me "mama give her time maybe she will come around"

Her "time is not something I have Vusi"

Me "what is that supposed to mean" she smiles

Her "don't worry yourself, just get me that delicious chicken soup" I smile

Me "okay let me go get it, I will be back soon okay?"

Her "okay son" she says and I walk out. I first pass by my woman's work station to ask her if she would love anything to eat

NO EDITS

Did Mercy just hammer the final nail to her coffin; did she just engage in something that will bring her ultimate doom? It might seem as just sex but the results of that will make her do the unthinkable. Stay tuned to Siza's tribulations.

SIZA'S TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 122

NARRATED

The day finally arrived, and it was indeed a day blessed by the heavens, the sun was out and shining like tomorrow didn't exist, the sky so clear with no sign of rain and that couldn't make the bride any happier, she has been hoping and praying that the weather allow her to enjoy her big day and from her mouth to God's ears her prayers went. The birds were out and singing, the vineyard just had to look even more breathtaking today, everything was just so perfect, but like any other bride on her big day Sizakele was panicking, her stomach was in knots. Her bridesmaids continued to calm her down, letting her know that everything is going very well, but not even that managed to do the trick, so her mother's saw it fit that everyone who is in charge of something should just come and give her the assurance she needs. Ntombi was the first to go, she assured her that everything they agreed on for the menu is being prepared and she shouldn't worry because they are following methods of preparing everything and it will taste how she wanted, Noni also came and told her that the

décor is finished for both the matrimonial service and reception, and the hotel assured her that the waiters and waitresses will be available like they had agreed, lastly the company they hired for the open bar was already there and setting up where Noni arranged for them, she began cooling down when everyone told her that things were coming along nicely. It was time for her and her entourage to do their makeup and hair; each bridesmaid had their own makeup artist and hairstylist so that they can be on time. Everything was looking absolutely breathtaking, the matrimony service was going to take place in the vineyards facing the beautiful mountain from afar, the décor for that was just minimal, it was white chairs on each side with the aisle in between, the pit where the couple will exchange their vows was just the huge letters S and M which sparkled, on each side of the center of the pulpit was white roses inside big French oak barrels, giving it a vineyard wedding feel. At the entrance of the set up was a beautiful white board written "MOLEMO



WEDS SIZA". The reception area was just out of this world, it was also outside and there were sparkling lights hanging on the top from one wall to the other, the sides had rectangle tables one for the bridesmaids and groomsmen and the other for the immediate family of the couple in the middle there were round tables decorated with flowers in expensive crystal vases, the under plates and cutlery gold in color with cream white with a wine glass and champagne flute, each table had a number and every guest will be given their table number as they enter the menu was placed on each person's setup so they can choose their own meal. The gold and cream white décor made the whole thing look like royalty. The whole setup was facing the most important table of the day, the décor on the couples table was minimal and the cake was not far from their table it was a 5tier white cake with gold trimmings. The stage in the middle where the couple will have their first dance white and the words Mr. and Mrs. Motaung were engraved on it. On the garden next to the set up

were white umbrellas with couches and round tables with high chairs, the open bar was facing the setup the DJ booth was ready and waiting to give the people something to dance to. Everything was done only waiting for the ceremony to begin. On the other side of the hotel Molemo and his groomsman were already done, they looked handsome in their suits, fresh haircuts and expensive watches on their wrists.

Guests started arriving looking amazing, everyone had a plus one and they were all taken by the venue and setup of the matrimonial service. Everyone managed to get seated and the groom's man started coming in and the bridesmaids followed suit, each party standing on the side of the person they are representing. The band was just playing slow romantic music that fit the occasion perfectly entertaining the guests. Razor appeared looking like he was made on a Sunday while God was relaxing with no interruptions, all the women were drooling over his built body and his handsomeness. He stood next to

the guys and the priest. The band stopped what they were playing and started playing John Legend's All of me and everyone stood up coz they could tell that the bride was about to walk down the aisle. They looked back and everyone was in awe, Siza was in a beautiful wedding gown that made her look like the queen that she is, both woman who stood by her when the world turned their backs on her where besides her each holding her hand, they both looked great, fit enough to be the Queens mothers. They walked slowly towards Molemo who was looking at his woman with total admiration, love radiating from his eyes that he couldn't hold it in, he let a tear fall, while looking at her making her way to him, look at God's gift to him, he kept on giving a silent prayer thanking him for leading Sizakele to him, they finally reached him and both Siza's mothers took her right hand and handed her to Molemo after shaking his hand. The spark between the two as they held hands was nothing they have both felt before, the ladies went to sit down and the guests followed suit. The

music stops and the priest started

Pastor "dearly beloved we are gathered here under this beautiful sky because of these two people, who have decided that their love was too strong not to be joined in holy matrimony. Before I start with the ceremony I am bounded to ask, is there anyone here who feels that this man shouldn't be married to this woman, speak now or forever hold your peace" he said and the closest people to the couple looked at Mercy, who was near Vicky.

Pastor "okay then, we can proceed. I would like to read from the book of Ecclesiastes Chapter 4 verse 9 to 1. Two are better than one because they have a good reward for their toil. For if they fall one will lift up his fellow, but woe to him is alone when he falls and has not another to lift him up again. If two lie together they can keep warm but how can one keep warm alone and though a man might prevail against one who is alone, two can withstand him- a threefold cord is not quickly broken, Amen. I am

saying to Sizakele and Molemo that whatever you do together you will also be victorious, trust in each other and be each other's friend; let the only third person in your union be God and no one else. I am not here to preach but to join these two in a secret union. The couple asked to say their own vows, Molemo you can start" he says and Razor smiles Him "I don't think I have ever cried in front of people in my life but here I am once again being amazed by myself with what I do because of you baby. First of all, you look breathtaking my love and thank you for best birthday gift ever, marrying me on my birthday. I want to thank the man above for giving me you, for seeing me worthy enough to be a life time partner to one of his angels, I promise him this, I promise to love you faithfully and fearlessly, to protect you from all that might hurt you, I promise to remove anything and anyone who will pose a threat to you or our union, baby I will cherish you and help you realize all your hopes and dreams, I promise to be a partner and friend through everything, your

happiness and wellbeing is my priority as it has always I will live my life making you the envy of all

woman. You are everything to me Soft and thank you for loving me and choosing me wherever where

life takes us I will continue to choose you and no one else all that is mine is now ours and the children

God will bless us with. I love you till infinity, my one true love” he says and slides the ring on her finger

with tears streaming down both their faces, Siza wipes his tears and he blushes leaving the crowd in awe

Pastor “Siza your turn”

Her “this morning I tried calling you but they quickly snatched my phone from me saying once I start

talking to you I won't stop so before I anything let me wish you a very happy birthday baby, the first one we will spend as husband and wife. Molemo Motaung I don't even know where to begin, but thank you

for chasing me till I fell head over heels in love with you, even though a lot was at stake you didn't let

that stop you from loving me and for that I know that your heart will always be my home. I stand here in

front on our family and friends as well as God to make promises to you, promises I know I will keep.

Baby my love. I promise to honor and respect you, to laugh and cry with you, to share my hopes and

dreams with you, I promise to bring you solace in times of need I give you my solemn vow to love you

unconditionally, I will hold you and our union deep in my heart, forsaking all others. For as long as we

both shall live” she said and slides the wedding band on his finger a smile curved on Molemo’s face. The

rings were both engraved M&S always and forever.

Pastor “by the power vested in me I now pronounce you husband and wife, you may kiss the bride” he

says and Molemo folds his arms around his wife’s waist and she circles hers on his neck and they kiss

slowly and passionate while the crowd cheers for them, they stop and look at each other in the eyes

and mouth I love you simultaneously making them both chuckle. They went down the aisle holding

hands smiling at their guests. They went and took pictures and said something on the wedding video to

remind them of how happy they were when they watch it. The bridal party and the couple went to change while the guests settle in the reception area. They came back while dancing with their entourage. The MC started the ceremony and speeches were made and jokes making people laugh, the party went on and on and at about 7 pm Molemo went over to find his wife who was having a conversation with her mothers

## RAZOR

We finally did it, she is so happy and that just makes my heart melt, she looks breathtaking, my wife, look at her laughing so carefree like nothing exists except for our happiness, she is my everything and I owe my daughter a fortune. I make my way to her, it's after 7 pm and people are still having mad fun, the food and alcohol enough to keep them going till the am's but I have had enough I just want to be with my wife now all alone. She turns her head and smiles



Her "hey husband"

Me "my beautiful wife" my mother in laws laugh

Her "are you okay"

Me "nope" I say making a sad face

Her "what's wrong baby" she says sounding concerned

Me "I want to be with my wife alone" she laughs

Her "I am all yours let's go dance" I shake my head

Me "the car is waiting for us upfront and the jet needs to leave soon" her eyes pop

Her "we are already leaving for our honeymoon" she says excitedly

Me "yes Mrs. Motaung" she screams a little and hug me

Lungile "but she didn't pack" I laugh

Me "that's part of our plan"

Her "I will be shopping on our honeymoon" she says and giggles

Me "we need to leave baby" I say and give her a minute to say bye to her mothers and Olivia and her

sisters, I go say bye to Mercy and ask G to keep an eye out for her, Olivia said she will be moving in the house to keep an eye on her and I am grateful for that. I don't know when but the

guests are now standing by the exit making a guard of honor and throwing rose petals at us as we move through, we wave goodbye as the car drives away to Cape Town International airport where a private jet waits to take

my wife and I to France, Paris our first destination. We get to the airport and the jet is waiting, I just had to hire one coz my wife and I will need the privacy. The driver opens her door and I get out and take her hand

Her "where are we going?" she says with a smile

Me "Paris baby, you need clothes and apparently they have the best boutiques" she looks at me shocked

Her "are you for real?"

Me "I swear, then we head to Cannes, it's a city located on the French Riviera, The Mediterranean sea,

and after that will be a surprise" i saw tears in her eyes

Her "but Mo baby"

Me "I want you to see the world baby" I say and we walk in the plane after greeting the pilots and the

hostess. We walk around the plane, she is admiring it. The hostess finds us and asks that we take our

sits as the plane will take off in 5 minutes, Soft sits down and I buckle her up then I follow suit, a minute

later the jet moves and we just continue talking about our wedding,

Pilot "we are now cruising at altitude so it is safe to start moving freely about. We will get to Paris

France in 11 hours 44 minutes" He says and the hostess brings Soft and I champagne and some finger

foods. I pour us some and she sips and stands up

Her "I will be back just now" she says heading to the bedroom, a moment later I hear her calling for me

and go check what she needs, and the sight of her in the black number and red lipstick with her hair

falling makes her look more sexy

Me "shit baby you look amazing"

Her "I always wondered how it could feel making love 33000 feet above sea level" I smile and my erection gets harder

Me "oh Soft" I say making my way to her.

NARRATED

The look on his face was more than she had imagined

“oh Soft” he murmured “I’d like to think that by continue ogling you and not undoing that thing with my teeth, I’m building character”

“character is important” Siza said, her voice husky, she took a deep breath and put both her hands on

her waist, for a while he just stared at her, wondering how it will feel being inside her again after such a long time.

“I don’t know how I survived all this time, baby I want you so bad” he says touching her slowly on her sides and she felt this ache starting between her legs

“me too baby” she says with a shaking voice. His hands moved to the side of her breasts caressing her

under her lace bra. Desire stabbed through her leaving her weak at the knees, he moved higher and she

held her breath, her knees buckled but before she could collapse he scooped her into his arms and

moved to the bed placing her down gently on the bed while he takes off his clothes slowly while

admiring how sexy his wife looks. He laid down on the bed

covering her body with his own kissing her passionately, hungrily, his tongue playing with hers while his weight presses her down the mattress, she

wanted him close so she wraps her legs around his waist and feels his erection pressed down on her privates a moan escaped her mouth. His hands found her bra and a second later her bra was flying

across the room. His tongue circling her nipple, she cried out, arching her back, she couldn't keep still. He went down until his lips touched her temple; she went crazy as his tongue intensified the heat

between her legs, her hands grabbed on tightly to the sheets as she screams having her orgasm after such a long time. He made his way up and kissed her making her taste her juices on his lips. He moved his hand from her breast to his dick and directs himself inside her and he let out a groan when her tightness and wetness welcomed him in, she moaned making him go crazier, he went fully in and started moving slowly and picking up the pace, thrusting in and out of her while she calls out his name he went

on and on, making love to her, her body worshipping him. she tried breathing but the pressure that was

building was too intense, making her every muscle loose, when

the explosion came she screamed his name, the pleasure of her orgasm left her whole body shaking, Molemo continued going, thrusting in and out making her have an orgasm one after the other, Siza was calling out his name hoping he would have mercy but only did he stop when he poured all of his seed deep inside of his wife. Calling her name like she was his God. The pleasure he felt finally being buried deep inside of the woman he loves so much. he collapses next to her and they both try to catch their breaths

"it feels like I just made love to you for the first time" he says

"that's exactly why I wanted us to stop having sex until today" she responds

"trust me I now understand and baby you still drive me insane" he says to his blushing wife

"I am happy to hear that" she responds

"did you enjoy you 33000 feet above sea level experience" she giggles

"can we please stay up here forever" I laugh

"trust me we would go broke if I don't work, leaving up here is

quiet expensive” she smiles

“thank you for giving me the best wedding and taking me to a honeymoon I never dreamt of” Siza says

with tears in her eyes

“I would do anything for you baby; this is the best birthday ever. Thank you for constantly choosing me.

I love you so much” he says

“I love you too my husband” she murmurs and he kisses her forehead

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 123

THANDIWE

I wake up with a heavy head my God I really went hard on the customized cocktails yeses. I have never

had that much fun in forever, letting loose and being my age for the first time was the most amazing

experience. The whole party went on till around 3 am and the

alcohol was nowhere near finish, the food

ai man kudos to Ntombi she knows her business. The elders left the party at around 11pm and boy did

the mice come out to play hard then. I don't know when I came to bed or how I got here because wow. I

am never drinking like that again, I was about to get out of bed to go take a shower and go see how

mama and my kids are. The toilet flushed and panic runs through my whole body, who could that be. I

look at myself and I am naked, I close my eyes and the bathroom door opens

Him "good morning Thandiwe" Mbuso's voice comes through

Me "hi" that's all I manage to say

Him "how are you feeling" he says chuckling

Me "I feel like I have been hit by a train"

Him "I did say you should slow down, but boy you were getting down, your roof was on fire" I look up at

him and he is naked with only his boxer. Oh my God

Me "Mbuso did we?" I ask panicking



Him "hey no we didn't I couldn't allow myself" I felt a bit disappointed

Me "oh okay"

Him "don't sound sad Thandiwe. You were drunk and you kept on asking me to make love to you, and

woman with that body exposed naked in front of my eyes it took everything in me to say no considering

the fact of how long it has been since I had sex" I look down embarrassed

Me "I am so sorry Mbuso" I want to cry

Him "don't be. we both haven't laid with the opposite sex in a very long time, I wanted to make love to

you I just didn't want to do it with you drunk, I wanted you to be lucid enough and give me your

consent. Plus we haven't really spoken of what this is, I didn't want to ruin this" he says and I look up to

face him, my body still aching to feel him in between my legs

Me "what is this vele"

Him "I would also like to know, but I know we have looked at each other longer to be just friends" I

blush and he comes to sit near me

Me "I agree with you there"

Him "from that day I saw you at the pull I was taken by you, after everything I went through I was

surprised that I am falling for a woman again, and I got to know you and the fact that you know what I

am going through coz you went through something similar gave me hope, I know you wouldn't hurt

since you know how it feels to be broken by someone you gave everything to, then you are this

incredible mother and I know my daughter will love you, and you keep me on my toes and you smile and

laugh like you have never been broken, Thandiwe then you stand in front of me naked begging me to

make love to you and you making me fall in love with you more and more" he says and I am in tears

Me "you love me? but how"

Him "because you are a part of me, your broken pieces fit mine perfectly. Be with me let's be whole

together baby" he wipes my tears

Me "I don't know what to say Mbuso" he smiles

Him "tell me what is in here" he says pointing to my heart, I

stay silent for a while

Me "I am in love with you too" he blushes

Him "maDlamini uthin kimina (what are you saying to me)"

Me "ngithi ngiyak'thanda nami mnutungwa (I am saying I love you too)" he smile

Him "woza ozongi bonisa (come show me then)" I giggle and sit on his lap and kiss him

Me "wear something Thandiwe before ngik' bonisa umhlola" I laugh and burry my head in his neck

SIZA

I open my eyes and I am on his chest, he has his left arm around me, I can see his hand with his wedding

band, and I just smile, my husband, now that it's official it's way to different. My mind drifts back to how

perfect my wedding was, it reached and exceeded my expectations. My dream came true; I just wonder

what this honeymoon has in store for me. a smile curves on my face when I remember the delicious

memories we made up in the air man he has never made love to me like that, we couldn't keep our hands off each other, that we only slept when the pilot informed us that we will be landing in 3 hours, we just took a shower and a nap, we were woken up and a chuffer took us to this prestigious hotel that we are waking up in right now. Their Egyptian cotton sheets feel so good on my skin Lord this is a mini heaven. I carefully try to get out of his hold but he keeps me locked in his hold

Him "think you can escape me that easily huh?" I giggle

Me "never baby, I thought you wanted to sleep some more"

Him "nope I have been up a while was just waiting on you to wake up, how did you sleep?"

Me "you wore out on that plane so I slept like a baby" he smirks

Him "you made me go crazy couldn't resist my love"

Me "well I feel the same way too. You still got game old man" he laughs

Him "what me old man please" I smile

Me "I am famished" I say brushing my tummy

Him "let's take a shower then get down stairs"

Me "I don't have anything to wear remember" I say

Him "hey I got you don't stress" he says getting out of bed butt naked, I appreciate all the time he

spends in the gym, I get up and follow him. He opens a closet and there are about five dresses and shoes

Him "choose an outfit baby, then we go eat then I my darling wife will take you shopping" I giggle

Me "how did you get these clothes here"

Him "when I made bookings I asked them to find me a personal shopper to get you something to choose

from on our first day coz I knew I didn't want you to pack"

Me "you are so considerate babe thank you" I quickly peck his lips

Me "so how long is our honeymoon going to be"

Him "I am not sure yet baby but I can assure you that you are going to have so much fun"

Me "I am happy to hear that"

Him "come let's shower" he takes my hand and leads me to this bathroom, gosh it's beautiful

Me "I think I am going to change the down stairs bathroom to make it look something like this" he

laughs

Him "just come down interior designer, you are on your honeymoon not here to take home ideas come

on Mrs. Motaung" he says opening the shower taps and the water cascade on our naked bodies

Me "I love you"

Him "and I love you right back baby" he says and once we done we hold hands and get down stairs. The

girl at the front desk comes hurrying to us

Her "Mr. and Mrs. Motaung, I hope you had a great rest after your long flight what can I assist you

with?" she says in French accent

Him "hello, me and my wife had a great rest Merci, and we would like to dine in the restaurant please"

Her "no problem, your package includes an available table immediately on request, please follow me" she says and we are on her toes, wow the restaurant Lord I can't this plan look at the chandelier.

2 WEEKS LATER

OLIVIA

I wake up and the noise in the house would be enough for the neighbors to call the police, I quickly stand to find my gown and wear it while rushing downstairs. Mercy was not at home when I went to bed and she gets here and bursts the music like a mad woman. I get to the lounge where my father's bar is, and there is my sister and that good for nothing friend of hers Vicky, they are with some guy and they are clearly drunk, they are busy dancing and the guys is drinking my father's most expensive bottle, I look at them it's like they are mad man, making noise and screaming. Mercy notices me and she hurries to me

Her "Livi" she says losing her steps coming to me

Me "it is 9am Mercy and you bring your friends here to make noise in my father's house"

Her "our fathers house lil sis" she says and laughs

Me "you are unbelievable, you will never grow up" I say and go stop the music

Him "Mercy babe who is this stuck up bitch" he says

Me "who the hell are you calling a stuck up bitch you fuck" I say making my way to him and taking my father's bottle

Her "Olivia chill my friends and I are just having little fun" she says

Me "this is Siza's house. Have some respect you are a guest here"

Her "guest in my own fathers house, jokes my darling"

Me "take your shitty friends who are clearly using you and get the fuck out of my father's house" she

laughs and goes to increase the volume and she just laugh at me. I got so angry I go and pull out the plug

Him "I will kick this bitch to the cub"

Me "call me bitch one more time mother fucker, I dear"

Him "bitch what will you do"

Her "Kojo come on stop it" Mercy says to him. I get closer to that guy, and I take the bottle of whisky he

was drinking and hit him so hard on his head he falls but it wasn't a strong blow to make him

unconscious" Mercy and Vicky came rushing to me



Her "Olivia stop you will kill him" she says pulling me back and Vicky checks the guys wound

Me "that's what I will do you mother fucker, and wena Mercy get your friends out of here before I get

back" I say and walk to my father's study I open his safe and take out his gun removing the bullets in it. I

walk back to the lounge and find them chilling with a new bottle opened I chuckle and cork the gun

getting their attention coz they all stand and go hide in one corner, a part of me wants to laugh

Her "Olivia what the fuck, put that gun away" she says panicking

Me "I asked you nicely to take your friends and leave but you are stubborn, so I am going to shoot you

and cry self defense"

Him "after hitting me with a bottle you think the cops will believe you"

Me "my father is rich sweetie isn't that why you are friends with Mercy for the money"

Her "just calm down I will escort them out, let's go" she says and they walk behind her, once out the

door I chuckle a bit. Mercy comes back fuming and I raise an eyebrow

Her "don't you dare do that to my guests again do you understand me" I laugh and attempt to walk past

her, she pulls me by my braids, I didn't mean to but I turned and gave her a hot slap across her face and

since she lost so much weight she staggered back a few steps and fell on the couch

Me "do you dare you piece of shit don't you dare try that again. You better clean up that mess you and

your rats made in here and best believe Razor is going to hear all about this" she stands quickly

Her "Olivia please don't tell them please" I click my tongue and walk out on her, she is busy shouting my

name begging me to have a heart, the audacity.

MANDLA

My mother decided to stay behind after the wedding and it has been a blissful time, she is not one to

stay in the city too long but I think because Siza's mother is

here it makes her more comfortable, she has been with me for the entire 2 weeks but she says she is going to spend a week at mam'Lungile house before she heads to the village, apparently my father's spirit will wonder why his house is so quiet yet his wife still lives on this earth. That is also her reason of refusing me to buy her a house here so she can be close to me. I introduced her to Palesa and she didn't really say she likes her or that she doesn't like which has me skeptical, but at least she is not cold towards her, when she came through she would make her feel welcomed, she even taught her how to cook my favorite meals. I just got home and her bags are by the door

Me "you are ready to leave me I see" she laughs

Her "don't pretend like you are not happy son"

Me "haibo mama what is that supposed to me"

Her "you are happy that I am going to Lungile so you can sleep with your girlfriend, you young kids can't

live without sticking that tail inside a woman" I laugh

Me "calm down mama yoh, such deep intense things"

Her "ai suka, you know I am right" yes she is but it has been a while, my girl and I have been trying to

respect her but it's enough I have blue balls now yoh, cold showers aren't cutting it anymore

Me "what time should I drive you to Alberton"

Her "go take a shower when you are done you will take me"

Me "okay o'lady"

Her "but Mandla I am not getting any younger mntanam, I need to carry my grandchildren before my

husband your father come to take me to join him" I smile

Me "I hear you mama" she smile

Her "I have always wished that Siza could be my daughter in law but you were slow as a tortoise

Motaung came and snatched her from you, uyislima yaz Mandla, kodwa marry this Palesa, don't waste

her time if you don't want to make an honest woman out of her" I laughed so hard at her calling me a

fool and I agree I was slow in the Siza department

Me "I hear you mama" I say and walk to the bathroom.

VUSI

Me "you need to tell me what's going on love coz you have been moody for days"

Her "coz I don't know how you will receive these news baby"

Me "talk to me love please" she sighs

Her "Vusi I am" she stops and cries

Me "Uriel baby tell me please"

Her "I am pregnant" she say and my world stops for a second

Me "as in you have a baby growing in here"

Her "yes baby"

Me "this is great news baby, why didn't you want to share this with me"

Her "I thought it would remind you of Siphephelo" I smile

Me "this is a chance to love and protect this baby to right my wrongs" she smiles

Her "you are happy?" I kiss her

Me "I am ecstatic love" I say and scoop her in my arms and spin

her around

No. Edits

It's about to get messy, so everybody buckle up, bambelela siya jika. Just read and I will write

SIZAS TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 124

MBUSO

It has been 3 full weeks since Thandiwe and I spoke and decided that we are in love with each other and

I must admit it has been the most fulfilling time in my life, I have never been so sure about anything in

my life, her strength and resilience is what attract me to her more, she is a great mother even, I know

that she will love Thandolwethu like her own and if God blesses us with a child of our own, that baby will

be blessed beyond measure, I have decided that she is my stop

station and I believe that she feels the same way about me too. She sleeps over when her kids are with their family and this happens to be that weekend. It's just after 9am and she is still asleep, let's say me and her get on very good in what we do and maybe just maybe I fail to control myself and wear her out but she never complains, I make her breakfast and take it up to her, she is sleeping so peacefully facing up with her lips pouted, she is a goddess my goddess. I kiss those lips and she gradually opens her eyes and when they land on me her lips curve forming a smile

Me "good morning maDlamini" I say and she gets up

Her "good morning mntungwa"

Me "ulele kahle? (did you sleep okay?)" I ask

Her "more than okay baby, wena"

Me "how a man who sleeps next to his woman sleeps babe"

Her "is that for me?"

Me "no one else but you sthandwa sam" I say handing her the

tray and she started eating

Her "I will never get used to the fact that you can cook yazin baby" I laugh

Me "get used to it muntu wam"

Her "I hate Sundays"

Me "don't remind me babe please" we both sigh, each time she leaves Sunday afternoon this house

becomes so cold.

Her "what are we doing today"

Me "I would say make love to you all day but I am sure you are sore, so we need to look at the company

papers so we can see which suppliers you will use" she smiles

Her "okay love sounds good"

Me "have the mines and the other two firms called?"

Her "yes babe, I am signing contracts tomorrow and tuesday' so my baby decided to get into waste

management, she got a few contracts with mines and firms to move their waste both domestic or

hazardous to the landfill she is in partnership with to dispose and recycle. She managed to do this on her



own and I am so proud of her, I am just helping her with finer details.

Me " and the dealership called you can go and get your trucks tomorrow" she looked at me

Her "really baby" she was stress about her waste trucks, the bank was taking too long approving her

loan so I land her the money and she paid the dealership for 3 trucks

Me "yes my love got the email this morning" she put her tray aside and comes to me and kisses me

Her "thank you so much mntungwa, I promise to pay you back"

Me "we are in no hurry get Dlamini waste management off the ground first" she smiles

Her "I can't believe this, I am a CEO and soon to be a registered student"

Me "my Environmental Scientist" she giggles

Her "thank you for your support baby, can't wait to share with my sister she is going to be so excited"

Me "you are my lady and I will make sure to elevate you babe"

Her "you are such a blessing Mntungwa I love you" have you guys seen me blush before?

SIZA

I snuggle next to him closer as the pilot says we are landing in 30 minutes, I want to cry so bad, we have been in our perfect bubble and now that is coming to an end, we going back to school and work and that means sharing him with the rest of the world, we are coming back like this because Olivia called two days ago to inform Molemo that Mercy is just out of control, apparently she has turned my house into a hotel for her friends, she brings them in late at night, so that Olivia can't see them and apparently she told Gadafi were to get off. I don't know what is wrong with Molemo's daughter but she is a nuisance.

Him "hey what are you thinking about"

Me "our bubble has come to an end now"

Him "I am sorry babe, I wish we could have extended it"

Me "I understand babe we couldn't stay away forever"

Him "we will travel more frequently baby I promise" I smile

Me "I will hold you to that" he kisses my forehead. The plane lands and we sit for a minute not wanting

to let go of each other. We finally stand and get off the plane making our way to the waiting car, they

load our luggage and the driver drives off. We get to our house and we walk out, I think I kind of missed

this place. He scoops me in his arm and I giggle I wasn't expecting that at all. We walk in and he drops

me prematurely, I look at his direction and see why his expression suddenly changed

Him "Mercy Motaung what nonsense is this" he shouts making me jump a bit, she and the guy try to

hide their naked bodies but I am shocked

Her "daddy I didn't know you were coming back"

Him "I am glad I didn't tell you, so this is how you disrespect my wife's house Mercy bring strange boys

here and having sex with them" the guy managed to grab his clothes and ran out of the house

Her "I am really sorry daddy I don't know what came over me I swear"

Him "that is all you are good for Mercy saying sorry, you will never grow up, and I am done with you, asked you nicely to respect my home but nope I had to hear complains about you while I was halfway across the world on my honeymoon, I am done blaming myself for how you turned out I am done trying to make up for what I do not know, you are on your own, I wash my hands off you do you understand me, go upstairs and get your shit and get the hell out of my house" he roars

Her "papa I am sorry, Siza please talk to him, it will never happen again I swear" she asks me and I hold my hand out

Him "leave my wife out of this" he says and walks up upstairs and comes back with her luggage and throws it out"

Her "papa kao kopa hle" she says going down on her knees

Him "trust me you don't want me to drag you out myself" she stood up quickly and got dressed and ran

out after grabbing her handbag on the couch. Not even an hour in this house and our mood has

vanished wow. I didn't even know what to say to my husband,  
he ascended the stairs fuming and I just

decided to stay down stairs to let him cool down, the driver asks  
where to put the bags I tell him to take

them outside our bedroom door. I go and fix myself a strong  
drink and just look outside the window, I

feel him snake his hands around my waist

Him "I am sorry Soft"

Me "I wish we were still in our bubble"

Him "that makes the two of us"

Me "I think we should go and nap maybe we will feel better  
when we wake up"

Him "great idea baby"

Me "it's not your fault she turned out this way"

Him "I know and understand it now" I peck his lips

MERCY

I didn't know that they were coming home today, damn Olivia  
for not telling me this, I wondered why

she didn't give a fuck about Kojo being at the house today, I should have realized from her leaving me in the house with him that something is up, I fucked up big time now and there is no way he is going to look passed this, Kojo is next to me laughing, he finds this whole thing amusing. I found him at the corner as I drove out, he didn't have data or the cash to request for bolt. I am so mad I need something to calm me down, I don't have cash on me but at least I managed to steal some of their jewelry and it's the real thing so I will make a lot of money to sustain me, we drive to our dealer and give my father's Rolex watch and he says I will get a supply for 3 months that's a relief.

Him "so where are we headed"

Me "can we go to your place for once"

Him "woah baby girl I live with about 3 guys and they are super busy" I roll my eyes

Me "you always have excises Kojo my God"

Him "let's just go to Vicky, I know she is thirsty haven't been

fucking her since you came into the picture”

Me “you fuck the whole of Joburg Kojo”

Him “not since I have been fucking you Mercy baby” we get to Vicky’s place and luckily she was there

Her “and then nina where are coming from”

Him “her father walked in on us on his couch”

Her “what Mercy you can be stupid at time you know”

Me “I know okay I don’t need to judging right now, by the way I am moving back in”

Her “whatever, we just gonna need money”

Me “I stole their jewelry it will sustain us a while”

Her “at least you are good for something” we all laugh

Him “babe do you have alcohol here”

Her “Kojo for once in your life buy some” he chuckles

Him “you two get my dick for free and you want me to buy you must be crazy”

Me “I can’t deal with this man hoe anymore struuu”

Her “just tell me you have blow” I throw the pack to her and she

did some lines and Kojo went first and

Vicky followed, there were about 10 lines still in row, I did five of them without stopping

Him "come on now Mercy come down"

Her "babe stop don't do that" they both say and I do the remaining lines and I take the packet and pour

on the table with making line and sniff it all up, I have been on snow for a while now but I have never

felt this way. I feel on top of the world the universe even. Kojo and Mercy are looking at me like I am

mad

Me "what is your problem"

Him "Mercy your nose is bleeding" he says and I touch my nose and I am really bleeding

Her "Kojo do you think she is?"

Him "definitely look at her pupils" they say panicking and I feel myself getting smaller and light headed

Her "oh my God this is not happening, Mercy babe how are you feeling"

Him "stop asking her stupid questions Vee"



Her "her father is going to kill us"

Him "I know that okay" he shouts at her

Her "I am calling the ambulance"

Him "hurry Vicky hurry" that was the last thing I heard before I collapse on the floor, my heart beating slowly

## MOLEMO

I woke up before Soft and I was a bit calm from the anger I was feeling earlier on, I just got out of the

shower; I was in my jeans and white t-shirt barefoot. I take the watches I brought from the honeymoon

and go place them with the others in my collection. I open the leather box and the shock, I am left with

just 5 watches I mean I have watches not this I even lost count, before I panic let me ask Soft if she removed them. I slowly walk to our bedroom and wake her up

Me "baby please wake up"

Her "just five more minutes"

Me "Soft please" she sighs

Her "okay love what's up" she says sitting up straight

Me "babe did you remove my watches from the box" she narrows her eyes

Her "no I didn't" I sigh

Me "can you please go check your jewelry" she gets out of bed and head to her closet.

Her "MOLEMO ALL MY JEWELRY IS GONE, WHAT IS GOING ON HERE?" she screams and comes back to the bedroom

Me "everything not even one left"

Her "not even an ear stud baby"

Me "Mercy, but when did she become a thief"

Her "maybe those people she brought here" I sigh

Me "this child" she was about to say something when my phone rang, I narrow my eyes

Her "what's wrong love"

Me "it's the hospital's emergency room babe" I pick up

Me "Motaung...yes...she is my daughter yes... what when...what happened...okay okay I will be right

there...thank you" I hung

Her "what's going on babe"

Me "Mercy was just admitted at the hospital, they just told me to hurry"

Her "oh my God Molemo, let's go baby" we put on our shoes and run downstairs, heading to the car, I

drive like a mad man to Harmony medical center, we get there and practically run in

Her "we are looking for a Mercy Motaung my husband got a call"

Nurse "Siza hi, I was the one who called, please follow me" we follow her and sit for about 30 minutes

before the Dr attends to us

Dr "good afternoon, Mr. Motaung sir"

Me "what happened to her" he sighs

Dr "she overdosed on cocaine sir"

Me "what, overdosed on cocaine, my daughter, who brought her in" he pointed at the guy we found

her with earlier and Vicky her friend, I charge to them looking scary as hell

Me "who the hell fed her drugs"

Vicky "Mr. Motaung I swear we didn't teach her she was already using when we met I swear sir" she

answers shaking

Me "when was that"

Vicky "sir when her mother was sentenced" she says

Me "get the hell out of here and I don't want to see your faces again do you understand me" they don't

answer they just hurry out. I go back to the Dr

Her "Dr How is she doing" my wife asks

Dr "we managed to pump out the drugs from her system, she will wake up in a few hours"

Me "I can't believe she is on cocaine, why would Mercy do this to me"

Her "I wish I could answer that"

Me "this child will send me to an early grave I swear"

Her "calm down baby"

Me "first we find her having sex in my house" I pause

Her "what's wrong?"

Me "she could be pregnant for all we know, Dr please run every tests on her, pregnancy, STI/STD, HIV

everything you could think of"

Dr "yes sir will do" he says and walks away

Her "let me try and find the best rehab for her"

Me "do you think she will agree to that"

Her "don't give her a choice Molemo, she obviously needs help"

Me 'okay love, let me call Olivia" I say and dial on my phone.

Mercy wants to be the death of me really,

First day back and already I am carrying problems on my shoulders because of this child, is it a crime to

have fathered a child called Mercy.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 125

MERCY

I open my eyes and realize that I am at the hospital, the machines beeping and I am connected to drips. I

mind races to what happened before I passed out and I just sigh, fuck how, could I have been that stupid

my God. I took too much of the snow I over dosed I am lucky to have even survived this. I would have

died thank God that Vicky and Kojo got me here on time but couldn't they have chosen another hospital,

I mean my father owns this place and he is my next of keen they are going to call him, I should talk to my

Dr to keep this between us, I press the button and a minute later a doctor walks in with a nurse, I almost

lose my cool when I see that it's Vusi's bitch I just try so hard to keep my cool, she notices me too and

acts professional, there is no use asking her off my team she already knows what happened to me

Dr "miss Motaung, glad to see you awake"

Me "yeah sure, where are my friends"

Dr "uhm sorry your father send them away" I close my eyes

Me "fuck" I cuss under my breath

Dr "I am just going to check your vital signs and check a few things so we can get a way forward"

Me "okay, so where is my father"

Him "I am right here" he says walking in with Siza and I look away embarrassed

Me "papa"

Him "don't you dare papa me Mercy, I welcome you in my house and you bring strangers in, after

everything you put us through we were willing to trust and love you again but you steal from us Mercy.

You take our things so that you can feed your addiction"

Me "daddy I am really sorry I swear I was not myself"

Him "of course you were not yourself you are a drug addict, you have thrown your life away to drugs

because you wouldn't own up to what you did for me, you had to apologize but you decided to just take

drugs instead, I have tried everything with you but you keep doing me so bad, where did I go wrong with

you" he asks and I can hear the hurt in his voice

Me "I am really sorry; I didn't know it will all lead here. Forgive me please"

Him "you are going straight to rehab when you are discharged from here"

Me "I will go daddy, I promise to turn my life around"

Him "you have been living recklessly so the I took it upon myself to ask the doctor to run some tests to

find out if you are not pregnant or sick" I felt my stomach turning into knots

Me "I am clean daddy"

Him "mxm, you now have a scientific eye"

Me "okay daddy we can do the tests" I say not really sure of what I am saying.

Dr "okay then, we have the results with us, so can you all excuse us we need to counsel her then give

her the results"

Me "no it's okay you can do it in front of them" I say trying to score points with my father; I am shit

scared at this point. So he goes on to counsel me and let me know that if the tests are positive for HIV

that it's not the end of the world, that I can live a long and healthy life, he goes on and on

Dr "you did not test positive for pregnancy and we found that



you have gonorrhoea but we can treat it

with antibiotics" he says and I sigh in relief okay

Dr "but unfortunately you tested positive for the HI Virus" I felt my whole world stop

Me "what did you just say to me"

Dr "Miss Motaung you are HIV positive" tears streamed down my face and I couldn't believe my ears, I

was just shocked, I felt completely numb, regret flooding through me after a minute or so I look at my

father who's face is expressionless.

Me "I don't understand" I say crying

Dr "you will start taking Anti Retro Viral treatment you will choose a time to take it and you will stick to

it every day, you will just take one daily, do you understand?"

Me "what are you saying to me exactly doctor" he sighs

Dr "I will get the psychologist to come talk to her"

Him "please do that" my father said and the doctor and Vusi's piece exit the room.

Him "you will need to accept this Mercy, it has happened and it won't go away. Accept that the

decisions you took have led you here, we are offering you help.  
Go to rehab and get clean then you will

take this one step at the time, I hope you will think of getting  
your life together now” he says

Her “I will ask the doctor when he is planning on releasing you  
then I will inform the rehab center to

come get you” Sizakele adds. They exit my room and close the  
door; I just scream and throw the glass

that was on the side to the wall, I bring my knees to my chest  
and hold close, crying my eyes out. How

could I have been so stupid, how could I have believed Kojo  
when he said he was clean I mean oh my

God I truly messed up this time, my life is over and if I am going  
to deal with being positive I can't leave

drugs, cocaine is the only thing that will get me by this ordeal. I  
take off the drips from my arm and go

lock the door changing from the hospital night dress to the  
clothes I came wearing, take the chat were

the Dr wrote the meds I should drink and put it in my back  
pocket I take my bag and car keys thank God

they left them. I go and peep through the door and the corridor

is empty I quickly walk out and go to the lift pressing the ground floor. I get there and struggle locating my car for a while till I do, I get it and drive off, I don't know to where but I know I need to sell this car their jewelry and find a place to stay while I device a plan.

THREE WEEKS LATER

MBUSO

Thandiwe and I are going from strength to strength and we have decided that we want to make our relationship work more than anything. We spoke about introducing the kids and spending time with them, I want her to know Thandolwethu and she also wants the kids to know me, which is a blessing. I can't wait for us to be able to take all our kids out to theme parks, movies and such things. Having a real woman is a good thing and luckily God blessed me with an amazing one. As much as things are sour

between Refiloe and I she is still Lwethu's mother and I am here at her house to explain to her that

Lwethu will be meeting and spending time with Thandiwe so that she doesn't hear it from outside then decide to go mad.

Her "you sure you don't want anything to drink"

Me "no thank you" she smiles

Her "you do know that she is at day care right"

Me "yeah, I am not here for her I came to talk to you about something"

Her "sounds serious"

Me "it is serious"

Her "okay I am all ears" I nod

Me "so I have been in a relationship for a while now and me and Thandiwe are pretty serious with each

other so much that I am going to introduce Lwethu to her"

Her "Mbuso I don't think that's a good idea I mean you are not sure how it will go with this girl"

Me "I know I love her and she loves me too, we both envision our future together so I know, I am not

asking permission to do this I just wanted to inform you out of respect for you as her mother”

Her “are you trying to replace me in my daughter’s life, what’s next are you going to want sole custody of her” I roll my eyes

Me “you love being dramatic, you don’t need to be extra, as much as you were a shitty wife you are a good mother to the kids and I wouldn’t want to take a daughter from her mother but I will also like my daughter to have a relationship with my partner, I am planning forever with this woman so my daughter needs to be comfortable around her”

Her “whatever Mbuso” I sigh

Me “so here is what’s going to happen. I am going to put down Thandiwe’s details at the day care so she can be able drop off and pick up my daughter when I can’t and also she will have your address when I ask to come drop her off at times” she laughs

Her “wow just wow Mbuso”

Me “glad we are on the same page, I will see you Friday when I come get Lwethu”

Her "oh are you sure you will be the one showing up and not your girlfriend"

Me "stop being petty" I say and take my keys and phone and walk out

URIEL

I honestly feel like something bad is going to happen to me, I can't shake it off. I even have these weird

dreams and they feel so real. I am scared I told Vusi about this but he thinks my motherly instincts are

kicking in since my tummy is showing, I can't believe I found out at 5 months that I am pregnant I mean

this child managed to play hide and seek so long but now he has come out to play. I look fat but I am

well taken care of, my parents are over the moon with this pregnancy you know being an only child and

all they are happy to fuss over someone else. Vusi on the other hand is grateful for our baby, I feel like this child will help him heal completely from the passing of his daughter. My mother hands me a glass of juice

Ma "you look stressed out nana what's wrong" I sigh and brush my tummy with my free hand

Me "the dreams are getting worse mama"

Ma "come on my baby, you are just over thinking things"

Me "why do they feel so real kodwa"

Ma "because you have made them your priority Uriel, you know as a nurse you should know that you

mustn't stress the baby" I smile

Me "you sound like Vusi right now"

Ma "he is right take care of that precious soul growing inside of you"

Me "he is really a blessing"

Ma "I am just so happy to have some new life, I am going to spoil him rotten"

Me "I don't doubt that"

Ma "Uriel my baby I can see you will not let this dream thing rest so please pray about it, nothing beats

prayer okay" I smile

Me "yes mama I will pray for the wellbeing of myself and my

son”

Ma “I will also pray if indeed the devil is planning something against you it shall not prosper”

Me “Amen mama amen” she smiles

Ma “that’s my baby now tell your mother what my grandson wants to eat”

Me “yoh this child is taking my place everywhere” mama laughs

Ma “ aisuka Uriel you have had all the attention all your life” I smile

RAZOR

I have been searching for Mercy that I have neglected other things in my life, the same day she

disappeared from the hospital I asked my boys to look for her with no luck, her cell phone was found

traced to some squatter camp and apparently she sold it for R500 and don’t even ask about her car she

also sold it to some guy who apparently highjack’s cars in Alexander. He says she only wanted R150 000,



I am from the streets and I know how it works so I couldn't exactly ask for the car back so I let them be. I have tried everything but nix, it's like she disappeared from the face of earth, all I wanted to do was get her help but obviously I have failed with Mercy. I came to see Gadafi and Ntombi indirectly though the person I am really here to see is Letlotlo man she is cute, I am addicted to her chubby cheeks

Her "come to mommy baby, yes it's time to feed you, yes mama, it's past your nap time"

Me "sorry Ntombz I really missed her"

Her "I totally understand, she also loved seeing her uncle. And thank you for the spoils"

Me "anything for my niece"

Her "I will come down after she sleeps to fix you two something to eat okay"

Me "sure thing thank you"

Him "bye bye princess daddy will see you when you wake up okay" G says kissing her all over her face

and she just giggles, Ntombi disappears with her upstairs

Me "she looks like you now God"

Him "I know right and it annoys Ntombi so much" I laugh

Me "I would also feel betrayed i mean she did carry her 9 months"

Him "do you think it's easy to fuck, I had to work to get my seed there"

Me "yeah right" he laughs

Him "still nothing" I sigh knowing what he is referring to

Me "nothing brother she vanished not even the tracker can find her"

Him "where did we go wrong with her" I sigh

Me "I really don't know brother"

Him "we tried all we could Razor what happens to her is on her really, our lives can't stop because of her

and her selfishness really, you have a wife and Olivia focus on them when she is ready to get her life

together she will show up and prove, so long as you keep running after her she will never grow up trust

me brother"

Me "I wish someone told me that being a parent is hard"

Him "I wish she can stay young forever, I would rather change

diapers for all my life”

Me “life is difficult man”

Him “just focus on the positives okay”

Me “you are right” we fist bump and change the subject to something else.

THANDIWE

Mbuso and I had the conversation about the future and we agree and confessed that we are in love with each other and that we want forever in this. The first step of course is introducing the kids and making them aware of the new setup and give them a chance to get used to it. Mbuso called to say that he has spoken to Refiloe and that he made things clear, I need to meet up with Sizwe and Thato to inform them as well not because we are obligated but out of respect, not that if he says no or goes against it I will stop, Me and Mbuso are going all the way. By the way my sister is with me in my room

Her "oh and please go meet with Mandla tomorrow" I smile and turn to look at her

Me "no you didn't" I ask all excited

Her "of course I did" I scream and go hug her so tight on the bed we giggle. Remember I now have my

waste management company right? So Siza spoke to Mandla to give me the contract to dispose of their

hospital waste, this is big for me, I now have mines, steel company, oil company and now a hospital on

my portfolio. God you are faithful

Me "thank you so much sis, you are the best, I love you"

Her "it's only a pleasure boo, and I love you too" I kiss her

Me "I got to leave they are home now"

Her "stand your ground sister" I wink at her and leave driving to their place. The door is opened by

Sizwe, he is holding a bottle of beer

Him "aow maTha, ngena. You look good"

Me "I feel good, thank you"

Him "this way" I follow him

Me "is Thato home"

Him "yes she is in the lounge. So how is the company going"

Me "great hey, just got a new contract with a hospital"

Her "way to go girl, congratulations" Thato says high five'ing me

Me "thank you" I smile and they show me where to sit

Him "you sounded serious on the phone" I sigh

Me "yeah, so out of respect for you as my children's father I saw it fit to inform you on what I am going

to do, I mean changes that are going to happen"

Him "oh okay" he says narrowing his eyes

Me "so remember Mbuso, me and him are in a very serious relationship, we are future orientated and

we have decided that it's time both our kids knew that the is someone knew in the picture. So the kids

will be meeting with him and his daughter soon and maybe in the future we will all be moving in

together. In what I've just said to you I am going to add his name at Kayise's school as another person

who can pick her or drop her off, also the same at our son's school and I guess we will figure out the rest

as we go on co-parenting with my partner in the picture of course”

Her “totally understandable Thandiwe, and congratulations you too look good together” I blush, I look

at Sizwe and he looks serious, he scratches his head and chuckle

Him “uhm so you are asking for my permission or?” I laugh

Me “woah calm down sir, don’t get me twisted I am definitely not asking for permission I was just

informing you out of respect as my children’s father, I didn’t want you to hear it from outside or worse

from the kids, I don’t want unnecessary drama that’s all I am avoiding by telling you about my private

life” I say and he looks at me and nods, I can tell he is mad as hell, trying to keep it all in, I don’t care he

can explode if he wants.

Her “that’s very noble of you babe” I smile at her

Me “okay then I need to leave now, I need to head home to bath the kids before dinner”

Her “okay and please kiss my Nunu’s for me”

Me “since they are not coming this weekend you can have them for the remaining school days”

Her "I would really love that, can I pick them up from school tomorrow and I will bring them back Friday

later" she is many things yes but she genuinely cares for my children and they also love spending time with her.

Me "no problem, I will inform them, bye"

Her "bye dear, drive safely"

No edits.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 126

RAZOR

I decided that my daughter made her life choices and I should let her be, I have take a decision to stop

blaming myself for how she turned out, I agree that I might have contributed in some way but I tried

making things right and she didn't want that. there is no use in holding back my life and let my wife and

Olivia suffer because of Mercy's decisions, it is time I gave them my full attention, yes she is my

daughter and I will always love her but it's time I let her get burned and wait for her to genuinely come

and ask for help. I left court a while ago so now I am going to buy my wife some flowers, I get to

Woolworths and buy them, she will love them, a guy behind me laughs

Him "I wonder what you did to be buying flowers"

Me "I don't understand"

Him "what are you apologizing for to your woman"

Me "why do mean" he chuckles

Him "us black man don't buy flowers unless we did something" I laugh

Me "nope don't include me in that please, I am buying flowers for my wife just for her to know that I

love and appreciate her not because I am apologizing for something I did"

Him "that's a first"



Me "clearly mei bra" I say and walk away, what happened to men though. I pay for the flowers and go

get the take away from her favorite restaurant and drive home. I get there and she is not here yet so I

set up a simple dinner for two. An hour later I hear Frank Ocean playing outside and I know she is home.

I go stand by the door and wait for her, the music from the car stop and a minute later the door opens,

she is till singing

Me "welcome home my wife"

Her "oh hey baby"

Me "these are for you" she blushes

Her "oh love thank you they are so beautiful thanks"

Me "not as beautiful as you, come here" she walks closer to me and I fold her in my embrace

Her "you are in a good mood"

Me "why wouldn't I be, I want you to know that I love you so much Mrs. Motaung and I appreciate

everything you do for me"

Her "I did say forever and always in front of our friends, family

and God”

Me “and you live by your vows with each passing day, I am blessed”

Her “the bible says he who finds a wife finds a good thing”

Me “Amen”

Her “I hope you are helping me cook today” I laugh

Me “no need my love, I go takeaways from that restaurant you love so much”

Her “oh thank God, I am so tired”

Me “hectic day”

Her “yes baby, plus I am writing tomorrow I have been studying at the library”

Me “in that case let’s go eat and get on with the studying”

Her thank you baby”

Me “what are you writing”

Her “molecular medicine”

Me “oh boy, can you be in third year already, coz I saw it only has two modules” she laughs

Her “yep two but they are very complex babe” I sigh and we go and eat so we can start studying

SIZWE

I don't know what Thandiwe thinks this is, she expects me to sit back and relax while she plays happy

families my children, can't she just fornicate and leave my kids out of this nonsense of hers, I have to

consult my lawyer find out if I can have sole custody of my children, so she can go and date Mbuso in

peace, imagine having that guy, who works for me by the way come to pick up my children from my

house, he will think we are on the same level. This bullshit must just end, what Thandiwe needs to do is

be a mother and focus on her business. I drop the cup making Thato scream a bit

Me "fuck" I cuss under my breath

Her "I will go get the broom" she says and disappears to the utility room and comes back to clean up, I

go get another cup and pour coffee

Me "thanks babe"

Her "sit down Sizwe" I do as she say's and I don't like the look on her face

Me "are you okay my love?"

Her "I should be asking you that"

Me "I am okay babe"

Her "no you are not, since Thandiwe told us about the change in situations you have been mopping

around this house, breaking things, I mean you don't even sleep at night"

Me "come on baby you are over thinking things"

Her "no I am not so what is your problem" I sigh

Me "I just don't understand why she wants my children to meet her useless boyfriend" she laughs

Her "she would argue the same with me"

Me "it's not the same babe, you are my wife not some fling"

Her "and didn't you hear her say they are very serious with their relationship, what kind of mother do

you think Thandiwe is Sizwe"

Me "one who doesn't have her priorities straight" she chuckles

Her "you are unbelievable"

Me "I am not Thato, she should be looking after my children and making her business prosper"

Her "she is doing that perfectly so. your problem is you want her to not have a life"

Me "that's not true"

Her "Sizwe we cheated and hurt her, we broke her and she fought to be okay, she forgave us and she is trying by all means to get along with the both of us for the sake of those children, I am grateful for that

because I have come to love your children very much and I respect that woman so much, you need to

stop this thing, leave Thandiwe to live her life, she deserves a man that will love and appreciate her"

Me "Thato babe"

Her "No don't justify your pettiness, you never thought she will find herself, you wanted her to mope

around and cry for you all her life, that's not how life works Sizwe. Or what is it, you still in love with

her" I sigh and stand going to her quickly

Me "you know you are the only woman I have ever loved"

Her "then what is your problem"

Me "I just don't want my kids in this fling"

Her "it is not a fling and let me tell you something, you see me and you, we are going to support

Thandiwe, we are going to be there for her while she walks this journey because me and you are the

reason she was broken. Mbuso will be a part of the kids life, they will have two mothers and two fathers

and you will accept Mbuso and make this co-parenting thing work, do you understand me"

Me "I understand you baby" my wife can be scary at times

Her "good now you will pick up that phone and call her to apologize, I am going to get the kids ready"

THANDIWE

Everything is coming along very well, my business is new but I don't want to lie I didn't struggle as much

as start up's usually do it's true when they say when it's your turn for God to bless you everything will

just happen even when you are not lifting a finger. Mbuso and I just came back from meeting with a real estate agent; he suggested that I find an office even if it's something small where people will be able to find us. We checked out 5 places and I loved them all, my man said we should go have breakfast then we discuss which one is the best.

Me "so babe I love the one in Sandton"

Him "no baby I think you should go with the one in Randburg, the rent will be cheaper and it's easily accessible there one in Sandton is hard to locate and huuu it is costly"

Me "true love"

Him "plus the one in Randburg has 5 offices and an open plan. The bathrooms is are big enough"

Me "exactly love, I will take one office, the other will be for the Logistics manager, the other for

Operations manager and Human Resources will take the 4th one"

Him "what about the open plan and the 5th office"

Me "I was gonna make the 5th office our boardroom babe and the open plan the reception" he smile

Him "perfect, as the company grows you will rent the other floor or better we buy land and build your offices there"

Me "I love the second option"

Him "I am so proud of you babe" my phone rings and I frown

Me "it's Sizwe"

Him "take it love it might be about the kids, they are with him angisho" I nod and answer

Me "Sizwe...very well thanks...yes...oh okay...uhm I really appreciate that...I will let him know bye"

Him "and then" I laugh

Me "he was apologizing for his reaction"

Him "wow Sizwe Dlomo apologize"

Me "I am as shocked as you"

Him "so long as he is not going to make things difficult I don't mind"

Me "he says Thato invited us to dinner" we laugh

Him "are we going"



Me "damn right we are my love. He must breathe through the wound"

Him "aow kodwa Sthandwa sam" he says chuckling

Me "ask Refiloe for Lwethu we are taking her with us" he smiles

Him "wont they mind?"

Me "we have 3 children baby why leave one behind"

Him "I love you so much babe, Thank you for loving Thandolwethu like your own"

Me "I would be lying if I said I love you but not love your child"

Him "ungenzani kodwa maDlamini" I blush

Me "tell me babe"

Him "let's stop this game before I take you home and both miss our meetings for the day" I laugh

Me "I agree mntungwa"

Him " you coming home tonight angithi"

Me "wee Lungile is going to kill us struu nasi" we both laugh

Him "don't worry baby I will have a word with her"

Me "what are you going to say"

Him "some grown up staff baby" I roll my eyes

## MERCY

My life has taken a turn for the worst, I don't even know what to do really, I don't have anyone or anything the only thing I have is my cocaine, it comforts me, it numbs the pain away. Everyone has hurt and left me, first my mother, then my father choose that good for nothing woman over me, my sister wants nothing to do with me, Vusi left me for another woman, then Kojo gives me this virus, I am beyond hurt I won't lie really. I wish I made different choices maybe I wouldn't be here, but out of everyone that has hurt me Vusi made me this way, if he didn't leave me I wouldn't have made such reckless decisions. I blame him for everything I have been through. I have been scouting their house for a week now, Uriel is even pregnant, I hate her so much, and that girl stole my life. I see Vusi's father get in the Uber, and a few minutes later that girl arrives looking like a whale, I wasn't aware that tears were

streaming down my face, but why because I am high off my senses, I shouldn't be feeling anything. I

take out a pack of cocaine and sniff some directly from the bag. That's it better. She is struggling to find

something in her handbag, she finally gets it and the gate opens. She walks in and I run quickly before

the gate closes luckily there is a tree by the gate so I manage to hide behind it. I wait for her to get in the

house and after about 20 minutes I make my way in, she doesn't even have taste, there is a huge portrait

of them on the wall, looking at it I feel so much rage, she owes me a life, this is supposed to be me my

life. I notice the knife on the plate with an apple and pear; I take the knife and just bash her face on the picture

Her "who are you and what are you doing in my house" her voice startles me, I turn to face her and she

gasps for air

Me "yes bitch it's me"

Her "Mercy what do you want in my house" I laugh

Me "my house you mean, after all you stole him from me and he

used my father's money to buy it all"

Her "your family is looking for you"

Me "how would you know, oh yeah you are friends with my evil stepmother, how can I forget"

Her "Mercy leave my house now"

Me "I don't think so sweetheart. You stole everything from me and you will pay" I say and I see her

hands going to her belly

Her "leave now or I will call the police"

Me "by the time they get here I will be done with you"

Her "please Mercy" I laugh and make my way to her, we are both startled by a voice

Him "honey I am home and I brought your favorite" he shouts

Her "baby help me" she shouts back and I run behind her quick and put the knife on her throat, he gets

in the lounge in a nano second and his eyes shoot out as he sees the situation

Him "Mercy please put the knife down please I beg you"

Me "she stole my life Vusi, she stole you from me Vusi" he is panicking out of his mind

Him "no Mercy it was never her fault blame me, if you want someone to hurt it's me she is innocent in

all of this please" he pleads

Me "no she was the temptation that led you astray from our marriage, woman like her don't deserve to

live" Uriel was now crying

Him "Mercy she is pregnant please think careful what you want to do right" I laugh

Me "I have thought long and hard my love" I say and slit her throat open, Vusi screams his lungs out

Him "Mercy what have you done" he runs and scoops her in his arms, carefully place her down on the

floor taking off his shirt to stop the bleeding, I drop the knife and put my hand on my mouth

Me "oh my God what have I done" I say as I realize what I have done, I sit down and hug my legs scared

Him "baby please stay with me, don't close your eyes please love" he says and takes his phone and dials the ambulance

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

## CHAPTER 127

VUSI

I don't think I have ever been this scared in my life, I took my shirt and applied pressure to the wound, I am trying my best to make sure that she doesn't close her eyes but she is struggling, I can't lose her and our son, I would go completely insane, I called the ambulance and they said they will be here in 5 minutes but it has already 7 minutes, I am panicking, I just want to get my hands on Mercy, I am going to kill her with my own bare hands. She is busy crying behind me making me angry. I hear the sound of the ambulance and quickly press the remote to open the gate and a minute later the medics get in with a stretcher and other equipment, they put an oxygen mask on her and other things, the two put her on the stretcher while the third one puts pressure on the wound. I am now crying seeing her like that breaks my heart. I was about to go and deal with Mercy when

the cops walked, I am shocked because I haven't called

Police "sir please let us handle her"

Me "how did you?"

Police "the hospital have to call us when they receive a call about a shooting or stabbing"

Me "she slit her throat, this bitch slit my woman's throat"

Police "we will take her with to the station, don't take the law into your own hands" I let go of her and

she cries harder

Me "you will rot in hell Mercy, you will die all alone and bitter"

Her "I didn't know what I was doing please Vusi I am sorry please" I didn't even wait for her to go on I

just took my car keys and left following the ambulance to the hospital. I get there and they had already

rushed her to the Operating room, I was told to wait and the Dr will come to inform me when he they

are done in there. I don't know what to do I am a mess and I am pacing up and down with a bare chest

hoping that anyone will come out and tell me that they will both

be okay, it hurts so bad, I can't lose

another child, it will kill me. I don't want to think of life without  
Uriel, my angel on earth, oh Mercy you

will pay dearly for what you have done to me. I managed to call  
her parents. I kept asking the nurses

what is going on but they keep saying I should wait for the Dr.  
Mandla comes into the waiting room

running and I just broke down and cried seeing him

Him "I am so sorry ntwana yam"

Me "I can't lose them ntwana yam I can't" I cry so painfully

Him "my doctors are doing everything in their power to save  
them"

Me "it feels like my heart is ripped out of my chest"

Him "try and be strong for them please maVusana"

Me "I am trying but the thought of losing them"

Him "what happened Vusi"

Me "Mercy slit her throat, she said that she owed her a life that  
she stole me from her"

Him "that girl is crazy mos"

Me "this is all my fault, I shouldn't have played them against



each other”

Him “don’t do that, you realized that it was wrong, she should have just accepted that you chose Uriel and moved on with her”

Me “I am not over my daughter’s death this is going to break me Mandla”

Him “she is going to be fine, your son is going to be okay”

Me “I beg you please save them please”

Him “let me go and check on them”

Me “thank you ntwana”

SIZA

I honestly appreciate my husband helping me out with the studying, he makes it so easy, he taught me the sticky notes method and it works like magic. He says he used it when he was still studying law. We managed to kill one chapter and I have it all in my head now, we took a break and watched one episode of Grey’s Anatomy. I am honestly tired but I need to revise one

more chapter and I will ready to write

tomorrow afternoon and then we wait for exams to start. I had my feet on Mo's lap and he was

massaging them. It feels so damn good. My phone rings and he frowns

Me "don't be that person" he laughs and I pick up

Me "hey Mandla...what, what happened?...oh my God no...I will be right there" I hang up tears stream

down my face

Him "Soft baby, what's wrong?" he asks already folding me in his arms

Me "your daughter did the unspeakable Molemo"

Him "what has Mercy done this time"

Me "he went to Vusi's house and slit Uriel's throat" I hear the air leave his lungs

Him "Oh my God. How is she?" he says closing his eyes

Me "she is in surgery and Mandla says it's bad"

Him "get up baby let's go see how she is" he says and goes down to put on my shoes, I cup his face and

see the hurt in his eyes

Me "this is not your fault babe. Please don't blame yourself"

Him "I can't help but feel like I am the one who was holding that knife"

Me "hey hey I will not let you talk like that do you understand me" I say and he just let's his tears fall

Him "oh Soft" Mercy is hurting everyone and she is not even aware. Molemo has been trying to deal

with all she just did now he has to deal with her being in jail. I let him cry a while when his done I wipe

him and we go to the car and I drive to the hospital, we get there and find Vusi with Uriel's parents

Me "sanibonani" I greet and they greet back, I go hug Uriel's mom

Me "oh mama"

Her "my baby, Siza oh this is not happening"

Me "I am so sorry mama, but we know her and she is a fighter she will pull through"

Her "why would this girl do this to my daughter" she asks and I have no idea what to say to her.

Molemo comes near

Him "I am her father and I am so sorry she did this to your daughter, I don't even know what to say to

you but please rest assured that she will rot in prison for this, I will personally make sure of this"

Her "I will never hold you personally for your daughters actions, as parents we try but our children will choose their own path no matter our teachings"

Him "and please don't hesitate to tell me if you need something"

Her "thank you so much" Uriel's mother said, I went to Vusi

Me "she is going to be okay"

Him "I pray so Siza honestly" we sit and sit for hours till the Dr comes, we all stand and rush to him

Dr "I am very sorry, we did all we could but the damage was just too much. We lost them both" I felt my

heart stop, and Vusi just went down on his knees and screamed in agony, his cry pieces through my

heart, oh God. Uriel's mother was crying in her husband's arms, Molemo went down to comfort Vusi, I

have never seen him like this God, seeing a man weep like this shows how much he is broken inside

Him "they can't die, Uriel and my son can't leave me, why did God allow this, why " he says in pain

Me "I am so sorry Vusi" I say with my own tears streaming down my face

Him "I want to die too, let me die because I don't have anything to leave for without her I have nowhere to turn to" this is all so heart breaking oh Nkosi'yam

## MOLEMO

We got home in the wee hours of the morning, seeing that girls parents like that made me feel so guilty,

my daughter killed theirs, poor Vusi he has lost a woman he loves with all his heart and his son at the

same time all because of his past. I had asked the Dr's to give Siza something to help her sleep so she

can be able to go and write tomorrow, at least she studied before we got to it together. I kept tossing

and turning until I couldn't anymore, it was just after 7 so I took a shower and asked the helper to wake

Siza at 8 so she can revise again before she goes to write at

3pm. I drive and finally get to the police station. I sigh and get out of the car. My contacts there make it possible for me to meet her, I get in one of the cells and she is in there busy scratching herself and rubbing her nose, obviously craving for a fix, this child

Her "papa thank God you came"

Me "how did you sleep knowing that you killed a woman and her child"

Her "oh my God they are dead"

Me "what did you think was going to happen Mercy, you slit her throat"

Her "I was just trying to scare them"

Me "well congratulation Mercy you scared them to death" I say and wipe my tear

Her "I am very sorry"

Me "isn't that what you are good at"

Her "I really mean it, I swear this time if you get me out of this I will change daddy, I will go to school and study law, I promise daddy" I laugh

Me "because you just mess up and daddy comes to your rescue right?"

Her "don't see it like that please"

Me "Mercy you killed two human beings, a mother and a son for your own selfish reasons"

Her "I will always regret that papa kao kopa please"

Me "you are a curse Mercy, you are nothing a parent should be proud of, you are an excuse of a human

being, you are selfish and you are a complete narcissist, you just killed innocent souls and you show no

remorse for it, instead you want me to make all disappear, you don't want to face the consequences"

Her "you are hurting me papa"

Me "my point exactly Mercy, you are thinking of no one but yourself even after killing you are still

important somehow" she says nothing

Me "I want you get used to this place because it is going to be your home for the rest of your life"

Her "you are not helping me"

Me "by letting you stay here I am helping you more than you can imagine"

Her "you can't do that to me, daddy you are a lawyer please help me"

Me "no I am helping those two innocent lives you just took, I am helping Vusi, and I am helping her

parents, you took away everything from them without thinking twice"

Her "I will change for you papa please"

Me "don't do anything for me Mercy, looking at you right now makes me sick to my stomach"

Her "you love me please daddy, remember I am your princess"

Me "you were my princess, but now you are a demon I can't recognize" I say and turn to leave her she

quickly comes and holds my leg begging me to get her out of that place, I just wiggle my leg and walk

out. She will rot in this place, she will take responsibility for her actions, and she will pay for her actions.

As much as I love her I will not let that influence me to make things easier for her, she made her bed

now she must lie in it. I get back to my car and drive back home. The pain in my heart, my concern just

goes to Vusi and that girl's parents, I can't begin to imagine how



they are feeling, I would have been devastated loosing child, even if it was this evil child Mercy.

OLIVIA

Now what my sister did this time is pure evil, she is so heartless I have never seen anything like her

before, how can one person be like this, if I didn't know better I would swear Mercy suffers from a

mental problem like me but I do know better and I know she is a narcissist, self centered arrogant and

entitled brat, after so long she went and claimed Vusi as her own for what exactly, if she had just

accepted going to rehab she would have avoided this evil deed. i have never seen Steve like this, and I

wonder what kind of heartache Vusi is going through right now, losing the love of your life and child at

time God I can't imagine how it would feel loosing Steve. He has his head on my lap

Me "how is he baby"

Him "to say he is hurt would be an understatement"

Me "oh my God, this is just so painful"

Him "his father says he hasn't eaten anything since the day they died and baby that has been 3 days, all

he does is stay in their bedroom in her side of her bed in her night gown, he is broken Liv"

Me "I am so sorry baby"

Him "oh love, this thing hit me hard it got me thinking Olivia, what would I do if you were to die and

leave me in this world"

Me "oh baby don't think about this"

Him "Olivia life is so short it's scary, I want you to know that I love you with all my heart. your presence

in my life has changed everything about me babe, all the little things you do I notice and appreciate

them, when you do anything love just keep in mind that there is a Steven who is madly in love with you

and would do absolutely everything he can to keep you happy always" I let out a tear

Me "I love you so much baby, meeting you made me whole again, your love gave me confidence to be

able to love again fully without feeling needy”

Him “I want us to live everyday babe, I want us to be best friends with each passing day, I want to seal

the deal with you, I don’t want to live apart from you”

Me “what are you saying to me baby” he smiles

Him “I am saying I want to get my shit together more than ever now, get that company off the ground

and go have a talk with your father, I want to ask him to allow me to marry you, I want you to prepare

carrying our children one after the other until we have a soccer team” I giggle

Me “are you serious right now”

Him “I don’t think I have ever been sure about something and someone in my life”

Me “you want to make me little old me Olivia a wife”

Him “my wife yes” I blush

Me “and me to carry mini Stevens” he smiles

Him “I can imagine you with a big belly, craving sex each and every minute, calling to ask me to pick up

our oldest from school coz you are too heavy” he says chuckling

Me "I would really love that babe"

Him "then give me a little time my babe and I will give it all to you" I blush and kiss him

Me "don't take too long now, you have sold me something I want with all my heart"

Him "I am happy to hear that, can we go shower and go see Vusi babe"

Me "absolutely love" I say

Him "I need to go see Uriel's parents"

Me "I need to ask Siza how the funeral arrangements are going, she was helping them with dad"

Him "yeah Vusi mentioned that, and luckily he managed to tell them all he wants for her burial"

Me "I pray that God gives him the strength to be okay love"

Him "me too babe, this just reminds me of Phephe's funeral all over again" I sigh and think of Vusi

SIZWE

Tonight we are hosting Thandiwe and her boyfriend, Thato told

me to be on my best behavior or all hell

will break loose and somehow that statement almost made me  
shit my pants, why are wives so

intimidating, I was even told to tell my mother to back off this,  
coz she went wild when I told her about

Mbuso and Thandiwe. I didn't even go to work coz I had to help  
her clean and cook the dinner and in my

opinion, she cooked too much food for 4 people and little kids  
really but I won't dare say that to her

face, I finished taking a shower and she is by the mirror applying  
make-up

Me "you look beautiful babe"

Her "thank you love"

Me "what time are they getting here"

Her "any minute now, and Dlomo please behave I am asking you  
again" I laugh

Me "I promise love I won't do anything to ruin this, like you said  
this is about the kids" she smiles and I

continue dressing, we get down stairs and immediately the door  
bell rings and I go open

Me "hey guys welcome" I say and immediately Kayise wants me so I take her, daddy's princess

Tha "hey, I don't need to do any introductions right" I laugh

Me "of course Mbuso and I are well acquainted" I say and we shake hands

Mbuso "this is for you, and these are for your wife" he gives me an expensive bottle of whisky and

flowers for Thato, who appears

Her "oh hey guys, welcome" she says giving them hugs and kissing the kids

Me "these are for you babe, from Mbuso"

Her "oh such a gentleman, thank you they are beautiful"

Mbuso "I am glad you liked them"

Her "come guys let's go the food is ready" we follow her to the dining area and everyone sits down, we

dish and start eating over a light conversation, until my son say's something to distract us

Boy "my friends at school didn't believe when I told them that I have two mommies and two daddies

and two sisters, they laughed and said everything of mine goes in two's"

Tha "tell them you are highly blessed and favored baby"

Boy "I did mommy" he responds

Her "so are you happy boy" my wife asks

Boy "very happy mama" he says giggling

Me "so now that you have two from each side how will you call us"

Boy "that's easy daddy" he explains that Thandiwe is mommy, Thato is mama, I am daddy and Mbuso is papa, we all laugh so care free

Mbuso "that's smart my boy, but what about your sister"

Boy "I call Kayise Momo so Lwethu will be Lele" he says smiling

Tha "oh my big boy, I am so proud of you my love"

Boy "can I go watch cartoons"

Her "take your sisters with" he sulks but takes them with.

Once they are out of sight I clear my throat

Me "uhm I would like to say I am sorry for all I ever put you through, and Thandiwe I am personally

proud of the woman you have become and I am happy for you and Mbuso and I hope you two will prosper"

Tha "I really appreciate that" I raise my glass and they do the

same

Me "to Co-Parenting" I say.

Them "to Co-Parenting" the reply and we click our glasses

Mbuso "I think we should have dinner once a month so the kids can get used to this"

Me "I agree, it is a great idea" I see my wife smile at me and Thandiwe looks at me shocked.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 128

VUSI

It has been a week since we buried the love of my life and our son, I am torn apart I won't lie I don't

even know where to start trying to pick up the pieces of my life. I can't help but blame myself for this, if I

didn't play Mercy and Uriel maybe she wouldn't have resorted to this, I should have ended things with



Mercy first before making a move on Uriel now she is gone and gone forever. Last night in my dreams, the events of my daughters passing played all over again, I remembered the curse Siza laid on me and I broke down all over again, I am solemnly responsible for both my children's death, I remember the hurt I put Siza through and it fuelled my guilt. I am an excuse of a man, I have hurt woman and played with them, is this the universe punishing for everything I have done. She walks in

Her "are you okay, I came as soon as I could" I called Siza and asked her to come see me after her class.

Seeing her I just went and kneeled in front of her tears streaming

Me "Sizakele I am so sorry please forgive me from the depth of you heart"

Her "what are you apologizing for now"

Me "I have hurt you in the worst possible way and I need you to forgive me"

Her "I don't understand"

Me "the death of our daughter, Siza please"

Her "I long forgave you Vusi, you know this" I shake my heard

Me "remember the curse Siza, you said I will never know the joys of having a child in my home and my

son Siza" I say breaking down

Her "Oh My God Vusi" she says sounding so shocked

Me "I am really sorry for all I did to you and our daughter, I sincerely apologize for not making Phephe a

priority for not being there when she needed me the most"

Her "I am responsible for all of this"

Me "no please don't say that, I am responsible for it, it's on me Siza. Phephe, Uriel and my son it's all on

me, you have no hand in this, you laid that curse on me because of what I did to you, the pain I coursed

you" she helps me stand up

Her "I am so sorry Vusi, I fully forgive you, I promise I forgive you will all my heart"

Me "please, I will never hurt another woman like that I swear to you"

Her "it's okay Vusi, that curse I take it back" my father's voice

startles us

Him "we will need to perfume an ancestral ceremony for that"

Me "kodwa baba Dali is sick and we can't slaughter an animal"

Him "that's true son, we will have to wait for your mother to feel better"

Me "she is another story baba, she is not getting any better"

Him "I know son I know" he says and sighs

Her "Vusi, about the request she made, I will go and see her" my father and I both look at her

Me "you don't have to if you not ready Siza"

Her "I will see her"

Him "are you sure about that" my father asks

Her "it is time I fully let go of everything baba"

Me "she will be happy to hear that Siza, thank you so much"

Her "it's okay, I need to leave now, I have to go cook for my husband, I haven't been doing enough of

my wifely duties since exams started"

Him "in that case hurry home my child" my father responds

Me "Thank you Sizakele and I am very sorry" she smiles at me

and bids us farewell then leave.

## RAZOR

Court case after case these days, I hardly have time for anything and even my wife and that needs to

change, at least she is not feeling this because she is currently busy with exams and all of that, so she

spends most of her time studying. We both can't believe that she is progressing to her third year of

study; she has really made me and everyone proud of her. I just got back from court and I had to

prepare for another case tomorrow morning, one of my big shots has landed him in some sticky

situations so I need to find a way to get him out of this. my office door opens and I roll my eyes

Me "some things will never change"

Him "you should be happy to see not this" Gadafi says

Me "I am shocked to see you here"

Him "It has been a while since we got a chance to just sit and talk, we have never went on without seeing each other for 5 days"

Me "you sound so gay right now" we both chuckle

Him "fuck you Molemo" I laugh

Me "but what you saying is true, we used to see each other almost every day"

Him "I blame it on getting married"

Me "I blame it on Princess Letlotlo" he smiles

Him "you should see how big she is now, she even does this thing when she doesn't want to sleep, I

swear she just rebels when I babysit her when her mother goes to class" I laugh

Me "who thought the mighty Gadafi would be thing way"

Him "I swear I love being a father and husband, it is fulfilling"

Me "marrying the right woman does that to you"

Him "you fuck you have been shooting blanks" I laugh out loud

Me "and the way I am always on it G man, I should have scored by now"

Him "give Siza a chance"

Me "I am pretty sure you are not giving Ntombi a break so fuck off"

Him "I think we should start advising man to date younger woman"

Me "but the one's from that village"

Him "true" he says and we just laugh

Me "so tell me when are you leaving the cartel" he sighs

Him "my wife asked me that a week ago"

Me "what was your answer"

Him "you know this has been our life since we were young. They practically raised us Razor. I can't just leave without finding the perfect replacement"

Me "I totally understand, how has that Sizwe boy been performing?" he laughs

Him "he is pussy whipped that one, he no longer has interest in the cartel, his boys practically run everything on his behalf"

Me "these woman have us by the balls"

Him "tell me about it, but it feels so damn good, I don't blame him"

Me "but you need to make a decision quick, before Letlotlo grows up more"

Him "I know already I panic when they are both out without me"

Me "exactly why I left after finding Siza, the worry the stress, overreacting and looking over your shoulder is not cool"

Him "I will have to lay it down to three people and make it extremely difficult then we will see who survives it"

Me "I will help where I can" he fist bumps me

MBUSO

My relationship with Thandiwe grows and grows with each passing day; I never thought we would get to this point so quickly in our relationship. I totally feel like she is the one who was created my rib, this all feels so right, she is everything I never thought existed in this messed up world, thank you Sizwe for letting go of this diamond, my diamond. Lwethu loves her, her

kids adore me so much, we have our mini family every two weeks and it has made me realize something. I called my her when I was leaving the office and she said she was at my house preparing my weeks meals coz I will be too swamped to cook when I get back from way. I pack and walk in and the aroma hits my nostrils. I find her in the kitchen washing the dishes with so many Tupperware containers full of food. I go to her and hug her from behind

Me "hey love"

Her "baby, welcome home"

Me "it smells nice in here"

Her "I made all your favorites"

Me "you are God sent" I kiss her neck

Her "I am sorry but I won't be able to stay for long, mama has a night prayer and she leaves in 2 hours"

Me "It's okay babe, I totally understand, thank you for taking time to come and cook for your man"

Her "if I don't take care of you who will" I smile



Me "baby can we go sit down and talk about something real quick" she narrows her eyes

Her "is everything okay?"

Me "100% love, come" I say and lead her to the lounge making her sit on my lap

Her "what's going on love"

Me "I know we agreed that we are going to hold off the marriage topic for a while, but Thandiwe"

Her "baby what's wrong hle" she says sounding worried

Me "listen baby, this house is too big without you in it, the bed is super cold, the silence is killing me, I

miss you so much. I don't think I want to continue like this"

Her "baby what are you saying, you breaking up with me?" she says and tears already formed in her

eyes

Me "no never love, I can never want that, I need you more than you will ever know"

Her "so what are you saying Mntungwa"

Me "MaDlamini, uyi mpilo yam ngak'nikezwa aba phantshi sthandwa sam (you are my life, I was given

you by my ancestors my love)" I say and she blushes

Her "Mntungwa" she says hiding her face from me

Me "Thandiwe Dlamini I ask that you move in with me my love please, I can't stay apart from you any

longer baby, I need to sleep and wake up next to you"

Her "baby, I would love that but my kids, my mom wont cope alone with them"

Me "I know that MaDlamini and I would never ask that you leave your children behind" she smiles

Her "you want me to move in with them"

Me "they are our kids baby so yes, Lwethu will be with us each weekend and with time we will try for

our last child" she smiles

Her "four kids, my God"

Me "is that you saying yes to me sthandwa sam"

Her "I would love that babe, seeing you before I go to bed and the first in the morning" I peck her lips

Me "thank you baby, you won't regret this I promise"

Her "I will explain this to my mother first then we will talk about the when"

Me "sounds perfect, please talk to her soon" she nods and kisses me

1 week later

SIZA

I have been feeling like shit lately I hate every minute of it, my friend at school even hinted that I could be pregnant which got me thinking so much that I just had to buy a few pregnancy tests, and God they all came back positive, I could have never been this excited in my life, Molemo and I have been waiting on this for a while now and it couldn't have come at the perfect time, with Mercy being sentenced to life imprisonment on two counts of murder, it has been really difficult on my husband, and I pray the news of our child will cheer him up. I found out 4 days ago and went to do the scan and by the due date it's clear that I conceived the night of our wedding. I decided to surprise Molemo by creating our very own

treasure hunt. I wrote on different sticky notes and placed them across the house. I prepared his

favorite meal; I want this to be very special. My steamed bread and stew were ready and waiting to be

devoured by him. I peep through the window after I hear the sound of a car. It's him, so I quickly took

out my phone and made a video, he opens the door

Me "welcome home hubby" I say sounding so excited he couldn't help but smile

Him "your smile is so contagious Soft" he says and comes to peck my lips

Me "how was your day" I say still with the smile on my face

Him "hectic baby hey, yours"

Me "amazing baby" he narrows his eyes

Him "why are you so happy though" I laugh

Me "if you want to find out, we going to have to play a little game" I hand him the first sticky note

Him "welcome Home Mr. Motaung, by the end of this game I hope you will be as happy as I am. So first

can you please go to where we keep our keys” he reads out loud and starts walking to the drawer we

keep our keys, he takes out another paper with instruction

Him “our lives are about change in all aspects, I hope you are ready for this. Please go to the place

where you last made love to me” he laughs and heads outside to the garden and finds another one.

Him “perfect memory sir. With what is about to come I hope you will be ready to make love even when

you are dead tired, and I am sorry for that. please go to a place you often leave your phone and ask me

if I didn’t take it” he laughs and make it to his study and finds a sticky note on the computer screen

Him “we are almost done with this treasure hunt. I hope you are ready to cut down on work now.

Please move to the room where most of the magic happen” he reads and walks to our bedroom and I

am still following him with my camera, he finds the note on top of our bed

Him “sleeping will be a rumor LOL. Move to the only room in the house with nothing” he sighs and

narrows his eyes he opens the door and finds a box in the middle of the room, he looks back at me and I

nod. he goes and opens it. he finds the ultra sound picture with a note written \*see you soon daddy\* he

reads it and quickly look back at me with shock written all over his face

Me "surprise" I say and he comes to me and twirls me around making me giggle

Him "we are having a baby Soft" he says

Me "yes we are baby, you made me a mommy" I say and he goes to his knees and cries holding my belly

Him "I have been wondering my you suddenly had some tummy kante you are growing my seed in here.

he kisses my belly and continues to cry

Me "I am so happy Mo, thank you"

Him "no baby thank you for receiving and growing my seed" I wipe his tears

Me "I am so happy right now, I am complete, carrying your seed has always been a dream for me" he

kisses my belly again and starts talking to it

Him "hey baby, it's your daddy here, you don't know how happy

I am to know that you are in there  
growing, God I can't wait to see you, to hold you and love you,  
Thank you so much Soft" he says

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 129

MERCY

I have sentenced to life in prison, I really can't wrap my head  
around all of this, I won't lie I am shit

scared, this place is not nice not at all, and now that they have  
moved me to sun city correctional it has

been extra hard, woman here are savage and they will do  
anything to survive, this place is hell on earth

and I don't have anyone to blame but myself, when I remember  
how luxurious I used to live, tears

stream down my face, if I knew then what I know, I would have  
made different life choices, listened to

my father and treated every person with dignity and respect irrespective of the social status. Now I

understand what they meant by the saying –what an elder sees sitting down a child will never see even

when they climb the mountain- with age comes wisdom. I wipe my tears and continue to pace up and

down waiting for my lawyer, the one the government provided for me, after a minute she walks in looking like hell

Me “you are late”

Her “you do know that you are not my only client Mercy, I have other people to defend after all you

killed people I have to fight harder for people who are in here for important things like fees must fall

activists”

Me “so that’s why you didn’t fight harder for me, coz you want me to rot in here”

Her “my opinion doesn’t matter, the career I chose won’t permit me to be self righteous”

Me “if that is the case you should fight harder” she chuckles

Her “God you are something else”



Me "can we just start with what we are meeting for, did you submit the paper work"

Her "I did yes" she stays silent for a while and I roll my eyes

Me "you serious want me to ask how it went" she laughs

Her "if you really want to know, a friend of my mine at the high court of appeal told me that we are just wasting our time"

Me "what does she mean by that"

Her "someone rich and powerful who happens to be in this industry is making sure that the ruling sticks"

Me "I know you know who that person is so please just tell me please" I beg and she looks at me with pity and I just let my tears fall

Her "it's your father Mercy"

Me "I know I hurt and disappointed him but why would he do this to me"

Her "that's very clear to everyone but you"

Me "what is that suppose to mean"

Her "during court Mercy you didn't seem remorseful at all, the

way you gave your testimony, you were arrogant, you thought that just because your father is rich and known that this will just blow over, you never gave me you cooperation throughout, you just saw me as a nothing and in turn I couldn't fully help you out"

Me "I am sorry for what I did"

Her "no you are not Mercy, you are only sorry because you get to spend the rest of your life here"

Me "I really am sorry please help me" she shakes her head

Her "it is out of my hands now, the only thing I could help you with is to get the high court to make you eligible for parole that's all"

Me "please get me a meeting with my father please" I beg

Her "that is not my job ousi, if you want to talk to him call him" I have succeeded in ruining my life

OLIVIA

So my boyfriend and I are on our way to his father's house,

apparently each year he holds a get together just to give thanks to his ancestors, Steven did mention that it's just its only their immediate family including his mom and I was also surprised coz his dad remarried so why would she allows his ex to come to their house, so my man explained to me that she would take them with when they were still young coz she didn't want anything happening to her kids, but Steve says his step mother is the sweetest thing under the sun. I am not ready to witness some family drama, but I love this boy so I might as well get used to it now. Luckily his father stays around Bryston so it's not a long drive like when we go to Evie's place in the Vaal. We get there and already his grandmothers and mothers car's are already parked. We walk out of the car and walk in the house, they have such a lovely home.

Evie "oh look who is here, Olivia my darling"

Me "hello Evie how are you"

Evie "I am very well baby girl it's nice to see you again"

Me "same here" she pecks my lips before giving Steven her attention

Evie "oh my baby boy, look at you gaining weight Olivia is treating you well" we laugh

Steve "oh granma we hee, where everyone" he asks after receiving a peck and compliment

Evie "come they are already around the table" we follow her to the dining table and I see Steve's mom,

Noni, an original copy that made Steven and I instantly know it's his dad, I look at the lady next him and I

almost faint, if I didn't know better I would swear that she is my mother, we look almost the same and

now I see why Steve's mom hates me, I look like the woman that took her husband

Steve "hey everyone" my baby says and his father stands up with his wife

Him "hey son, look at you, man you are so fat"

Evie "I just told him that son"

Him "who is this pretty lady" he says extending his hand to me

Steve "oh pop this is my girlfriend Olivia, and babe this is my father, Oscar and my beautiful step mother

Neo” I smile at them and they do the same

Oscar “it’s nice to meet you Olivia and welcome to our home” I nod

Neo “she is so beautiful Steve, and she almost looks like me, I swear for a second that I thought she is my daughter”

Me “trust me I felt that way too” we all laugh and Steve’s mom claps her hands

Her “that would be impossible now, we all know that you are a barren, you failed giving Oscar kids

something which I did” she says with so much hate

Oscar “watch your mouth woman, don’t forget you are only here because of my children, Neo is my wife and you will give her the respect she deserves”

Neo “don’t bother babe, we can’t be teaching her one thing all the time”

Oscar “Olivia sorry you had to witness that”

Evie “don’t worry yourself son, Olivia has already seen how this wild animal behaves” we all sit and

Steven goes to get us drinks and comes

Neo "I am so sorry for starring Liv, just that I see my face on you" I laugh

Me "it's okay ous'Neo I understand, by the way I love that dress" she looks absolutely amazing

Neo "tell you what you should come by and we will have lunch and exchange boutique names"

Me "I would really love that" Steve's mother interrupts

Her "Olivia is my son's girlfriend, if she has to bond with someone that will be me"

Evie "oh just coz Neo likes Olivia you suddenly want to bond with her too" she rolls her eyes

Steve "mama just stop it will you, if you feel like you won't be happy with us leave in peace"

I am so shocked, Steve's mother is just so petty God.

THANDIWE

Mbuso made it clear on what he wants and I want that too, we have grown so close and bonus is our

children get along so well, I know that I am an adult but I need my mother to approve of this first before

I pack and leave, I plan to explain all of this to her and I hope she will understand where we both come from, I love that man and I want nothing more than to be in the same house as him all the time. I just got back from the office and mama is not here, so I just took a quick shower and changed into something comfortable and started cooking, when I was about to finish she walks in with the kids and they are having ice cream.

Ma "sa phekelwa uwena maTha, kwenzenjani (you are cooking, what's going on)" I laugh

Me "haibo can't I just cook for my family"

Ma "wonders shall never end"

Me "you are starting to sound like these Nigerian movies you love" she chuckles

Ma "you spend so much time with Siza she has started teaching you to mock me with my movies"

Me "haii mama, so where are you guys coming from"

Ma "we went to see Princess Letlotlo"

Me "how are doing no sis wam"

Ma "the are very well baby, you should that cute child but hai she is becoming curious, one minute she is doing this the next she does that" I laugh

Me "I have been a bad aunt I should go see them"

Ma "at least you are aware maTha, Letlotlo will forget you and you will start crying about it"

Me "you just had to sis'Lungile"

Ma "wena noSiza niyangi'jwayela I am not your sister"

Me "calm down girl" she rolls her eyes and goes to the fridge and pour herself wine

Ma "do you want a glass"

Me "yes please, and I need to talk to you"

Ma "I am listening" she says and I sigh

Me "so mama Mbuso asked me to move in with him" she laughs

Ma "now you two want a baby that's the only reason" I laugh

Me "yes we do but not now"

Ma "shouldn't you two be talking marriage first"

Me "that is a beautiful thing mama, marrying Mbuso would be



amazing trust me, but we love each

other so much and for now that is enough, we don't want to get married yet we are still going to discuss

it but for now we both agreed to keep it off the table"

Ma "I hear you mnatnami, so you will only see the kids on weekends"

Me "actually mama he wants me to move in with them"

Ma "ngempela (seriously)" I nod

Me "he wants our family in one room, though we will have Lwethu only on weekends"

Ma "are you sure you want to do this with Mbuso"

Me "mama I am your daughter, have you seen me this happy in my life, except for when I had my children" she smiles

Ma "I have never seen you this happy, radiant, beautiful, witty and passionate, until you came back

from that center and you started seeing this man"

Me "yes mama I am ready to walk this journey with Mbuso, all of it, bumpy, smooth all of it"

Ma "and in that case you have my blessings, but don't ever

again lose yourself because of a man,

remember your mothers door is always opens" she says and I go hug her

Me "thank you mama, I really appreciate it"

RAZOR

To say I am happy would be an understatement, I am over the moon, my wife is carrying my seed inside

her body, she is growing and nurturing my heir, and so I pray to God, I don't think I have ever been so

overprotective of Soft, she literally told me that she is not dying she is just pregnant, I just want to make

sure that she has the best pregnancy ever, I am glad we found this out now and she is about to finish the

second year exam and she will be home resting, I have already planned on getting her a driver coz i am

not risking her doing that and getting hurt. Last night after she told me this, I took her to our bedroom

and made love to her, after that intimate moment she told me that she cooked me my favorite and

that's when I scooped her in my arms and we made our way  
downstairs both butt naked, she dished up

for the both of us, this morning I was happy that she didn't have  
an exam and even though I had court I

gave it to my team for the day, I was not about to leave my wife  
and our baby, I still wanted to let it sink

in. we have been in bed all day. She has her head on my chest  
circling with her index finger

Her "what are you thinking about"

Me "you and our son" I hear her sigh

Her "okay my love" she says and sits up and I see worry in her  
eyes

Me "what's wrong Soft"

Her "baby what if we don't get a son"

Me "and I will be grateful for our daughter the same way"

Her "Molemo I know how much you wanted a son, an heir for all  
you have built"

Me "I want a son yes but if we don't get one babe, it won't  
change anything. My heiresses will continue

my legacy”

Her “don’t just say that my love please”

Me “I mean plus you are a woman, you carry the XX chromosomes I carry the XY chromosomes so it

totally depends on me, what I give to you. the science says and proved that the man determines the

gender on the child and if we don’t get a boy, you are the one who is suppose to be mad at me not the

other way round” she giggles

Her “why didn’t you study medicine again”

Me “because I know that my rib would be one” she blushes

Her “your rib was not even born when you chose law”

Me “that’s true, but our union and life together has always been written in the book of life”

Her “you want me to give birth prematurely” she says

Me “no please cook my baby until the 40th week” she pecks my lips

Her “so when are we telling everyone”

Me “I was thinking we could have a braai and invite everyone close to us and tell them, rather than

doing it individually”

Her “that sounds great love”

Me “I will organize everything then”

Her “I thought I was the woman of this house, that I run such things” I shake my head

Me “you are pregnant babe, meaning I don’t want you stressing out”

Her “can you baby just pop out already coz it’s making me an invalid”

Me “IT Soft really you calling my boy an IT” she rolls her eyes

Her “God keep your hair on Motaung” I laugh

Me “let me go make something for you to eat before you make me mad” she smiles

Her “eat me up first, I want your mouth to make me cum” I give her a seductive smile

Me “you would love that huh” I say already getting my head between her legs

Her “yes hubby” she says and I place my tongue on her walls and she moans softly.

No edits.

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 130

#### OLIVIA

It has been days since I saw my boyfriend's step mother and I won't lie she didn't only look like me I felt

so drawn to this woman, I swear even our conversations were just flowing, she shocked me when she

did something I only know myself to do when eating which made me think so much or is it a coincidence

that she did that. I mean no stop it Olivia stop, there is no way in hell. I decided to visit my father at the

office, it has been a while and I feel like he has been neglecting him it's not fair. I am sitting across him

and he is busy with his laptop, whistling a nice melody, I wonder what's with him. I respond to Steve's

text and go on Instagram for a minute, it's boring. I sigh and he finally gives me some attention

Him "okay baby girl I am all done"

Me "finally, I even thought I should leave"

Him "don't be silly I just really needed to finish up that document quick for submission"

Me "okay daddy"

Him "so what brings you over" I roll my eyes

Me "really Razor, can't a girl just visit his King" he narrows his eyes

Him "How much do you need Olivia" I laugh out loud

Me "wow dad wow, I am offended really"

Him "you are this sweet when you want money 75% of the time"

Me "well not this time, I missed you that's all"

Him "you mean that baby girl" he says

Me "I do papa, I love you okay"

Him "I love you too nana" my curiosity got the better of me

Me "so tell me was I a planned child" he laughs

Him "definitely, back then I remember I wanted two children but

Fiona wasn't having any of it"

Me "so how did you convince her"

Him "Olivia your mother didn't need much persuasion, just had to make a few promises"

Me "oh okay"

Him "I guess that's why you look a lot like me coz I wanted you more" I fake a like

Me "you mean that's why I look more black than white" he chuckles

Him "if you have to put it like that then yes, anyway why the sudden interest" I sigh

Me "I am just wondering, and where was I born, where you there?"

Him "no baby I wasn't there your mother just called after your delivery, you were born where your unde worked, he even delivered you"

Me "oh okay, but was Fiona happy after I arrived considering that she didn't want another child till you convinced her to"

Him "it took her while baby, I mean when we came back home with you, she wasn't herself, it took her a



while till she warmed up to you” all this is fueling my suspicions  
but how could this be, if what I am

thinking is true it means Razor is not my father, that brings bile  
to my throat I am so confused

Me “thanks daddy”

Him “are you sure you are okay nana”

Me “I am well papa” I lie coz all of this is confusing

Him “lunch with your daddy?”

Me “yes please and a pair of shoes” he laughs

Him “anything for my princess, how are your exams going” he  
says already on his feet

Me “I am pleased to inform you that I will be graduating next  
year” he smiles and we walk out talking about it

THANDIWE

It is official that my man and I are moving in together, I have  
already started packing and I informed my

son about this and he was over the moon to move in with papa,  
I couldn't really explain to Kayise not

that she will understand anyway, so we will be moving this Saturday and Mbuso has already contacted the movers and they will be here to help us move to his place, I mean our place. I park outside Sizwe's club and walk in, I find Kat is manager and he tells me to go through coz he is waiting for me. I knock and he shouts come in from inside

Me "hey you"

Him "maTha, unjani"

Me "couldn't be better, wena"

Him "I am very well thanks"

Me "when will Thato get here?"

Him "apologies she had a problem with her supplier so she needed to go fix it herself, she won't be joining us, but I will inform her on what we are going to discuss"

Me "okay then no problem"

Him "so how are there kids"

Me "they are good hey, Kayise outgrows her clothes every week she is just becoming this giant" he

laughs

Him "oh boy, she is going to milk us dry that one, I am still getting them this weekend right"

Me "yes but could you please take them immediately Friday after school"

Him "I don't see why not"

Me "so I wanted to inform you that Mbuso and I are moving in together"

Him "oh that's good, congratulations" I smile

Me "thanks, and the kids are coming to live with us too" I say and his eyes pop a bit, and there is silence in the room, he runs his hands over his mouth

Him "uhm wow that was unexpected"

Me "I understand that"

Him "so things have to change again"

Me "not really our schedule stays the same just that we will be with Mbuso everyday now, a change of address"

Him "and when you guys get married"

Me "what happens then?"

Him "will my kids charge to his surname"

Me "relax I would never change their surname, no matter what happens between us, you are their

father and I know Mbuso would never expect me to change their surname too"

Him "I am happy to hear that"

Me "cool"

Him "but can I ask without sounding somehow"

Me "ask away" I say and he sighs deeply

Him "don't you think you and Mbuso are rushing things" I laugh

Me "you are one to talk about rushing" he returns my laugh

Him "okay fair enough"

Me "but to answer your question, we are not rushing, we are just leaving our lives, life is too short to

think about a lot of things, we just want to cease every opportunity at happiness and moving in together

is part of us being happy in our relationship, we don't want to think of what if it doesn't work out

because right now we are in love and we are happy and that's all that matters to us really"

STEVE

I got a phone call from my father asking me to please pick up some allergy cream at the pharmacy and rush it to his wife, he said he is not in the province he had to fly out to Cape Town for some business and coz my dad never asks for anything especially when it comes to his wife I just had to leave everything and rush to his request, I think he didn't want us looking like we are betraying our mother if we got too close to our Neo and I don't blame her, my mother is a hot head. I get to my dad's house and press the intercom and we speak then she opens, I walk out and rush inside, I find her in the lounge looking ashy as hell

Me "oh I thank God I am not light skinned" she laughs

Her "I hate it too, but right now I hate my allergies more"

Me "what are you allergic too"

Her "all dairy products but milk gets me all woozy"

Me "that sucks, I am sorry. When did it start"

Her "since I was a baby, my mom told me that my biological mother had the same allergies"

Me "I don't follow, you were adopted?" I asked shocked and she laughs

Her "yes I was Steven, when I was 4 years" okay there is a lot we don't know about my father's wife and I feel so bad God

Me "I didn't know I am sorry"

Her "I am not hey, I feel like I dodged a bullet"

Me "why is that"

Her "my mother adopted me because of how much my biological mother hated and mistreated me"

Me "why would she birth and hate you Ous'Neo"

Her "well I was a constant reminder of her ordeal; I am a product of rape. The white family she worked

for when she got to Johannesburg from Eastern Cape, the man of the house raped her and I was conceived, and she wasn't

happy finding out, that man threw her out before his family could notice and ask questions my mom

was her friend also working as a domestic in the same street, she saw how that woman treated me and

she was hurt coz she prayed day and night for a child of her own but she couldn't have any, so when my biological mother disappeared from the face of earth leaving me with no birth certificate, my mom saw me as her blessing her gift so she named me Neo and the rest is history" she laughs

Me "I am so sorry to hear this"

Her "it's okay, my mother is my blessing I don't feel bad at all, God came through"

Me "God here is your cream" I hand it to her and she starts applying it

Her "thanks Steve"

Me "not to sound forward did you ever try to find your father" she laughs and shakes her head

Her "they moved away before I was born according to my mom but I have never been interested,

looking at myself in the mirror and knowing that he didn't want me makes it easy for me to stay away

from trying to find him"

Me "you never wanted to know how he looks like"

Her "while growing up yes but mama always said look in the

mirror my baby, you look like that white

man even to the size of your foot” she chuckles

Me “I have always wondered why you are so light skinned”

Her “I wish my biological mother dyed me a bit you now, i would have loved to be melanin” she laughs

Me “you are beautiful either way, I see why dad is mad over you” she smiles

Her “I am mad about him too” that’s true, they act like teenagers in love

Me “I hope you feel better, I need to go back to work”

Her “thanks dear and greet your girlfriend for me” I promise to do that and leave, still can’t believe all

she told me, I need to reach out and get to know her better I mean she and my dad have been married

for the longest time my mother will just have to be okay with this really, she did nothing wrong to us

1 week later

SIZA



Molemo did organize a braai for the family so that we could tell them the news of our pregnancy, he

hired people to set up a table in the garden, it looked really amazing hey, he outdid himself in his next

life he should be an events coordinator. I just finished taking a shower and apparently everyone is

already here, he bought me a white maxi dress that exposes my back, it's so beautiful, our bump is only

being visible now but the man has already started going maternity shopping with me by the way, but I

love how excited he is about this baby. I walk down stairs and all I hear is laughter and chatter in the

garden, I walk out and I see my mother, Thandiwe, Mbuso and their kids, look at Letlotlo looking cute in

her father's arms next to Ntombi, Olivia and Steve are whispering in each other's ears by the pool I roll

my eyes. My husband is standing with Mandla and his girlfriend Palesa and I know they are discussing the hospital

Me "hello everybody" I say loud enough for everyone to hear me

and they all turn to face me, Molemo

already making his way to me, mama smiles and hurries to give me a warm embrace

Ma "you look so beautiful my baby"

Me "thank you sthandwa sam" I greet everyone else and take Letlotlo in my arms

Mo "we can all sit guys" we make our way to the table and everyone sits down

Me "baby girl wait please" I say to curious Letlotlo who keeps on trying to pull my ear rings

Ntombi "she has become something else that one, and I blame Tebogo" she says

Me "I blame him too" everyone laughs

Ma "so you two what is this braai all about"

Me "can't we just feel like hosting our family" I say

Liv "you can but no the is something more to this so what's up"

Mo "you guys don't love being missed shame" I laugh

G "come on out with it" how do they know we have an announcement

Mo "fine, so my beautiful wife and I called you here as the

people we regard you as our family and we  
wanted you guys to be the first ones to know this”

Ma “please don’t tell me you are moving to another province”  
she says in a low voice

Me “oh mama never I promise” and squeeze her hand for  
assurance. My husband looks at me and nods

Us “we are having a baby” we say in unison and everyone has  
their hands on the mouth

Liv “whaaaat, I am going to be a sister” she says already on her  
feet coming to hug us

Mo “yes baby girl, finally you will have someone to bully”  
everyone laughs

Tha “I just know it, your glow moGhel these days could only  
mean you are baking”

Ntombi “I am so happy for you guys congratulations” she says  
and everyone congratulates us mama is  
even crying

Mo “thank you guys, you don’t know how happy I am when she  
told me”

Me “and from that day he has been treating me like an invalid”  
he laughs and everyone joins in

Mo "I just want you to worry about nothing but growing that important person"

Them "ncaaaaawwwww"

Liv "oh boy it just dicked I am no longer the last born" the table erupts with laughter

Mo "a bonus for me and my pocket"

Liv "oh daddy please" she says with the widest smile

Ma "so how far along are you"

Mo "we are 13weeks now"

Ma "you have been married for thirteen weeks that means"

Me "mama please don't say it tog please" everyone laughs and Mo chokes on his rinks

Ma "it's not a bad thing Siza, it was your wedding night after all" when did my mother become so bold

Me "okay sis'Lungile" she gives me the eye

G "can we all raise our glasses" we do so

G "to new life, to baby Motaung"

Us "baby Motaung"

G "I wish you guys a happy and healthy pregnancy may you be happy raising this new life as I am.

Congratulations and I love you guys so much” okay Gadafi has become so emotional. He hugs me first

and gives his brother a manly hug

Ma “when are you coming home, I need to take care of you”

Molemo gives me an intense look

Me “I think I will stay with my husband mama, he will care for me” I see him smile

Mo “I will Lungile I promise” she nods but I see a little pain in her eyes, I will have to talk to her

privately. The day goes on smoothly as I watch people drinking and laughing and suggesting funny

names for my baby. I am grateful that my husband is not drinking with me

No edits

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 131

OLIVIA

I am finally going to be a big sister, this is something I have always wanted in my life, to have someone to spoil and call me big sister, someone to steal my clothes and make up, ask me for advise and tell me the most outrageous stories to get me to send money probably to buy alcohol or something they don't really need. I secretly hope it's a girl, but I know dad would appreciate a boy someone who will carry his surname, coz obviously as girls we are going to get married and take our husbands surname, though I have never doubted his love because we are girls. This new life is exciting but it made me think of my situation more, I needed to get to the bottom of this thing that keeps me awake at night, I needed to know why my heart yenned for my boyfriends step mother, why I felt so connected to a woman strange to me, and I knew the only person who would answer my questions, to confirm or throw out my suspicions hence I find myself in this place waiting for them to bring her, I raise my eyes and there she comes in her orange jumpsuit, looking like the last time I saw

her, this woman has always been a survivor I don't doubt that she has made a name for herself in her in the short space of time, after all her father was the biggest criminal who taught my father all he knows that's how Razor met Fiona. She smiles and takes a sit

Her "I would have never thought in a million years you would come see me"

Me "this is not a social visit"

Her "it's a visit none the less Livie"

Me "don't call me that Fiona"

Her "are you going to hate me for the rest of your life because of a mistake I made with that boy"

Me "oh please don't flatter yourself, hate requires energy and I wouldn't waste mine on you. you are a

none factor in my life I just wish I realized this earlier in my life" she chuckles

Her "you wouldn't be here if that's how you really felt"

Me "let's just say you are a means to an end"

Her "what is that supposed to mean"

Me "you are going to be locked up in here until you die, you don't have to lie anymore"

Her "lie about what" I started to feel like I was chasing pavements but I needed to see this through,

Fiona wouldn't just give me the truth I need to dig it out of her

Me "why did you sleep with him" she laughs

Her "he was an eye candy and your father wasn't around enough, I needed an itch to be scratched and

he was available" she say's like it's something normal

Me "you are my mother and you saw it fit to sleep with my boyfriend, the only one who managed to get

through to me, what kind of mother does that, you are pathetic Fiona nothing but a 2 dollar hoe, you

don't deserve to be a mother" I could see fury all over her

Her "shut up Olivia" she said with a stern voice

Me "no I won't shut up, you have to know that you were and still are a terrible mother, what you did to

me what you did to Mercy was despicable, you are a snake your head deserves to be cut off you

serpent" she continued to grow angrier



Her "I will always regret having to use my daughter is my sick games to get back at her father, she didn't

deserve any of the things I put her through, if I could I would turn back the hands of time and leave my

Mookie out of all of this mess" I laughed

Me "what about me Fiona I am also your daughter, why did you agree to have me if you were not going

to love me the way I deserve to huh" she snapped and finally gave me what I needed

Her "I am not your fucken mother Olivia, I don't know who birthed you, my daughter died during labor, I

couldn't return to Razor with no child coz he would have fucked me up, he begged me to take care of

my pregnancy but I didn't because I didn't give a damn about that child, He wanted another child I

didn't, Mercy was enough for me but he pushed me and pushed me, my daughter died and I snatched

you right from the crib and replaced you with my child's corps. You are not mine so stop it, I couldn't

care less if you were hurt or not, you are not mine or Razor's so stop playing the perfect daughter to my

child's father and go find your own parents" with all these painful words she is saying to me I was surprised I wasn't crying at all, I have become so immune to Fiona it hurts, the only thing cutting deep is knowing that I am not who I thought I was I have been living a lie all my life, I stand up and look her straight in the eyes

Me "thank you Fiona" she is shocked, I take my bag and leave her like that, the pain I am feeling right now, I swear my heart is in my stomach.

VUSI

The pain is still here and fresh, it feels like they just died yesterday, I am still trying to figure out how I am going to move on and honestly I don't think I can, this was the last thing I expected to happen to me, and I didn't have the chance to wrap it around my head, it's harder than I thought it would be, life hasn't been the same ever since that day and I think a part of me died with them. The only think I am able to

do is eat watch her favorite movies and show sit in her night gown just to be able to take her scent in,

but now it has started to fade and my scent taking over, I need to get something new that smells of her.

the knock on our bedroom door came through and I sigh, I didn't want any company, the person is

persistent so I just shout come in and her mother walks in, now I am embarrassed, this whole room is a

mess, I haven't shaved either, she walks in and closes the door and comes straight to me putting the

paper bag down and folds me in a warm embrace I just brake down

Her "I know how much my daughter loved you Vusi, and I know she wouldn't want you to be like this"

Me "it's hard mama, I don't know how to move on without them"

Her "I don't either she was my only child, but we have to try"

Me "everything reminds me of her"

Her "I know mntanami, but remember her love for you and draw your strength from that"

Me "I miss her mama I miss her so much" I couldn't contain my tears

Her "I promise you everything is going to be okay" she continued to comfort me and she let me go after wiping my tears

Me "I pray so mama I pray so"

Her "I don't want you to ever think that this was your fault, God knew this was going to happen and he

let it so he had a reason, we will just have to accept it no matter how hard it is, listen my husband and I

only had Uriel, she loved you and in turn we loved you too, you are now the only child we have left, we

can't lose you to this too, we need you to be strong Vusi please" he words hit home

Me "thank you for not blaming me and thank you for your support"

Her "do me a favor and get your life back, I am not saying you shouldn't mourn but she would want you

to try and move past this, you know how she was" I smile

Me "I will try mama I promise"

Her "okay go shower and I will tidy up in her so long then come

to the kitchen to eat I brought you

something" I smile and got off the bed headed to the bathroom

SIZA

The morning sicknesses has started and my nostril are sensitive now, most of the things smell horribly

now, I even hate all my perfumes they just smell horribly, everything is changing my body being the

most obvious, my breasts are now tender and humongous, my bump is forming bit by bit, my baby is

growing really well. What I hate so far is always being tired, I just thank God that I am done with exams

or I would be devastated, having to study when all I want is to sleep and relax. My sex drive seem to

have deemed a little and that is frustrating my husband, my OB/GYN said it's normal coz of my

hormones but she did say it will come back and he wished Mo good luck, apparently once my appetite

come back he will be the one crying. Ever since we broke the news of our pregnancy everyone fusses

over me and I told them to stop coz this is not my first rodeo. I needed to see my mother, I could see at

the braai that she wasn't okay when I said I will stay with my husband during my pregnancy. I was told

that my driver will be here in a week so till then I will enjoy driving myself around. I get to Alberton and

park, taking the food I bought on my way here with me inside

Me "sis'Lungile, ukuphi" I scream as I walk through the door

Ma "in the kitchen" she shouts back and I make my way to her, she is making tea

Me "in this heat kodwa ma" she laughs and we share a hug

Ma "a habit baby girl" she says smiling

Me "I brought lunch" her eyes pop

Ma "that's more than enough for 5 people, and it's just the two of us"

Me "I am eating for two and my baby and I have an appetite for life" she laughs

Ma "you are going to get fat by your 5th month"

Me "please don't curse me" we both laugh and start eating

Ma "kodwa how are you? How is this pregnancy treating you"

Me "this one is worse than Phephe, my angel was the most easiest pregnancy in the world, I swear she

could sense that I didn't need more stress that time, God rest her soul" I say smiling

Ma "I am sorry Sizakele" she says with tears streaming down her face

Me "you don't have to apologize mama I will get used this pregnancy with time"

Ma "I am sorry I was never there with your first pregnancy, you needed your mother and I wasn't there I failed as a mother"

Me "mama no please, don't do this, it's all in the past, and you made sure that Phephe and I were taken care of mama, you sacrificed and I will always appreciate you for that"

Ma "I chose to obey that piece of shit instead of standing up for you, I just want to be hands on with this pregnancy, I was there to help your sister with her children and I need to do the same with you"

Me "I don't see you less of your mother because you were not

there, you have access to me and this  
baby, your grandbaby anytime you want”

Ma “but you said you would rather your husband takes care of  
you”

Me “mamami, sthandwa sam, Molemo is super excited about  
this child, I don’t want to take away his  
excitement, he has even made plans to take time off work  
before I give birth to be there when the baby  
arrives, he wants to be there every step of the way”

Ma “I am happy that you found a supportive husband my baby”  
she is still hurt I can tell

Me “and I also don’t want to take this opportunity from you, so  
both you and my husband will take care  
of me when this one arrives” I say brushing my tiny bump

Ma “I would really love that Siza, thank you baby thank you so  
much” she says pulling into a hug

Me “I will talk to Mo tonight”

Ma “I really appreciate it sweetheart”

Me “but you are going to have to move to my house with us”  
she nods vigorously



## THANDIWE

We moved in and everything has been going well, I know see that I am a super woman, I have to wake up early around 5am and iron the uniform and Mbuso's things for the day, once I am done, he is half way through making breakfast so I take a shower and once done he goes to shower and once he is showering I wake up the kids and prepare them by 6:45 we are all in the kitchen having breakfast, by 7:15 they are out the door, I am lucky coz Mbuso passes by their school so he drops them off and picks them up. He loves doing it practically asked me to cancel the whole transport thing, luckily today is weekend and we don't have to wake up. My kids are with their father and Thato and Refiloe asked for Lwethu this weekend apparently they have to go somewhere. Me turned and looked at me with sleepy eyes

Me "morning sleepy head"

Him "hey its weekend come on" I laugh

Me "you are lazy babe"

Him "me lazy never" I chuckle

Me "how did you sleep love"

Him "I sleep next to the love of my life every night babe, so I sleep like a rock"

Me "I am glad to hear that"

Him "how did the queen sleep"

Me "I slept well babe, weekdays are draining" I say and he smiles

Him "tell me about it love, I have a suggestion"

Me "I am listening"

Him "I was hoping that we could get a house help, she could live in the backroom, she will help with

making breakfast and getting the kids ready, then looking after them after school, I hate that we

sometimes pick up the kids late or we have to leave in the middle of meetings"

Me "do you have someone in mind?"

Him "not yet but I will contact agencies"

Me "I will talk to Sizwe to give me the lady that used to work for me, she knows the kids and have taken care of them before"

Him "do you think he will agree" he asks

Me "it's for his children he won't have a choice but to agree"

Him "okay babe I don't mind that too"

Me "so what are we doing today Mr" he smiles

Him "I was hoping to get some all day everyday" I giggle

Me "is that so babe"

Him "let me love you today Thandiwe all day" I blush and look at him

Me "you are permitted to do as you please with me your woman"

Him "damn you turn me on when you talk like this"

Me "tell you what"

Him "what's up"

Me "let's go make all kinds of food and drinks so we can lock ourselves in here"

Him "I love that" he says getting out of bed, I follow suit and try to wear my gown but he snatches it

from me

Me "babe" I say sulking

Him "I want you butt naked in that kitchen, I might steal a round or two while we cook

Me "why didn't you say so" I give him a naughty smile

Him "come give daddy some sugar" I giggle like a school girl

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 132

RAZOR

As excited as I am this is going to be the longest pregnancy, I have blue balls coz my wife's sex appetite

went south but the Dr said she will be back to her old self I will even start to complain and I really doubt

that, not when your wife makes all your fantasies in the bedroom come true another reason I believe

this will be a long pregnancy is how she is always sick, I wish I can take some of her suffering after all I

am the reason she is pregnant. She had just woken up a few minutes ago and her feet were so swollen,

after eating the lunch I prepared for her I started giving her a foot rub. Her mind seem to be far away

and I just had to drag her back

Me "penny for your thoughts" she snapped out of it

Her "oh sorry baby, were you saying something" I narrow my eyes

Me "where did you go Soft" she lets out a heavy sigh

Her "I need to ask you something babe"

Me "I am listening"

Her "when I went to see my mother a few days ago she was so emotional about the baby"

Me "she's happy to be a grandmother again" I ask with a smile

Her "she is but that's not why she was emotional"

Me "then what's the reason Soft"

Her "mama still feels bad about not being there for me when I

was pregnant with Phephe”

Me “but you never held anything against her, even forgave her”

Her “I have told her this a million times now but I understand where she is coming from, she feels like

she chose my dad over me and she will always feel horrible for that”

Me “reassure her again love”

Her “I have tried so many time I think only one thing will get her to forgive herself”

Me “what is it”

Her “if she will be able to help me out after I give birth to our baby” my face fell

Me “you want to move to Alberton? I thought” she puts her index finger on my lips to shut me up

Her “I will never leave this house and you alone in it, I am your wife Molemo and I will always be where

you are” the smile on my face right now, my heart never tires to hear my wife say such to me

Me “I am glad to hear that my love” I cup her chin and bring her close to me and plant a soft kiss on her

lips leaving her blushing

Her "so I wanted to check with you if it's okay that she moves in with us after I give birth to our baby"

Me "that's a great idea my love, she would really help even after you go back to school"

Her "you agreeing?" she asks surprised

Me "of course Soft, why did you sound surprised"

Her "I know you love it when it's just the two of us"

Me "we are going to need a lot of help, someone to look after the baby so we can get some sleep or

when you need to go to class and when we need some husband and wife privacy"

Her "you do know that after giving birth we are not going to have sex right" that's absurd

Me "reason being?"

Her "Molemo I will get pregnant again, I will be more fertile"

Me "having another baby wouldn't help or you could just get on contraceptives if not I trust my pull out

game Soft, your husband is a badass I swear" I say with a smirk on my face

Her "oh boy I will just let Gadafi explain it to you since my mom told him" what Gadafi wasn't hitting his

wife after she gave birth no wonder he was moody, blue balls  
ish, I don't think I will manage no sex

STEVE

Something is seriously wrong with my girl really. A few days ago  
I came back and found her with red

puffy eyes a sign that she had been crying, I asked her what was  
wrong but she said she was having an

allergic reaction, I don't remember her telling me she has an  
allergy to anything, I mean my baby eats

everything and anything and lucky for me she remains sexy  
always even when she packs a few more

kilos. These past few day after that afternoon she hasn't been  
herself, I mean we it's festive and

normally she would be the entire summer mood, wanting us to  
start the lituation immediately but not

this time, she was not my baby something is weighing her down  
and she wont let me in. I get to our

bedroom and she is starring at the ceiling, I joining her in the  
same position and she quickly snuggles close to me



Her "I love you so much Steven Bodibe, I love you with all my heart, you were my second chance at love

and my one and only pure untainted love. Everything with you has never been attached to any strings"

her words warmed my heart

Me "I love you too my baby, I love you so much you made me a better man Olivia and I will always

cherish you in my heart"

Her "I know you will"

Me "what's going on baby, you haven't been yourself"

Her "I am okay love"

Me "no you are not babe, you are not my bubbly, witty and mischievous girl, you have been so closed

off" I ask really concerned

Her "it's nothing"

Me "I miss my girlfriend" I say and you can't miss the sadness in my voice

Her "I am sorry baby"

Me "I am going to ask and I don't mean to offend"

Her "okay" she says in a low audible voice

Me "is your mental health taking a hike?" she untangles herself from me and sit straight

Her "I promised myself that I will never be a victim of my own mind my love and I meant, no matter how

sad I am I will never be the prisoner on my own self" I feel relief creep through my body

Me "thank God for that Liv, but if it ever comes back just know that I am here for you my love"

Her "I am grateful babe"

Me "but I still insist that something is wrong with you" she sighs

Her "maybe I am PMSing"

Me "but you tits are normal" she laughs

Her "what do you know about my tits"

Me "woman your body is mine there is nothing I don't know about it, I know all the changes that

happen when you are about to have your periods"

Her "I don't know if I should applaud you or find that creepy" I smile

Me "If you ask me I deserve an award"

Her "maybe I will give you one"

Me "that would be much appreciated"

Her "okay Mr. Tits" I laugh and so does she, I can see that something is still heavy on her mind and I just

wish she could tell me about it

Me "I want you to know that I am here for you Liv, everything you need I am here, when you need to

talk I am available for you baby remember that please" I see her genuine smile

Her "you are the best boyfriend any girl could have ever asked for"

Me "I smell another award coming my way" she giggles and snuggles me again

LUNGILE

Staying alone isn't nice at all, I miss having little voices scream around the house, I swear even these

entertaining Nigerian movies are not filling the void I am feeling,

I can't believe all my daughters have their own lives, Thandiwe is with a man that supports and ensures that she reaches her full potential and he adores not only her but her children. Ntombi is performing very well at school and after she carted for Siza's wedding she has been hired left right and center and motherhood is treating her well and Tebogo doesn't want her to fall to the ground, and Sizakele oh the lord is good, he blessed her to know the beauty of being with a child again after all she went through, I thank God for Motaung everyday for bringing back happiness in my daughter's life. when I die I will die a happy woman knowing that each of my girls is happy and prosperous and they are not fully dependent on those man. I smile at my thoughts and wipe my tears. The door bursts open and they all walk in

Them "surprise" they shout and I just smile at them

Me "I thought you all said you were busy"

Ntombi "busy for our mother never"

Siza "our matriarch"

Thandiwe "the Queen"

Me "wow such praises" the all hug me and sit

Siza "unjani (how are you)"

Me "I am okay was just thinking about you girls"

Thandiwe "ncoooo how sweet mama, we are here now"

Me "I am very happy to see you girls really" I say and let a tear escape

Ntombi "don't cry sthandwa sam, we know that you are always here alone, but we want you to know

that we love you and we are grateful for everything you have done for us"

Me "oh my girls, I love you so much"

Siza "that is why we are spending this Saturday with you"

Thandiwe "my sister forgot to mansion that we are sleeping over" my eyes pop

Me "what about your man"

Siza "they will just be strong"

Me "you left them with kids girls no"

Siza "count me out I am carrying my baggage in my womb" we all laugh

Ntombi "not to worry mama Tebogo agreed to babysit"

Me "did you pump enough milk" she nods and I give maTha a look

Thandiwe "don't look me like that mama, Mbuso is having a private daddy day with all the kids"

Me "you girls are blessed to have these men" I see them blush

Thandiwe "I will go mix us some drinks and pour someone a glass of juice"

Me "what did you buy"

Ntombi "gin and tonic mama, all Thandiwe's idea" she laughs

Thandiwe "my man made me a fan and I swear you will all love it"

Siza "mama I can have a glass of wine right?"

Me "yes baby but just one, Thandiwe I have dry red in the fridge pour your sister some"

Ntombi "I will go start the braai fire" I laugh

Me "you are even braaing on your own, this is serious"

Siza "we just want to have a great time with our mother"

Ntombi "let's bump the music"

Me "move the speakers to the door so we can go sit outside while you braai" I say and Thandiwe comes

back handing us drinks, I am happy that they are here to spend time with me, my heart is at peace

OLIVIA

I had to know if what I suspected was true or not, I needed to know so I can know who I am, knowing

that my father is not really my father broke me, I couldn't care less if Fiona was not my mother, in fact I

was happy that I wasn't the fruit of her womb, I am thankful to have escape that curse, but I needed to

know who my mother is, let me rephrase, I needed to get my mind to rest off my suspicions and I

thought of only one way, I know a normal person would just ask but I didn't want to be creepy and

besides what if it's just a coincidence. I managed to call ous'Neo and asked her how she had been and

like I had hoped the conversation would go she invited me to have champagne with her and exchange

those boutiques names, I couldn't be any happier that I didn't have to initiate that and look like a totally

psycho so nope. I was sitting in their patio having a cold glass of champagne with her across me

Her "so what are you studying"

Me "i was studying accounting but this was my last semester"

Her "nice so next year it's off to the corporate world"

Me "no not yet"

Her "why not baby girl"

Me "I want to be a chartered accounted"

Her "that is amazing sweetheart, all the best with it okay"

Me "thank you. what about you? What do you do for a living"

Her "my husband and I travel a lot nana and I love it so much I left my job, I was a quantity surveyor, I

used to do costs and contracts for construction industry in short"

Me "that's sounds interesting"

Her "when I first started yes, but as I became the expert I lost interest but I was so good I had to open

my own company"



Me "what you own your own company? I am inspired; I wish to open my own firm too. My dad promised to assist with the funds"

Her "yes I do and I must say you are a lucky girl to have your dad finance you I mean getting the start up capital is hard"

Me "I guess I am"

Her "I don't mean to speak out of term but are you mixed"

Me "yes I am, my father black and mom white" I lie coz I don't even know if my biological mother is white or she was just too light skinned

Her "oh what do you know, I am also mixed but my dad was white" I choke on my drink and my suspicion grew more

Me "you don't say ous Neo"

Her "I am telling you nana, I guess that's why we look alike maybe your mom is my long lost cousin"

Me "I am sure we would have met at some point"

Her "I doubt, my father wanted nothing to do with me, he was married and didn't want anyone knowing

what he did with a black woman, but that is a story for another day”

Me “I am sorry to hear that, can I use your bathroom”

Her “yeah sure, remember it from the last time” I nod and stand up going to the bathroom in the

direction of the kitchen, I do my business and spot her comb, she has her natural hair today and I pray

she used this comb, I quickly take the hair and wrap it with a toilet paper. Walking back through the

kitchen I spot the pudding dish and spoon she was using when I arrived in the sink, I took it quickly and

put it in the plastic I have in my bag for when I am on my periods, I never throw away my pads without

putting it in this plastic and today it worked for protecting the DNA on the spoon so it doesn't get

contaminated by anything. I walk back to her and give her a smile feeling guilty but I need to know

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 133

SIZA

Steve called me and asked to come over coz he wanted to talk to me about something very important, apparently it was about Olivia and I just panicked, I haven't seen my best friend in a while and I feel like I have been neglecting her and I feel so bad for this, I know I have a lot going on with me but she must never take a seatback in my life, she is one of the most important people in my life and making time for her should just come naturally. I just finished washing the dishes in my kitchen after preparing the food my husband and I are going to have for the night. The door bell comes through and I make my way to the front door to open and Steve is on the other side, he looks worried

Me "hey stranger come in"

Him "hey mommy, I see we are growing in there" he says and I brush my growing belly

Me "starting to become heavy even"

Him "it will all be over soon"

Me "I hope so. Where are my manners, please come in" I open the door wider so he can step inside

Him "thanks Siza"

Me "what do I offer you"

Him "juice will be just fine thanks" he says and I lead him to the lounge before disappearing to the

kitchen to pour him some juice, I walk back and hand it to him settling on the couch opposite his

Me "you sounded very worried on the phone"

Him "I am very worried Siza, my girlfriend hasn't been herself for a couple of days now"

Me "what could be wrong" he sighs

Him "I don't know really but I was hoping you would be able to tell me"

Me "I haven't seen her since the braai we had here, I have been so absorbed in my things I admit I have

been neglecting her, I feel so bad"

Him "no don't feel guilty please, you know us we have been

cupped up but I realized her sudden  
change”

Me “when was this”

Him “a couple of days ago, I left her at my house and left for  
work she was her bubbly usual self but

when I came back she was down she had been crying and I could  
see that something was weighing her

down and ever since she has been in a foul mood, I have tried to  
find out but she just so closed off and

she insists that she is okay”

Me “oh my God I hope it’s not her mental state again” he shook  
his head

Him “no it’s not that I swear, she would never allow herself back  
there no matter what” I sigh in relief

Me “oh thank God”

Him “just wish she could tell me what’s wrong, I miss my girl” I  
smile and he narrows his eyes

Me “don’t you think she is pregnant” he smiles

Him “then why wouldn’t she tell me, she knows I would be over  
the moon”

Me "I don't know what to think now"

Him "you and I both, I have tried cracking my skull with no luck"

Me "I will reach out to her and then give you feed back" he sighs

Him "thank you so much Siza"

Me "don't mention it"

Him "I should get going before your husband comes home. He looks like he wants to snap my head"

Me "he is not a monster you know he actually likes you for his baby girl, he just doesn't want to show

you" I see a smile of relief across his face. I love how he loves my girl yoh

OLIVIA

I have been contemplating whether to go through with this or not but I am scared of the results, what if

she isn't my mother, will I be okay with it? where will I start looking for my biological mother, I mean I

Fiona stole me from a court in the hospital she doesn't know shit about my mother or where she came

from, I don't believe how one person can be so heartless. I grab my bag and head to Harmony Medical

Center, my father's hospital and ask to see Mandla immediately, the receptionist didn't give me the run

around coz she knows who I am, but it's because she doesn't know that I am not really a Motaung, that

thought alone breaks the little I have left in me I had to try by all means to hold my tears back. She

knocks for me and Mandla shouts come in and I walk in closing the door behind me

Him "oh what a nice surprise" he says with a smile and I try by all means to smile back

Me "hey Power"

Him "what's good"

Me "all good thanks, wena" I lie through my teeth, I am dying inside

Him "all great, you don't have timing I just finished eating my lunch box, Palesa made me samp and

stew, was delicious"

Me "now you are making me hungry" he laughs

Him "sorry about that, so what brings you by"

Me "the hospital still has a pathology department right"

Him "we can't really operate without one so yes"

Me "right" how could I ask something so stupid

Him "what is going on"

Me "I need to utilize their resources"

Him "they are on the east wing of the hospital, they will be able to help" I sigh

Me "I need someone I can trust with this"

Him "we have discretion policy here, the results won't be shared with no one but you"

Me "I was hoping that you could help me with it" he narrows his eyes

Him "can you tell me what is going on"

Me "a friend of mine has a problem, and she is high profile she doesn't want anyone finding out"

Him "what problem"

Me "she wants to do a DNA test"

Him "that wouldn't be a problem, just tell her to bring samples to the lab and they will help her"



Me "actually I have samples with me"

Him "did they both give consent to this" I am becoming anxious

Me "please just stop with the 21 questions okay, I just found out that Fiona is not my mother and I just

want to confirm it" I blurt out and it's too late to take it back

Him "oh I am really sorry to hear that"

Me "it is what it is, so can you help me" I say coolly and he nods

Him "yeah sure give me the samples" he says and I quickly hand him the hair and spoon

Me "those are her samples and this is mine" I hand him a sample of my own hair and he marks it

Him "I will get them to work on it fast"

Me "thank you so much"

Him "it's okay"

Me "and please keep this between us no one can know please"

Him "doctor patient confidentiality" he says and I nod remembering

Me "I will be on my way now, I will wait for your call okay"

Him "expect it soon, and again I am really sorry" I smile sweetly at him and walk out

## RAZOR

My brother G invited me over for a drink and a blunt, he made me go back to smoking weed this shit

head, it was suppose to be a once off thing to remind us of back in the day but look at us smoking it

more frequently God, my wife hates the smell, she told me to smoke it outside and get inside her house

smelling fresh and so I smoke then go brash my teeth and wash my hands off the strong smell and I am

good as new, but I won't lie each time she wants to watch chick flicks I get stoned to get through it, but

please don't tell her this. I park outside his house and that fool is already having a blunt sitting under the

tree besides his garages. I get out of the car and the smell hits my nostril, its good shit. I sit down next to

him and he hands me the blunt and I inhale this herb

G "it's good huh"

Me "very, where did you get this one"

G "one of my boys got it from Soweto"

Me "its good shit man" I hand it to him

G "I think I have smoked 3 blunts since the day started" I laugh

Me "where is Ntombi and the Princess"

G "they drove out a while ago, she said she needed a few things from the grocery store"

Me "are they tailed"

G "ever since she started driving herself I had someone follow here, after what happened with that

fucken King I am not taking any chances"

Me "good man, that's good"

G "has the driver started yet" I laugh

Me "next week and I was surprised that my wife didn't fight me about it, she just said okay"

G "your baby is making her Soft just like her nickname" I smile

Me "and my baby also took my wife's libido" he chuckles

G "welcome to that part of hell pregnancy brings"

Me "man I got blue balls"

G "wait till she gives birth, you will feel fire bro, 3 months of not touching your wife"

Me "what is that shit all about"

G "apparently they are most fertile after they give birth so to avoid getting her pregnant again and they

also need to heal down there" I sigh

Me "so you went through all this"

G "sex deprivation, mood swings, the happiness and contentment" I smile

Me "your ass is all grown up huh" he chuckles after puffing out

G "you were influence enough" I fist bump him

Me "I am glad to hear that"

G "just don't act on the blue balls"

Me "I would never do that to my wife G, I don't even look at other woman, they don't appeal to me, no

woman can ever catch my eyes like that, Soft is my life brother, I would rather take cold showers"

G "I was beating meat" I laugh so loud

Me "the fuck, masturbating nope it's not my cup of tea"

G "I will wait to hear you say that after she gives birth"

Me "just shut up G"

G "and how the fuck did you not know that you don't sleep with a woman after birth you have 2 kids"

Me "it's whatever bro" I say shrugging my shoulders

2 days later

OLIVIA

My best friend gave me a call and asked me to come see her, I needed the destruction so I said I am

coming, a few hours with her will surely push everything in the back of my mind, I drove to the house

trying so hard to get rid of my foul mood, I was hoping that Mandla would have called by now, I think

the wait is killing me more than anything. I get to the house and park at the roundabout drive way,

walking out I take a deep sigh and push everything out, I walk to the house not pressing the door bell,

they know I am coming so they will be decent right, I find Siza in

the kitchen humming some gospel song

Me "hey baby" she put down the bottle of water on the counter  
and came to me rushing, folding me in

her warm embrace

Her "oh Liv I have missed you so much baby" he warmth made  
me let go of my tears

Me "I missed you too, I am sorry for being silent"

Her "I am sorry too baby" I say and we let go, her eyes narrow  
as she sees my tears

Me " I am just happy to see you and my baby I here" I try to  
divert the conversation from me crying to

the baby

Her "are you sure you are okay babe"

Me "I am sure babe, why wouldn't I be"

Her "let's go to the cinema, a nice movie is about to play" she  
takes my hand and we walk to the room

Me "did you make popcorn"

Her "all the junk in the world"

Me "yeppie, where is Razor"

Her "went out to get me some tin roof we ran out of it so quickly"

Me "oh boy, you and my baby, next time you have cravings call me I want to spoil you guys too"

Her "did you hear that baby, we have another deliver person" she says rubbing her growing bump

making smile, that baby is blessed to have Siza and papa as parents. My phone vibrates and it's Mandla,

I sigh deeply and quickly answer

Me " hey...no I haven't...I will check now...thank you so much" I say and hung up and go check my

emails, he emailed me the results, I contemplate opening the attached file

Her "is everything okay" she asks and I want to power my phone off and do this when I get home but

curiosity is getting to me I just tap it open and go to the bottom of the document. 99.9% match. My

heart stops for a moment taking in the news, my suspicions were right, I am Neo's daughter, it wasn't

just a coincidence she is my mother and I am her daughter, tears stream down my face involuntary

Her "Liv what's wrong babe, talk to me" I continue weeping in her arms I stay like that for 5 minutes

Me "I am sorry babe"

Her "don't apologize just tell me what's wrong please"

Me "I have been stressed, I didn't write my last paper well in fact it was horrible Siza, the thought of

failing and having to set back my dream of being a chartered accountant"

Her "what did the results say"

Me "luckily I passed babe that's why I cried like that" I hear her sigh

Her "oh thank God, congratulation my sweetie" I hated myself for lying to my bestfriend, but how do I

tell her this, how do I tell anyone this at all, if she knew she would have to tell my dad and I am not

ready to lose the bond I have with my father, he might not have birthed me but Molemo Motaung will

always be the only father I have

No edits



## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 134

#### SIZA

Olivia must think that I don't know her anymore, I wasn't buying her story about the exam results, she is one of the smartest people I know, and passing her modules has never been a problem, when you look at her academic record she has never gotten anything below 70% and this was the last exam of her qualification I knew she was going to kill it no questions asked, and I don't remember her complaining about a paper after she wrote, so Steve is right she is hiding something and I can tell it's deep really deep, I haven't really spoken to my husband about that day and it has been a week already. I called her everyday and she insists that she is fine. This is worrying me I won't lie.

Him "I will choke it out of you if I have to" Molemo says to me  
as I lotion my body after the shower

Me "choke what out of me manje" I ask confused

Him "you have been off for days now, I thought it's the baby  
making you like this but it clearly isn't so

spit it out Sizakele" okay he just called me by my name

Me "oh I am Sizakele now" he rolls his eyes

Him "don't try and change the topic"

Me "I don't know what you are talking about"

Him "Soft don't test me please just don't test me right now" I  
sigh

Me "fine Mo" I say and sit on the edge of the bed and he sits  
next to me

Him "speak" I want to give him a look, who does he think he is  
talking to.

Me "well Steve came to see me a few days ago" his eyes grew  
with shock

Him "concerning what" he says coolly

Me "it was about Olivia apparently she hasn't been herself in a  
while and he thought I might know"

Him "and do you know?"

Me "no baby hence I asked her to come see me a week ago, I could see she wasn't okay and it was confirmed when she received a call after talking on the phone she checked her emails and I just broke down and cried so painfully" his body tensed

Him "what was the email saying"

Me "she didn't show me love but she said she was scared that she failed her last exam and it was making her worry so the email was her results and she claims she cried because she passed"

Him "Olivia is smart, she has never been worried about her results and after her exam she guaranteed

me that she was graduating next year and if she was lying I could have picked it up, so I don't believe

this story she sold you Soft, something is going on with her"

Me "I believe so too"

Him "I need to go see her and find out what is wrong with my princess"

Me "please Mo maybe she will open up to you"

Him "thanks for telling me and Sizakele I am dead serious I don't want you worrying yourself about anything do you understand"

Me "I am sorry baby"

Him "no need to apologize. I just don't want you stressing, you are carrying precious cargo in here"

Me "how can I forget that Motaung" he laughs

Him "shoot me for being excited"

Me "I love you daddy"

Him "you are my life mommy" I blush

Me "that better not change" he laughs at my threat

Him "baby let me go see Olivia and I will bring those ribs and wings on my way back" he pecks my lips

MBUSO

I haven't been feeling well for a few days now, my woman has been working from home so she can keep

an eye on me, my personal nurse, she got me meds and I am beginning to feel better, I hate doctors so I

avoided going even though she begged me to, those people only want to inject us and I despise needles,

I just had chicken soup and took my meds, she was sitting by the dining table busy on her laptop, those

eye glasses make her look sexy, she has her eyes glued to the screen, the only time leaving the laptop is

when browsing the file next to her. Boss Lady, I am a lucky man. The door bell rings and I frown, the only

person who knows the pin for the gate is Refiloe for when she brings my daughter, I tried standing up

Her "no no no, you sit your fine ass down Mr. you need all the rest you can get mister I will get the door"

Me "come on baby it's not like I was going to lift rocks" she chuckles and goes to open the door, a

second later she walks in with two woman I don't like laying my eyes on, I stand up and my woman gives

me a warning look but says nothing, probably wondering who the old woman with Refiloe

Ma "Mbuso mntanmi" she says and I shoot her an intense gaze

Me "what do you want here" I say and Thandiwe makes her way to my side

Ma "I come in peace please son"

Me "peace huh" I laugh and sit on my couch

Her "please take a sit" my woman is the one with manners, they sit on the vacant couch

Ma "thank you sisi, Mbuso who is this beautiful respectful girl"

Me "not that it's any of your business but she is the woman I am with, her name is Thandiwe"

Ma "she is very beautiful" I smile because that is true

Me "that she is, has the purest heart even" I say

Her "thank you mama, I will go fix you something to drink" she says and disappears to the kitchen

Me "what are you two doing in my house" I am back to being cold, I was only softened because we

were talking about the love of my life

Ref "Mbuso please mama did say we come in peace"

Me "I will ask again what do you want in my house" my mother cried

Ma "I am very sorry son for keeping the truth from you, I didn't

mean to, I just wanted to keep the  
peace in the house, I was mad at Mphathi and Refiloe for what  
they did, but I you were happy being a  
father I didn't want to hurt you believe me please"

Me "make me happy by letting me live a lie mama seriously" I  
felt mad real mad

Ma "I am sorry mfana wami, I will never hurt you like that again  
please forgive me please" I look up at

Thandiwe is standing behind me giving me a pleading look

Me "what you did to me hurt mama I won't lie"

Ma "I know my son and I regret it believe me I do"

Me "I don't know where we would start mending our  
relationship mama"

Ma "I am asking for you forgiveness son and after that we will  
take it a day at a time" my woman nods

vigorously at me, I sigh deeply

Me "fine ma" I say

Ref "I just hope one day you will forgive me too" I just look at  
her, Thandiwe places the tray with  
refreshments on the coffee table

Her "here is some juice mama, I will start making you something to eat"

Ma "don't worry about food I ate already, the juice is fine thank you darly" she says politely

Her "okay ma, I was working when you came so I will just go and finish off"

Ma "no problem" she says and Thandiwe goes back to the dining table and gets busy again, they start

drinking the juice Thandiwe served but I can see that something is hanging on their shoulders, there is

more to what brought my mother here

Me "is everything okay mama" I ask and her eyes look at me dark

Ma "hiiii Mbuso mntanami"

Me "khuluma ma (speak ma)" she sighs deeply

Ma "a while ago I had a conversation with your brother Mphathi" I sigh

Me "is this something I need to know"

Ma "yes, he wants to introduce Bandile and Sam to the ancestors as his"

Me "where do I fit in here"



Ma "we went to consult the ancestors and you need to hand them over to your brother first so they are not recognized as yours but his" I laugh

Me "that's the real reason you are here mama you don't give a damn about me and asking for forgiveness you came because your precious son needs something from me"

Ma "no son, I mean it I want to mend our relationship"

Me "I have been back for months mama but you never cared to reach out until now that your golden boy needs something"

Ma "don't look at it like that please"

Me "take your co-witch and get the hell out of my house" I say shouting, mad as hell

Ma "Mbuso please"

Me "I am not going to repeat myself, get the fuck out of my house now" I roar and throw the glass to the wall and they quickly stand and hurry out, I am fuming my mother has a nerve. She doesn't care about me or our relationship. My breathing has spiked now, my woman is near me within the blink on

an eye

Her "baby calm down please, take deep breaths please" she says  
helping me sit and folds me in her  
warm embrace and I just cry it out

OLIVIA

I left Stevens house almost a week ago, when he was at work I  
packed what was mine and came back to  
the flat, this place doesn't feel like home anymore, it's cold and  
dull. The bed is too big and the nights  
too long, I can't sleep I haven't slept in days, all I am able to do  
is stare at the ceiling hoping that answers  
will fall, I have so many to ask but no one to answer me, it's  
hard its painful. Steve has been trying to get  
a hold of me but I just can't answer, he is going crazy he doesn't  
know what is going on with me, he  
comes here every day but I just can't open, how do I look the  
love of my life in the eye and tell him that  
my mother is his step mother, that we are step brother and  
sister, it hurts, I don't want to lose Steve, I

love him so much. My world is crumbling down and I don't know how to stop it. There is a knock on the door, I just ignore it like I have been doing for the past few days. The person is persistent but shame they are just wasting their time, I am not opening

Him "Olivia open this damn door or I will break it down, I know you are in there coz your car is in the parking lot" my father's voice said behind the door, I sigh and stand up knowing that he will really break the door. I open and he is looking grumpy

Me "papa" I say getting back to the couch, I hear him closing the door

Him "Olivia" he says in a low tone, as if he is defeated

Me "what brings you by"

Him "because I am worried about you baby girl. Siza told me what happened"

Me "I told her what happened you shouldn't worry I passed, I am graduating, my dream of being a chartered accountant is still brewing"

Him "I have never doubted that"

Me "so don't worry" he sighs

Him "I worry because I know that is not the reason why you are not okay" he says

Me "you are blowing things out of proportion" I say and change the channel of the TV I wasn't even watching

Him "Olivia don't do this to me" he says this time with a voice laced with pain, I glance at him and his

face is wearing the same expression as his voice

Him "is your mental state coming back to you? please baby if that is the case talk to me and let me help

you, I can't bare to see you like that again, I wouldn't know what to do with myself, Liv don't make me

fail you again please" his words just broke my heart and when a tear escaped his eye I knew he was

really scared for me, my father never cries but he thinks he is losing me to my mind again and it makes

him sad, imagine how sad he will be when he learns I am not his child

Me "it's not that daddy I promise"

Him "then what is it Olivia please, not knowing what is happening to you will kill me more"

Me "if I tell you everything will change"

Him "I am your father baby trust me please" hearing him call himself that made me cry moving to his embrace

Me "it hurts so bad papa it cuts way deeper"

Him "tell me so I can make it all better please" he says holding me tighter I stayed in his arms crying,

after 30 minutes or so I let go and take my phone and show him the DNA results

Him "DNA for who" I look at his confusion and my tears returned

Me "I just found out that I am not your child or Fiona's child" he laughed

Him "that's preposterous baby, who told you that" I explained everything to him and by the same I was

done he was on his knees in front of me tears streaming down his face, my hands in his

Me "I never know anything about this baby I am so sorry"

Him "I am not yours papa and it's killing me"

Me "I don't care if we don't have the same blood I don't care if biologically I am ruled out as your father,

you are my daughter Olivia, mine blood or not. No one nor anything can change the fact that you are my

little girl. I love you and as much as this is breaking my heart I will not love you any less or differently, I

am your father do you understand me" he says wiping my tears

Me "you are my father" I say but to convince myself

Him "look at me" I look at him in the eyes

Him "you are my baby and I will always be your father okay" I nod vigorously

Me "I love you so much daddy I don't want to lose you"

Him "Olivia this changes nothing I promise" he says and I don't miss the genuineness in his voice, the voice filled with so much pain.

Me "daddy can I go home with you"

Him "I wanted to ask that, come let's go"

Me "you promise that nothing will change"

Him "I promise baby, now promise me that you will never see me as just another man but always your

father and promise that you will not see yourself any less my princess”

Me “I promise”

Him “let me get you home then” I nod and put on my shoes taking my phone then we had out

RAZOR

I really cannot believe what I am going through right now, my poor baby girl; I don't know how she is

keeping things together. Fiona is an animal I can't believe I once cared about that snake, she keeps

hurting Olivia time and a time again and she keeps surviving her blows they might leave her wounded by

they don't break her to a point of no return. She might not be my blood but she took the tat spirit from

me, knowing that my blood is not the same as hers kills me to the core of my heart, thinking of the child,

my child that Fiona replaced Olivia with after she stole her breaks my heart too, I lost all my children

because of that damn woman, Fiona this time I won't do

anything to you, this time for my daughters  
pain I give you to God. My wife would be proud of me after  
saying that. I get in the house after going to  
get Soft some wings and ribs from club nations, that's her  
addiction now. She and Liv are in the lounge  
laughing over something.

Soft "and I thought you were lost with my food"

Me "I wouldn't dare" I say handing her the take away and sit  
next to Olivia

Soft "thanks hubby, say thank you daddy" she says to her bump  
making Olivia and I laugh

Me "it's only a pleasure my people" she starts eating not even  
offering us any. Olivia's phone rings and  
she looks at it and sighs

Soft "Steve again"

Liv "yes" she says in a low voice

Me "you need to talk to that poor boy Olivia" I say

Liv "papa we are step siblings"

Me "so what Liv"



Liv "it's wrong daddy"

Soft "it's not incest babe. Just talk to him please he is losing his mind I have even ran out of excuses"

Liv "I am sorry I making you do this"

Me "Olivia I demand that you speak to that boy and soon, he deserves to know why you have been

doing this to him, you claim to love him so much so why are you hurting him so bad"

Liv "daddy"

Soft "Molemo is right babe"

Liv "my father and Best friend are ganging up on me"

Me "that's not what this is, I just don't want you to hurt yourself more, already all of this is hurting you

so don't add to your pain"

Liv "okay I will call him and meet him tomorrow"

Me "and I also wanted to talk about your biological mother"

Liv "what about her"

Me "would you like her to know about you"

Liv "I don't know I just..." I disturb her

Me "I will not see this as a sign of betrayal, I will not love you any less"

Liv "are you sure" she asks really concerned

Me "I swear my princess" I kiss her knuckles

Liv "I would love for her to know and possibly have a relationship with her, but I want to speak to Steve first"

Me "okay baby, and if she doesn't feel the same I don't want you to feel like you are the problem, if she

doesn't want to get to know you she is missing out on getting to know one of the most amazing people

in the world, and I will love you enough to feel the void okay"

Liv "I love you so much Razor"

Me "I love you too angel" she snuggles in my arms, the pain still fresh just being strong for Olivia.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 135

STEVE

I am losing my mind with each passing day I don't see or talk to her, I don't even know what she is going

through and she is shutting me out, I just want to be there for her, she the biggest part of me and I wish

she could trust me enough to carry whatever it is with her. I have been at home ever since she went

awol on me, having a friend who runs a hospital came in handy coz he managed to book me off and

emailed the letter to my boss, who told me to take it easy and get well soon, I was shocked but grateful

that I don't have to go to work, I wouldn't have been all over the place distracted by the thoughts of my

girlfriend. I am sitting in my lounge with a glass of hard liquor in my hand, I am watching TV or should I

say the TV is watching me. The door opens and I quickly get up with so much hope and God it's her, it's

my baby. I don't wait for her to say anything; I quickly fold her in my arms and hug her like it's the last time.

Her "I am so sorry baby" she says already crying

Me "never do this to me again please" I say to her and she tightens her hold on me

Her "I love you so much I am really sorry baby"

Me "what's going on Olivia" she just broke down in my arms breaking my heart

Her "it hurts baby it hurts so bad" she says

Me "please come and sit and tell me what is going on baby please, don't shut me out"

Her "I am going to ask first then I will tell you everything" I nod and we go to the lounge

Me "I am listening baby" I say holding her hands in mine

Her "baby when did your father meet with his wife" I narrow my eyes

Me "my parents separated when I was 8 but divorced when I was 10 babe, but my dad had already been

dating her during the separation" I see relief flood through her

Her "the last time we were all at your house, your mother said ous'Neo is barren"

Me "my mom assumed that since my dad and her don't have any kids and she also didn't have any kids

of her own" I saw a tear running down her cheek as I said that

Her "I understand why they assumed she was barren, but she is not"

Me "how would you know this baby" I ask really confused she goes silent for a while fondling with her

fingers, she is a nervous wreck

Her "because...uhm...because...I am her daughter" she says between sobs, I look at her shocked

Me "what, what do you mean baby, your mom is in prison"

Her "Fiona isn't my mother, she told me that herself and I wondered why I would look like your step

mother so I stole a few things with her DNA and did a test secretly and it proves that I am her daughter"

to say I am shocked would be an understatement

Me "Olivia what are you saying to me"

Her "Fiona stole me from the hospital and replaced me with her dead child" she says in a low voice

obviously in pain

Me "baby I am so sorry my love very so sorry" I hug her

Her "I was avoiding you because I was scared that we could be siblings"

Me "I understand this love but the time frame doesn't add up.  
You were already born when my dad and

Ous'Neo got together" she sighed deeply in relief

Her "I am just glad for that really"

Me "I can only imagine what you are going through baby, but I  
want you to know that I am here for you

my love, always remember that you are not alone in this, I will  
be with you every step of the way"

Her "I really appreciate that my baby" she says and places a soft  
kiss on my lips

SIZWE

Thandiwe came to see me a few days ago and asked that I  
please let her have the housekeeper that

used to help her with the kids because she can't always be  
available to pick the kids up and with school

starting next year she is surely gonna need help, so I agreed to  
her request after speaking to my wide

about it of course. Today I didn't go to the club because I  
offered to drive her to Thandiwe and Mbuso's

house, she was still in her room packing the last of her things,  
she has been living in my house since

Thandiwe and I bought this place after getting married. She is a  
great help around the house I surely will

miss her but my children need her more, and with what's  
happening in the country I trust her. The front

door opened and clicking sounds from high heels approach the  
lounge, my wife home this early,

impossible. My mother appears and I roll my eyes

Me "how did you know I was home mother"

Her "hello to you too son, I am very well thanks"

Me "sorry about that"

Her "where did your manners go" she says smacking my head

Me "mother" I say

Her "shut up you fool" she says sitting down and crossing her  
legs

Me "mother how did you know I am home"

Her "I went to the salon to get my nails done and my daughter  
in law mentioned that you are home"

Me "okay then to what do I owe this visit"

Her "tell me when did you become such a wimp"

Me "what have I done now Mother" I say sounding bored

Her "you have become weak son"

Me "mother stop being vague and get straight to the point please" she cliques her tongue

Her "I am disappointed in you Sizwe, why didn't you tell me that Thandiwe took my grandchildren and went to stay with her boyfriend"

Me "maybe it slipped my mind ma" she laughs

Her "I hate it Sizwe I don't want my grandkids around that man"

Me "Mbuso is a grat guy, he loves my kids"

Her "just listen to yourself sounding like a little bitch, I didn't raise a coward"

Me "how exactly am I being a coward ma"

Her "you are letting another man raise your kids"

Me "we are co-parenting mama no big deal"

Her "listen to me you fool, you are going to contact the lawyers and file for sole custody of my



grandchildren”

Me “why would I do that”

Her “because they are Dlomo they belong with us”

Me “they have a very loving mother mama and they love this arrangement so why would I want to bring

chaos to a perfect set up”

Her “listen here Sizwe”

Me “no you listen to me mama, I have hurt Thandiwe it’s enough I will not take away our kids from her

the fact that we are making this work and we are good friends is enough for us and enough to raise our

children perfectly, we have stability, we are content and we are happy, whether Thandiwe marries this

guy my kids will always be mine and I will not change this thing we have for anything or anyone not even

you mama so stop trying to get me to break Thandiwe coz it is not going to happen. Excuse me I need to

drive Ma’Gloria to Thandiwe, you can stay if you want” I say leaving her shocked as hell

1 week later

OLIVIA

The day I decided to tell our Neo that she is my mother is finally here and I am nervous as hell, what if

she doesn't love me or want anything to do with me, I don't think I will take the rejection very well. I

have my father and he has assured me that if she doesn't want me he will be there to fill in the void and

I really appreciate him for loving me past this, this is not easy on him too but he is keeping it in just for

me and I have never known a love like his. The only good thing that came out of this ordeal was being

his princess. He holds my hand and squeezes

Dad "everything is going to be okay my love I promise" he says and I smile at him

Me "I pray so papa"

Dad "is your boyfriend going to meet us there"

Me "he texted and said he is already there and his father and my m...I mean his step mother are already waiting" he sighs

Dad "it's okay baby you can call her your mother because that's what she is"

Me "thank you for doing this with me papa I appreciate it so much"

Dad "I will do anything for you Liv" he kisses my knuckles and continues to drive while I give him

directions. We finally park outside behind Steven's car

Dad "ready" I nod vigorously and we walk out of the car towards the house, before we could even

knock Steve opened and we walk in, his dad and my mother are sitting in the couch holding hands

They stand up once we are fully in the room and Steve introduces them to my father and vice versa

Him "it's nice to meet you Mr. Motaung and welcome once again Olivia" Steve's father says

Me "thank you"

Her "you look beautiful as always nana" she says to me with so much warmth I can only hope she will

still be like this when she finds out

Him "Steve said that you have something really important to tell us" he says concerned

Dad "yes we do and it's a very sensitive issue that recently came to our attention, and I won't lie it has

hurt my daughter and I so bad and before I say it Neo I would really like to apologize to you sincerely. I

just want you to know that Fiona is rotting in jail for her crimes"

Her "what is going on" panic fills her up visible on her face

Dad "there is no easy way to say so I am just going to say it straight. My princess her found out that my ex

wife and I are not her biological parents, my ex wife admitted to her that when our daughter died she

replaced Olivia with the corpse and stole Liv from her court" I say and I see both of them shocked Ous

Neo with tears streaming down her face obviously connecting the dots

Dad "she had her suspicions and investigated, she took something with your DNA and got it tested

against hers and the results came back 99.9% positive"

Her "what, please tell me that this is a sick joke please" she says and I just cry

Dad "that is the truth and I am very sorry, but my princess is your biological daughter, you buried my

biological daughter" she screams her pain and Steve's father just holds her close

Him "shhh shhh I am sorry my love"

Her "it hurts love it hurts so bad all these years I thought my child died, I lived in fear that I didn't give

you kids because I couldn't bare loosing another child again"

Him "please don't do this to yourself. I have never complained about not having kids, I am sorry for all

the pain you went through, but the truth is reviled your daughter is here in front of you"

Me "I am sorry ous'Neo I really am" I say with my own tear and my dad and Steve both take my hand and comfort me

Him "don't apologize Olivia you were also a victim, no one can blame you. Only that sick woman"

Her "who would do such a painful thing. Why would another woman do this to a fellow sister"

Dad "Fiona is a sick woman, she is selfish" the pain in my heart

right now. My mother hasn't given me a hug or told me that it's going to be okay or tell me she is happy to have me back and it just broke my heart more

Her "I can't wrap my head around everything, I am confused, I am hurt I don't know to feel about all of this, I mean I mourned the death of my daughter for a long time and having this whole thing come back is just too much for me" she says and pain that hits my heart

Me "daddy now that we have told the truth can we go" he nodded and I know he understood that I am dying inside coz this woman is not giving me attention

Dad "this is my number and address in case you want to talk more" my father places a paper on the table

Him "thank you so much for bringing this to our attention I really appreciate it" Steven's father says

looking at me with pity. I was about to walk out when an idea hits me after I eyed the scissor on the

table. I removed my wig and gave it to my father, cutting a my hair a bit and place it on the table

Me “just to give you peace of mind, you can do the DNA test again” I said walking out with a broken heart.

SIZA

It's really hard enjoying my pregnancy when my husband is going through so much, finding out that Olivia isn't his has been taking its toll on our relationship, he isn't allowing himself to feel pain because he wants to be strong for Olivia and I commend him for his undying love but I wish he would allow himself to show that he is hurt and let me be there for him. This is not how I imagined our first pregnancy and I don't want to lie it's hurting but I don't want to seem selfish needed him to celebrate this new life while he is dealing with so much. Molemo was out with Olivia so I decided to keep to my promise and go see Dali, my driver drives like a turtle and I know he is following instructions so I don't scold him, we get to the hospital after forever and I find Vusi there with his father. I won't lie this is not

Dali. She is a shadow of her old self. This woman used to torment me so much it hurts still, seeing her brings back the memories of my daughter, tears just came rushing down. I am stuck by the door a part of me wants to leave and before I could turn back Mr. Khumalo notices me

Him "Siza, please come in mntanami" I sigh

Me "sanibonani ninjani (hello how are you)" I greet with the fakest smile I have ever given

Him "we are well thank you"

Vusi "I never thought you would really come see her"

Me "I promised I would" I say and I wish I never gave my word

Vusi "I appreciate this really" I walk further in and sit down on the vacant chair

Him "Dali Vuka, Siza is here to see you" he says shaking her a bit"

Her "did you say Siza"

Vusi "yes ma, she is here" he head turns till her eyes find me

Her "oh Sizakele, thank you for coming"



Me "how are you"

Her "now that you are here I am well"

Me "oh I see"

Her "ngicela ungi qolele Sizakele (please forgive me) I have so many bad things to you but out of

everything I am sorry for taking away one person who meant the whole world to you, I am a woman and

I should have been your helper, I should have helped raising Phephe so that you went to school, but I

was vile and it cost me my grandchild. I have done so many bad things to you I wish I had the strength to

ask for forgiveness for each of my past transgressions" she says and I tears stream down uncontrollably

Me "I wont lie Dali, no one has ever hurt me the way that you did not even Dlamini my father. You took

away the one person that meant more to me" she stretched out her hand to me and I sigh and take it

Her "I will never forgive myself for that. I wish and pray that in my next life I will be a much better

person, all I ask is your forgiveness"

Me "its okay Dali, I forgive you"

Her "really you do"

Me "yes I do forgive you Dali I mean it, not only for you but for myself too" I say and she cries

Her "Thank you so much" she says

Me "thank me by being better okay" she chuckles

Her "I am already better Siza, and that baby will be blessed to have you as a mother, your life is going to

be beautiful Siza, few more bumps that will knock you down but you will rise again like you did before,

when it happens remember that you are stronger than you think God has blessed you more that you can

imagine" she said with a smile

Me "Thank you Dali"

Her "no, thank you Siza for helping my path open. Son I love you and thank you for giving me the bast

last days. Khumalo I disrespected you for a long time and you forgave me, you are still young at heart I

want you to feel free to re marry and be happy. You are all blessed" she says and closes her eyes the

machine started beeping not detecting any rhythm, Oh my God.

Dali

Vusi "mama, Dali, Vuka"

Him "nurse nurse nurse" Mr. Khumalo screamed by the door

Vusi "Siza what is going on please" I had my hands on my mouth. The nurse quickly gets in and stops as

she sees what is happening, she switches off the machine

Vusi "what are you doing help her please"

Nurse "I am sorry sir but your mother signed a DNR" oh my God I said under my breath

Vusi "Siza what is that" I sigh

Me "it means Do Not Resuscitate, Dali didn't want them to try to save her life, she signed documents

that said the medical team should let her die" I respond and see tears forming in his eyes

Vusi "no no no, I cant go through this again" he says and I feel his pain

Me "I am so sorry Vusi" I say giving him a hug

Vusi "I have done a lot of bad but I don't deserve this Siza"

Me "I am really sorry, he weeps in my arms, the Dr walks in and inspects Dali and writes on the file

Dr "time of death 15:37" for the first time I heard baba

Khumalo cry by the corner Vusi quickly lets go of me and goes to comfort his father” this is heart breaking. Poor Vusi he just buried his son and the love of his life now his mother

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 136

SIZA

Yes she was a monster to me but her death was still not nice to witness, seeing Vusi like that really hurt

me, I even feel like it's my fault that she died, coz immediately after I said I forgive her she gave us each

her last words then died, if I didn't come I would have let her have a few more days of her life, Vusi

wouldn't be feeling this kind of pain. I couldn't control my tears and I know that the hormones are

exaggerating a bit. After what happened I just had to get out of

that place and like the driver could see

my need of getting to my house urgently he drove a bit faster than he did coming here. when I arrived

hey were still not back so I just decided to sit in the lounge and just take in all that has happened.

Starring into space trying to convince myself that it's not my fault was failing so I decided to go keep

busy in the kitchen by baking, it's what I do when I can't control my thoughts or when I am stressed and

I must admit I always helps. I have stopped crying but my eyes are puffy leaving the evidence obvious.

Liv and Molemo walk in and she goes straight upstairs and my husband comes to the kitchen and heads

straight to the pantry and comes back holding a glass of cognac

Him "it was just so horrible Soft"

Me "what happened" I ask concerned

Him "she didn't even acknowledge Olivia, she was buried in her own confusion and pain that she didn't

see her own daughter sitting right across her"

Me "that's sad hey, but you know how it is, we don't react the same way to pain"

Him "I understand that but my daughter is hurting, she was hoping for a different reaction"

Me "let's give her a few days maybe she will come around, I hope you left our address"

Him "I did Soft"

Me "okay good then"

Him "why are your eyes puffy" he asks

Me "today was just so..." he interrupts me

Him "sorry babe, I said I will bring Olivia some pain killers and water, she has a headache from all that crying"

Me "oh okay no problem then" he just opened the fridge and took out a bottle of water and headed up

the stairs. Am I evil for feeling hurt in a way, I mean Olivia's life just changed for the worst and she needs

her father and I just witness the death of a woman who used to abuse and torment me. go on with the

baking and 2 hours pass without either of them coming down, so I just fix them a sandwich and drinks

and take it upstairs I knock and Molemo is the one to say come in

Me "hey guys I made you lunch"

Liv "thanks babe"

Him "you can just place it on the dresser Soft"

Me "okay" I place the tray down and stand by the bed, mo is sitting on the bed and Liv has her head on

his lap

Him "I will be down after she falls asleep" he says to me, I have never felt so dismissed in my life, it was

like I am some kind of house help who has done what she was supposed to do and now the master

wants me out of the room so I don't eavesdrop and gossip the next, at this moment i didn't feel like this

mans wife and mother of his child or Olivia's best friend, I just feel like I am an intruder preying on a

moment not meant for me. I feel so hurt and neglected right now but I guess they are the only people

who understand each other's pain. I walk out feeling so sad, I rub my tummy and take a deep sigh, I just

miss my husband that's all

2 days later

NEO

I have been in the bedroom for 2 full days trying to wrap my head around that has happened, I can't

believe I mourned the death of my daughter while she was alive living off as someone else, how could

that woman do this to me, it hurt and it still hurts, that experience made me fear having another child to

a point where I refused giving my husband kids and like the darling that he is he understood very well

what I went thorough and never pressured me to give me kids and I think that's because he already Had

Steven and Noni. The events of my daughter's death still haunts me and these past few days I felt myself

relive that painful moment and the pain being fresh again. The bedroom door opens and husband walks

in and sighs



Him "love you can't continue like this"

Me "you don't understand the pain"

Him "yes I don't understand Neo but you should be happy that your daughter is alive and wants her

mother, yes you had mourned her but now you know that some sick woman took her but now she is

back to you, I know how broken the death of your daughter left you but there is no need to hold on to that

pain, your baby is alive" his words hit home

Me "where do I even start being her mom"

Him "there is no manual to this kind of thing, I mean this doesn't happen every day love so you will start

at the beginning, have a conversation with her"

Me "I am scared baby"

Him "Neo did you see how devastated that girl was, she was hurt that you didn't even acknowledge her

presence"

Me "I was hurting"

Him "and understandably so but know you have taken the time

to let all of this sink in, reach out to you  
daughter”

Me “you don’t understand”

Him “you are right I don’t understand why you are wasting time  
getting to know your daughter, you are  
focusing so much on your pain you don’t see the blessing here”

Me “don’t judge me please”

Him “I will never do that Neo, I just care about you and your  
happiness, I know how much you have  
been hurting all these years and I want you to build a  
relationship with your daughter”

Me “what if she doesn’t want me in her life, what if she rejects  
me”

Him “you are the one doing that to her now, she feels like you  
don’t want her, imagine what she is going  
through right now, she has been living a lie all her life and when  
she finds who she partly is you don’t  
show her that you are happy but you let yourself be consumed  
by all this pain”

Me “I can’t do this alone”

Him "I never expected you to, you have me your husband that loves you very much"

Me "and I love you too"

Him "so will you go talk to her"

Me "will you come with me"

Him "you don't even have to ask me really"

Me "can we go tomorrow?"

Him "all the time you want love, come here" he says and I go into his arms

Me "I appreciate you"

Him "for better or worse remember" I smile

RAZOR

I walk downstairs as I hear someone shout my name, I have been sleeping in Olivia's room, we talk and

talk for hours that we just pass out, it has been 2 days since I slept near Siza. speaking of which why

didn't she come get me and tell me that there is someone looking for me, I reach the floor and Gadafi is

standing by the hallway, I take out my phone and it's just after 10 am damn I never sleep till this time.

We must have slept pretty late

Me "brother"

Him "hey man, did I disturb you hitting it" I laugh

Me "no man G I was sleeping"

Him "you never sleep till this late"

Me "Olivia and I slept pretty late we even passed out in her room"

Him "you didn't sleep in your matrimonial bed with your wife Razor"

Me "speaking of my wife, where did she disappear to"

Him "I don't know" he says giving me a questioning look

Me "what do you mean you don't know, who opened for you"

Him "I let myself in coz no one was answering the door and the guards said you are home" that was

weird, I leave him there and rush to our bedroom to find my wife but she wasn't in there, the bed was

made I check other rooms she normally uses but nothing, the

guards tell me that she went out with her

driver about an hour ago, why didn't she wake me up though

Me "let me call her to find out where she is" G shakes his head. I dial her and she answers after forever

Her "hello" she says coolly making me narrow my eyes

Me "hey babe, where are you"

Her "I am at Vusi's house" I felt myself boil

Me "what are you doing at his house this early Sizakele"

Her "his mother died Molemo so I am here to show my support"

Me "what when did that happen love"

Her "2 days ago Mo"

Me "why didn't you tell me though"

Her "I hardly see you Mo, you don't even sleep in our bed anymore so I didn't get a chance to see my

husband and tell him that Vusi's mother died immediately after I forgave her" I close my eyes

Me "Soft I am so sorry love"

Her "its okay Molemo" she sounds so cool towards me I feel so guilty

Me "I am sorry just that Liv needs me now more than ever"

Her "yeah" she says the tone in her voice breaks my heart

Me "I will see you when you get home, I love you" I say but don't get a response back, I look at my

screen and realize that she hung up and I close my eyes cussing under my breath

Him "what the fuck is going on" I explain the phone call to him and he shakes his head

Me "I don't know why she is acting like this"

Him "I don't mean to sound insensitive man, but I totally understand her behavior, Razor she is your

wife and she is pregnant, you have been neglecting her and not sleeping in your bed for days, she saw

someone die and from what you just said she probably blames herself for the death coz the woman died

after she forgave her, she needed her husband and you were not available for her and she is forever

available when you need her, I understand that this whole thing is hurting you and Liv, but the way you

are handling it is wrong, you can be there for your baby girl and still not neglect your wife. In this two

days have you even asked her how the baby is, or how the pregnancy is treating her” I look down embarrassed, Fuck he is right.

VUSI

I am going through so much pain I don't even know how to control everything that is happening around me, my mother had her faults and she has hurt so many people but she was still my mother and her death hurts no matter what she did in the past I love her she gave birth to me. I don't know how I am going to move passed this really but a day at a time I will eventually get through everything. Uriel's parents came yesterday and they said they will come every day until the day of the funeral except for today coz they had something to take care of. My father and I will be leaving for the village tomorrow morning, coz that's when the morgue of the funeral home I use will be able to transfer her to the town near the village, I have been able to make preparations for the

funeral and things will be taken to the village with us, the food, the cow the tombstone and just everything really. Siza walk in

Her "bab'Khumalo finally ate"

Me "he has always like you that's why it wasn't difficult for him to listen to you"

Her "your father is a good man hey"

Me "I wish I was half the man he is"

Her "you have the chance to change your ways"

Me "I know and I will definitely change, I promised you that much"

Her "good to know"

Me "so how is the baby" she smiles and rubs her tummy

Her "this one is okay, just heavy and always hungry" I laugh

Me "between this pregnancy and Phephe's pregnancy which one is a nightmare"

Her "definitely this one God, my princess was an angel, she didn't make me sick, until the last day"

Me "yeah I guess you had it easy hey, but one thing about



pregnancy I know for a fact is that it makes

you glow shame, your beauty just multiplies” I say this coz it’s nothing but the truth she laughs

Her “oh well thank you”

Me “just out of curiosity if I kept my promise and brought you to the city when I finally made it where

do you think we would be right now” she narrows her eyes

Her “God that is a tough one really but I don’t know I wont lie, what do you think”

Me “I think we would have been married by now, our second would be about 3 years and you could

have been pregnant will our last, well you would be a house wife with businesses she runs from home”

she laughs

Her “house wife no thank you” we both laugh out

Me “just a thought hey, but the medical world is blessed and so is Razor. I was a fool Siza”

Her “blessed indeed” she says clearing her throat

Me “thank you”

Her “for what now”

Me "being a friend that you are to me, you helped me out when my son and Uriel died now you are here for me again" she sighs

Her "it's okay hey. listen I need to go, you know it's December and I like making my driver go home early to spend time with his loved ones"

Me "okay thanks for coming"

Her "no problem, drive safely, and I will see you on Friday, I will come with Steve or Mandla"

Me "okay see you" we both stand and hug, I hold on longer and she manages to wiggle herself out of

my hold, fuck I shouldn't have, we are doing really well as friends I must not blow it or read too much

into it. I walk her out to the car and they drive off

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 137

SIZA

I get home after starting at the mall to get myself some fresh fruits and cereal for the house, I am aware

that I ran out of rice crispiest and coco pops I ensure that I have all sorts of cereal in my pantry I hate

having one thing all the time and end up hating in. getting inside the house I find Molemo in the kitchen

making something to eat for him and Liv I assume coz there are two plates on the counter, seeing him I

just sigh deeply and greet him

Me "hi" I say already making my way to the pantry to put the things I bought

Him "hey baby, you look tired" he says as I walk back in the room

Me "just a bit"

Him "can I make you one of these" I shake my head

Me "nope thanks I don't want a sandwich I will have last night's left over's"

Him "okay I will warm it up for you"

Me "don't sweat it I will do it" I say and he sighs stopping what he is doing

Him "Soft please"

Me "what is the matter"

Him "baby I know these past few weeks have been hectic and I made a mess of things for these past two

days by not sleeping in our bed next to you my wife"

Me "oh that, nah it's fine hey don't stress yourself about me I am a big girl"

Him "baby please don't talk like this, you are pregnant with our first baby and I shouldn't be neglecting

you like this, I am truly sorry please"

Me "like I said Molemo I am a big girl, I have done this alone before I can surely do it again" he closes his

eyes as if what I am saying hurts him, but I don't care coz he has been so consumed in his own world and

forgot me and my baby

Him "no never please you will never go through this pregnancy alone I will always be here for you I

swear" I roll my eyes and he attempts to hold me I step back quickly and move to the fridge

Me "I am sure Liv is waiting for her food, don't make her wait"

Him "I am still talking to my wife she will understand"

Me "if you say so" I say putting the Tupperware container in the microwave

Him "can we please sit down and talk"

Me "what is it that you want to talk about Mo"

Him "about us baby please"

Me "oh so now you want to talk you don't want to dismiss me like I am some type of maid serving you

in your fortress now you want to talk to me after not giving a fuck about me for two day, me your

supposed pregnant wife, you didn't give a shit of taking 1 minute to ask how your baby is doing"

Him "I realize how wrong I was baby, just that this whole thing caught me off guard"

Me "and it was no surprise to me right because I knew about it all my life, I didn't catch me off guard

because my life was not going to be changed by it, I have stood by you through everything Molemo

everything, I held your hand through all the storms, and this time you shut me out you decided that I

wasn't good enough to help you through this, and that's fine,  
just don't toy with me, don't care one  
minute and don't the next, I am not a switch you can just press  
on and off. I understand your pain but  
you don't get to hurt and neglect me Molemo" he is looking  
down embarrassed and hurt by all I just  
said, he looks up at me and his eyes are sparkling obviously with  
tears  
Him "you are one person I never want to hurt in my life Soft, I  
am so sorry my wife please" I say nothing  
back to him, I just take my food a bottle of water and a packet  
of lays chips and exit the room

## RAZOR

I didn't realize how hurt Siza is by my recent behavior, was  
trying to be there so bad for Olivia that in  
the process I started ignoring my wife, the hurt and betrayal in  
her voice is one I will not forget in a  
hurry, I feel so bad for treating her like this, I promised myself  
that my wife will never be hurt or cry

because of me, she goes all out of her way to make me happy and what did I do. For the first time since we met she walked out on me while we were having a conversation, and I don't blame her. We are newlyweds and we should still be enjoying our honeymoon phase but here we are, pregnant and not on good terms.

Liv "are you still making ingredients from scratch" get voice brings me back from my train of thoughts

Me "oh I am so sorry baby girl" she laughs

Liv "let me help you get those done, Siza spoils you too much you even forgot how to make a simple

sandwich come on dad pull up your socks now" I give her a side smile

Me "yes mam" I say in a low voice, my wife's words echoing in my head

Liv "dad are you okay"

Me "uhm yeah" I say not sounding convincing"

Liv "what's wrong old man talk to me it's obvious that something is bothering you, before you came

down here you were happy and in a good mood”

Me “that was before I realized how I have been neglecting my wife”

Liv “why what happened”

Me “I haven’t been sleep in our matrimonial bed Olivia I haven’t evn spoke to her in 2 days or ask how

the baby is, Vusi’s mom died immediately after she forgave her and she blames herself but I wasn’t

there for her still, I only found it out today, What kind of husband am I Liv” her hand covers her mouth

Liv “oh God we have been consumed in ourselves so much that we forgot that we live with her in this

house, oh daddy you need to talk to her and ask for forgiveness”

Me “I tried but she walked out on me”

Liv “I am so sorry papa” I shake my head

Me “it’s not your fault princess, I should have balanced my time and communicated with her” she was

about to respond when Soft walked in wheeling her suitcase, my heart immediately started racing

Me “Soft baby what’s going on baby where are you going”



Her "I am going to my mother's Molemo" she says placing the container of the food she warmed up in

the sink and I quickly walk you her, I try touching her but she walks back and fuck it hurts

Me "baby please don't leave me I am sorry please"

Her "I see you haven't been hearing me, I am going to my mother so we can both go to the village for

Vusi's mother's funeral"

Me "Soft I am so sorry about that please love I know I should have been there for you I am sorry I

promise that when you get back everything will be back to normal I am sorry I won't be able to attend

with everything happening I can't"

Her "you can't leave Olivia alone, I get it" I close my eyes

Liv "don't be silly daddy go with her she needs you, I will be okay"

Her "don't worry about it babe, I will be okay" she says to Olivia

Me "baby I am sorry"

Her "stop with the sorries Molemo. It's getting late I should get going"

Me "when are you leaving for the village?"

Her "friday Mo"

Me "but it's only Tuesday baby why leave so early" I am panicking

Her "I need a shoulder to cry on" she says walking out on me again

OLIVIA

I have never felt so guilty in my life, my father has been miserable since Siza walked out the door

yesterday evening, I don't blame her for opting to leave honestly ever since I told my dad the truth he

has been giving me all the attention, he wanted to prove to me so bad that nothing will change that he

started neglecting my best friend. I am partly to blame because I shouldn't have allowed him to baby me

to a point of sleeping in my room just to make sure I am alright, I was not even aware of what happened

with Vusi's mother imagine she had to go through the pain of seeing someone died in front of you

especially after forgiving her and knowing Siza she definitely blames herself, she has a pure heart that leaves me in awe. My father's marriage is crumbling all because of the pain caused by not being acknowledged by my mother. I shouldn't have said anything coz she doesn't even want me. I am so worried I texted Siza hours ago and she hasn't gotten back to me at least it's not a blue tick. My phone beeps. It's her

\*sorry for a late response I wasn't feeling too good in the morning, this baby just threw my appetite out the window\* she replies

\*I am so sorry to hear that babe, feeling any better\* I ask

\*a lot better hey my mom gave me some concoction and asked me to sleep I woke up feeling brand

new\* she texts back

\*I am glad to hear that and Siza I am so sorry for what is happening between you and dad, i shouldn't have dragged you both into my mess\*

\*please don't apologies Liv, you needed your father and I will never be mad at you for that. What hurts

me is how he shut me out and neglected me he should have managed his time accordingly\* she replies

\*still I am sorry baby, he is not okay at all, he is really sorry babe\*

\*don't be sorry Liv, let me go shower I Love you Okay" she says avoiding talking about Razor

\*I love you too\* I respond and look at my father who puts his phone on his ear and hangs up looking defeated

Me "she says she is okay"

Him "you spoke to her?" he says looking at me

Me "yes we were just texting now, she says she was sick in the morning but she is fine now"

Him "she is not answering my calls or texts, I even went to Alberton in the afternoon but she didn't

open the gate for me" the pain in his voice

Me "she said she slept after taking something maybe she didn't see you at the gate, she will call"

Him "we are supposed to be happy, I mean we are newlyweds and we are expecting our child, but" he

sighs and I was about to respond when the door bell rings he

stands up to go open and I just browse  
through my instagram.

Him "princess you have a visitor" I look up and my heart almost  
stops

Her "hi baby girl"

Me "uhm dumelang" that's what I manage to say

Her "can I please talk to you"

Me "yeah sure please take a sit"

Her "thank you and Mr. Motaung you have a very beautiful  
home"

Him "thank you I will pass on the compliment to my wife, she is  
responsible for all of this"

Her "she has taste" dad smiles

Him "she does. Let me leave you guys to talk, baby girl I am  
going to Alberton to try my luck again"

Me "bring her back home please" I say and he nods leaving the  
room, I look at my mother and the is

silence for a while until she clears her throat

Her "when I gave birth to my baby, I was the happiest woman  
alive, I had just gotten a reason to live, a

purpose you know, my pregnancy was very difficult and I managed to run away from a very abusive partner in Cape Town, he used to beat me so bad I thought I was going to lose my child, but the little warrior princess in my womb was fighting day and night to be alive, I gave birth to her and it was the most emotional moment, I was happy that I ran before he could have killed you in my stomach. Happy as I was it all came crushing down when the nurse brought the baby cot in my room to breastfeed, I took the little girl in my arms and tried to put my breast in her mouth so she can feed but she didn't respond, I tried waking her up but she didn't respond, I screamed and the nurse quickly saw what was happening she checked her pulse but nothing, she got the Dr and he did everything but nothing, my happiness was snatched away from me just like that, the pain I felt, asking myself why she fought in my womb only to give up after I have held her in my arms after I fell in love deeper with her, I was broken Olivia, I mourned my child for years till I met my husband and he helped

me through it so when you told me the news, I couldn't believe my ears because I saw you dead in my arms, I saw them do all they could but nothing, I never in a million years think that my daughter would be alive, I am very sorry for not acknowledging you that day, I am really sorry if I gave you the impression that I don't want you I was just shocked and the pain came back fresh"

Me "I am sorry you had to go through all this"

Her "it's okay Liv, God knows why he allowed this to happen to us, I am just glad that he brought you back to me Olivia, I am sorry and I hope you will want to have a relationship with me" tears stream

down my face and hers. She wants me she isn't rejecting me

Me "I would love that very much mama" she gasp for air and look at me for a while

Me "I am sorry I didn't mean to freak you out by calling you mama, I don't want to overwhelm you

ous'Neo" she stood up and my heart broke she is leaving, but no she comes and kneels in front of me

Her "call me nothing but mama" she says with the widest smile

on my her face

Me "are you sure"

Her "please say it again" I wipe my tear and look at her in the eye

Me "mama" I say and she buries he head in my lap and cries

Her "oh my baby girl" she says holding on to me so tight that we couldn't talk but just cry

THANDIWE

My man is going through a lot, since the day his mother and Refiloe came here he has been mopping

around, I hate seeing him like this, he has been through a lot and he fought to get out of that dark place

full of pain, Mbuso is a great man and he doesn't deserve all that his mother is doing to me, I wonder

what makes a woman to favor one child out of them all, I don't understand how a woman that knows

the pain of giving birth would divide her womb like that, just coz one has more money than the others



but that is just pure evil, I pray to God that I never become such a mother. I pour him a drink and get in the study, he is busy calculating and writing in the file

Me "you deserve a break you know" he stops and sighs

Him "hey baby, can I please have 2 more hours and I will be all yours"

Me "absolutely not babe, you have been in here for hours now, and you do it everyday"

Him "I know my love"

Me "then stop" I say placing the glass on the desk and sit on top of him

Him "okay I will finish this some other time"

Me "baby"

Him "maDlamini"

Me "don't give them the satisfaction, don't allow them to pull you back to where you were" he sighs

Him "I am trying very hard not to babe, but they just make me so mad Thandiwe I just hate what my mother is doing"

Me "baby you are giving them power over your life, we have been doing very well till they came here,  
please baby"

Him "I am sorry about that maDlamini"

Me "it's okay but I want you to do that handover ceremony, do it for Bandile and Sam, if this doesn't happen it might complicate their lives babe"

Him "I would be giving Mphathi exactly what he wants"

Me "it's not about him babe, it's about the kids, he expects you to fight him so he can get in your life

and make you feel small by flashing his money around so don't give him that, go through with this and

he will be surprised that you just let it go just like, he will always wonder why you didn't give him a fight

he wants, show him that you are the bigger person and what happened between you two you will never

allow it to affect innocent children"

Him "oh maDlamini" he says and hugs me

Me "promise me sthandwa sam, let it go give him his kids" he sighs

Him "okay accompany me tomorrow to my mothers place"

Me "I will be by your side"

Him "ngibonga idlozi ngawe baby (I thank the ancestors for you baby)" I blush

Me "you want me to turn red angisho"

Him "I was hoping that it will get me a quickie on this desk" I burst out laughing

Me "Mbuso yaz usile (you are naughty)"

Him "just for you" he says standing up with me in his arms

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 138

SIZA

We got back from the funeral and I must admit it was an emotional one especially for Vusi, it hasn't

been that long since he buried his son and girlfriend now his

mother I don't know how he is still standing  
at this point if I were to lose Molemo and our child I would  
probably fall into the deepest pits of grieve,  
speaking of my husband I haven't found the will to talk to him,  
what Molemo did hurt and I won't even  
pretend like it didn't, yes he was going through so much pain  
but he shut me out completely. My driver  
finally reaches Alberton after hours and hours of driving from  
the village, it's Sunday and a very short day, I just need some  
sleep and food yes a lot of food. we walk in the house and I  
throw myself on the couch

Ma "hai you want to brake my couches Siza phela these ones  
are not those expensive ones you have in  
your mansion" I laugh

Me "I am sorry mama" she smiles

Ma "its okay baby, let me go fix you something to eat, you have  
been complaining about hunger all the  
way here"

Me "I hate food sold on the road, it's not fresh"

Ma "you and I both sisi, what would you like to have"

Me "anything mama thank you" she nods and disappears for a while, she gets back and hands me a

plate and I start devouring the contents, my mother stands up and peeps through the window then

opens the gate

Me "who is that"

Ma "just eat your food Siza" she goes to open the door and comes back with Molemo, I just sigh and

look at them, my poor baby looks like he hasn't slept in days, I feel bad but he hurt me too

Him "hey Soft"

Me "Hey Mo"

Ma "take a sit Motaung" he sits on the couch across me and my mother takes the single couch and I

know we are about to go through a trail, and I didn't even tell her that we fought

Him "thank you Lungile" he says and brings back his eyes to me

Ma "I don't know what is going on with the both of you but work through it"

Me "mama what are you talking about manje"

Ma "you think I am blind Siza, you came here days before we had to leave for the village, you were mopping around the house trying to pretend that you are okay" I just look away

Ma "I am not going to ask that you tell me what is going, because that is between the two of you, husband and wife, Sizakele go get your things you are leaving with your husband now"

Me "kodwa sis'Lungile" she raised her hand to silence me

Ma "I am not your sister Sizakele, I am your mother and you are going to listen to me. Nawe Motaung

the next time she packs a bag and leaves your house because you had a misunderstanding, tell her to

never come back. Siza baby I told you that this is your home and you will always be welcome when this

man starts mistreating you, when he starts being someone you don't know, pack your bags and come

home but not because of stupid husband and wife quarrels that can be mended by a conversation in

your matrimonial bedroom. Listen from now every time you fight you will hold hands you hear me, you

will hold hands so that you both come down and remember why you chose to marry each other and then talk like civilized adults. I am done with this nonsense of yours, go get your bags now, and leave with your husband, visit me soon not when you are running away from your problems” I stand up and go get the rest of my things from the bedroom and Molemo carries them to the car

## MOLEMO

I couldn't have asked for a better mother in law, she laid it out perfectly and I understood each and every word she said and I took it to my heart, I have missed my wife so much, the last I spoke or saw her was when she walked out of our house mad and hurt, now here she is in the passenger seat looking outside in deep thoughts, I just want to make this right, I want my wife back, she needs to know that I am very sorry for building a wall between us, and I fully understand why she did what she did. I sigh

deeply and stretch my hand to hers and hold it in mine, we both gasp as we feel our connection, she quickly looks at me and I her.

Me "I love you" she closes her eyes

Her "I love you too" she responds and hearing her say that makes everything okay. I decide not to start

a conversation in the car, I drive as quickly as possible and we get to our house, it hasn't been feeling

like home in her absence. I get out of the car and quickly go around to open for her

Her "thank you"

Me "come let me get you inside"

Her "my bags" she says

Me "I will come get them later, let me just take your handbag" I say retrieving it from the backseat, I

take her hand again and we walk inside and go straight to our bedroom. She sits down and takes a deep

breath, I sit next to her and take her hands into mine like Lungile said



Me "mosadi waka, I am very sorry for what I did baby very sorry, it's just that I was consumed in my pain

and I felt like Olivia is the only one who understood what I was going through" she lets a tear fall

Her "you made me break the promise I made to God on our wedding day Molemo, I vowed to be your

solace in times of need but you closed off on me that I couldn't fulfill my promise to you" hearing her

remember the promise she made to me on the day we became one hurts more and I feel more guilty

Me "I know my baby and I will forever be sorry for making you feel this"

Her "I also lost a child Molemo, I know how deep it cuts I know how it changes everything, how you

think, how you act even how you breath, the pain just chokes you makes it so hard to breath, you

become so weak you ask yourself how and why it had to happen to you, it doesn't go away you just

learn to live with it, it might not be exactly the same but I know what you are going through"

Me "it hurts Siza, I don't even know how to explain it really, my

princess is not biologically mine, and

then the one that had my blood running in her veins died and I don't know where she is buried"

Her "I am so sorry baby believe me"

Me "I know baby, and I wish I trusted us more to know that we will do this together"

Her "I am your wife Molemo and I want to go through everything with you like I did when I was just your

girlfriend, every emotion all the stages of the rollercoaster, never do this to me again, never go 2 days

without knowing how I am or talk to me or not sleep with me" I smile

Me "I appreciate you Soft, and it will never happen again"

Her "thank you" I kiss her forehead

Me "no more running to your mothers place too or don't come back to this house" she laughs

Her "you loved that part huh" she says and I smirk

Me "you have no idea, but honestly babe no more walking out"

Her "no more walking out" I show her my pinkie

Me "pinkie swear" she giggles

Her "pinkie swear baby"

Me "didn't you miss me"

Her "I have been so horny God my libido came back like floods, I am even so wet right now"

Me "finally God I thought I was gonna die" I say already undoing the buttons of her dress

MBUSO

Thandiwe spoke sense to me and I thought long and hard about what she said, and I am going to do it, I

am doing this for the kids and to shame Mphathi, he must know that my life doesn't revolve around

him, and the sooner I do this the faster he will be out of my life coz the will be nothing tying us together

only the fact that we were born by the same woman. I managed to speak with Bandile and Sam and

explained my decision and they couldn't care less I think Mphathi has managed to poison them against

me and that is okay he is their father and I am not. Finally my girl walks in the room, she has been changing outfit after outfit.

Her "I am ready to go"

Me "wasn't this the first outfit you tried on"

Her "your point" she says and I shake my head, I will never understand woman really

Me "let's get going then"

Her "come here first" I smile and make way to her pulling her by her waist to me

Me "yes madam"

Her "remember why we are doing this baby, don't engage unnecessarily with Mphathi, get your point

across and finish okay" I smile

Me "I got you love" I say and she pecks my lips and then removes the lipstick left on my lips. We get into

the car and drive to my mother's place, his car and Refiloe's are parked already and I just sigh and take

Thandiwe and we walk inside, they are busy laughing and it stops when we walk in, Lwethu wiggles out

of her mother's arms and runs to Thandiwe, and it's such a cute moment

Me "hey princess hey my baby" she giggles as I tickle her. We finish giving her attention and we take our sits

Ma "thank you for coming son" she says smiling

Me "yeah sure no problem"

Ma "like I had explained to you that other day your brother" I cut her off

Me "I remember ma"

Him "don't cut off umama like that while she is still talking, don't bring your disrespect here"

Ma "Mphathi stop it please" he clicks his tongue

Me "I will hand over the kids to him, I will do that ceremony"

Him "just like that you won't even put up a fight"

Me "there is nothing to fight, they are your children" he is shocked and I notice that Thandiwe was right

Ma "thank you son, thank you so much, Mphathi and I will communicate the date of the ceremony with you okay"

Me "I will wait to hear from you then"

Him "and whilst at it, Refiloe told me that you still send my

children money for their upkeep can you

please stop I am their father and I will do it, save you hard  
earned peanuts for your daughter I got mine

covered”

Ma “Mphathi please stop this”

Me “it’s really too late to start trying to reprimand him mother  
but Mphathi I have heard you no

problem I will stop sending your children money”

Him “I am happy we are on the same page”

Me “no problem, baby let’s get going”

Ma “I was hoping that you would join us for Sunday lunch”

Me “no thank you, we have to go pick up our kids”

Him “you mean another man’s kids, man you are pathetic make  
your own kids doesn’t it work?”

Her “Mphathi or whatever you call yourself you are a sad  
human being I pity you, baby let’s go”

OLIVIA

Getting to know my mother is absolutely amazing I won't lie, everything is going just well, I know it has only been a few days since she told me she wants me in her life, and I won't lie it feel fucken amazing to finally have a mother that loves me this much, as much as the past few weeks being difficult a relation with her made everything okay. She asked me to please move with them but I explained that I wouldn't want to invade their space plus hurting my father was not on the table, I don't want him feeling like I am now playing family, I explained that I have an apartment and she is free to visit as much as she wants and I will come to her house frequently too, again I am always with Steve so I don't want to be explaining myself as to where I am going or why I haven't been sleeping at home for a week. Steve and I both asked my mom and his dad for a meeting coz the is an elephant that needs to be addressed in the room. They walk back in after going to fix us drinks, they come back with the juice

Ma "so baby girl what is it that you too want to talk to us about" I clear my throat

Me "you are my mother and your husband is Stevens father, and you guys are married"

Ma "correct"

Me "Mama Steven and I are very much in love with each other"

Ma "we are aware of that"

Him "so pops we want to know that you guys won't be asking us to break up now that Liv is your step

daughter" Steve says and his father looks at my mom

Ma "we haven't really thought about it guys"

Me "but it's not something you guys would ask us to do right" the look at each other again as if they are

communicating with their eyes

Him "mmhh I don't think we would I mean everything happened before the truth was known, so it

wouldn't be fair to ask you guys to shove your feelings, the public might have an opinion about this but

it won't matter to us" my mother's husband says

Ma "it's not like its incest"



Him "exactly baby" he supports his wife

Me "oh thank God" they both laugh and Steve quickly takes my hand and kisses my knuckles

Ma "so are you too staying for Sunday lunch"

Me "baby should we"

Him "yeah sure why not" my boyfriend answers

Ma "well in that case, I didn't cook so Steven help your father so you too can start with the braai, I

defrosted some ribs, chops and wors, Olivia come help mama make some salads"

Him "what do you want to eat so I can quickly put it in the fridge"

Ma "I will have some wife baby, dry red, baby girl what are you having"

Me "Steven what are you having"

Him "whatever you are having babe"

Me "we will just have vodka or gin"

Him "I will be joining you guys"

Ma "I won't be having wine alone then, I am joining the squad"  
we laugh

Him "okay then Gin and Tonic it is"

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 139

SIZA

Things between my man and I are very well, we managed to talk and go back to being on the same page

and I am happy about that, my child has been growing day in day out, but I am stick as sick as when I

found out and food that I loved have quickly turned to disgust me so you can imagine my life right now.

Olivia called earlier to meet at some Chinese Restaurant and I just pray I will be able to keep the food

down. I finish taking a shower and go downstairs my diver was just walking out I believe he went to

retrieve the car keys from the drawer

Me "hi, I am ready to go"

Him "very well Mrs. Motaung" I always wondered where my husband got him from he is well spoken

God, my curiosity gets the better of me

Me "you are very well spoken hey"

Him "thank you ma'am, I guess university education worked for something"

Me "what did you study' he sighs

Him "labor law ma'am but its tough finding a job"

Me "is my husband aware of this"

Him "no Mrs. Motaung my cousin works for him and he recommended me when he asked him to find

you a driver" I narrow my eyes and realize I fortunate I am

Me "do you have any experience"

Him "yes I did my 2 years internship with the department of labor"

Me "mmhhh I see. Please drive me to fourways the Chinese restaurant"

Him "okay" we walk out and get in the car, I need to discuss this Mo, he should give him something at

the firm with the labor department. The drive is very quick in no time we have arrived

Me "please have this and go get yourself something to eat we are going to be a while I will call you

when I am ready to leave"

Him "thank you ma'am"

Me "please just call me Siza"

Him "I wouldn't be comfortable with that Mrs. Motaung" he says and I just nod, I don't want to make

him feel uncomfortable, but he is probably just 3 years older than me anyway let me meet this girl, I

walk in and there she is, I walk to her and the clacking sound of my heels make her look up, she whistles

Her "my sexy baby mamma" she says standing and we share a hug

Me "hey hun"

Her "you look fucking amazing"

Me "thanks you love, you look amazing too"

Her "your girl finally has a mother" I smile seeing how happy she is talking about her mom

Me "I am so happy for you my babe, how is everything going"

Her "honestly I don't think I have ever been so fulfilled, my mom is amazing but she wants to baby me

God" I laugh

Me "let her be Liv. She never thought she would see her baby again so let her feel her please"

Her "I guess so, by the way she asked me to invite you and dad over for dinner, you guys okay?"

Me "we are great babe, wonderful even, and tell your mom we would love to come"

Her "great then, I can't wait for you to see how alike me and her look God it's weird" I giggle

Me "the last time I saw you this happy was when you finally gave Steven a real chance not just sex"

Her "I know right, my life is amazing I can't even believe this is me, I have the most loving boyfriend, a

best friend who is about to give birth to my sibling, a father so great and a mother who looks like me"

NEO

Having my daughter back is a blessing, I never thought in a millionaire I would be so blessed to know how wonderful it is to mother someone, after thinking that she died it got hard for me that I didn't even want to try to have another child and luckily my husband understood where I was coming from, his family even assumed that I am barren and we agreed to let them think like that because if we cleared the air they would have wanted to know why we didn't make a child and I was not ready to open up to other people so yeah. I have been so happy I swear life couldn't get any better. I am sitting watching TV when he walks in with a glass of water and sits near me

Him "and what are you watching"

Me "some reality show " I say

Him "these things are scripted man" I laugh

Me "you always say that and I always tell you not"

Him "I beg to differ"

Me "leave me and my show baby please"

Him "okay okay" we watch the show in silence and I know he keeps rolling his eyes, after a while he speaks

Him "I just love how happy you are since Olivia came back into your life"

Me "I am baby, and thank you for the support" he smiles

Him "I don't mean to ruin your mood but I have to ask"

Me "okay ask away baby" he sighs

Him "if she asks about her father, are you gonna tell her the truth" I stay silent for a while trying to think

Me "I pray she doesn't want to know anything about that monster"

Him "but what if she does Neo, you should be prepared" I burry my face in my hands

Me "he is a bad man baby"

Him "I know he is"

Me "I have managed to hide from him all these years and if he could find out that I am alive and so is the baby, he will complicate everything"

Him "I know that too my love, but Olivia doesn't"

Me "what would you suggest I do" he lays back on the couch

Him "come clean to her about everything, let her know the kind of man Moscow is"

Me "I don't know"

Him "if she knows the truth it will make her to understand why she should never even try to find him"

Me "do you think that the truth about that man will make her want to stay away from him"

Him "I am a man with resources but I still decided to stay away from that man just so you could be safe"

Me "I guess you are right baby, soon as she asks about him I will let her know"

Him "I suggest you get it over and done with so you don't open a can of worms when you guys are in a better place"

Me "can I take a few days to think about this please"

Him "its okay love"

Me "I just hope he is dead wherever he is"

Him "I have the utmost respect for human life but honestly I hope he is dead too, that man has



tormented people so much he doesn't deserve to live amongst others"

Me "even talking about him gives me the creeps I can't believe I loved him at some point"

Him "that's because he pretended to be a good person love, don't beat yourself about it please"

Me "yeah I guess you are right"

Him "now let's watch this scripted reality show of yours" I laugh and he just smirks

## THANDIWE

Shopping without Mbuso here is a challenge, God I miss him for pushing the trolley only not for his

constant complaining about me going from store to store I love him though coz he doesn't give up on

me, today he couldn't come with coz he has a meeting with one of his private clients. I just finished

grocery shopping and I went to dicks to get our toiletries, I decide to take everything to the car and

come back to have something to eat before heading home.

After getting everything in the boot I close  
and when I turn my heart almost stops, its Sizwe's evil mother  
she was just standing behind me looking  
at me like she wants to kill me God lo satan

Me "what" I say

Her "you have grown some balls I see"

Me "what" I repeat

Her "I heard that you now have a boyfriend"

Me "how is that your concern"

Her "it is my concern because my grandchildren are concerned"

Me "I don't have time for this"

Her "listen here girly, you will return my son's children to him  
and his wife and continue with your broke

boyfriend Thandiwe" I laugh

Me "why would I want to do that"

Her "because if you don't I will make your life a living hell"

Me "go ahead and do your worst honey"

Her "don't dare me Thandiwe you know what I am capable of, I

will drag you in the mud”

Me “you are a pig after all” I push her aside and get in my car, I won’t lie I know she means every word

she said, so I decide to drive to club Nation to go see Sizwe, he has to put a leash on that old hag I can’t

be fighting with her because of my own children, children I share with her son not her. I quickly park at

the reserved spot for who I don’t care I quickly walk in and meet his manager

Me “hey is he in?”

Kat “yes they are both in sis Tee” I smile at his and go straight to his office and knock, one of them

shouts come in, I get inside and they are in matching outfits

Her “hey Thandiwe what a lovely surprise”

Me “hey how are you guys”

Him “all good what about you”

Me “not so good Sizwe ai I don’t know”

Him “what’s going on, are the kids good”

Me “not if your mother has anything to do with it” he sighs

Him “what did that woman do now”

Me "she is threatening me Sizwe and if it continues I will get a protection order against her"

Him "you don't have to do that, I will get her to back off"

Me "why is she so adamant to take my children away from me"

Him "she thinks you will marry Mbuso and change the kids surname"

Me "but I promised you that I would never do that and Mbuso wouldn't expect me to do that either"

Him "I know that maTha, and I promised that I will never take the kids from you"

Her "babe we really need to talk to her, we have an arrangement and it's working for everyone and the

kids are happy with us, she should understand the concept of co-parenting"

Him "we will go to her house from here, don't worry about her okay she will not do anything to you not

while I am alive"

Me "thank you guys, I should get going" I say and leave

1 WEEK LATER

## RAZOR

My wife and I were invited to the Bodibe home, Olivia's mother wanted us to all have dinner together

and get to know one another for Liv's sake and I didn't see anything wrong with that, I think this will do

everyone good and I will get to ask questions and have answers that will give me the closure that I need

I think out of everything that has happened I am holding on more to the pain of my daughter's death

and not even knowing where she was buried, I want to know what she had named her too and deal with

this pain so I can focus on the child Soft will bare for me in a few weeks. We get to the house and Olivia

is the one to open the door, she looks so happy it makes me fulfilled as a father

Liv "my people" she says giving us hugs and her mother appears

Neo "oh Mr. Motaung welcome" she says giving me a hand shake then hugs Soft

Me "thank you for the invitation"

Neo "thanks for honoring it"

Liv "mama this is my best friend Sizakele"

Neo "oh it's nice to finally meet you sweetheart, you are always in and out of my daughters mouth" we

all laugh

Soft "I could say the same about you" she looks at her daughter and smiles

Neo "so Mr. Motaung is your wife late or she won't be joining us"

Liv "oh God sorry everyone mom Siza is my father's wife" her hands move to her mouth

Neo "oh my God I am very sorry I didn't mean to offend you I am really sorry"

Soft "no please don't be it's no bother" she says calmly and Neo is embarrassed

Neo "how could you forget to mention that, you speak about everything"

Liv "sorry mom"

Neo "she normally calls you Soft when referring to his father's wife"

Soft "that's what my husband calls me, but its okay don't stress" she leads us to the dining area and the

husband welcomes us as Steve gives us our drinks, we continue chatting about general things until we

went to have our meal which was amazing by the way

Neo "thank you so much for coming and I want to thank you for raising Olivia to be the woman she is

today I will forever be indebted to you" I smile

Me "she is my princess Neo and no don't even feel like you owe me, I love this girl"

Liv "I love you too daddy"

Neo "I really appreciate you" I smile at her

Me "I was meaning to ask, what did you name her? You know the little girl"

Neo "I named her Masego" I smile such a beautiful name

Me "I would really love to know where she was buried"

Neo "it is only fair Mr. Motaung"

Me "oh please call me Molemo" she smiles

Neo "luckily she was buried here in Johannesburg, I will take you to her grave whenever you are ready"

Me "I will keep in contact and thank you"

Neo "I will wait to hear from you" Soft yawns

Liv "someone is tired" we all laugh

Soft "this child is making me so lazy God"

Neo "but you are so beautiful God pregnancy suits you, when I was pregnant I had the worst pimples

ever, my face was round and don't mention my nose and boy the appetite"

Soft "I already eat for the entire Africa"

Me "I have become her personal UBER EATS" everyone laughs, and we continue to have a nice banter.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 140

MOLEMO

I called Neo and asked her about where she buried Masego and



she told me, I went there and the little  
tombstone was just there facing back at me I couldn't help but  
just shed a tear, my little angel she died  
and I didn't even get to see how she looked, to hold her and kiss  
her little face, she is a part of me and it  
really hurts, my darling wife was with me, her support is just  
everything and talking to her about this  
really helps coz she is the only person I know who lost a child,  
so I know I am not speaking foreign with  
her, I am just grateful that my wife is pregnant and this new life  
will heal all the hurt. My study door  
opens and she walks in eating an apple

Her "am I disturbing you" I frown

Me "you can never disturb me my love" she smiles

Her "I am glad to hear that" he smiles

Me "are you done"

Her "yeah I just finished cooking the spinach"

Me "you are just the best hey" he blows me a kiss

Her "baby I want to ask you something" I close the file and pat

my thigh signaling her to come and sit on  
top of me and she does

Me "ask away I am all ears"

Her "did you know that my driver is a graduate"

Me "nope I wasn't aware love"

Her "well he is and he studied labour law"

Me "that's good to know love"

Her "Molemo" she says

Me "what Soft" I say confused

Her "baby can't you find him something at the firm" she says

Me "Soft baby" I sigh

Her "Mo please baby he really needs a job imagine going to  
school for all those years and then not get a  
job, I can imagine how depressing that is"

Me "baby there are a lot of unemployed graduates we can't help  
all of them"

Her "I am not saying we should help all of them baby just this  
one please we know him"

Me "you and this heart of yours God" she made puppy eyes

Her "please my dear husband"

Me "fine fine Sizakele God, I will talk to the guy in charge of labour law"

Her "thank you, thank you so much love" she says kissing me all over my face

Me "I hate that I can't say no to you"

Her "bonus for me" I laugh

Me "such abuse" she pecks my lips

Her "let me show you my appreciation she says standing up and removing the files and the laptop until

the desk is clear, she sits on top and spreads her legs and boy she is not wearing any under ware

Me "what are you doing to me" I say in a low voice already hard as hell

Her "I am available for your pleasure my husband, do with me as you please" her words just drove me

more insane coz I just stood up and kissed her passionately

Me "I want you on this desk and when we are done I want you in our bed face down ass in the air"

Her "yes sir" she says unzipping my jeans

Me "brace yourself it's going to be rough" she nods and bites her lower lip leaving me more horny

## THANDIWE

The day of the ceremony where Mbuso has to hand over the children to Mphathi arrived and my baby

asked me to go with him to his mothers place, he didn't want to face those people alone, he said I will

be what keeps him calm from all the bullshit his brother might try, that man is cocky as hell God, he

thinks just because he has money everyone should bow down to him, he must just sit down and relax.

Their mother practically worships him, it's all about her precious son and I swear to her his word is law, I

pray to God that I never get to love my children differently. I was sitting by the garden and Mbuso went

to get something to drink, I am startled by a voice

Him "what do you see in him" I turn and it's Mphathi

Me "excuse me"

Him "what do you see in my brother, I mean the guy is just I don't even have the right word to describe him"

Me "I see everything that you are not" he laughs

Him "you mean that he is poor and I am rich"

Me "it's sad to see that your money is the only thing that makes you feel important"

Him "sweetheart money makes the world go round"

Me "I am not your sweetheart" he comes and sits where Mbuso was

Him "you are a very beautiful woman Thandiwe you deserve much more than what my brother can offer you" I chuckle

Me "is that what you said to Refiloe before fathering two of her children"

Him "nope not really"

Me "you are a sad human being"

Him "listen Thandiwe, I am a very rich man, I normally get what I want one way or another, there is

nothing money cannot buy”

Me “it certainly cannot buy you my man’s personality or his life”

Him “I don’t even want it”

Me “if that were true you wouldn’t be going after everything that he has”

Him “he has nothing” he says with a smirk

Me “get lost”

Him “you can play hard to get all you want but baby girl you will end up being mine I swear, you will

grace my bed and you will love my dick fucking you, you will spend my money and live like a queen that

you are” I didn’t even wait for him to finish I just slapped him hard across the face

Me “don’t you dare you piece of shit” I say and Mbuso appears

Mbuso “baby what’s going on” I don’t answer him instead I look and Mphathi right in the eyes

Me “I am not Refiloe and I never will be weak, and you my dear no matter how much you try will never

be Mbuso, you admire Mbuso so much that you want everything that he has, well not me honey, see

this man is more than enough for me and no matter what you do you will never be half the man he is,  
you are cocky and arrogant you think the world revolves around you. listen here leave me and mine  
alone, he handed your children over to you, but you will never be as good a father as he was to those  
children, so continue being petty alone just leave Mbuso out of it do you understand me”

Him “you are feisty I am turned on” my man almost charge at him

Me “baby don’t do that, he is not worth it trust me”

Mbuso “let’s get the hell out of here, I did what I had to do so let’s go home”

Him “run like the pussy that you are”

Me “fuck you” I say as Mbuso takes my hand and we walk away

Him “I will get you beautiful”

GADAFI

I don’t think I have ever sped like this in my life, I needed to see

Razor coz what I just heard shook me, I  
am not sure how I am going to solve this whole thing, i have a  
wife and child now and I can't be reckless,  
this life I am leading is not going to do them any good and I  
won't lie I am shit scared of what might  
happen should what my boy's told me be true, I get to his house  
and park, I press the door bell but no  
one answers me so I just let myself in, I go straight to his study  
and he is not in there. I go back and stand  
at the stairs and shout his name, a few minutes he comes down  
with no top and shoes just his jeans

Him "this better be fucking urgent you just disturbed my wife  
and I"

Me "do you think I would be here shouting like a bitch if it  
wasn't you fool, I would also rather be at my  
house buried deep in my wife but with this kind of news I don't  
think I can even get an erection"

Him "oh shit, let's go talk in my study" he says after realizing  
that what I came bearing is heavy, we get  
in and he shuts the door



Him "what's going on G" I sigh

Me "word on the street says that the underground cartel wants to move in our territory"

Him "G no no no man"

Me "I know man, this is bad"

Him "is your source reliable"

Me "one hundred percent man"

Him "fuck man you are married with a kid now, you can't risk a war with that mad man"

Me "I know Razor, that's my fear, Moscow plays dirty and he will hurt them just to get to me"

Him "you need to fucken give him what he wants" I sigh

Me "and then he will see me as weak, my respect out the door"

Him "fuck you G, that should be last thing you think about,

Letlotlo ad Ntombi must be your top priority,

and you fucken know that he could come after mines just to get me to convince you"

Me "I know that man" I rub my head

Him "it is time you fucken retired too"

Me "I don't have a fucken choice now do I"

Him "no you don't have a choice"

Me "I will call an emergency meet up, I need to let the cartel know"

Him "still don't know who will succeed you"

Me "these boys are fucked up Razor they are all power hungry"

Him "what about your boy Spin"

Me "he can be a hot head but he would make a good leader"

Him "he needs someone who can be able to calm him down, he needs the perfect second in command"

Me "who do you think will be suitable"

Him "my boy, Skhalo" I nod vigorously

Me "perfect combination"

Him "initiate them for the positions"

Me "will do it after the meeting, tomorrow night"

Him "I never thought we would both be out of the cartel, we used to live for that shit"

Me "I will surely miss it, but I guess it's time to move on"

Him "definitely man, we have enough money to last a life time"

Me "I will have to find another hobby" he laughs

Him "you guys can have another baby" I smile

Me "I asked her for another baby and she said in 2 years maybe"

Him "you will be a stay at home father while Ntombi runs her restaurant" I laugh

2 MONTHS LATER

SIZA

6 months pregnant and we are doing really well, my baby is growing as expected and the father couldn't

be more happy, I mean the man treats me like an egg, I am suppose to say ouch coz he will be by my

side ready to be my superman, and I really appreciate this man, I can't wait to give birth and hold the

love of my life, one that will bring me happiness just the way my baby Phephe did, God she would have

made the best big sister ever, God bless her soul. School started a week ago and I won't lie, pregnancy

and school don't make the best combination, attending lectures

when all I want to do is sleep and eat  
and have sex, I am grateful for weekends coz I get to laze about  
but not today coz we have a doctor's  
appointment. The receptionist is drooling over my husband  
making me roll my eyes. She says the doctor  
is ready for us so we just walk in

Dr "hey guys" she smiles sweetly at us and we greet her back,  
Molemo pulls the chair for me to sit down

Dr "how is my person I there"

Me "very well but heavy" she laughs

Dr "we are getting there slowly but surely, 3 more months and  
you will have your body back"

Me "and it will be hello sleepless nights" we laugh

Dr "comes with the territory"

Me "that's the only thing I am not ready for"

Dr "so how are you mommy"

Me "all is well just that I still get sick"

Dr "oh man sorry, come this side so we can take a look at the  
little human" we stand and I lie down on

the bed and she smears the cold gel over my belly and starts with the ultrasound

Him "look at that" Molemo say's soon as his baby appears on the monitor

Dr "strong heart beat, everything looks good in there" he takes my hand and kisses my knuckles

Him "can we know the gender"

Dr "yes we can, let me take a look" she says and frowns

Dr "the baby is crossing it's legs I can't see properly but with the little I see I think it's a girl, we will make

an appointment so that we have a look again and be sure of what I am saying" I look at Mo and wonder

how he is feeling, I know how much he wanted a boy, I know he said he will love the baby the same no

matter the gender but deep down he would have loved to have a son, someone to carry his name. The

doctor finished up and gives me some supplements and meds to take care of my nausea

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

## CHAPTER 141

### RAZOR

I will be honest, I was hoping that my wife and I will be having a boy, the excitement got the better of me coz I had already imagined how he will look like, imagined how his room would be blue and the house smelling like a little baby, but that does not mean I will love my princess any less, I saw how disappointed my wife was when we found out the gender of our love and I could tell that she thought I was going to be sour for her, I wish we didn't discuss the gender thing until we did the ultrasound maybe we wouldn't even be feeling this way, it has been a week already and her mood hasn't improved one bit. I decided to do something to cheer her up. So I went to get everything pink and went to the empty room we will be using as a nursery and decorated it, I even went as far as putting on a pink tutu skirt on top of my sweatpants though and a white vest just like

how they do when they dress little girls, I  
laugh at my reflection on the mirror the tiara on my bald head  
keeps on falling but I soldier on. I hear  
the car pulling up in the drive way and I peep and it's her car,  
the driver opens the door and she walks  
out and makes her way inside, she will find her way in here coz I  
made a trail using rose petals. After  
what seems like forever the door opens and she walks in soon  
as her eyes land on me she bursts out laughing

Her "you look so cute babe" she says with a smirk

Me "thank you mommy" she shakes her head obviously amused

Her "what's going on"

Me "I just wanted to cheer you up love, I know you think I am  
disappointed about the gender of the

baby and honestly I was hoping for a son but I doesn't mean I  
will love our baby girl any less"

Her "I was just praying that you get a son that will carry your  
name, an heir for all that you have build"

Me "my heiresses will take over the legacy I build for them"

Her "oh babe"

Me "I don't want you to feel bad Siza I want you to enjoy every moment of carrying our Love inside of you. I love you two so much"

Her "we love you too daddy" I kiss her on the lips

Me "plus I will get a son it's just a delay, we get a girl we keep trying for a boy" she laughs

Her "and who is going to keep on carrying the kids"

Me "my wife of course"

Her "poor girl, her poor figure oh her pour coochie" I burst out laughing

Me "can we not touch on her coochie, you will make my guy down there misbehave"

Her "what if I want him to misbehave"

Me "are you saying you want to be did Mrs. Motaung" smile

Her "when have I not Mr. Motaung" I bite my lower lip

Me "can we first have this food and dessert and enjoy this beautiful fluffy and pink room"

Her "it looks cute by the way, thank you for reassuring me love I appreciate the efforts"



Me "we are in everything together Soft"

Her "before I get emotional what are we having" I laugh

Me "your favorite babe, ribs, wings and chips"

Her "what would I be without you though"

Me "come let me feed you and our Love in there"

Her "our love huh"

Me "in the purest form Soft, half me and half you" she blushes

Her "oh Mo I love you so much"

OLIVIA

Planning my graduation has to be the hardest thing ever, but with my mother's help I am getting there,

obviously dad was ready to give me my unlimited budget but my mother asked him to let her do this for

me, and my father understood why she would want to do this for me. I am still not sure if I want a dress

of a pants so mom suggested that I get both and when the day comes my mood will decide for me, she

took me to her tailor but I honestly didn't feel her work, yes she can make a good piece clothing but not

really my style so I opted for the designer that did the outfits for dad and Siza's wedding, he is a mean

designer that one I know he will get me looking like I run this bitch.

Me "sorry mama"

Her "its okay love, whatever that makes you happy mom is here for you nana"

Me "you can choose the restaurant for the graduation dinner" she laughs

Her "baby girl I am not bruised don't try to make me feel better, this is all about you and I am just happy that I am a part of this" I smile

Me "are you sure"

Her "one hundred percent my love, I just want you to be happy Olivia"

Me "I love you ma" she takes my hands

Her "and I love you more than life it's self" we hug and the designer walks back in

Him "I really can't get over the fact that you too look like twins"  
we laugh

Her "she is my look alike this one"

Him "amazing just amazing by the way how is Siza"

Me "she is very pregnant that one"

Him "girl your father doesn't play huh"

Me "he doesn't waste any time"

Him "but the girl hit jackpot there, that man is beautiful, sexy  
and bonus he is loaded, I wouldn't know

what to do with myself if I was married to him, I mean I  
wouldn't want him going anywhere without me,

this world is full of vultures" I giggle

Me "my father only has eyes for his wife, from the very first  
time he laid his eyes on her he didn't want

anyone else"

Him "you don't have to tell me twice, I saw how that looked at  
her on their wedding day"

Her "they sound like a perfect love story" my mother says

Me "they are perfect for each other I guess coz my father has  
had so many woman in his life but Siza

was made for him, he changed everything for her”

Him “can we stop talking about those two coz wow. I got the two cloths I want to use for your pants”

Her “oh my word I love the gold one”

Him “me too honey, and I already have an idea of how to design the trouser”

Me “you are getting me excited” he smiles

Him “if you are not in a hurry I can sketch something real quick”

Me “honey I have all the time in the world” he smiles and grabs his stuff and starts doing his thing and

by the time he was finished honey I was taken

Me “perfect babe perfect”

Him “okay then let’s take your measurements” we get to it and once done mom and I leave we decide

to have late lunch and as we were walking in the mall a man his body guards appeared they were

holding his shopping bags from expensive I was about to comment when my mother pulled me quickly

in the store we were near, I have never seen her so scared she was even shaking

Me "mama are you okay" I ask panicking and she couldn't respond but kept on taking deep breaths, I try and go back to peep and see what she saw but she pulls me back very quickly I start to freak out myself

GADAFI

I stepped down as the cartel boss a week ago and I know that it's the best decision but honestly a part of

me feels like I have lost something so dear to me, I mean I have been part of this ring from when I was

just a teen and over the years I climbed up the food chain and I lived for the organization as some point

It is a part of who I am, I was hard training someone else to take over my position and I just hope that

those boy's won't run the cartel to the ground. I guess all I knew was being a criminal so much that I

didn't want to do anything else. Razor would ask me to go into legit things with him but I was never

interested I would just chip out the money and he will do everything and give me my share of the

profits, you have to understand that I never thought I was going to get married or even have children

but that has changed and my wife and daughter mean everything to me now and I will do everything to

protect them. Ntombi walks in with Letlotlo in her arms, she looks at me and sigh

Her "I am sorry babe"

Me "what for mamage Letlotlo"

Her "if you didn't have us you wouldn't have stepped down" I quickly compose myself

Me "I don't regret having you guys in my life, I am blessed and I know that, you mean the world to me

baby and I will let go of everything just so you and daughter be safe"

Her "I appreciate you so much Tebogo"

Me "it's my job as a husband and father to protect and provide and for as long as I live I will do that"

Her "so what now" I sigh

Me "I guess I am a stay at home dad" she laughs

Her "you are going to be bored out of your mind, you need to do something"

Me "let's have another baby that will keep me busy" she shakes her head

Her "we said in two years time"

Me "fine Ntombikayise" she gasps for air and the door bell rings

Her "saved by the bell" I chuckle and go open, it's my Razor

Me "brother"

Him "G, what's good"

Me "we are getting there man" he walks in and we make our way to the garden

Him "how are the boy's settling in"

Me "so far so good, but I am ceasing all contact in a week's time"

Him "did you explain that the cartel can never be involved in human trafficking, prostitution and terrorism"

Me "I made it very clear brother I will kill them myself if they try that"

Him "Good then, so now what's next"

Me "I don't have a fucken idea"

Him "you have always been good with the numbers try something in that department" I laugh

Me "like what"

Him "I don't know will think of something"

Me "or my wife could give me million children and I will open my own day care" he laughs

Her "not happening Tebogo. Hey Molemo" she says bringing us drinks

Him "hey Ntombz"

Her "I am preparing something to eat will be done soon"

Him "thank you" he says

Me "but no kids for me ya ne"

Her "baby find another hobby coz making children isn't going to be one, we said in two years"

Me "I hear you" I really need to find something to do

MBUSO



My mother asked me to come and see her coz she has something important to talk to me about, I just wonder what she wants with me I mean could it really be so important that I must go and see her personally. It better be good coz I am cutting my day to see her, immediately after the meeting at work I drive to her house hoping that her son is not there coz if he is she should just forget me coming in. I get there and luckily his car is not in the drive way so I just get in and go inside, the house help tells me she is in the garden having her tea. I make my way in there and immediately as she sees me she gets up and opens her arms signaling me to come give her a hug I mentally roll my eyes and hug her

Her "thank you for coming son"

Me "its okay mother, what can I do for you"

Her "why so formal Mbuso, what can I offer you"

Me "I am fine thanks though" she sighs

Her "tell me if you change your mind"

Me "you said you wanted to talk"

Her "you can't even sit with your mom without rushing"

Me "I need to go back to work" I lie coz I did say my assistant should cancel everything for today, I just

want her to get to the point

Her "oh I understand. Firstly I want to say thank you for all you did for your brother"

Me "I had to get him off my back" she sighs

Her "even so thank you. Mbuso I know I wronged you in the past but I want to ask for your forgiveness

son, I should have told you the truth and I didn't that was very wrong of me"

Me "why didn't you tell me you let me make a fool of myself"

Her "I just wanted to keep the peace"

Me "when did you find out about this" she looks down

Her "after Sam was born" I chuckle

Me "and yet they had Bandile after that, they continued their affair and you let it happen ma, you were

not trying to keep the peace you were protecting your son and you condoned what they did to me"

Her "that's not true"

Me "did you know that your precious son made a pass at my girlfriend" shock on her face

Her "are you sure about that" she says but I can't help but laugh

Me "are you for real mama"

Her "I just want to be sure Mbuso"

Me "its okay mama it's okay really. You will always fight for him and take his side and I accept that, I am

a man now and I can't keep hoping that you love us the same. I am done with you salukazi. I love you

because you are my mother but you don't have my best interests at heart and you constantly disturb my

peace you and your son and I have allowed you to do that but it ends here and now, I am done mama I

am so done. From today please don't call me don't come to my house forget about me and focus on

your son. I am done mama and keep well" I stand up but she holds my arm

Her "Mbuso please don't say that"

Me "you don't have to pretend mama"

Her "I am your mother"

Me "yes you are but even that doesn't mean it's okay for you to keep hurting me"

Her "I love you"

Me "I love you too mama but it's enough goodbye" I walk away leaving her weeping

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 142

OLIVIA

My mother hasn't been herself since that day at the mall and I won't lie she is freaking me out, I am just

glad that her husband is out of town so I am staying with her until he comes back, I didn't want to ask

but it has been a couple of days now surely she knows that I am going to want answers. I just got out of

the shower and I want to go make myself some cereal, when I

pass by the lounge I see her in the garden

by the pool with a cup of tea next to her, I decide to just go and talk to her before I make myself

something to eat, I just hope she will open up to me

Me "hey ma" she looks at me and smiles but it doesn't reach her eyes

Her "hey honey"

Me "how are you feeling"

Her "I am okay baby, what about you"

Me "I am okay just worried about you"

Her "you don't have to worry about me nana"

Me "mama what happened that day"

Her "oh Olivia" she says with tears forming in her eyes

Me "please talk to me please"

Her "I don't know where to start"

Me "from the beginning it's always the best place to start" she wipes a tear with the back of her hand

Her "I met him when I visited Cape Town, he was charming and

very sweet, by the time my vacation was over I had fallen in love with him, it didn't take me long coz he was everything I ever wanted in a man, it wasn't hard for him to convince me to move to Cape and so I did I was in love and young God it felt so good, we were crazy about each other, he treated me like a Queen until he didn't anymore. It went from love to obsession, Olivia he would beat me up when other man looked at me, I wasn't suppose to even talk to man I wasn't allowed to have friends, that man didn't even want me to talk to my own mother. Years went by and we found out that I was pregnant and man he was so happy, I thought that the baby will change him but it made him more obsessed with me, one of the boy's that worked for him was fond of me he would make sure that I have everything I needed he was the only friend I had, then he got jealous and killed him, shot him in the head in front of me Olivia from then it was hell he accused me of cheating with his boy and getting pregnant for him, he would go out and drink and come back find me

asleep he would just roughly take me and would tell me this is how he sleeps with sluts, after pleasuring himself the beatings will start, I was done Olivia I was tired of leaving like that, so one night I just had to drug him and when he was knocked out, I ran. I took a flight to Mexico and made it back to the country under a fake passport just to make him think I am still in Mexico. I decided to come to Joburg coz its one city he didn't like because the other cartel was operating here so he didn't want a war, I was just shocked to see him here yesterday" I couldn't believe my ears that man is a monster

Me "that man with a lot of body guards is my father?"

Her "he is the man whose sperm help make you baby your father is Molemo"

Me "I am so sorry you had to go through all that"

Her "Olivia that man can never know about you baby I don't want him complicating your life"

Me "I totally understand mama"

Her "he is dangerous so if it happens you run into him alone and he sees you and ask about me I need

you to deny knowing me do you understand”

Me “we could just ask my father to help us with him”

Her “no Olivia think of your best friend and her child that man will retaliate” I sigh and bury my face in my hands

## RAZOR

G and I got invited to a gentleman’s evening, this event happens once in a while, it’s where the rich and

powerful man meet up to play poker and auction expensive bottles of alcohol, the proceedings of that

night are used to help charities around South Africa, it’s a way rich criminals get to give back to the

community, even though we are no longer a part of the criminal world we still find this a worthy course.

I am not comfortable being here coz I have a pregnant wife at home and she is alone, she made me

come here and I was told to have fun and live a little imagine. The waitress comes back with our drinks.

After we both lost R50 000 we decided to just have drinks and relax. We were by the corner when a



voice disturbs our deep conversation

Him "ahh if it's not the brothers" we look up and I want to roll my eyes but deception in this game we are no longer in means everything

Me "Moscow man, is this you" I say standing up to shake his hand

Him "in the flesh Razor" he responds

G "whoa what brings you up here thought Jozi was not your favorite place"

Him "it wasn't till I smelled money" we laugh and all sit down, I don't trust this mother fucker and the

only way to know what he is really up to is to play dumb

Me "a new income stream?"

Him "no man, I just want the existing one"

Me "and whose territory are you planning on taking over" he sips his drink and look at me

Him "yours Razor" I chuckle

Me "if I had one" I say and cross my legs

Him "meaning" this cocky bastard is not aware

Me "my brother and I are no longer part of the cartel. We are both retired"

Him "oh that means I have to kill someone for incorrect information"

Me "by all means, he made you come to the battle ground with false information, that could have gotten you killed" he nods

Him "I am glad to know that you still understand the rules of the criminal world, he told me you two are now married I take it that's a lie too" we laugh

G "no that is true Moscow we are married"

Him "wow so you retired because of some bitches who are only after money" I ignore his statement

G "family and love made us retire" my brother corrects him

Him "oh well I guess you will let me know who runs your cartel now"

Me "we are no longer part of the cartel so we don't know anything about it" I lie

Him "I have a proposal for you guys"

G "what kind of proposal"

Him "you are both assets and I would love to have you on my team, the three of us would archive so much more we could make more money"

Me "we already have money Moscow and like we said we retired but thanks for the offer"

Him "I want to monopolize the whole arms industry in South Africa join me guys"

G "monopolize the industry, Moscow you can never be able to meet the demand"

Me "my brother is right don't be greedy" he laughs

Him "I am a criminal of course I am greedy, take a day or two and think about my offer"

Me "I doubt we will change our minds"

Him "I will call you" he says standing up and leaving

G "he was just trying to make us"

Him "he failed he is not getting any information out of us, beef up security at your house"

THANDIWE

Mbuso's mother has been outside the gate for hours now but my man is not having any of it, like he is not even bothered about her please and cries I mean the woman is causing unnecessary drama at the gate, but to tell you the truth I kind of feel for her but she doesn't deserve Mbuso, she has never tried being a mother to him so she should live with her decision. When she screams louder Mbuso increases the volume. I look at him with pleading eyes

Him "I would give you everything when you look at me like that maDlamini you know that but forget it"

Me "baby just hear her out"

Him "I don't want to hear anything my mother has to say to me"

Me "baby please"

Him "no love I have always allowed my mother to do this to me because she was my mother but now I know that my peace is important and whoever disturbs it has to go whether they are family or not they must go"

Me "I understand so just tell her that"

Him "I did babe, I told her not to call me and not to come here"

Me "your words obviously fell on deaf ears" he laughs

Him "obviously" he says eating his popcorn

Me "can I tell her to go and you will call her"

Him "if you are comfortable about lying to her MaDlamini then go ahead baby" I smack his head and

walk out. The woman is now sitting on the grass when she sees me she stands quickly

Her "oh thank God Thandiwe"

Me "hello ma, how are you"

Her "I am not okay Thandiwe I want to talk to my son" I sigh

Me "he doesn't want to talk to you ma I am sorry"

Her "he can just listen then"

Me "I am sorry mama but Mbuso forbid me from opening the gate for you" she cries harder

Her "I just want to apologize"

Me "I understand ma, but please give him some time and once he has cooled down I will talk to him and convince him to call you"

Her "please help me do that Thandiwe"

Me "I will mama don't worry"

Her "I will wait to hear from him" I nod

Me "should I call a taxi for you"

Her "no my darling my driver is waiting for me over there" she points to the range rover parked further

from our house

Me "okay mama he will call" she nods then leaves I sigh and head back inside

Him "did you get rid of her"

Me "I promised that you will call her soon as you have calmed down" he laughs

Him "she will wait till kingdom come then coz that isn't going to be happening my love"

Me "go cook Mbuso" he smiles

Him "oh kanje I am cooking today"

Me "yes now get your sexy ass to the kitchen" he gets up and pecks my lips before disappearing into the

kitchen. I take my phone and dial my sister I haven't seen or spoke to her in a while I am such a bad big sister God

3 months later

SIZA

I have never been so tired in my life God, every part of my body is swollen, I am the heaviest pregnant

woman I know and to think I am going to go through this process again in a few years just throws my

mood off again. I am so heavy I can't even lotion my own feet, Molemo has to do it for me and I am so

grateful to have a partner like him, our daughter is lucky to have a dad like him. I am due in a week's

time and I can't wait to finally have my body all to myself again.

I take the last bite of my food and he

collects my plate and takes it to the kitchen and comes back with a glass of water

Me "thanks baby, that was great" he smiles

Him "I learnt from the best" he insisted on learning how to cook

so he can help me around

Me "I think I am going to lie down a bit"

Him "take a shower first then I will give you a foot and back rub"

Me "and you will be my human pillow all night?" he laughs

Him "I have been that for the past 3 months baby" I make a funny face and he kisses my lips. I try to

stand up when this sharp pain hit like a mother fucker and I quickly recognized it

Me "ahhhh shit" I scream a little

Him "baby what's wrong are you okay"

Me "Molemo get the keys please"

Him "what's wrong my love" he asks again panicking and it hits again making me squeeze his arm

Me "Molemo your daughter is coming so get me to the hospital now unless if you want me to push her

out in this house" I see him panic more he is not even sure where to start, he is like a mad man, he

finally gets his senses back and he goes to get the keys. We walk out and he leads me to my car since the



baby bag is in there, he drives like we are in the F1 competition we get to Harmony medical center and

soon as they see it's Molemo and I they all want to be the ones to help, they wheel me to the delivery

room, and Molemo tells them that we are having a natural birth. The Dr keeps on checking me but I am

not yet close so I just take these contractions like a big girl, he is next to me taking all the nasty stares I

throw at him, he did this to me. 7 hours pass and she decides that she wants to come now, the doctor

comes and it's show time. I push and push about 5 times but nothing

Dr "we are almost there I just need you to give me one strong push" I nod and squeeze my husbands

hand and push hard a second later a loud scream fills the room

Dr "oh yes, congratulations it's a bouncing baby boy"

Me "what a boy" I say and tears are already out of my eyes

Him "a boy? We have a son? But the OB/GYN said we having a girl"

Dr "ultrasounds are not accurate sir" they finish with my baby and the nurse hands him to me he is dressed in pink coz we

thought it was a girl he looks super cute though, I am in love

Me "oh my God baby look at him"

Mo "he is the most perfect thing I have ever seen" he says and kisses my forehead

Me "I can't believe we have a boy baby" I say looking at this perfect human being in my arm who is suckling on his own hand, his father and I just laugh

Mo "thank you so much thank you so much Mrs. Motaung" he says and I use my free hand to wipe his tear

Me "name him love, name your son" he smiles

Mo "Molemo Junior Motaung, my boy will bear his father's name and the inherit the legacy I built"

Me "MJ I love it and I love you"

Mo "I love you guys so much and we need to get him clothes that are preferably not pink" I laugh and nod. They move us to a private suit and Molemo starts calling everyone with his son in his arms

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 143

## MOLEMO

To say I am happy would be an understatement honestly I was over the son issue I was ready to

embrace and love my baby girl but man when the doctor said it's a boy I swear my heart almost

stopped, I have never felt so much joy in my life, the gift Sizakele gave me is one I will cherish her always

for. This woman is my rib and I know this because when God blesses you with the right person

everything you desire with this person God blesses you with it. MJ, my boy he is our love and I am the

most obsessed man, when Soft went to sleep last night after feeding him one million times I just stood

there looking at him like he was going to get stolen, I am happy and I want the whole world to know it. I

left the hospital at 6 and I went to shower and changed my clothes and also brought a change of clothes

for my wife, on my way back to the hospital I passed by the mall and asked the shop assistant to help me

pick out a few baby boy outfits coz my son is not wearing pink no more. the time I get back to the

hospital it's just 9:30am, I walk in her suit and she is feeding our son, I walk to them and kiss MJ on the forehead and peck my wife on the lips

Her "where did you disappear to babe" she says with a smile on her face

Me "I went to take a quick shower and get you some clothes then passed by the mall to get MJ some clothes"

Her "oh babe thanks that's very considerate of you"

Me "how is my boy doing"

Her "he eats for the entire Africa this one is going to suck me dry" I chuckle

Me "he can eat for the entire universe he is my boy after all"

Her "oh boy I will die because of your boy"

Me "baby thank you so much Soft" she blushes

Her "what for now my love"

Me "for giving me a son Siza you made my dream come true"

Her "thank you for making me a mother again, I feel complete  
Mo, I couldn't have asked for a better  
husband who just gave me a son"

Me "I love you Mrs. Motaung never forget that"

Her "and I love you baba ka boy" did you hear that ya'll baba ka  
boy, she finished feeding him and he  
burps him then hands him to me

Me "Motaung wa molete moleta thojana, maana phofolo ereng  
hae tlashwa epongwe hlooho esale e

nyeketsa ka mahetla. Ngwana morwa otjheka sethata  
sekwankwetla otjheka we patiseng yalejwe ke

sebata namane e tshehla le moriri" I praise my son with the  
Motaung clan names

Her "oh wow I didn't know you could praise" I laugh

Me "I didn't grow up in the city you know"

Her "I know that now baby, you need to teach me too you  
know"

Me "you can barely say a full sentence in Sesotho and that's  
wrong you are a Sotho bride no more

English and Zulu in my house and Soft"

Her "yes sir?"

Me "don't speak Zulu with my son" she laughs

Her "I wouldn't dare try that love"

Me "good now come teach me how to change a diaper and bathe him" she gets out of bed and

prepares everything then I get lessons on how to care for MJ

Her "that's how you do it, always be careful of his neck love"

Me "he is so fine when he is not wrapped up" we continue bathing him I didn't want the nurses doing it

SIZA

My boy, my son, my love, God no one knows unconditional love till they birth a child, the first time I held

my son I felt a rush of emotions, I don't even know how to contain my happiness lord I am not even sure

if I want to. Molemo Junior is my second chance at motherhood, he is my healing my complete healing,

he is not my daughters' replacement but he is the one that healed me from the hurt. I hope Phephe is

looking down at her baby brother, my husband, guys Mo is the happiest man on this planet he is so

hands on with his son, I swear my job is only to feed him, it's a bliss to see I am just happy that God

blessed him with a son he so much wanted, I wouldn't have it any other way I wouldn't want to do this

life thing with any other person. I am on my bed looking at him trying to put him to sleep, he is now in blue clothes looking like the prince that he is. after a few minutes his father puts him in the court near me.

Him "finally asleep"

Me "when are you taking us home" he smiles

Him "tomorrow babe, I can't wait really" I shift to one side of the bed and pat the space next to me

Me "join me" I see him blushing and he takes off his shoes and gets in bed pulling me to him and I am

on his chest with our fingers interlocked

Him "I want to organize an ancestral ceremony for him to introduce him to them so they can protect

him and bless him"

Me "when he is 3 months babe" he nods and brings his lips to mine and we kiss passionately till we are stopped by my mothers' voice

Ma "you just gave birth for Christ sake you can't be doing this or you will be having another child before

my grandson is even a year old" we stop and I hide my face in my husband's neck

Me "it was just an innocent kiss mama" she laughs

Ma "Molemo hands off until your son is 3 months" my husband chokes on his saliva and Gadafi laughs

G "welcome to life after birth my life" his wife hits him on the shoulder

Ntombi "congratulations you guys, I am so excited you don't want to know" she says placing the flowers

and balloons and gift bags on the tables in the room

Me "thank you Ntombi, I am so excited he is just so perfect"

G "a boy huh an heir you have always dreamt of, congratulations brother and Siza thank you for giving

him such a beautiful gift" he says fist bumping him then coming to my side and gives me a hug

Ma "oh bantu kasemhle yena uBoy ka gogo" my mother says



with MJ in her arms

G "you didn't give us a name last night"

Him "everyone meet my son Molemo Junior Motaung" he says  
with so much pride

Ma "no Zulu name?"

Me "kodwa mama he is not Zulu and neither am I anymore" she  
laughs

Ma "okay fair enough, but you did well naming him after you I  
pray he grows up to be like you his

father, a man of integrity and respect"

Him "thank you so much Lungile" the door bursts open and Liv  
walks in with the biggest teddy bear and

shopping bags

Liv "big sister in the house ya'll where is my baby brother" she  
says with so much excitement that she

just drops the things on the couch and goes to my mom who  
hands her the baby

Liv "and you shall be named Olmega Motaung, twining with  
your big sister right yes baby" we all laugh

Him "in your dreams princess" my husband says

Liv "I thought you were waiting for me to come and name him"  
Mo shakes his head No

Me "nope his father named him after himself"

Liv "MJ not bad I like it, and congratulations guys I am so happy yoh" it's evident on her face shame

MOSCOW

Fuck now that Razor and Gadafi are no longer the cartel leaders  
I am screwed, when I heard that they

are now married and Gadafi has a kid while Razor's wife is  
pregnant I thought this was the perfect timing

to take over their territory I was going to threaten their families  
to get what I want and now I am back to

square one, practically came to Johannesburg for nothing I hate  
this city so imagine coming here and

finding out that I won't be making money, the incompetent boy  
who gave me trash information got a

bullet through his head. That's how we deal with someone who  
sends you to battle with guns that have

no bullets I could have been killed, I am savage yes but that

mother fucker Razor is calculated his every  
move he makes is for a reason, I on the other hand like to instill  
fear, when they fear you they respect  
you and they become loyal. One of my trusted boys walks in

Him "sure boss"

Me "what's up"

Him "Buffalo is back from the hunt"

Me "tell me he found something" For the past fucking 26 years I  
have been looking for someone and  
each month my boys give me feedback

Him "he didn't find anything in Mexico"

Me "the fuck is that even possible huh we have been searching  
for her for years now years how can she  
not be in Mexico, he passport has never travelled anywhere  
else" I say banging the table

Him "that's coz she is not in Mexico"

Me "and how the fuck do you know that"

Him "because the IT guy you hired is fucken amazing boss, he  
managed to come up with a sketch of how

she looks now and he used it to search the internet”

Me “did he find something” I ask hoping for something positive

Him “yeah he did, he did a photo search on social media platforms and a match popped up on an

instagram account of a girl named Olivia\_M”

Me “can I see a picture or something so I can confirm it’s her”

he nods and hands me a printout and my

heart almost stops

Me “still as beautiful as the last time God”

Him “is it her?” he asks and I nod running my thumb on her face in the picture

Me “and she is with our daughter, she looks like her, my girls”

Him “finally damn”

Me “you can say that again, she has always been the most beautiful woman in the world, I don’t know

why she had to run, we could have been a lovely family, but she stole so many years of my daughter’s

life from me, damn you Neo”

Him “what are you going to do”

Me “I want you to keep a tail on her while I plan a move”

Him "and the girl"

Me "no just my woman"

Him "sure thing boss" he walks out and I continue to stare at the picture. They are both so grown, I have

never loved a woman they way I love Neo, they were just there for my sexual needs nothing more, my

heart has always been for this woman, but she ran from me and before I take them back to Cape with

me I need to teach her a lesson, she must never try that again when we get back. My daughter I can't

believe I finally found my girls. I stand and pour a glass of whisky and gulp it down. I need to work on a plan and fast.

1 week later

NEO

I miss my husband now and he will only be home in 2 days, God this whole house is empty without him,

and Olivia hasn't been sleeping here every day coz she has been

so excited about her little brother and I  
couldn't ask her to stay with me instead. I don't even know what  
to do with myself, I am used to  
travelling with my husband so much that when I am left alone I  
don't know what to do, I have Olivia now  
I can't be flying in and out of the country my daughter needs me  
available for her each time she needs  
me. I am watching my favorite reality show when I hear the door  
kitchen door open, I stand up to go  
check who it might be but before I could get to the hall way, I  
see him approaching and I am stuck I can't  
move, tears already streaming down my face, how did he find  
me how did her locate me here.

Him "oh my love look at you" I couldn't even respond before I  
knew it he was already near me his hands  
wrapping around my waist. I close my eyes fear consuming my  
whole body

Him "I have been looking for you for so many years, I can't  
believe I finally found you"

Me "what do you want Moscow" I finally ask

Him "I am here to get you and take you back home love"

Me "I am not going anywhere with you"

Him "Neo don't make me do anything crazy. You ran from me baby and maybe I can understand why

you did it and forgive we will start afresh" I shake my head

Me "you are a monster" he shakes his head and brings his lips to mine and pecks

Him "just not to you baby"

Me "if you love me the way you claim you do then you will let me live my life without you"

Him "you belong to me baby you know this, remember when we first met how crazy you were about

me, Neo we are perfect together"

Me "and you became a monster Moscow"

Him "I am sorry about that. We can start over, me, you and our daughter" I froze at the mention of my

daughter, no he can't go anywhere near Olivia he can't

Me "my daughter died from all the beatings you gave me, she didn't make it because of you. Moscow

you killed my child" he laughs

Him "don't do that sweetheart. I know about Olivia" I slap him hard across the face

Me "don't you dare mention my daughter, don't you dare even go anywhere near her or I will cut your

balls and make you eat them" he close his eyes and takes my hand and makes me feel his erect penis

Him "you just turned me on fuck"

Me "you are a sick man" his expression changed and it got dark

Him "enough with this cartoon. I am here to make a few business moves and once I am done we are

leaving back to Cape with our daughter or I could buy a house here since it sees like you love it here, I

just hope you told Olivia about me. I am going to let you stay here and I will visit once in a while till I get

a house"

Me "don't you dare you bastard I am married" he held my hands and squeezed"

Him "don't fuck with me Neo, I will fuck you up. You better divorce that man and make sure he doesn't

touch you and trust me I will know if he did and just a little warning don't try and run I have eyes on you



and my beautiful baby girl and I wouldn't think twice hurting her to get you in line" he says and I

instantly shake from fear. He moves his hands to my ass and squeeze hard and pulls me to him and I feel

his erection

Him "I would stay and bury myself deep inside you but I am already late but no stress we will have our

fun" he says and let's go once I hear the door close I sink down and just cry so painfully, I can't do this I

can't go back to this life again. My daughter can't live with that monster, oh God.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 144

SIZA

My baby is officially a month old and he is just the sweetest thing ever, he sleeps through the night and

feeds really well, but the boy can cry when he is hungry, I swear he can scream this whole house down,

he also hates a damp nappy, he pees once he wants the damn thing off, but all in all he is the sweetest

child ever God and he has his father's eyes and dimples and I am bracing myself for all the girls I have to

keep away. He is napping in his nursery so I took this chance to come and work out coz guy's baby fat

was on steroids. I have been working out ever since we got home from the hospital. I was on the

treadmill when the gym door opens and Mo walks in with MJ.

Him "we are very sorry to disturb"

Me "when did he wake up love"

Him "a few minutes ago, I tried keeping him busy but this champ just wants to eat, he almost ate off his

tiny hand" I laugh and get off the machine and take a towel to wipe my sweat

Me "oh baby boy looking at how sweaty mommy is, can't you just hold off a second so I can just shower

quickly"

Him "please hurry and use the shower in here" I quickly get in the shower and I am out within two

minutes I wrap a towel around my body and walk out and Mo is trying to calm him down, I told he cries

when he is hungry, I sit down and he hands him to me

Me "okay okay, mommy is sorry baby so sorry my love, here you go, yes" I say giving him my breast to

suck, and he gets on with his business looking at me straight in the eye and I can't help but fall deeper in

love with this perfect human being

Him "I feel like an intruder each time you two stare in each other's eyes like that"

Me "is someone jealous" he laughs

Him "not at all, it's beautiful to see my love"

Me "he has grown so much God"

Him "I can't believe it's been a month already"

Me "time flies, soon he will be 1 and causing havoc in the house" we both laugh

Him "he needs a sibling then so he can be a big brother"

Me "don't let my mom here you say that" he rolls his eyes

Him "but baby your mother's 3 months is too much, the Dr said medically it is advised that we don't

have sex for 4-6 weeks after birth to give your uterus time to heal and avoid infecting it"

Me "I heard what she said love but we could risk falling pregnant so soon"

Him "love I won't cum inside you then, if that's what we are worried about"

Me "we are going to use a condom then"

Him "I am not using that shit with you, we are husband and wife and besides we have never used it"

Me "I am not risking another baby so soon"

Him "what's so bad about having another baby though, it wouldn't be such a bad idea raising them all at once, it will be like having twins"

Me "baby where are we rushing to"

Him "nowhere I just want to have a soccer team with you"

Me "and I will give it to you I swear, but for now a condom or nothing" he sighs

Him "I will pull out I swear"

Me "baba ka boy" I say in total frustration

Him "please love please I miss you" I blush

Me "fine Molemo fine God" he kisses my lips and takes a sit next to me

## MOSCOW

We were supposed to be back in Cape Town by now but there is a lot going on that side, the hawks are

after my ass, so I decided that I will stay in this city till my contact in the inside tells me exactly what they

want from me, I send my boys there to clean up everything that might send us all to jail, this is exactly

why I need to start operations in a new place they will not think that it's me just in case those fuckers

seize my assets I will have a new income stream, my offshore accounts are worth a lot of money but

when you are under investigation these people trace your every move. I have been keeping a close eye

on both Neo and Olivia and they are going on with the lives as per usual, I haven't been to see Neo since

my first visit, I don't want to hurt her coz I will be furious knowing that she hasn't divorced that husband of hers and I know she is still sleeping with him, the only way to make her see that I am responsible is to make myself known to our baby girl. My boys and I followed her to the mall and one followed her inside, they tell me that she is doing her nails in the salon, after a while he tells me she is almost done so I make my way in and she walks out of the fancy salon looking at her manicure, I walk to her side to make sure that she bumps into me

Her "oh I am so sorry sir"

Me "it is okay princess" she smiles and attempts to walk away

Me "you look like someone I have been looking for" she narrows her eyes

Her "oh sorry I hope you find her soon"

Me "actually I just did"

Her "oh okay"

Me "hasn't your mother told you about me Olivia" she froze a

second then faked a smile

Her "my mother?" she tries to play dumb

Me "yes Neo your mother"

Her "I am sorry sir but my mother is not Neo, my mother's name is Fiona" I laugh

Me "so she taught you how to lie I see" she looks down embarrassed

Her "I honestly don't know what you are talking about"

Me "little girl, I don't have time to be going back and forth you. you are my daughter and I am your

father Moscow, I know she told you about me"

Her "what do you want" she tries to look tough

Me "now that is my daughter, come have lunch with me"

Her "no thanks I have things to do" I look at her bored

Me "that was an order baby girl" I walk away and my boys will make sure that she follows behind me

We get to a restaurant. We are shown to a table for 2 and we sit, I order and she says she doesn't want

anything and now she is pissing me off really

Me "she will have the same as me thank you" the waiter smiles

and walks away

Her "I said I didn't want anything"

Me "you lack manners and I blame your mother" she rolls her

Her "what do you want from me"

Me "I just want to have a relationship with my daughter"

Her "you wanted to beat me out of my mother's womb coz you thought I wasn't yours, so why now"

Me "there are two sides to every story princess and I see you chose to listen to only one"

Her "coz that one is the truth" I laugh and shake my head

Me "you are stubborn just like me, so me and you are we will get to know each other and we will be a

family princess coz I am where you belong both you and your mother. Now tell me more about yourself"

Her "there is nothing to tell" this child is testing me so I hold her hand and squeeze

Me "find something and tell your father now princess" now that she is scared she will show respect

OLIVIA



I have never been so scared in my life, this man is crazy and he is a bully, he made me finish the entire meal and I had to pretend like I am enjoying it. I told him about school and graduations and he was so excited, I have never seen someone who flips between moods like him, I see why my mother was scared out of her mind like that, I have seen crazy before but this is the kind of crazy. Before telling me that I could go home he gave me R50 000 and said I should buy myself something nice and when we meet again I should show him what I bought. He is sick in the head and wealthy; trust me that's a bad combination. I walked out of that and went straight for my car; I didn't even want to bump into him again. I drove to my mother's house and immediately as I park a sms from an unknown number comes through.

\*you didn't have to run to mommy princess, I won't hurt you. I just want to get to know my daughter and have a relationship with her that's all. I will send you details of when we are having

dinner. I love you and tell your mom I love her too\*

where the hell did this man get my number and how the hell did he know I am here. I quickly get out of the car and run inside locking the door, my mom quickly appears

Her "who is chasing you" I just cry and launch into her arms

Me "mama I ran into him"

Her "into who baby"

Me "Moscow mama, I bumped into him at the mall" he body tenses and she let's go of me

Her "did he hurt you, did that bastard lay a hand on you" she says inspecting me for any bruises I assume, I shake my head no

Me "he just forced me to have lunch with him, that man is crazy mama"

Her "I told you to deny me nana"

Me "I tried mama I swear I did but he know me already he was very sure" she sighs and wipes my tears

Her "I am so sorry"

Me "it's not your fault mama"

Her "it sure feels like it is"

Me "h has people watching us, he knows I am here ma"

Her "I know he does, he came here weeks ago"

Me "why didn't you tell me this"

Her "I didn't want to stress you"

Me "but still we could have found a solution to this man"

Her "I will come up with something nana I will find a way to get rid of me even if it's the last thing I do I

will protect you I swear"

Me "we can just ask help from my father he will know what to do"

Her "Olivia no, your father and his wife just had a child and Moscow is crazy, he will go after Siza and MJ

just to get Molemo to back off"

Me "my father is smart I swear he will know what to do"

Her "and I know Moscow nana he will take away what your father holds dear his wife and son just coz

your father wants to take what he thinks he holds dear, you and I"

Me "then what do you suggest we do"

Her "I will come up with a plan I promise" we need my father's help I wish she could see that, I mean

that crazy man is beyond us combined really

Me "okay"

Her "come sit you are shaking, I will make you sugar water to help you calm down"

Me "thank you mama"

## LUNGILE

I wake up from this terrible dream sweating and panting, I look around and I am still in my daughters'

house, I dozed off on the couch. What could this dream mean? In this afternoon dream I saw Motaung

battling with a black snake, I have never seen such a huge snake in my life, this snake was to go and eat

Olivia who had MJ in her arms so like a good father he kept on fighting it, trying to keep it away from his

children, but the snake was too strong for him, he wrestled it but at the end he lost and instead of going

for the children it ate him instead, Siza was locked in the cage the entire time, screaming and trying to break the steel jut to help her husband but she couldn't when she saw the snake eating her husband her screams filled with pain woke me up. My heart feels so heavy; I need to pray about this. She walks in smiling and I return a fake one

Her "finally awake I see"

Me "I don't even know when I dozed off"

Her "its okay you are tired mama"

Me "where is MJ"

Her "I just put him to sleep" I smile

Me "I have never asked you this mntanam" she narrows her eyes

Her "asked me what mamami"

Me "how are you coping with motherhood and school" she smiles

Her "I won't lie mama having you and Mo make it all easy"

Me "I am happy to be able to help this time"

Her "you have always helped mama, more than you will ever know"

Me "tell me baby"

Her "yes my love"

Me "is your husband having any problems with his enemies" she frowns

Her "no not that I know of, I mean he stepped down from the cartel years ago mama and Gadafi has

also stepped down, My husband is only involved in legal things now so I don't see why he would be

having problems with old enemies, why do you ask"

Me "nothing specific I just don't anyone coming into your lives and taking away your happiness" she

smiles and hugs me

Her "oh mom, everything is fine I swear nothing is going to come into my family and cause disruptions,

in Jesus name"

Me "amen and amen"

Her "can you please look after MJ a bit I just want to go type something in Molemo's study"

Me "no problem"

Her "and don't cook tonight, I asked him to bring take away on his way back home"

Me "I didn't know he went back to work"

Her "no he just had to sign a few documents that's all. he said he is not leaving his son until he is 3 months"

Me "he is a good father and husband" she blushes

Her "I wish I could also take time off school and stay home with my son "

Me "school is not like running your own business nana"

Her "I know mama" she says and walks away leaving me wondering what my dream was all about.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 145

RAZOR

I don't think could get any better, having successful businesses,  
healthy and happy children, a beautiful  
wife who I know will always have my back and love me no  
matter what, a brother whose life is equally  
amazing, blessings just keep pouring and pouring I just pray to  
God that nothing ruins what I have. Here I  
am with G but my head is not here, I just want to be home  
looking at my son eating his tiny hand and  
making these cute baby sounds just making me fall in love with  
him more, my household is complete  
and it feels more homely

Him "am I Boring you Razor" I snap out of it and look at him

Me "say what?" I ask and he rolls his eyes

Him "man where the fuck are you in that tiny brain of yours"

Me "just thinking about my boy" he smiles

Him "you are happy huh?"

Me "more than you can ever imagine man"

Him "I know how much you have dreamt of having a son"



Me "I just wanted someone to carry my names even when I am gone, I love all my children the same, even Mercy"

Him "I don't doubt that, speaking of which how is she?" I sigh

Me "the prison ward I pay to look out for her tells me she was involved in a fight last week and they beat her ass up"

Him "I was hoping prison would change her"

Me "exactly but seems like she is still snorting cocaine so there is no hope anymore"

Him "is she taking her ARVs though?"

Me "every morning according to the ward" he sighs

Him "hopefully she will realize that this is not the life and get it together"

Me "yeah man"

Him "how does it feel not touching your wife" I laugh

Me "who said my wife and I are not sleeping with each other"

Him "what you hitting it but they said 3 months"

Me "I wasn't waiting 3 months man, plus we sleep in the same bed and it's hard resisting her when her

thigh is on top of me” he laughs

Him “ya’ll aren’t scared of falling pregnant again”

Me “I would love that but she is scared so we rely on me pulling out”

Him “I wish Ntombi was that open minded” I laugh

Me “you were not convincing enough, it didn’t even take me 15 minutes”

Him “oh yeah I decided to go into restaurant business with my wife”

Me “oh yeah, that’s sound like an adventure”

Him “I know right. We even decided to buy a vineyard and sell the wine at our restaurants”

Me “that’s amazing man, so her catering company?”

Him “she is still starting it once she is done with school. I have already bought 2 existing restaurants; we

are going to introduce new things to the existing menu when they get use to it we change the name”

Me “talk to Olivia to help you with getting it out there through her social media”

Him “great idea man, I will call her”

Me "I should head back man"

Him "you will only leave when my wife tells me that she is on her way from your house" I laugh

## THANDIWE

I had the longest meeting ever and I was so famished I couldn't hold off till I got home, so I decided to

just have late lunch and grab take away For Mbuso and the kids.

My company is growing very quickly I

didn't expect it to expand so much, I even have contracts with municipalities now, I couldn't have been

so proud of myself, and the fact that school is flowing makes me happy, 3 more years to go and I will be

graduating. Mbuso is just so amazing when I have to study he does the house chores and takes care of

the kids, I couldn't have asked for a better partner. I finish my meal and decide to video call my sister

who answer and the screen shows my nephew with his hand in his mouth I just melt

Me "oh my God Siza look at him"

Her "the cutest thing I have ever seen" he pouts his mouth and his dimples come out to play

Me "oh my God with those dimples girls better be ready" she laughs

Her "I hope you are ready aunty to chase away the girls"

Me "ready as I can be, I miss you guys"

Her "we miss you too sis"

Me "I will come through this weekend okay"

Her "I would love that, Ntombz says hey" she moves the screen and Ntombi and Letlotlo come into view

Me "hey guys, oh look at my princess hey baby" she smiles and hides her face

Ntombi "how is everything"

Me "everything is okay sis what about you guys"

Ntombi "I have something to share but I will let you guys know on Saturday"

Me "okay my love"

Her "bring me alcohol"

Me "you want Molemo to kill me for helping you breastfeed his

son alcohol" she laughs a face that

annoys me stands in front of me with a smirk on his face

Me "guys I need to go, see you Saturday. I love you" I say and hang up

Him "ever so beautiful"

Me "what do you want dick head" he chuckles

Him "so you do think about my dick huh"

Me "get off your bloody high horse Mphathi"

Him "you don't have to hate me coz of my brother you know"

Me "I don't hate you I just don't like you because you are a shitty human being"

Him "you would like me if you gave us a chance"

Me "no thank you" I say and sip my juice

Him "let's go away for this weekend and get to know each other, any place you like, Bali, Dubai, Paris

anything you want baby I will do it let's just go away"

Me "do you hear the words no though"

Him "not really coz no one ever says no to me"

Me "well there is a first time for everything"

Him "you don't have to feel bad for picking me over Mbuso"

Me "wake up from that dream man"

Him "I swear I can make you cum, I know he lacks in that department" I stood up and poured my juice

on his face

Me "like I said you will never be half the man Mbuso is, even your dick print proves that"

Him "it's just sleeping hun" I walk away and turn back to him again

Me "oh by the way you can take the money you flash around and get your penis enlarged" I leave him

standing there trying to wipe off the orange juice on his face

OLIVIA

I just got to my place from staying with Steve for the entire week; my baby is always an amazing escape,

haven't really told him or anyone about my Moscow, my mom feels like if we tell anyone we are putting

them in danger. I don't even want to think about that man at

least not today. I take a quick shower and opt for a comfy dress and prepare some junk so I could binge of some series. After watching for 15minutes a knock comes through my door and I roll my eyes God eish, I drag myself to the door and I don't recognize the man on my door step.

Me "can I help you"

Him "grab anything you are going to need for a sleep over"

Me "excuse you"

Him "listen here I don't have the whole day" he says pushing me aside and walking in

Me "who the fuck are you again"

Him "your father requests your presence"

Me "my father would never send a hooligan to come and harass me"

Him "then you clearly don't know your father cheese girl" I roll my eyes

Me "Moscow damn that bastard fuck"

Him "you better hold your tongue in front of him. Get your shit

let's go" I sigh and switch off the TV I

take my phone

Me "let's go" he shakes his head and moves to my room and comes back with a bag

Him "I said sleep over" he says and pushes me out locking my door, we walk down stairs and he opens

the Audi SUV door, I get in and my mother is sited, she just pulled me in for a hug

Me "mama what's going on"

Ma "they say he requested our presence"

Me "why can't he just disappear" they drive off and I notice we are going to the North, we park outside

a huge mansion, they punch in the code and drive in; they open our doors and we get out, the goon that

got me leads us inside, if I wasn't pissed I would have appreciated this house but no, we get into a great

room and the he stands in his Versace gown and black basic shirts with a white vest. He has a cigar

Him "welcome home. My Queen and Princess. I hope you like the house" we stay silent for a sec

Ma "so why are we here Moscow"



Him "I wanted you to see the house and let Olivia choose a room"

Me "you want us to move here" I ask horrified

Him "in time yes, but my surface is still hot now, I can't have you too in the firing line, you will just visit"

Ma "why are you doing this, we have our own lives here"

Him "you two are my life so you belong here with me"

Ma "you are just unbelievable really"

Him "Maria" he shouts and an elderly lady appears from the hallway

Lady "yes Sir"

Him "this is the lady of the house, madam Neo and this is our daughter Olivia" she smile

Lady "it's nice to meet you" we smile at her, this man is delusional

Him "we are ready for dinner please tell the chef to serve us in the dining room"

Lady "okay sir" she walks away

Him "this way please" he walks and my mother and I protest but his goon cocks his gun and we stop

being stubborn and we follow scared as hell, how are we suppose to eat knowing we could be shot any time. We get to the dinning and we sit down, Him "stop being stubborn, I suggest that you get on with the program for all our sakes; I would hate to have to bury either of you really. Just know that I love you okay" he says and sips on his drink

SIZA

My mother hasn't been herself lately, she is really worrying me I won't lie. I tried finding out what it is but she just brushes me off or changes the subject. I wonder if we did something to offend her or what but this tension is really worrying me. I just wish she could just tell me what is going on so we can fix it and get on with life. I just got home from school and my husband called and said he went out to the firm for a few hours coz one client is giving his associates troubles coz he wants Mo to represent him, so he just went to put out the fire. After changing I went to my son's

nursery and mama is giving him a bath

and singing to him, the bottle with my breast milk is near them.  
She feels my presence and looks back

Ma "oh hey there, look boy mama is home, you don't have to  
drink from the bottle now"

Me "was he crying?"

Ma "no sisi I just wanted to feed him after bathing so he can  
have his nap"

Me "oh okay plus my breasts are full" she giggles

Ma "remind me to add breast pads to the grocery list"

Me "okay mama and please give it to me so I can go get  
everything after my classes tomorrow"

Ma "no problem" she says and gives her attention to MJ

Me "mama is everything okay?"

Ma "yes nana" I kneel in front of her and she stops completely  
and looks at me

Me "I am sorry if my husband and I did something to offend you  
mama, I am very sure it wasn't on

purpose. You help us so much I would want to get you mad" she

quickly takes my hands and helps me

up and pulls me close to her

Ma "you did nothing to offend me baby"

Me "then why have you been so cold towards me" she sighs

Ma "nana it's nothing"

Me "maMthethwa please" she lets go and dresses Molemo Junior who falls asleep immediately. She

takes a sit and I go down and sit on the fluffy carpet looking up at her

Ma "I had a dream about you and your family" I close my eyes and say a short prayer

Me "what was it about mama" she narrates the dream detail by detail and I am left feeling cold. I am

scared like it's guaranteed that it will come true

Ma "I should have told you earlier I am sorry"

Me "its okay mama I understand. So what do you think the dream means?"

Ma "I wish I knew, but I have been praying about it" I bury my face in my hands and sigh deeply, God

please whatever it is please don't let it, we just had our son, I

can't lose this man he is my life, if he dies I

would want to die with him and that wouldn't be fair on my boy

God please I still need him, his son still

needs him, MJ will need his father God please make it go away

Me "mama loosing Molemo would kill me"

Ma "I know sisi that's why I didn't want to tell you, it scared me"

Me "I would never survive if he left me with a child to raise on my own"

Ma "that dream will never come to pass coz we are going to fast and pray about it"

Me "thank you sis'Lungile"

Ma "I am your mother baby it's only my pleasure"

No edits.

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 146

OLIVIA

My father called and asked me to meet with him for lunch but I couldn't risk that bastard knowing that I

met with him so the only way was to make him agree to having lunch at home, I said I will even order

something on Uber eats and he understood coz I said I miss my little brother. I know that Moscow's

goons are out there watching me and every move I make so I just had to call a friend of mine from

school to come pick me up, when she got here I got in the back and got down so that they don't see me

leaving with her, when she was sure that no car was following us I got up and she dropped me off and

said I should call her when I am ready to go back to my apartment. When arrive I find dad with MJ in the lounge

Me "oh look at how cute you two are" he smiles

Him "father and kids bonding time" I kiss my brother on the forehead and dad on the cheek

Me "where is Siza and mam'Lungile"

Him "well my wife is at campus she is writing later on the day, and my mother in law went to the stores"

Me "daddy duties huh"

Him "I enjoy every moment of taking care of this little champ really"

Me "I am so happy God granted you a mini you" he chuckles

Him "he does look like me huh"

Me "not as much as I do though" he bursts out laughing

Him "did you hear that MJ your sister is jealous that she is no longer my twin"

Me "whatever" I say and we chuckle. I wish he was my real father so I didn't have to deal with that

psycho Moscow. i am lost in my thoughts for a while

Him "Olivia" he says and I jump a bit

Me "yes papa"

Him "what's going on with you" I sigh and try to act fine

Me "nothing I am okay hao" he gives me an intimidating look

Him "do you want me to squeeze it out of you" I sigh

Me "it's nothing I can't handle"

Him "even so I still want to know" he puts MJ down and looks at me straight in the eye making it hard

for me to lie to him, tears form in my eyes and I can keep it from him anymore so I just tell him

everything without even leaving a word out, by the time I am done he is shocked as hell. The fury is not

lost in his eyes

Him "that bastard, I try running from him from the cartel now he is back fuck"

Me "please help us daddy please"

Him "Moscow is a dangerous man Liv, he is even unstable if I go after him I will have to plan it

thoroughly, I am going to talk to your uncle G about this then I will inform you on the plan. In the mean

time Olivia I am going to need you to play along but I will be keeping an eye on your mother and you. he

must not be suspicious coz that will make him irrational and he will hurt you guys" I nod vigorously

Me "I hear you daddy I will tell my mother"

Him "from what you told me about your mother, she is scared of that man and immediately when she

learns our plans she will show it and Moscow will act, remember if he knows what I am doing he will



retaliate and come after Siza and MJ so please”

Me “okay I won’t breathe a word of this to anyone else”

Him “fuck it Moscow damn eish” he says and I can see that he is really worried

Me “I am sorry for all of this” he gives me a reassuring squeeze on my hand

## RAZOR

Olivia left hours ago and what she told really send cold chills down my spine, I will admit that Moscow is

someone I have always tried avoiding coz going to war with him could only mean my doom, that man

has nothing to lose even if he has Olivia he would kill her himself so his enemies don’t have leverage

over him, he is that heartless, so this is scaring me, I just had my son and now this. I know I should

protect Olivia and I will come up with a plan for her. My priority right now is to get my wife and son

away from all of this so that he doesn’t come for them in a bid of getting me to back off. The study door

opens and she walks in

Her "hey baby" I give her a side smile

Me "Soft, how was your paper"

Her "a bit challenging but I have a pass there"

Me "I am glad to hear that"

Her "you look like you are carrying all the problems of the world on your shoulders"

Me "it sure feels like it love"

Her "what is going on baba ka Boy" she asks with so much concern in her voice, I just sigh

Me "Olivia was here earlier"

Her "oh no I missed her again, would have loved to see her"

Me "she will come back soon"

Her "tell me what's going on, what is weighing you down baby" I stand I take her and sit on the couch

with her on my lap, I tell her everything Olivia shared with me and I feel her shaking literally in my arms

Me "oh my God my mother's dreams is happening" tears just stream down her face

Her "what dream Soft, what are you talking about" I ask wiping her tears. She explains what my mother

in law dreamt of and deep down I won't lie I am shit scared

Me "baby nothing is going to happen to me" she shakes her head

Her "you can't be sure of that Molemo you said it yourself that the man is dangerous"

Me "I need to help Olivia"

Her "I understand that, but you can use your people to get him" I sigh

Me "only I know how he operates baby I need to be there to help them"

Her "Molemo please don't do this to me please"

Me "baby trust me I wouldn't go to war if I didn't have to"

Her "there are a million ways to get rid of that man without putting your life at risk"

Me "I need to do this baby for Olivia"

Her "what about me and your son Molemo, what about us what will happen to us w-if something

happens to you during that war"

Me "nothing is going to happen to me I promise you"

Her "don't promise me Molemo just tell me you will find a way to deal with him without going to war"

Me "I wish there was another way but war is the way to get rid of him" she shakes her head

Her "you can't tell me that. We just had a son Mo. What if he comes after me and MJ"

Me "that's why I am getting you two out of the country" she chuckles

Her "wow just wow"

Me "Soft please try and understand"

Her "I know you love Olivia and she is your princess and I love her as much she is not just my best friend

but my sister, I hate what that man is doing to her and I want you to help them, I just wish you were not

risking yourself when doing it. Excuse me I need to feed my son"

Me "baby we are still talking" I plead with her

Her "I don't think we do love, you have already made up your mind" she says and pecks my lips and leave

3 weeks later

GADAFI

If it were up to me I wouldn't even be a part of this, I have a wife and daughter I need to prioritize, but

Razor and I once took a blood oath, I die where he dies and he dies where he dies, we are brothers for

life and I will always have his back, I just wish we didn't have to do this ourselves but we are there only

ones who know how Moscow operates and thinks so being part of the time will help the boys who are

soldering with us through this war. We are at Razors house and my wife and child are both here. Ntombi

is crying and I won't lie it breaks my heart knowing that I am responsible for her tears. I take my

daughter and sit next to her.

Me "I am going to fight and make sure that I come back to you"

Her "please you still have time to get out of this baby please"

Me "I wish I could baby, but I can't let him go in there alone"

Her "you better come back to us Tebo please I beg you please"

Me "I love you and I promise I will my love I swear"

Her "we need you and I love you too" I kiss her passionately until I heard her moan in my mouth, if she

didn't give me her body all night I would be craving to take her to bed right now but I am satisfied. Razor

appears with MJ in his arms and Siza follows after wiping her tears. Lungile stands from the couch

Lungi "please you two don't go through with this please I beg of you my daughters won't survive if

anything happens to you"

Me "we will be back Lungi I promise you"

Razor "we will be safe and we will come back"

Me "this place is secured with armed trained guards, every corner in this neighborhood is heavily

guarded to ensure that no one suspicious get's in. we also have a helicopter doing rounds, so you are all

safe, we will come back okay" Ntombi nods and kisses me again.

My brother hands the baby to Lungile

and kneels in front on the sitting Siza who is crying so painfully she is even hurting me more

Razor "Soft I will be back baby I need you to believe that okay, you and MJ will be what gets me out of

that place alive. Pray for me baby and I promise this is the last fight I am getting myself into I promise"

Siza "if you don't come back to me Motaung just know that I will die with you and our son will be left

with no parents" her words hit home

Razor "please don't talk like this my love"

Siza "you are my life Molemo and when you walk out that door and something happens to you know

that it happens to me too" she says and attacks him with a passionate kiss filled with tears

Razor "I am sorry for putting you through this love please forgive me, I will be back to you and our son I

promise you that"

Siza "I love you Molemo"

Razor "I love you too Soft with every fiber of my being" she nods and he kisses her forehead and stands.

We both strap up and put on our vests. One of the boys walks

in

Him "boss, the car is ready and the guys who are staking his house says he just arrived"

Me "good we will be right out" I kiss my wife and daughter one more time and Razor nods at me

Razor "we will be back, we love you guys so much"

Lungi "go and come back you will find us here" we nod and walk out and get to the car they drive us

there and the boys are already there waiting

NARATED

About 10 man were going to help Razor and Gadafi with the mission, Razor had learnt that Moscow's

neighbors in his Johannesburg mansion had gone to a vacation, so he and managed to get into the

house and disarmed the alarms so him and his man can stay in the house so that Moscow's guards don't

spot them. They had learnt that Moscow had 5 guards on the outside and only two with him inside and



that was positive on their side as it meant they had the advantage. They sent the first five men to go and take care of the guards outside and then after they went in through the wall with the remaining man, getting there the outside guards were down as expected and they made their way in took cover when gun shots started, G and Razor took cover on the stair cases, Moscow's man seemed to have multiplied and by now they were outnumbering Razor and G's man and they had already lost a few man from their team making them vulnerable. The shots stopped and Moscow's voice filled the room

Him "what did you think was going to happen Razor, you and Gadafi were going to find me vulnerable,

you have always thought you were smart but you underestimated me" they both started to panic

wondering how he knew they were coming

Him "I might have first came to Joburg with wrong information but that didn't mean shit, I made my

homework and I know you are the one who raised my baby girl,

and I was willing to come and thank you  
but you are foolish you wanted her all to yourself now I will  
teach you a lesson, you son will grow up  
without a father and once that wife of yours mourns you I will  
make a move and marry her give your boy  
a million sibling” Razor started boiling at the mention of his  
wife and son that he did the most stupid  
thing he walked from his cover in an attempt to find Moscow  
but ran into two of his guards who fought  
him and got rid of his gun and in the process taking off his  
bullet vest. Gadafi appeared and shot them  
both and took his brother back to cover  
G “are you fucken stupid, are you trying to get yourself killed”  
Razor “sorry brother but did you hear that mother fucker  
talking about my wife and kid”  
G “he knows which buttons to push don’t give him the  
satisfaction”  
Him “you know that you two have nowhere to run now I  
suggest you surrender”  
G “we have survived worse Moscow you know this” Moscow  
laughs

Him "boy's now" he shouted and G turned and before he could shoot the guys one managed to shoot

Razor two times in the chest, blood was everywhere. G saw his brother holding his chest and he felt like

his world was ending

G "Fuck Brother hand in there, I will get you out of here I swear hold on, don't die on me" but the weak

Razor was struggling to even breath

Razor "G man protect my wife, make sure that my boy knows that I love him, look out for them please"

G "fuck no you will protect them yourself coz I am getting you out of here" he struggled to breath more

Razor "I won't make it G please one hit close to my heart I feel it please tell Soft I am sorry I love her and

she must not give up on life, tell her I will always look out for them" G was now crying.

G "brother we can make it"

Razor "no please go" he begs

G "I die where you die Molemo"

Razor "I know Tebogo but right now that would be stupid we have wives and kids now, you have to take

care of them, by our blood oath when the elder brother talks the younger listens” G cried coz he knew

he had to listen to his older brother

G “I can’t leave you here”

Razor “get out of here now Tebogo and take care of mine”

G “I am so sorry brother, I love you man, I will make his pay for this”

Razor “I love you two man now go please go I will cover you” he says starts to shoot while G runs out, he manages to jump the wall again and got to the car and drove off crying like a little boy, wondering how he is going to explain to Siza that her husband is not coming back.

No edits

SIZAS’S TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 147

SIZA

I felt heavy in my heart, they have been gone for hours and my

son is feeling all this tension he has  
become agitated, I keep looking at the watch then the door,  
hoping that it would open and they will  
walk in and he would come tell me that's it's over, I feel cold so  
cold and I know it's hot outside, Ntombi  
comes to sit near me and folds me in her arms and I hold her  
back, I know that she is the only person  
who knows what I am going through at this point. My mom  
offers us juice but we both refuse I won't be  
able to keep anything down. I love at the watch and it hardly  
moved from where it was. The door opens  
after forever and Gadafi walks in, relief flows through me and  
Ntombi stands up and runs to him  
launching her in his arms

Ntombi "oh thank God baby, thank God you are okay thank you  
Jesus" G doesn't respond but squeezes

Ntombi tighter. I look at the door expecting Molemo but he  
doesn't walk in I stand and go outside to

check but he is nowhere to be found, my heart starts to beat so  
fast I think I am going to faint. I go back

inside and pull Gadafi from Ntombi and his eyes are blood shot red.

Me "G where is my husband" he looks at me with a blank expression

Me "I ask you a damn question Gadafi where is my husband" I say and she looks down

Him "I am so sorry Sizakele so sorry" he says and I shake my head

Me "sorry for what G" I ask not wanting to believe it until he says it

Him "he got shot and"

Me "which hospital is he at" he goes silent for the longest time

Him "he didn't make it Siza I am so sorry" tears just come and I start hitting him with my fists

Me "no,no, no he can't be dead please take it back please Gadafi take back this painful joke"

Him "I wish I was joking Siza I wish I was I am so sorry please"

Me "I can't lose him, I can't. Mama it's painful it's just too painful" my mom comes to me quickly

Ma "I know my love I know it is I am very sorry"

Me "I want my husband Gadafi please take me to him"

Him "the is too much heat right now Siza, I can't risk taking you there" whatever I did to the universe to

always dish me so much pain has to be big, I lost Siphephelo now it's Molemo, we just had a child God, I

can't raise MJ alone please give me my husband" I sink to the floor and my mother joins me

Him "I am very sorry Siza, I don't even know what to say to you"

Me "just take me to go see him please"

Him "it's too dangerous please my sister"

Me "let them kill me too, there is nothing to live for anymore"

Him "you have MJ"

Me "how will I raise my son on my own"

Ma "you have us sisi we will help you I promise"

Me "it's too much for one person mama ngeke I can't take it anymore, what did I ever do to God for him

to do me like this"

Ma "don't talk like this, God has a reason"

Me "the same reason he had when my daughter died mama is that it?"

Ma "we will never know"

Me "he is a cruel God then"

Ma "it's just the hurt talking sisi"

Me "no this time it's me, I didn't deserve this, my husband didn't deserve it"

OLIVIA

I am pacing up and down waiting to receive a phone call from my father to tell me that they are done, my stomach is in knots and I wonder what Siza is going through right now. I haven't really told my mother what is going coz my dad asked me to tell her when all of this is over, I want to share with her coz really this is weighing down on me real bad. My mom walks in and narrows her eyes, I sold her a story of how me and Steve fought and I am hoping he calls me before the end of the day and apologize and she bought it then but I guess my actions are proving that it's something deeper going on with me she sighs



Her "what is going on with you and please tell me the truth this time around"

Me "mama I told you" she was about to protest when a call from my uncle Gadafi comes through and I feel myself relax a little thank God

Me "hey uncle G" I say and hear a painful cry in the background

Him "hey baby girl"

Me "is it done"

Him "tell me where are you"

Me "I am with my mother at my apartment"

Him "okay baby girl I am going to need you to sit down" I don't wait for him to ask me twice

Me "uncle G what's going on" he sighs

Him "your father baby, he was shot"

Me "oh my God no, is he okay, which hospital is he at"

Him "he is not at any baby girl. Razor is no more" he says and I just let my phone slide down my ear and

fall, tears just stream down my face, oh my God no not my dad, ous'Neo rushes to me and hugs me

Her "Olivia what is going on" I just shake my head trying to

wrap my head around what I just heard

Her "talk to me what is going on Liv" I cry for what seems like forever and I decide to just tell her the truth

Her "Oh Olivia I told you not to involve him in this I told you that Moscow is dangerous, now that poor girl is left a widow and MJ doesn't have a father"

Me "I know mama but I just thought he will help us"

Her "oh my God what has Moscow done" he holds me close and her heart beats so fast. A loud band

comes through my door and my mother quickly gets up and opens the door, and screams a little as that

monster walks in pointing a gun at her, I quickly stand and go behind the couch, they walk in and his two

goons walk in with my father, he is bleeding but they tied him up with his t shirt I guess to stop the

bleeding, he is struggling to breathe, oh my God he is not dead my father is not dead, they place him on

my couch and I try to go help him but Moscow yanks me off that I go hit the wall

Him "I will kill you trust me Olivia"

Her "Moscow this man needs to go to the hospital" my mother says

Him "oh no he is going to stay here and bleed out, this will be the last place they look for him, I just

didn't want him to die yet I wanted to see when I take his princess away he must witness that he played

super hero for nothing, because what Moscow wants Moscow gets" boy's I want you to go in there and

find me something manly so we can change these bloody clothes so we make through the airport, we

can't stay in this city Gadafi is probably already hunting us" they nod and disappear to my room

Me "please take him to the hospital and I swear I will follow you everywhere" he laughs

Him "you are leaving with me princess the both of you" he says and puts put's his gun down taking off

his shirt, Neo quickly went for the gun and shot him 3 times one of the guards appears appear with a gun but she manages to shoot him too, the third one comes out with his hand up signaling that he is surrendering.

Ma "Olivia take that phone and call the ambulance and police, you put pressure on those wounds" I nod

and quickly grab my phone and call the ambulance and they say I should give the 7 minutes I call the cops after, I make my way to my father and feel his pulse it's there but it's too weak

Me "daddy please hold on, help is on its way please hold on, we need you please, Siza would die if she lost you, think of MJ and hang in there please, the police arrive first and a second later the ambulance get here the medics check him out and connect him to an oxygen mask and hurry out with him, my mom says I should go with him whilst she tells the police what happened here.

GADAFI

I have never felt so numb, Razor was a part of me and losing him is losing myself, I can't help but feel guilty, I shouldn't have listened to him I should have stuck and tried to get him out dead or alive, we are brothers my heart and by oath, I will never forgive myself for what happened today, my nephew is

crying like he can understand that his father is no more, Lungile keeps on trying to hush him but he is not stopping, Siza is sitting alone on the couch with a picture of her and Razor on their wedding day, her sobs cut deep and I wish I could bring back her husband. I already deployed more man to go check out Moscow's house and bring back my brothers corps. They will call m when they have him. My phone rings and it's Olivia, maybe she has come down

Me "princess"

Her "uncle G papa is not dead" I close my eyes

Me "I know it's hard Liv but Razor is no more please"

Her "no I am sure he is not dead, I rushed him to the hospital, he is in surgery now"

Me "what? How" my heart starts beating fast

Her "it's a long story please come to Harmony medical center"

Me "okay I will be there in 10 minutes" I hang up and make way to Siza whose eyes are fixed on the photo

Me "Siza, Razor he is critical but alive he is in surgery now" he eyes shoot up at me with me

Her "what my husband is alive Gadafi" she says with a breaking voice and I nod

Me "come let's go" she didn't wait for me to say it twice she ran and I take her shoes and follow her

Lungi "what is going on"

Me "Olivia just called she says Razor is in surgery at the hospital, I don't have all the details but I will call you and Ntombi when I get there"

Lungi "oh thank you Jesus thank you God" I get to the car and Siza is in the passenger seat crying and

praying while rocking her body back and forth. We get to the hospital and no time and find Olivia in the

waiting room covered in blood, she tries to hug Siza but she ignores her and goes straight to Mandla

Liv "oh my God she hates me God she hates me"

Me "she doesn't hate you princess she is just hurting and she wants her husband, how did you find him"

she tells me what happened and I couldn't be more relieved that he is dead

Siza "how is my husband Mandla how is Molemo" she says and we go near them

Mandla "I just went to check a minute ago, he came in pretty bad Siza and one of those bullets went to

his left side but luckily didn't touch the heart, he lost a lot of blood, but they are giving him a blood

transfusion, luckily our blood bank has enough of his blood type. He is really not looking good but I have

my best people in the trust me they will do all they can to save your husband"

Siza "thank you Power" he nods

Mandla "let me go back in there again, I will give you an update soon okay"

Me "you will find me here I am not going anywhere"

Me "he is going to be okay Siza, and I am sorry once again" she looks at me and gives me a faint smile,

Olivia tries to go to her but I hold her back

Me "give her some time please princess" I whisper to her

Liv "I just want her to know that I am sorry for what happened"

Me "give her a little time princess" she nods and we all take our seats

SIZA

It has been 9 hours since he went to the Operating room, and I haven't stopped praying since, he has to

be okay he has to pull through, I can't lose Molemo, I wouldn't survive it. My poor son needs his father.

We need time as a family we need time to raise our boy and have many more kids, he can't live me, Lord

please hear my cries please save my husband for me. I drink the last of the coffee Gadafi brought me, I

can't look at Olivia because a part of me wants to blame her for this, she shouldn't have asked Molemo

to do this or she could have begged him to not do it himself but if then who why am I wishing that some

other woman was going through what I am going through right now, no one deserves this pain. I wipe

my tears and look up Ntombi makes her way towards me with bottles and my breast pump

Me "oh God he ran out of milk"



Her "he's on his last bottle"

Me "oh my boy, how is he"

Her "he finally calmed down and slept" I sigh

Me "thank you for coming"

Her "how is Molemo" I shrug

Me "he is still in surgery sis"

Her "he will be okay God saved him till this far he will not forsake you I swear" I nod, and ask Mandla to

borrow his office, Ntombi and I go and I start pumping, I was on my last bottle when Olivia walks in

Liv "babe, he is out of surgery, they say he is critical but he is stable" relief floods through me

Her "leave that one I think these ones will be enough till you come" I nod and dress properly and make

my way downstairs and I meet with Mandla and another Dr

Me "where is he, how is he doing"

Dr "your husband is a fighter Siza, there was too much damage but we repaired it, there were a few

scares but her made it through, we got all too bullets out, he is still critical though"

Me "brain activity?"

Dr "I forgot I am talking to a Dr in the making, his brain is functioning normally" I sigh deeply

Me "where is he can I see him please" he nods and tells me where my husband is, I walk in and he has a

tube in his mouth helping his breath, he has a large incision scar on his chest and they closed it with a

patch, he looks so peaceful God, he has a greenish colour under his eyes. He looks helpless I can't

Imagine the pain he was in; I sit down and hold his hand then move it to my lips and kiss it

Me "you need to fight baby, you need to fight and come back to me, I need you Molemo and our son

needs you, I can't do this alone so fight baby fight please, I love you so much Mo"

No edits

See you Monday. Have a lovely weekend

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 148

SIZA

I couldn't stay away from my husband, it has been 6 days since he came out of surgery and he hasn't

woken up, this place has been home since then, I couldn't leave my son at home coz he needs to feed

and he needs my attention, so I asked Mandla to make an exception and allow him and my mom to have

a room in the neonatal ward, lucky for me the TV here has everything so my mother can easily watch

her Nigerian movies, her support has been out of this world, I don't know how I would have dealt with all

this if she wasn't with me. I am feeding MJ and he is drifting away, I pull out my breast from his mouth

and rock him to sleep deeper, 10 minutes or so he is gone, I place him in the court

Me "page me when you need me mama"

Her "I will my baby, and continue holding on to faith and pray Siza, he will wake up"

Me "I will, and mama thank you"

Her "don't mention it sisi" I smile and walk out to my husband's room, I get in there and the nurse and a

Dr are checking on his vitals

Me "how is he doing today"

Dr "honestly your husband is healing very well, his brain is function like it should I really don't know why

he is not waking up" I sigh

Me "oh God, thank you" he nods

Dr "continue talking to him Siza, encourage him, by the tattoo on his chest it can only mean you are the

most important person in his life" I give him a side smile and eye my face on his bare chest. They both

walk out

Me "Molemo you need to wake up, I can't do this anymore, I am breaking down with each passing day, I

am trying so hard to keep it together but our son Mo our son, he needs us, I need you. having you in this

hospital makes me relive all the painful memories, I know I said I am over Phephe's death but Molemo

baby you being in here is killing me, I feel like I am going to go back to the world filled with misery and

pain, I love you and I need you. I never ask for much but right now I am asking you to fight and come

back to me” I say holding his hand, Mandla’s voice startles me

Him “you are a strong woman Siza”

Me “I don’t know if that is true”

Him “I know you are trust me, he is going to wake up and come back to you”

Me “I pray so, God knows”

Him “I knew how much you love this man, I remember when I kissed you and you went crazy, I could see

that you didn’t want any man coming into his territory, the respect you give him showed me the way

you love me and that alone made me back off, he will get through this coz of the love you have for him”

after Mandla said that, the machine started beeping and Mo sounded like he was choking, we both look

at him and he is trying to open his eyes, his doctor walks in and they quickly remove the tube from his

throat allowing him to breathe on his own, he continues

checking him, and asking him questions, I  
couldn't believe my eyes, he is awake my husband is back with  
me, my tears streamed down my face as  
I stand in the corner behind the doctors trying to get my act  
together  
Mo "Soft, where is my wife" I quickly make my way to him  
Me "I am here baby" I say taking his hand and he takes mine to  
his lips and kisses my knuckles  
Mo "oh baby" he says and tears form in his eyes I can't help but  
hug him and he tightens his hand a  
little and I just cry on his chest making sure that I don't touch  
his incision scar. The medical team excuse  
themselves and closes the door leaving me and mine to let it all  
out.

OLIVIA

I just finished preparing myself so I can go see my father, he  
hasn't woken up and that is hard for  
everyone, and the fact that my best friend is not talking to me  
is taking its toll on me too, but I don't

understand why she decided that I am to blame here, I needed my father's help and I understand that he almost died trying to help me but, I just wish we could be okay and be there for each other during this hard time that we are facing. I have been staying with my mother coz her husband is away on business, we couldn't be more grateful for that coz my mother is not ready to tell him what happened, she knows they are going to have a serious fallout.

Ma "you are still here"

Me "I don't look forward to going to see dad"

Ma "why Liv you have to nana" I sigh

Me "my best friend is not okay with me ma" she sits next to me and takes a deep breathe

Ma "if it wasn't for your fathers bravery Moscow wouldn't be dead, but Olivia I even personally asked

you to not involve him in this, I know I didn't have a solid plan. Siza almost lost her husband shortly after

they had their son, from all you have told me, she fights drama after drama with your dad and this time

the drama almost made her a widow, she needs someone to blame, and since her husband hasn't woken up from his coma, you are the next person she will blame because he almost got killed helping you, don't take her to heart Liv but in all honestly she has the right to feel like this at this point in time, she is scared, hurt and emotional, she will be okay and you guys will go back to where you used to be okay"

Me "I guess you are right"

Ma "you know, we don't react the same to pain Liv and our past experiences may trigger how we even react to everything, she could be linking this to her past experience"

Me "she lost her daughter a few years ago"

Ma "you see maybe the thought of losing someone else she loves killed her"

Me "I hate myself"

Ma "you were also scared my love so you did what nature propels us to do, save yourself"

Me "I almost lost my dad because of it"



Ma "yes you almost did but he is alive and he is fighting to come back"

Me "he has to come back really"

Ma "we all need to pray for him and he will definitely make it" I smile

Me "by the way I am not coming back"

Ma "haibo, where to" I laugh

Me "I am going to see Steven"

Ma "okay I guess I will be bored alone in this house" I laugh

Me "don't be that person, Steve misses me and I miss him too"

Ma "I understand that"

Me "I will be back Sunday later" she nods

Ma "did you talk to him about his father"

Me "oh yeah I did he promised not to say anything to him, he will give you the chance to tell him

yourself, he understood your reason"

Ma "thank him for me okay" my phone beeps and It's Siza

\*hey Liv, your father is finally awake and he is doing well\*

Me "it's Siza she says that dad is awake and doing pretty good"

Ma "oh baby that's good news and see she is already coming around"

Me "I hope so, let me get going God thank you" I say already heading out the do

## RAZOR

I can't believe that I survived two bullets to my chest; I mean I lost a lot of blood and I swear I didn't

think I was going to make it, but here I am, God gave me another chance, and I promise to be a better

husband to Siza, I was afraid of waking up because I was ashamed of what happened ashamed that I

almost made her go through another loss, even after she begged me not to, after her mother's vision I

still went through with it and almost got myself killed, but on the other hand I couldn't just let Olivia be

bullied by Moscow she is my daughter and I will always want to protect her. My wife walks in with a

paper bag from some restaurant

Me "I was wondering where you disappeared to"

Her "had to go feed MJ and pump some milk for him then I quickly went to get you chicken soup and fresh buns"

Me "how is my boy"

Her "he is okay, he is growing every day, I will bring him to your suit once they move you, he is here in one of the wards with mama"

Me "why the hospital"

Her "you have been here for 3 days and the driving back and forth was tiring so it was the only solution"

Me "I am sorry Soft, I know you warned me" she frowns

Her "please not now Molemo" I sigh and I know she is hurt very hurt, she opens the soup container and

starts feeding me, this thing tastes good really, she feeds me in silence but something is lingering

through my mind, when I heard them talking Mandla said something and I just had to wake up

Me "Soft baby"

Her "baba ka Boy" I smile

Me "why didn't you tell me that boy kissed you" I say the last two words with bile in my mouth and she

chuckles shaking her head

Her "so that's why you decided to wake up, coz you heard that Mandla once kissed me, are you for real

Mo, I begged and begged and spoke of our son of me and you only woke up because he kissed me" I look down embarrassed coz that is true, I heard everything everyone said near me.

Me "I am so sorry love, I was just scared and ashamed to face you, Siza I almost left you almost made

you a widow, a single mother, you asked me not to go but I did so I didn't know how I was going to look

at you after everything, I love you so much I hate myself for putting you through this making you relive

the pain of losing your daughter, you told me that if I died you are going to die with me so I was scared

and ashamed Soft, when that boy mentioned how you brushed him off coz of me I just couldn't let

myself stay in that coma, I had to come back coz I remembered that you couldn't do this life thing

without me and I didn't want you to either, I am so sorry for what I put you through, I promise to do

better I swear" she was crying her face on her lap, looking at her

breaking down like this made me

realize that she never asks for much, she never complains but she is always understanding, supportive

and readily available when I need her and I am aware that since we were married she hasn't fully

enjoyed this coz it has been problem after problem. I try and manage to sit up straight

Me "please come here" I say opening my arms and she doesn't protest

Her "the thought of loosing you Molemo" I couldn't let her finish

Me "shhh shhh you don't have to say it coz I know love and I am so sorry for being reckless, I promise to

do better, I will be a better husband to you coz Soft you are nothing short of being an amazing wife to

me and it's not fair that you should be the only one investing in our marriage, I love you and I am sorry"

Her "I love you too baby" she says and we sit with her in my arms in comfortable silence, I want her to

believe that I am alive and I am back to her.

GADAFI

I made sure that the cops don't sniff around us, we sold them a story and they believed it, my contact on

the inside said he will make the docket disappear in time, police must never have anything on Razor and

I coz it might just come back and bite us in the head, well Moscow's guy that survived won't say a word

that will deviate from our story coz I threatened to harm his family, but I won't be doing that, I just

wanted him to keep his mouth shut. I text comes through my phone and it's Siza, she says Molemo is

awake, I don't think I have ever screamed this much, Ntombi walked in

Her "Tebo not so loud God I just put Letlotlo to sleep"

Me "oh I am sorry babe"

Her "why are you screaming like this" I smile

Me "my brother is awake"

Her "seriously oh thank you God"

Me "I am going to head to the hospital"

Her "I am coming with you, my sister must be relived I know I am"

Me "I am just happy he is awake Siza was slowly dying" she sighs

Her "I can't even imagine what she was going through"

Me "babe go change so we can go please"

Her "take Letlotlo and put her in the car seat so long"

Me "done" I say and she disappears to our bedroom and I make my way to my daughter's bedroom

RAZOR

I was now in my suit away from ICU and its beeping machines, everyone was here and happy that I am

finally awake, I had my son in my hands and Olivia was next to me, she cried when she got here and I had to assure her that I am okay. I am sensing weird vibes between Olivia and Sizakele and I know why, I just don't want them to not be okay with each other, they love each other so much and I don't want them to lose the friendship they share over the mistake I made, I really

need to talk to them once everyone has left.

Liv "I am just glad you are okay papa"

G "don't ever scare us like that brother"

Me "but you all know that I am not the dying type"

G "now that you are awake I will believe that" we all laugh except my wife who has her eyes fixed on my

file, God she is really a doctor at heart this one

Liv "after you get out of her we are taking you to the longest vacation right Siza" we all look at her

Soft "one he has healed completely definitely" she says

Me "I have a law firm to run"

Liv "you have associates for that" I roll my eyes and Mandla walks in and my mood just goes south

Him "Mr. Motaung your doctor had an emergency in the ER and he asked me to check up on you, and

give you these pills" I look at my wife and she is looking at me to see how I will react, but her eyes are

telling me behave yourself, so I do just that

Me "thanks Mandla" I say and hand MJ to his sister and take



my pills

Him "I will be around the hospital if you need anything, Siza will page me" him mentioning my wife

almost made me lose it but composure Razor it was a long time ago and everyone knows he has always

had eyes for her but she chose you, plus he is a good kid let me give him a pass.

No edits

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 149

RAZOR

I couldn't talk to Olivia and my wife that day they were all here, I could see that my wife was tired and I

was told that she sleeps in my room and it couldn't have been easy for her to sleep on the chair all night,

so I asked her to take my boy and go have a good night sleep now that I was awake, I asked G to call

Olivia to come through and I didn't need to ask Soft coz I knew she wouldn't be anywhere else. I really need to get them to iron their differences; I can't bear knowing that they are not doing well. I just had my meal and I am quite full and I feel a little sleepy, I hate being this useless, I hate hospitals period.

Liv "oh Boy you are turning into a pumpkin" he voice jerks me up from the sleep I was almost lost in

Me "blame it on this place baby girl"

Liv "you could watch TV you know" I laugh

Me "I do that so much I could actually turn into a gossip Queen" she laughs and places the flowers the table near the window

Liv "I brought you some fruit salad

Me "I will have it later, already ate my lunch"

Liv "fair enough" I was about to answer when Siza walks in looking ravishing I swear I get a boner

instantly, those jeans she must never wear them in my absence again

Soft "sanibonani" she says walking in and settling on the couch by the window

Liv "hey" she says and I just sigh

Me "love, you look beautiful, where is my boy"

Soft "thank you, I left him, he didn't have a good night at all, so I took him to the Dr in the morning and

she gave him an injection that knocked him out when we got home, he has been sleeping"

Me "oh my little man"

Soft "she said he will fine when he wakes up so don't stress about that okay"

Me "easire said than done"

Liv "daddy let me love and leave you"

Me "okay you two, I don't know about you but I am tired of this tension honestly I just had a near death

experience and the last thing I wanted was to wake up and find wife and daughter cold towards each

other, I mean you too are best friends, hell you are more of sisters than friends actually, Soft baby I

know I hurt you by putting myself in the firing line, and for that I will forever be sorry for that especially

after you warned me and begged me to not do it myself but I need you to understand that Olivia is my daughter and I couldn't stand by and watch that monster torment her like that"

Liv "I am sorry for putting your life in danger dad my mother told me to not include you but I did"

Me "I am your father and it is my responsibility to protect you, my only fault was not considering how it would affect my wife and your brother, I told myself that it was about you but the consequences hit

everyone else, I was selfish I could have helped you but not put myself in danger as well, baby please if

it's anyone you should be mad at it's me not Olivia, I am sorry I will live my life trying to make it up to

you but please now I feel bad for the way things are between you, please be okay with each other

please, let us all try and move from this" she sighs and looks at me expressionless

Soft "I am sorry Olivia, I was just scared that I would have lost my husband and I would have to face the

hardships of having to raise MJ alone" she says and I feel the

concern and pain in her voice

Liv "I am sorry that I wanted Moscow gone from my life that I didn't stop for one minute to think of how

this would affect all of us, problem is I thought my father was superman even though my mom warned

me about that man I just had to believe that papa would defeat hi" she says walking towards Soft who

stands and they fold each other in a warm embrace and cry. Thank goodness.

NEO

My husband is back in the country and I don't know how to tell him all that has been happening in his

absence I honestly wonder how he is going to take all of this, we have never ever kept things from each

other and I hate myself for doing this to our marriage, I just hope that he will understand why I did what

I did. He woke up early and went jogging, when he is away on business he can't work out coz of his busy

schedule. I take a quick shower to try and calm my nerves, it

didn't help one bit coz I still feel myself  
freaking out so I decide to make black coffee and pour whisky  
inside. The door opens and he walks in  
trying to catch his breath, he is sweating like hell so he decides  
to start in the shower once he is done he  
comes back wearing shorts and a vest

Him "I am going to make myself a protein shake, want one"

Me "nope I am fine thanks babe"

Him "you've never said no before but okay" I am pacing up and  
down waiting for him to come back  
from the kitchen

Him "Neo what's going on"

Me "mmhhh" he comes to me looking concerned and I just tear  
up

Him "what's going on, talk to me" he says taking the cup from  
me and placing it on the coffee table

Me "I just want you to know that I am very sorry"

Him "what happened you are scaring me right now"

Me "Bodibe its Moscow" his eyes widen

Him "what did that bastard do?" he says with anger in his voice

Me "I killed him" I confess and the shock on his face, he doesn't say anything but hold me coz I am

crying my eyes out, after a while he lets go and looks at me in the eye

Him "what happened" I explain everything to him from when he came here to how he died

Him "why didn't you tell me all of this Neo"

Me "I was scared that he would hurt you, that man is a monster"

Him "but you felt comfortable telling Motaung"

Me "I didn't tell him love, Olivia did after I asked her not to, I wanted to solve this myself"

Him "how would you have done that on your own, this is the same man that abused you and you ran

from, I thought we didn't keep secretes from each other"

Me "and we don't" I say and he shakes his head

Him "but you did Neo, I was away on business and you were in danger and you were even aware of it,

what kind of husband does that make me huh"

Me "I am sorry"

Him "what if he was able to kidnap you and I wouldn't even know where you were or what happened to you, this is the reason why communication is important"

Me "I was just scared, confused and determined to fight him off myself"

Him "I am your husband Neo, you don't need to do anything of yourself we are a team"

Me "I was stupid I know"

Him "how am I supposed to trust you now, how am I suppose to leave you behind when I go on business trip, you didn't have regard for your own life, the decisions you and Olivia made were reckless, a man almost died because of it all" he says

Me "I know I broke the trust and took our weapon - communication- from our marriage"

Him "now you had to die inside all alone because you killed him and couldn't tell me about it"

Me "I struggle to sleep at night love, I see his face" he sighs and pulls me into a hug

Him "oh Neo, I am sorry love. We will get you into therapy



everything will be okay I promise”

Me “I am sorry” he kisses my forehead and continues to comfort me

1 week later

SIZA

I had to prepare the house for my husband’s return from the hospital, they finally discharged her and I

am happy that he is finally coming home to me, our bed was cold without him in it, and the house didn’t

feel like home. I managed to change our bedding and had people come in to install a TV in our room,

the Dr’s said he must take it easy so most of his time he will be spending it in our bedroom, Gadafi did

me a favor and went to pick him up after coming to get him a change of clothes. Today my son had a

doctor’s appointment so my mother said she will take him while I prepare for my husband’s return. I

made sure to cook stew and dumplings, his favorite meal. A car hoots outside and I practically run to go

and open for them, he is already out the car and his one hand is on his chest

Me "you are home" I say with the widest smile and attack him with a hug

Him "Soft that is too tight love, unless you want me to go back to the hospital"

Me "oh God I am sorry love, I just, I am happy that you are home"

Him "it's good to be home, that place was just too much"

Me "I totally understand"

G "okay love birds I am not staying, I need to pick up Ntombi, we have a meeting to attend"

Me "okay and thanks for getting him"

G "pleasure, here are his meds" he hands me the plastic

Him "thanks brother" they fist bump

G "don't mention it, I will see you guys" he says and gets in the car and drives off

Me "come on in"

Him "where is my boy"

Me "my mom took him to the doctor it was his date" he nods and we get in, we make it upstairs after

forever and he settles on the bed I was about to walk away when he pulled me to him

Him "come here" I blush and look at him in the eyes

Me "what I want to go get you something to eat and take a look at your meds"

Him "that can wait but this can't" he takes my hand and puts it on his erection

Me "you not okay"

Him "ride me please, I miss you" I hide my face; Molemo is something else, his hands already going up

my thighs making me horny as hell. I get off him and pull his pants down, his erection springs free, he

takes out his t shirt and lies flat on the bed, I take his size into my hand and rub it, his hiss made me take

him into my mouth and I start blowing him, taking him deeper in my throat I am gagging, his moans and

groans fills the room, I know he is enjoying every moment of

this

Him "oh yes my love, yes baby" he says and I stop and go on top of him, I direct his manhood to my

entrance and immediately he meets my clit I want to go crazy. I take him all in and he fills me up making

me aware of how much I have missed my husband, I start moving up and down slowly and he is biting

his lower lip rubbing my breasts eyes closed, the sensation goes to my spine making me arch my back, I

start increasing my pace and writing the letter's C, O and U's with my waist and he goes entirely crazy

Him "oh Soft baby I am going to cum fuck what are you doing to me"

Me "cum for me babe cum for your wife" I say what he normally say's to me when he is on top driving

me insanely crazy with his dick

Him "ahhhh ahhhh ahhhh Soft mmmhhh" he says and I know he is undone, I go for a few more minutes

and my orgasm comes like a rush, I collapse next to him

Him "what a nice way to welcome your husband home"

Me "I am glad you enjoyed it, I missed you so bad" he kisses my

forehead

OLIVIA

Everything is going back to normal slowly but surely, my mother came clean to her husband and she

started therapy to deal with killing Moscow, taking a life is not easy and I totally supported her

husband's suggestion, my father on the other hand is back home and he is healing nicely, he should

thank his ancestors that his wife is a doctor, speaking of Siza, well we managed to speak about what

happened after my dad intervened and I fully understand why she acted that way and I am pretty sure

that if it was Steven I would have also have acted that way, this whole experience has taught me to look

at all possible outcomes of a situation not only the one that will benefit you at the end of the day. I just

pulled up at my boyfriend's house and I get all the things I bought from the grocery store in the boot and

walk in after unlocking. I start packing everything where it

should be while humming a melody. Someone  
speaks behind me and I jump scared

Her "Olivia" I turn and look who it is and it's his mother

Me "oh my God, I didn't know there was someone here"

Her "I came to talk to my son, I thought he would be home by  
now"

Me "he is going to be home late actually"

Her "I should have called before coming then" she says and I  
pack away the grocery bag

Me "I guess so"

Her "he told me that you found out that Neo is your mother"

Me "I guess that's just going to make you hate me more huh"

Her "of course not Olivia" come to think of it why is this woman  
so calm with me

Me "okay"

Her "since we are both in the same room, I would like to  
apologize for how I treated you in the past, I

was not over my husband and you looked so much like Neo that  
you reminded me of what I lost I didn't

want to lose my son to a girl that looks like the woman my husband fell for, now I know it all sounds

crazy but honestly I am sorry, I see that you and Steve are in love and I won't be a pain for you two, I

want to have a relationship with you, we can take it slow get to know each other, after all we both love

Steve and he would appreciate us getting along"

Me "not to sound ungrateful but why now" she smiles

Her "actually why I came to see Steve, I have a boyfriend and he made me realize a lot of things and I

want to be a better person you know, all this anger and hate I was harboring wasn't doing me any good

and I am done with that really"

Me "congratulation, you deserve some happiness too hey"

Her "thank you Olivia"

Me "can I offer you something to drink?"

Her "let's have a bottle of wine if you have it"

Me "coming right up" she smiles and goes back to the living room, Steve is going to be shocked I tell you

No edits

## SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

### CHAPTER 150

#### RAZOR

I hate being rendered useless, and until this damn scar heals I am to not put strain on myself and to my

wife that translated to keep him in bed and treat him like a little baby, but I am not complaining because

I get to have her as I please and the nicest part is that she does all the work herself, but I will tell you the

truth I miss giving her some strokes myself. When she is at school I walk around the house and luckily

my mother in law said she will help me keep my little secret, the other nicest part about being at home

24/7 is spending time with my son, and the champ is growing up now and man he looks like me it's not

even funny. There is a knock on the door and I shout come in and Gadafi walks in with MJ in his arms



Me "oh what a lovely surprise"

G "you even started talking like a bitch" I laugh

Me "how can I not when I watch so many movies in here"

G "I see Siza has you on lock down"

Me "you don't want to know"

G "this room is different"

Me "oh yeah she worked on it after doing the kitchen"

G "this used to be manly look at it shows that you are married now" I smile

Me "yeah ma we come far G"

G "I sometimes don't remember how it felt being a bachelor"

Me "makes the two of us really" he sighs and shakes his head

G "I came to talk to you about Moscow"

Me "he is dead right"

G "I even cremated him, I didn't want him to resurrect" I laugh

Me "I am happy to hear that brother"

G "so I told the cartel to take over his territory silently, coz no one knows that he is dead, plus he never

ran things himself, his boy in jail told us all about his operations and where he keeps his money so I took

you IT boys and they managed to get it all into one account. He told me about girls that were meant to

be trafficked and we rescued them, well I wasn't there personally but I planned it all, you won't believe

it Razor we got about 200 girls and woman aging between 3 and 35, they were supposed to be shipped a

day before we rescued them. I felt myself creep I mean I am a father to a little girl, that monster fuck it.

Anyway I don't even know what to do with his money"

Me "that's easy share with the girls you rescued, and give some to the families of the man we killed at

his house and also the family of the one in prison, I know he has a lot of money so we could use some

and donate to charities, build them new home with all they need then take a little portion from that and

invest it they list woman and girls homes as beneficiaries so they can be able to survive since we know

people no longer donate that much"

G "brilliant idea man, that will get me occupied for a while till

the restaurants fully belong to us”

Me “I can also help while I am still in this condition”

G “okay then I will email you the pin and account number”

Me “yeah man” MJ starts eating his hands and makes funny sounds

G “what now little man” he says asking the champ who continues with the baby sounds

Me “he is hungry I bet you” he laughs

G “let me go get his bottle then” he hands him to me

Me “okay my boy uncle G is getting you bottle coz mommy is going to be home much later today, I hope

she pumped enough for you, coz if you run out you are going to cry this house down”

OLIVIA

Steve just got home from his mother’s place, I haven’t managed to tell him about his mom apologizing

to me, he has been so busy trying to get his company off the ground normally when he gets home he

tells me all about it so it skipped my mind, I had just finished taking a shower and he told me not to cook

coz he will bring take away, and thank God for that coz sis had a long day at school, cooking was the last

thing on my mind. I sit on the couch and flip through the channels; he joins me and sighs deeply then puts his head on my lap.

Me "long day"

Him "a day from hell my love"

Me "did you manage to go to SARS"

Him "yes babe, I managed to finish everything"

Me "everything is going accordingly"

Him "you can say that again love"

Me "I think I already have your first client" he sits up and looks at me in the eye

Him "who is that"

Me "my uncle G and Ntombi, they are going to be buying a chain of restaurants. He asked me to help so

I am referring you to him, he is looking to rebrand them with

time, and he wants a company that will also deal with his PR, and you are the perfect man for that love”  
Him “what Liv babe that is huge love. Exactly what I need to get it off the ground, now I have my sisters company and this in the bag, I am ready to roll”

Me “you sure are babe”

Him “I couldn’t have done all of this without you Hun; I know I have always dreamt of owning my own marketing and PR company but I just kept on putting it off. Thank you for pushing me babe”

Me “thank you for not seeing that as me putting pressure on you, I want to build with you babe, I want to create wealth for our children you know” he nods

Him “I couldn’t have chosen a better partner babe” I kiss him

Me “hai babe I forgot to tell you”

Him “this sounds like the perfect Mgozi” I laugh

Me “you have no idea”

Him “out with it love” I clap my hands

Me “your mom has a boyfriend” he laughs and high fives me

Him "I know she told me today, I have never been so shocked, poor guy he doesn't know my mom

shame, but baby how did you know this"

Me "she was here 2 days ago, forgot to mention it, she even apologized to me for being so mean in the

past, she explained why she was like that towards me"

Him "my mom apologize, are you sure" I giggle

Me "we even had wine and she told me about her boyfriend"

Him "okay this is shocking, she didn't even mention this to me"

Me "she asked that we have a relationship since she is aware how serious we are"

Him "do you think we should trust her" I laugh

Me "bathong baby, she is your mom I have to be asking you that" he shakes his head

Him "I love her, she is my mother but I don't trust her for now, why now all of a sudden"

Me "people can change baby"

Him "let's give her the benefit of doubt love, but vigilant also"

Me "I am all for that then"

Him "I just hope she means what she said to you" I shrug my

shoulders

3 months later

MBUSO

My mother has been nagging me for months and months she has started to really annoy me if it wasn't

for Thandiwe I would have gotten a restraining order against her. everything has been going well with

for us, the company has started employing more people as she gets more contracts now, I am so proud

of her, she manages to take care of me and kids, make sure the house is well ran and she leads her

company pretty well, and she also performs well at school I couldn't have been blessed with a super

woman. I am at work preparing to go on my lunch break soon as I balance these numbers. I finally

crunch them and email to my superior who responds with a thumbs up after about 15 minutes, I sigh

and stand but my phone rings, it's Refiloe, I roll my eyes

Me "hello Refiloe"

Her "Mbuso you need to come to the hospital right now please"

Me "hospital what's going on is my daughter okay" she cries

Her "just please get to Harmony medical center" she hangs up  
and I rush out like a bullet, at least my

office is not far from the hospital, I get there and park my car. I  
am trying to keep calm but something is

telling me that my daughter is in trouble, I get in and the nurse  
tells me to wait in the waiting room with

the mother of the child, I get in there and she is crying

Me "Refiloe" I say and she looks up when she see it's me she  
rushes to me and attacks me with a hug

Her "oh Mbuso you made thank God"

Me "what the hell is going on" she continues crying in my arms  
annoying me coz I don't know what is

happening here, I remove her from me and hold her shoulders

Me "speak now" she sniffs

Her "I am sorry Mbuso, but Lwethu fell from the flight of stairs"



Me "what how did that happen, didn't you baby proof the stairs"

Her "I did but Mphathi came through"

Me "wait what does Mphathi have to do with any of this" she fondles with her fingers and I roar

Her "okay okay, the truth is Mphathi and I are in a relationship, he came through to the house and

opened the baby proof gate, Lwethu and I were in her playroom, Mphathi and I had fought earlier so the

argument just started all over again, he started being physical with me and it scared Lwethu, we were

now by the stairs, she started crying obviously scared, Mphathi was just in the heat of the moment so

he just pushed her and she rolled down the stairs" I felt my head spin

Me "that bastard laid a hand on my child, he has the nerve, I am going to kill him I swear, where is my

baby girl Refiloe" she started crying

Me "stop with this shit and tell me where my child is" she was about to say something and the doctor

walked in, it was just us in the waiting room so I guess he came to keep us posted

Dr "Thandolwethu" I nod "well we did an MRI scan and I don't know how but your daughter's brain and spine are clear, she only has a cut on her forehead and we gave her stitches for that, she will heal soon, then she broke an arm which will heal in a couple of weeks, you baby girl is lucky but I would like to keep her here for a few days just to look at that hand"

Me "thank you so much doctor"

Dr "I will send a nurse to take you to her once she is in her room okay" we nod and he walks away

Her "oh thank God she is okay"

Me "you and your boyfriend almost killed my child Refiloe you don't get to thank God"

Her "Mbuso please let's not do this now" I look at her and shake my head

Me "you disgust me Refiloe" I say and walk out to get some fresh air and to call my boss to explain that I need a few days off to be here for my girl

SIZA

I just bought my lunch at campus cafeteria, it has been a long day and I just want to get home and kiss my baby boy, snuggle with him and give him endless kisses. He has grown so much can't believe that he has been with us for 6 months, God he is amazing I swear being his mom is everything and it's fulfilling in every way possible. I open my lunch and the smell sends me off immediately God I can't, I quickly close the container, and just have a drink looking at my phone, I come across a pregnancy post and I freeze, oh no no no this is not happening, I can't be, me no impossible, but Mo and I have been at it and no condom and the pullout he promised didn't happen. Tears just come and I quickly wipe them. I pack my things and head to my car, I stop by the pharmacy and buy 3 pregnancy tests from different brands, it's around 2pm and I know my husband is at the office so I drive there and get it

Me "hello is my husband in" I ask his PA

Her "Mrs. Motaung, yes he is in" she says politely, she is no longer rude

Me "thank you, please hold off any call that is not urgent" she nods and I get in his office he is reading some file

Him "and I get a visit from my beautiful wife"

Me "this is not a social call Molemo, it's a panic visit" he laughs

Him "what's going on babe" he removes his glasses and stands

Me "i am yet to find out too"

Him "then why are you panicking Soft"

Me "coz if it's true I want to kill you myself"

Him "what did I do now" I hold out my hand and go to his bathroom and pee on all 3 sticks and walk out

already setting the timer, I place the tests on top of their boxes on his desk and his eyes widen

Him "what is this?"

Me "yes Molemo pregnancy tests" he smiles

Him "you mean we have another baby in there" I sigh coz this man is actually excited Lord Help me

Me "this is not good, babe MJ is only 6 months"

Him "but baby it doesn't mean he won't grow if we have another baby"

Me "you don't get it love, I just gave birth and already with another child" he smiles

Him "God works in mysterious ways love" I shoot him a death stare

Me "I am the one who has to share her body again Molemo it's not all rosy" I say

Him "I would if I could you know that" the timer goes off and he takes one test and I take two, he starts

laughing and punching the air, I am sitting there feeling like the world is coming to an end

Him "this is the best news I have received all day"

Me "my life is over" he giggles and comes around to my side and kneels down

Him "I know that this isn't the ideal time, but you always tell me that everything happens for a reason,

God knows why he is giving us yet another gift so early love, this is an exciting time in our life, we are

married and we have an amazing baby boy, now we are waiting for another member of our family"

Me "look at how happy you look"

Him "that's because I am Siza, having children with you mean the world to me, be happy with me"

Me "I am still shocked Mo, give me some time please"

Him "let's go home and tell our boy he is going to be a big brother soon"

Me "he won't understand a thing" he giggles and places a hand on my belly

Him "hey you in there, I am excited to know that you are in there baby, daddy is just excited let's go tell

your big brother about you, I swear your sister Olivia is going to go crazy over you. Keep on baking in

there and please be gentle with her MJ made her crazy" I smack his bold head and we both chuckle. I

knew we were going to have more kids but this is scary I won't lie I am scared, my mom yoh she is going to freak

No edits

We almost done with the story and we will start with another one

SIZAS' TRIBULATIONS

## CHAPTER 151

### THANDIWE

I got home and started with the dinner, the lady that helps around the house and with the kids was not feeling too good so I told her to have an early night and I will take care of dinner, I went to the room she occupies at the back of the main house and gave her some meds, if she wakes up the same I will take her to the doctor. I finish preparing the food and Mbuso is not yet home, this is unlike him, he normally gets home before me and if he is going to be late he lets me know, I take my phone and dial and it takes me straight to voicemail, this is so not like him, I am getting worried now, I dish up for everyone and put his food in the oven, once the kids finish eating I bath them and tuck them in, when I get to the lounge the door opens and he walks in, I sigh in relief

Me "oh thank God you are okay" he smiles

Him "I am sorry for not calling MaDlamini"

Me "what happened?"

Him "Lwethu is in hospital" I quickly make my way to him

Me "what happened? Is she okay?" he takes my hand and go  
and sit down and he explains what

happened and I won't lie I am shocked

Me "oh my God poor baby girl, how could Mphathi do that"

Him "I am defeated, my brother hates me so much that he  
would hurt my daughter"

Me "he is a sick man really"

Him "Refiloe is just equally unbelievable"

Me "wasn't your brother getting married" he shrugs his  
shoulders

Him "I thought so too babe"

Me "yazin that's non of our business our concern is  
Thandolwethu"

Him "I want us to discuss something love" I nod

Me "I am listening"



Him "I want to take full custody of Lwethu, I know it's going to be a lot on you but I can't trust Refiloe with my daughter anymore"

Me "Mbuso, your daughter can never be a lot, babe you welcomed my children and you love and treat them as if they are your own, and I love Lwethu too having her stay with s would be nice and the kids will be so happy to stay in one house, you know Nkanyiso always asks why lele doesn't stay with us, I full agree with you, we must get her before something more serious happens to her" he is looking at me with an expression I can't tell

Him "thank you for not making it hard for me, I appreciate this babe"

Me "I am in your life to make things easy love" he smiles

Him "I just need to apply to court"

Me "that would be taking the long route love, just ask your lawyer to draft papers that says she gives you full custody of the child and she will have visitations"

Him "she will never agree to that"

Me "I hate what I am going to say but tell her that if she doesn't sign you will file a case of negligence

and the law will give Lwethu to you and she will not even have visitation rights"

Him "makes sense babe, let me talk to my lawyer and let him lay down the law jargons that will favor

us" I peck his lips

Me "we will go see Lwethu first thing in the morning"

Him "thank you Thandiwe, your support means everything to me, I love you okay" I smile

Me "and I love you too"

MERCY

I won't lie prison is no child's play, this place will either make or break you and in my case I took the

decision that it is going to make me, I had to stop using drugs and God it was the hardest thing I have

ever had to do, I had to rehabilitate myself and the fact that drugs are easily accessible in here made

everything harder, but I had to find my will power. I realized every wrong that I have done in the past and I accepted that I should be here, I killed people and that is a punishable crime, I understand why my father made it impossible for me to appeal my case, I had to learn that life is not a bed of roses and it's painful that I had to be locked up to see that, at the beginning I hated my father and everyone else for that matter but as time went by I had to realize that it is my actions that made them act like that towards me. I saw that my father loves me coz he made sure that I am taken care of in here, the guards are like my bodyguards and I have a crew that keeps an eye on me from far so I am all safe and I wish to thank him for that. I was in my cell when the guard came through

Her "Mercy the warden wants to see you" I start to panic

Me "what did I do"

Her "I don't know, just get up and let's go" she says and we make our way to the office, while other

prisoners scream and scream, asking where I am been taken to.  
we get to the office and she tells me to

go right ahead, I open the door and she is sitting on the desk  
reading something

Me "morning warden" she looks at me through her glasses

Her "please sit" I do as she says and she remains silent for a  
couple of minutes then puts the file down

Her "right, Mercy you send me a proposal months ago" I nod

Me "yes I did"

Her "I managed to take a look at it and I must say I am  
impressed" I smile, I even forgot about that, I

thought she read it and threw it out after she laughed

Me "thank you ma'am"

Her "well the prison has been chaotic lately, they fight, they do  
drugs, these gangs kill one another"

Me "I have been aware"

Her "so tell me how you plan on executing this plan"

Me "well warden, everyone has a different type of personality  
and from that everyone will get to do

what they love and it will keep them occupied, some will want to

get in to the farming project, where they will plant vegetables that we will use in the kitchen or sell to fund other projects, then to avoid this wars we could start a netball tournament where the gangs could turn into actual teams, I played netball and I could team them how it's played, as you have seen others love fashion so we could invest a little money in that so we buy them the materials to design and create their own garments and maybe have fashion shows to show case their work potentially sell their work to people out there, I was hoping to also start writing classes to those who are gifted in putting words together, then those who can sing can start choirs and we can have a concert. Other ideas will come as we go, It won't be much but it will be enough to get the ladies busy and take them away from drugs and violence"

Her "I absolutely love this, no inmate has ever proposed such a beautiful concept"

Me "thank you"

Her "I will call you again soon to execute this once the funds are

ready”

Me “I really appreciate you giving me this chance warden, but before that can I please have a meeting

will all of them so we can tell them the news and see how they take it”

Her “good idea Mercy, I will organize that maybe tomorrow afternoon, I just need to have more guards

on duty”

Me “if we pull this through Mercy, most woman including you will be legible for parole” a tear falls, maybe I was meant to be in prison to help these woman get their lives in order

MBUSO

Thandiwe and I woke up and prepared the kids for school, we didn’t want to tell them about Lwethu as

yet, our helper is not feeling any good so we decided that we will drop her off at the Dr then Thandiwe

will Uber for her to go back to the house, I didn’t sleep a wink last night, I was wondering if she is okay,

she must have been so scared not seeing either of us there, I

just pray she had a good night, we finally finish eating breakfast and we drop off the kids first and then our helper, the drive to the hospital is not that long, we get there and find Refiloe already in her room with the Dr

Her "good morning" Thandiwe says

Dr "oh good morning"

Me "hey Doc"

Ref "hello" she says and I sit on the edge of my daughters bed and hold her foot

Me "how was her night"

Dr "everything is still looking good, I am going to take her for an MRI around 11 am and we can see that

we still clear in her brain and spine"

Her "thank God, did she sleep through the night"

Dr "the nurses say she slept throughout the night but woke up before they could change shift saying her

arm is painful, they gave her some syrup for pain and it's a little stronger hence it knocked her out"

Me "my poor baby"

Dr "she is strong and she will be fine in no time"

Her "thank you doctor" Refiloe is not saying a word, and the doctor walks out leaving the 3 of us and

the sleeping Lwethu

Me "Refiloe"

Ref "mmmhh" she says looking up at me

Me "I want full custody of my daughter" the shock on her face

Ref "no Mbuso please you can't do that please I beg you it was a mistake"

Me "how I am suppose to believe that this is the first time your boyfriend did this to my daughter, he

might have done it before and you kept quiet because she wasn't hurt, I am not trusting you with my

daughter anymore"

Ref "Mbuso please you once said that you will never take my child from me"

Me "I thought you were a decent mother and I regret that" she was now crying

Ref "please Mbuso" I shake my head



Me "I won't take you to court because they will give me full custody and not allow you to see her but I

love my daughter enough to not keep her away from you, so I will have full custody and you have

visitation rights"

Ref "Thandiwe please ask him to not do this to me please"

Me "you don't get to beg my girlfriend to help you Refiloe"

Ref "it's not fair" I laugh

Me "what is not fair is my daughter laying her because of your stupid decisions"

Ref "I will do better I swear"

Me "I will have the papers for you to sign soon unless you want us to go to court"

Ref "for the love we once shared please don't do this"

Me "that love is dead"

Her "baby let's go get some coffee please" I nod and stand up but before walking out I look at her

Me "tell your boyfriend that I won't be coming after him; I know he did this on purpose and getting him

arrested will be a waste of my time. He won't get a reaction out

of me, he will always run behind my ass

and I will not give the satisfaction, just know that you lost your daughter because of your boyfriend

SIZA

Molemo is so excited about this pregnancy and I am freaking out really I can't believe that in a few

months I will be having another baby, we went to the OB/ GYN and we are 2 months pregnant, the

doctor laughed so much and she must think we are sex freaks really, just like when I was pregnant with

MJ this one makes me sick too, I have been trying so hard to avoid my mother so she doesn't suspect me

but I am tired of hiding in my own house, I mean I am married and my husband is supportive, yes it

would have been ideal if we had waited a while but it happened, we have the resources to raise our

children in a warm and loving house. I am freaking I know but this new life is here and God trusted me

enough to mother him or her and I will embrace that, It's Friday

and I decided to not go anywhere but  
straight home, it's time I spoke to my mom about this, I found  
out a week ago so let me just address this  
so I enjoy carrying my baby, I get home and find her feeding MJ  
who is on his high chair

Me "hey baby boy, look at mommies little man eating like this" I  
say kissing him all over his face and he  
giggles and flashes me his toothless smile

Ma "stop buying him squash flavor he hates it" I laugh

Me "just like his father, Mo hates it"

Ma "how was your day"

Me "just okay ma, thanks, can we have a word please"

Ma "okay let me take this to the sink I am coming" she goes to  
the kitchen and I take my son from the

chair and we sit down waiting on ma, who comes back with a  
glass of wine, I laugh

Me "thatha girl"

Ma "you are home so I might as well enjoy my Friday"

Me "do you boo, and pretty sure you are going to need

something stronger”

Ma “I hear I fear, khuluma Sizakele” I sigh

Me “so mama a week ago I wasn’t myself so I decided to tests myself”

Ma “yin uyagula (are you sick)” I shake my head

Me “no mama, I am just pregnant”

Ma “Sizakele, pregnant again”

Me “I know mama I didn’t plan this”

Ma “Siza MJ is only 6 months sisi, he is too young”

Me “I also know that mama, it just happened”

Ma “I didn’t just happen Siza, you didn’t accidentally fall on top of Molemo, I told you too to be careful”

Me “ma it was hard, we tried”

Ma “Sizakele, this is white people tendencies” I laugh

Me “haibo mama that’s just wrong” he gulps her wine down

Ma “kodwa nkosi yam. Have you told your husband about this”

Me “he is over the moon”

Ma “ngiyam vuma shame, I don’t know what more to say sisi but you are married and your husband is

there for you, after all children are a blessing”

Me “they truly are mama”

Ma “kodwa nawe mntanam” she laughs and claps her hands

Me “I am just glad that I don’t have to avoid you any more”

Ma “how far along are you?”

Me “2 months and 2 weeks in 3 days”

Ma “at least you are done”

Me “I still want one more” she stands up clapping her hands shocked and I burst out laughing

Ma “I give up, I wouldn’t put it past you and your husband you could get pregnant before giving birth, you are just rabbits, I am going to get my bottle of wine ngiyeza” I chuckle

Me “aow kodwa mama”

No edits

SIZAS’ TRIBULATIONS

CHAPTER 152

THANDIWE

## 3 YEARS LATER

Looking back at my life I never thought I will be this happy and demon free, now I appreciate all I have

been through because in a way it has shaped me into who I am today, I had to endure all the pain so

that I can my way, I am honestly the happiest woman in the world not comparing my life to anyone,

Mbuso and I have been through so much together and every minute of it amazing enough, we still

decided to stay unmarried and it works for us, I think after our experiences we view marriage

differently. We have raised 3 of the kids well and I swear Lwethu and Kayise are twins and they frustrate

my son all day every day being a big brother is something else but they love each other and that is

enough for us. Each day I pray, I thank God first before asking anything because he has been amazing to

me and my family. I finish putting on my shoes and Mbuso enters our bedroom

Him "I think we are ready for that child now" I laugh

Me "why now babe" I ask smiling

Him "are you hearing your daughters abusing Nkanyiso in there, they are monsters"

Me "why are they still in his room though"

Him "they say he promised to teach them a game on play station"

Me "oh God my poor baby"

Him "so what do you say, we have another baby?"

Me "for balance sake yes we should, and I am hoping for a boy for Nkanyiso's sake"

Him "Lord hear us please" I smile

Me "what time is it babe"

Him "it's 5 minutes after 5 babe, finish up we should get going maDlamini"

Me "I just need to apply some lipstick"

Him "that gives me some time to steal some kisses then"

Me "opportunist"

Him "you are simply irresistible babe" I blush

Me "so are you, and you look amazing in that tux"

Him "I might charm a lady or two off their heels tonight mos" I give him a look

Me "do you want me to go down for murder or two" he laughs

Him "and who will help me raise these hot heads" I burst out laughing

Me "they are too much sometimes these children ne" he nods

Him "sometimes I just want to take you and we run for it just run away" I giggle

Me "feeling is mutual but I can't imagine my life without them at all"

Him "you and me both babe" he says pulling me to him and kisses me out of my mind

Him "MaDlamini wam, I appreciate you love, you have been the best partner to me and the most

amazing mother to my children, if I knew that what I went through in my life, the darkest days we meant

to mold and prepare me for you then I appreciate each and every tear and pain that I went through to

find myself at that retreat center, I am going to love you for the rest of my life babe, I am going to



always thank God for leading us to each other, you know pain as much as I do that's why I know my

heart is safe in your hands, may we grow old and gray and crusty and shit together" I laugh and smile

Me "after saying such beautiful words to me you go skrr skrr but I love you babe kakhulu yezwa"

Him "ngiyezwa sthandwa sam and ngiyazi" I blush and he gives me a warm hug.

Me "let me finish up before we are late"

OLIVIA

I just put on my dress making sure that I don't spoil my makeup and hair, I must admit this girl dolled me

up real good, even though I look like a fat pig Gosh, oh yes I am pregnant, 7 months to be exact and it

has been the most exciting time in my life, when we found out Steven was so excited, I have never seen

like that even when his company took off, we have been living together full time for 5 months now coz

he paid lobola and my father was over the moon, apparently he

never thought that I would ever get  
married or become a mother, I was told to not abuse Steve but  
to my defense the fiancé said it's exactly  
why he fell heads over heels in love with me. My mother on the  
other hand thought that maybe we are  
getting married because of the child but I assured her that we  
had the conversation even before we  
found out about the baby and that's when her excitement grew.  
Today is Siza's birthday and my dad has  
planned a huge birthday party for her God the way I am so  
excited you would swear it's my party, Noni  
is the one who did the décor, by the way we now have a good  
relationship, with their mother too, turns  
out she was being sincere when she apologized to me years ago,  
me and her are very close, I swear I  
wouldn't fall down in her presence, she is mother hen. I take my  
bag and walk down stairs and my fiancé  
is drinking beer, his shoes are off and he has his feet on my  
coffee table watching soccer

Me "bathong babe"

Him "you were taking forever in there"

Me "that's because I am a whale because of your child what did you expect though"

Him "I told you to stop calling yourself a whale babe, you look perfect"

Me "that's just you trying to make me feel better about myself"

Him "if I don't who will" I blush

Me "don't make me blush, just put your shoes on"

Him "we still have an hour before the party starts"

Me "I want us to start by McDonalds so I can have a burger I don't want to be eating like tomorrow

doesn't exist in front of people I must be prim and proper the camera might catch me stuffing my face

with food" he laughs and gets up then disappears to the kitchen and comes back with my food

Me "when did you go to mcD"

Him "technology babe, I ordered on MrD foods I knew you were going to cry hunger" I throw the

cushion at him and he laughs

Me "that's very considerate of you babe thank you"

Him "come sit down and give my baby her snack" I smile at him and sit down ravishing this poor burger

Me "ahh and it hit the spot"

Him "need a minute or should we go"

Me "is my lipstick okay?"

Him "you can go apply it again" he says and I go by the mirror in the lounge and re apply it

Me "okay then we can leave babe" I say and he takes my bag and his car keys then we walk out, he locks the door and he opens my door and I get it and he goes to his side and starts the engine, we drive to the location and I am so excited.

## RAZOR

I don't know how to thank God for the blessings of life, he has blessed me beyond measure, the past 3

years of my life have been nothing but amazing. 2 years ago I received an envelope and it was from the

prison where Mercy is serving her sentence, I was shocked really coz she has never tried to make

contact with me, when I opened it I found a letter where she

was thanking me and apologizing for all she has done I was left shocked, the second document I got in there was a proposal, she is heading projects in jail and they needed funding coz the prison didn't have much I shed a tear coz finally she was becoming a woman I always dreamt she would be but it pains me that it had to be in prison, from then I have been funding it and it's changing a lot of woman's lives, drugs and violence even death have dropped significantly since the projects started, she is still serving her sentence and each time I went to see her she has never asked me to help her get out and I knew from there that she has changed. On the other hand Olivia became the chartered accountant she always wanted to be and I got the shock of my life when she told me she was pregnant and when that boy sent me a letter asking for her hand, Olivia is a hot head I kind of thought she would never get married but that boy is her medicine he knows how to deal with her and I couldn't have been any proud, then there are my two rats who are a year apart and

driving me and my wife insane, Molemo Junior and his sibling Katlego, yes we were blessed with

another boy and his arrival brought more warmth, love and happiness in our home. my dream of having

a son multiplied and I now have two and I will die a happy man someday knowing very well that I have

son's that will carry my surname. Today I my wife's birthday and earlier on the four of us went out to

spend the day together as a family and I planned a party for her and she doesn't know about it,

according to her we are having a private dinner with family and close friends, the surprise I have for her

will shock her, I just hope she doesn't faint. We are done getting now we are having a problem getting these two to sleep, their nanny is downstairs but they wanted us to read them a bed time story, well MJ did coz he is the boss and spokesperson

Soft "and they lived happily ever after the end" I look at my son's and Katlego has drifted off to lala land

but not the big brother

Me "I am taking Katlego to his crib and you better be asleep

when I get back” I say picking up him up

and going to his nursery, I tuck him in and switch off the light then go back to MJ’s bedroom. He is sitting

up right and talking to his mom, I sigh

MJ “mommy I just don’t understand why you are leaving me and my little pop pops alone”

Soft “but baby Precious is here to look after you boys”

MJ “I don’t want to stay behind”

Soft “you don’t have a choice baby, mommy and daddy are going to where only grownups are allowed”

MJ “you can hide me then”

Me “there will be police officers there to arrest under age kids like yourself”

MJ “but I am older than Katlego” Siza sighs

Me “yes you are but you are still underage”

MJ “Mommy is that true” he says looking at his mom

Soft “yes baby it’s true, Molemo just sleep please we are late”

MJ “can I have a cup cake then I will sleep”

Soft “you know what Mo he is your son, negotiate with him after all you are the lawyer he takes after

you” I need to be firm now

Me “if you don’t sleep right now, I am going to take all your toys and give them to Josh and every other

kid at school and I will take Katlego only to gold reef city” his eyes pop

MJ “goodnight daddy, I love you” he says putting his head on the pillow and closing his eyes I smile

Me “goodnight boy I love you too” I kiss his forehead and walk out switching off the light, this child

SIZA

I am late for my own birthday dinner because of my son, MJ likes to negotiate and only his father can

deal with him when he is like that you would swear he is not 3, so I normally leave him to be the bad

cop, and the is my sweet baby Katlego, he is the opposite of his brother that one I wish he can grow up

like that really. We are driving to where the dinner is; I am on my phone the entire time, the car finally

slows down and I look up and realize we are at the hospital, I



shoot him a look and he laughs

Him "Mandla just needs me to sign a document that is needed first thing in the morning, he left it with the night shift matron" I roll my eyes

Me "okay babe, be quick"

Him "come with me so they can see I am in a hurry"

Me "no Molemo my dress"

Him "babe please come" I sigh and get out of the car, I am confused when he takes my purse but decide

to let him be, he doesn't lead me to the reception entrance but we go to the side of the conference

room, what the hell

Me "we are supposed to go that way baby"

Him "she said I will find her in the conference center"

Me "we are already late because of your son now this again come on now" I say and he just kisses my

hand

Him "we will get there babe come down" I sigh and he pushed the door and we walk further in the

conference room is lit and I wonder what that woman is doing in that big room alone, he gestures me to walk in first and I do

Voices "SURPRISE" people shout and I jump a little and look around and see our family and friends, the room is decorated and looks elegant God, I look at my husband and he has a smile on his face, the waitress comes and hands us champagne.

Me "I knew something was off with you"

Him "happiest birthday my wife" he says and gives me a kiss, people start singing happy birthday and I

don't know what to do at that moment Mo leads me to our table and we sit, my mother and my sisters

come and hug me followed by a heavily pregnant Liv and Steve then everyone else who is close to me

Liv "hello everyone those who don't know me my name is Olivia and I am your MC for tonight and

thank you for coming through to celebrate my best friend's birthday with us, she is not just a friend to

me but she is a sister and a strong woman who gave birth to my little brothers, happiest birthday babe

and may the good lord continue to bless you with many more”  
she goes on and on and my mo gives a

speech that leaves me in tears, then Mandla gives a speech too  
then a colleague of mine, then it was my husband next

Him “I normally have so much to say about my wife and today I  
am just failing to express my feeling coz

it’s a lot, from the day I first laid my eyes on her I knew she had  
to be mine and God saw my heart and

blessed me with her and years later we are still very much in  
love and blessed with two boys, my life

before you love was just dull but you came and changed me for  
the better and you brought this light,

warmth, peace and happiness with you, we have been through  
so much but I wouldn’t want to go

through it with anyone but you all over again, you have always  
been my strength and pillar and with you

I know I can fight it all and come out victorious. I know when  
you graduated I didn’t give you anything

and that’s because your gift was still being worked on, so today  
I will give it to you as both a grad and

birthday present. My beautiful wife I know that you love being a

Dr and you love helping people with all

your heart hence I decided to gift you this hospital baby come here" I stand shocked with tears streaming down my face I can't believe this, when I get on stage he holds me tight letting me cry for a while I couldn't believe he would give me this kind of Gift, I let Go of him and he wipes my tears careful

not to ruin my make up

Him "there is one more thing, I renamed it, this hospital will no longer be called Harmony medical

center, but Siphephelo Dlamini Memorial hospital" my hands move to my mouth and at this point the

joy in my heart wouldn't let me shed a tear, I pull him into a hug and then kiss him, the guests are still

applauding and people are still shocked at this gift and so am I. he gives me the platform

Me "I don't know what to say but I know I have to thank God and give him all the praise, I had a rough

start to life and motherhood, I never thought I would make it out from where I came from but I did, I

was never easy but when God has destined you for something nothing can be a barrier in your path,

most of you wonder who Siphophelo is, she is my angel, my first child, she died years ago at age 7 and

her death has never been easy on me I have just learned to live with the pain, and what my husband did

for me is huge, he has ensured that my daughters memory lives forever and I will eternally be grateful

for that, I don't want to say a lot I just want to say to everyone here that trust in God and his timing.

Thank you to my husband for being the most amazing husband and friend to me, I am the most blessed

woman to have been made from his rib, your love and support Molemo is out of this world, people look

at us and think we are too perfect but I don't blame them because a love so pure is not experienced by

everyone and I understand that it's easy to judge and criticize what you do not know. Thank you for our

beautiful boys who betrayed me and looked exactly like you, thank you for honoring my late daughter

and I hope her soul is resting in perfect peace. To my lovely family and friends thank you guys for the

support you have shown me, for growing with me and walking

this journey with me. along the years my  
husband has ensured that I have the best birthdays but this  
year baby you out did yourself thank you  
and I love you Molemo Motaung to infinity and beyond, may  
God bless our union and our family, thank  
you guys for coming to celebrate my birthday with me, let's  
celebrate, eat drink and be merry" I give Mo  
a kiss and we walk off the dance to the tune the DJ is playing  
and the guests are already on their feet dancing.

My name is Dr Sizakele Motaung, a mother, a wife, a daughter, a  
sister, a friend and doctor and this was my story.

**THE END!!!!!!!!!!!!!!**

We will be starting with a new story, I will tell you when but it's  
soon, it's called Father and Son: a thinline between love and  
hate.



